
Class No... 630

[illegible]

THE
INDIAN ANTIQUARY,

A JOURNAL OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH

IN

ARCHÆOLOGY, EPIGRAPHY, ETHNOLOGY, GEOGRAPHY, HISTORY, FOLKLORE, LANGUAGES,
LITERATURE, NUMISMATICS, PHILOSOPHY, RELIGION, &c., &c.

EDITED BY

SIR RICHARD CARNAC TEMPLE, BART., C.I.E.,

FORMERLY LIEUT.-COLONEL, INDIAN ARMY.

VOL. XXXVI. — 1907.

BOMBAY:

PRINTED AND PUBLISHED AT THE BRITISH INDIA PRESS, BYCULLA.

LONDON: KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & Co.

LONDON: BERNARD QUARITCH.

BOMBAY: BRITISH INDIA PRESS.

NEW YORK: WESTERMANN & Co.

CHICAGO: S. D. PEET, Esq., Ph.D.

LEIPZIG: OTTO HARRASSOWITZ.

PARIS: E. LEROUX.

BERLIN: A. ASHER & Co.

VIENNA: A. HOLDER & Co.

CONTENTS.

The Names of Contributors are arranged alphabetically.

PAGE

PAGE

A. BARTH:—

THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE
(translated from the French) ... 117

THE LATE PROF. G. BÜHLER, C.I.E., LL.D.:—

ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-
GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated from the
German) ... 149

MAY S. BURGESS:—

ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-
GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated from the
German of Dr. Th. Zachariae) ... 149

REV. A. H. FRANCKE:—

ARCHAEOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET ... 85, 148

GEORGE A. GRIERSON:—

Buch des Rāgāwan, der Königsgeschichte. Die
Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien
nach einem Palmblatt-Manuskript aus dem
Mon übersetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten
versehen. Vienna: 1906 ... 180
Professor Bartholomae's Zum altiranischen
Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten ... 180
Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen
Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens.
Brunswick: 1906 ... 216

WILLIAM IRVINE:—

AHMAD SHAH, ABDALI, AND THE INDIAN
WAZIR, 'IMAD-UL-MULK (1753-7) ... 10, 43, 55

G. R. SUBRAMIAH PANTULU:—

RUKMINI KALYANAM ... 376

W. H. R. RIVERS:—

The Todas ... 88

H. A. ROSE:—

THE KHOKARS AND THE GAKKHARS IN PANJAB
HISTORY ... 1
HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS ... 33, 253
A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES, from
the Native point of view, by MIAN DURGA
SINGH (communicated) ... 234, 289, 370
NOTES ON ANCIENT ADMINISTRATIVE TERMS
AND TITLES IN THE PANJAB ... 348
Lachchhan Rajaon Ke; or, The Signs of Royalty
in Rajas ... 32
Is the Cult of Mian Bibi Phallo? ... 32
Further Traces of Totemism in the Panjab ... 51

T. S. KUPPUSWAMI SASTRI:—

THE AGE OF THE TAMIL JIVAKACHINTAMANI ... 285

P. W. SCHMIDT, S.V.D.:—

Buch des Rāgāwan, der Königsgeschichte. Die
Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien
nach einem Palmblatt-Manuskript aus dem Mon
übersetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten
versehen. Vienna: 1906 ... 180
Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen
Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens.
Brunswick: 1906 ... 216

MIAN DURGA SINGH:—

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES, from
the Native point of view (communicated by
H. A. Rose) ... 234, 289, 370

VINCENT A. SMITH, M.A., I.C.S. (RETD.):—

THE COPPER AGE AND PREHISTORIC BRONZE
IMPLEMENTS OF INDIA—Supplement ... 53

G. TAMSON, M.A., PH. D.:—

THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE
(translated from the French of M. A. Barth) ... 117

SIR R. C. TEMPLE, BART., C.I.E.:—

THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN
CAMPBELL) IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND
PALESTINE, 1654—1670 ... 93, 125, 173
A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF
THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES, applied to the
Languages of the Andamanese and Nico-
barese ... 181, 217, 317, 353
Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, 252

REV. G. WHITEHEAD:—

NOTES ON THE CHINS OF BURMA ... 204

REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D. D.:—

THE CHURRAS ... 19, 71, 106, 135

DR. TH. ZACHARIAE:—

ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMA-
GUPTA OR PARIMALA (translated from the
German) ... 149

MISCELLANEA AND CORRESPONDENCE.

Lachchhan Rajaon Ke; or, The Signs of Royalty in
Rajas, by H. A. Rose ... 32
Is the Cult of Mian Bibi Phallo? by H. A. Rose ... 32
Further Traces of Totemism in the Panjab, by
H. A. Rose ... 51

Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, by
Sir R. C. Temple ... 252
The French Archæological Société d'Angkor ... 234
The Seasons of Girdhar Sadhu ... 315

BOOK-NOTICES.

	PAGE		PAGE
The Todas, by W. H. R. Rivers, Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. With illustrations. London: Macmillan & Co., 1906, pp. xviii, 755, 40 Tables and Map	83	Professor Bartholomae's Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten, by G. A. G.	180
Buch des Rāgāwān, der Königsgeschichte. Die Geschichte der Mon-Könige in Hinterindien nach einem Palmblatt-Manuskript aus dem Mon überstetzt, mit einer Einführung und Noten versehen, von P. W. Schmidt, S. V. D. Vienna: 1906 (reprinted from the <i>Sitzungsberichte der Kais. Akademie der Wissenschaften</i>), by George A. Grierson	180	Die Mon-Khmer-Völker ein Bindeglied zwischen Völkern Zentralasiens und Austronesiens, von P. W. Schmidt, S. V. D. Brunswick: 1903 (reprinted from the <i>Archiv für Anthropologie</i> , Neue Folge, Band V, Heft 1 u.2), by George A. Grierson. 216	
		Achyutarāyābhyudayam of Sri Rājanātha, with a commentary by Pandit R. V. Krishnamachariar (Abhinava Bhatta Bana). Part I, Cantos 1—8. Srirangam: Sri Vani Vilas Press, 1907, 156 pages, 352	

ILLUSTRATIONS.

Cult of Mian Bibi	32	Ancient Figures in Western Tibet	97
The Copper Age and Prehistoric Bronze Implements of India—Plates VI and VII	53	Archæology in Western Tibet, Plates I and II	148
Remains at Alchi and Basgo	89	Map of the Andaman Islands	217
		Map of the Nicobar Islands	317

APPENDIX.

INDEX OF PRAKĪT WORDS, BY DON M. DE ZILVA WICKREMASINGHE	pp. 121—132
---	-------------

HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS.

BY H. A. ROSE.

ERRATA.

Vol. XXXV, page 242, line 16, *read* Ônkâr *for* Aunkâr.

„	„	„	242	„	19	„	tû hîn Kartâ <i>for</i> tû Hîn kartâ.
„	„	„	243	„	14	„	purpatan <i>for</i> purpaton.
„	„	„	251	„	4	„	Chûr Chândnî <i>for</i> Chûri Chaudharî.
„	XXXVI	„	33	„	10	„	Tir Mahâsu <i>for</i> Tir Mahâsû.
„	„	„	33	„	14	„	Fâgû <i>for</i> Matîânâ.
„	„	„	37	„	10	„	Dhân <i>for</i> Dhând.
„	„	„	37	„	37	„	Churî Chândnî <i>for</i> Jori Chandnî.
„	„	„	38	„	41	„	Châil <i>for</i> Châhal.
„	„	„	40	„	20	„	Râjâ Balbîr Sain <i>for</i> Râjâ Balehr Sain.
„	„	„	40	„	22	„	Gosâûn <i>for</i> Gosâwan.
„	„	„	40	„	31	„	Mahikhâsur <i>for</i> Mahî Kahâshor (or Mahishâsur).
„	„	„	42	„	27	„	Balbîr Sain <i>for</i> Malêr Sain.
„	„	„	158	„	9	„	Siyaka <i>for</i> Sûjaka.
„	„	„	257	„	2 & 5	„	Ruddar <i>for</i> Buddar.
„	„	„	262	„	29	„	avatâr <i>for</i> avatât.

RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

ERRATUM:

Vol. XXXVI, page 356, line 44, *read* lû *for* eû.

THE INDIAN ANTIQUARY,

A JOURNAL OF ORIENTAL RESEARCH.

VOLUME XXXVI. — 1907.

THE KHOKHARS AND THE GAKKHARS IN PANJAB HISTORY.

BY H. A. ROSE, I.C.S.

Introduction.

IN an article entitled *A History of the Gakkhars*, contributed to the *Journal* of the Asiatic Society of Bengal in 1871, by Mr. J. G. Delmerick, the Khôkhars of the Muhammadan historians were taken to be the Gakkhars, a tribe which is settled in the Râwalpindî District of the Pañjâb. The late Major Raverty, however, expressed a strong opinion that the writer of the article had confused the Gakkhars with the Khôkhars, a totally distinct tribe, and a full examination of all the evidence at present readily accessible has convinced the present writer of the correctness of Major Raverty's position. The Khôkhars were settled in the Pañjâb centuries before the Gakkhars, and were early spread all over the central districts of the Province before the Gakkhars acquired their seats in the Salt Range, to which they are and always have been confined. If this thesis be correct, it follows that Farishta's description of the customs of polyandry and female infanticide, as practised by the tribe, apply not to the Gakkhars at all, but to the essentially Pañjâb tribe, the Khôkhars.

I. — THE HISTORY OF THE KHÔKHARS.

A. — An Account of the Traditional History of the Khôkhars, by a Khôkhar of Khokharain, in the Hoshiarpur District, Pañjâb.

Beorâsâhsâ,¹ who succeeded Jâmshîd, King of Persia, was called Dahâk or the 'Ten Calamities.' On his shoulders were two snake-like tumours, whence he was nick-named Mârân or Aydahâ by the Persians, and called Dahâk (or Zuhâk)² Mârân, while his descendants were designated Tâk³-bansi, Nâg-bansi or Takshak. About 1500 B. C. Kâma, the ironsmith, aided Farîdûn, a descendant of Jâmshîd, to subdue Dahâk, who was cast into the well of Koh Damavind, and Farîdûn became King of Persia. One of Dahâk's descendants, named Bustâm Râjâ, surnamed Kokrâ, was governor of the Pañjâb and had his capital at Kokrânâ, on a hill in the Chindhath Doâb, but it is now called Koh Kirânâ.* At the same time Mihrâb, also a descendant of Zuhâk, held Kâbul as a feudatory of Farîdûn.

After acquiring the Persian throne, Farîdûn marched against Dahâk's descendants. Bustâm fled and sought refuge in the Hill of Ghor, west of Qandahâr, where his people ruled for generations, being called Ghorî or Ghorîâ and all being pagans.

¹ Afrâsiâb.

² Zuhâk is merely the Arabicised form of Dahâk.

³ Tâk for Dahâk.

* A singularly unsuccessful attempt to identify the isolated Kirânâ Hill, that in the Jhang District, with Kokrânâ by assuming that the syllable *ko-* was mistaken for the Persian *koh*, mountain, and dropped in the course of time — an utterly impossible suggestion.

Some years later Bustâm was murdered and some powerful Râjâ took possession of the Sindh-Sâgar Doâb, where Alexander found Takshail (Taxiles), founder of Takshala (Taxila), now Dheri Shâhân in the Attock District. But before the Macedonian invasion Kaid Râj, King of Mârwar, overran the Pañjâb in the reign of Darius Hystaspes, soon after Bustâm's murder. His capital was Bherâ on the Jhelam District and he also founded a fort at Jammû, which he entrusted to Virk⁵ Khôkhar, one of his kinsmen. Virk, with his own tribesmen, conquered the northern hills, and then, in league with the hill-men of Kohât and the Sulaimân Hills, drove Kaid Râj out of the Pañjâb. The Khôkhars, under such chiefs as Jot, Sâlbâhan, Tâl, Bâl, Sirkap, Sirsuk, Vikram, Hodi Sândâ, Askap, Khôkhar (*sic*), Bâdal and Kob, thenceforward held the Pañjâb.

A long period after this, Bahrâm, Râjâ of Ghor, left Shorâb, which lay 100 miles from Qandahâr,⁶ and, regaining the Kokrânâ territory, his hereditary province, he founded Sharâb to the east of the Kokrânâ Hill. Another Râjâ of Ghor, named Zamîn Dâwar, founded yet another city 3 kos to the east of Shorâb and called it Dâwar, and this was laid waste by the Tartars, but the mound still exists. To the west of it lies the new town of Dâwar, which is still in possession of the tribe. Shorâb was destroyed by Sultân Mahmûd, and its ruins stand at the foot of the present Shorâbwâlî Pahârî Hill.

Goriâ, the Kokrânâ Râjâ of Sharâb, was succeeded by his two sons Bâdal⁷ and Bharth⁸ and 11 others who were sons of handmaids. Bâdal succeeded to the upland tracts of Chiniot and Kokrânâ,⁹ while Bharth took those east of the Chenâb. The latter, who dwelt in Bharth, a city named after himself, which lay 6 kos west of Nankânâ village, came, stone in hand, to aid his brother Bâdal Khân in battle; but learning that he had already fallen, he placed the stone on the ground and marched to avenge his loss. He was, however, worsted in the conflict, and Bharth, his city, destroyed. But the stone still lies on the hill. South of Chiniot Bâdal founded Mârî Tappâ, on a hill still so called. In the middle of the Chenâb he commenced a stone fort and a masonry bridge which he never completed, but a wall of the fort, called the Bâdalgarh, still remains. With Dârâ, his beloved kinsman, Râjâ Bâdal Khân (*sic*) was assassinated on his way to Mârî Tappâ, some 3 kos from Chiniot, and here his tomb, called Bâdal Dârâ, still stands to the west of the village of Amîrpur.

Bharth's territory had extended as far as Gujrât, and he left 8 sons of whom 4 left issue. These were Sândâ, Hassan, Hussain, and Mahmûd. Sândâ built a city, Sândar, between the Râvî and the Dek streams, the ruins of which are still called Sândar-kâ-tibba in the (Pindî) Bhattiân tract. He ruled so justly that his dominion is still called the Sândar or Sandal Bâr.¹⁰ He left 4 sons, Mandâr, Ratn Pâl, Bâlâ, and Jâl. From Ratn Pâl sprang the Rihîân,¹¹ a sept

⁵ This is to account for the existence of the Virk, a powerful Jât tribe, still numerous in Gujrânwâlâ. It also seems to connect them with the Khôkhars:—

⁶ Eight or ten miles west of Qandahâr lies the village of Khokharân. The *habits* of the bards record a Râjâ named Kokrâ, of Garh Kokrânâ, now called Kadyâna.

⁷ Bâdal would appear to be a Hindu name; cf. Rai Bâdal of Chittor: but lower down we find him called Bâdal Khân, the latter a Muhammadan title. It is curious to find Hindu and Muhammadan names mixed up in this history without apparent sense of incongruity. Thus below we have Ratn Pâl, undoubtedly a Hindu, descended from Sândâ, whose three brothers all bore Muhammadan names, even if Sândâ was himself a Hindu. Among the Meos of Gurgaon the position at the present time is precisely the same, and the present head of the Muhammadan Kharrals in the Lyallpur District is called Jagdeo.

⁸ The name Bharth occurs elsewhere.

⁹ It is unsafe to identify places like Kokrânâ with the Khôkhars. Near Rohtak are the mounds called Khokrâ Kot, under which lie ancient cities, but the word Khokrâ has no connection with the Khôkhar tribe. (See *Rohitâk District Gazetteer*, 1883-4, p. 16.)

¹⁰ But a local legend, recorded by Mr. E. D. MacLagan, says this Bâr is so named after one Sandal, a Chuhrâ, who used to commit great depredations. Another Chuhrâ used to live in the Gûa rock, i. e., the rock with the 'cavern,' and eat men. The people sometimes called the Bâr, Tattar, i. e., 'the Desert.'

¹¹ Probably the Rihâns, a tribe still found in Jhang District: see the *Jhang Gazetteer*, 1883-4, p. 61, where they are described as rulers in old days of the Kâlowl tract, which once formed a part of the Siâl kingdom; (but they are not said to be a branch of the Khôkhars).

which has two branches, the **Nissowânâs**¹² and the **Bhikhâs**,¹³ found in Shâhpur and Jhang. Kâlôwâl was the headquarters of this sept. **Sultân Mandâr's** descendants are now found in Bannu, where they trace their origin to Kais Abdur-Rashid, and are thus called **Mandâr Afghâns**. Mandâr himself prospered, kept in with the ruler of Kâbul and conquered the Kohistân-i-Namak and the Koh-i-Nandanâ. Of his twelve sons, three were legitimate, and of these three Rai Singin remained in the Kohistân-i-Namak and married his daughter to Sultân Jalâl'u'd-Dîn Khwârizmî, who made his son general of his own forces, with the title of Qutlugh-Khân. The second son Ichhar founded Ichhrâ near Lahore, and the third was Mâchhi Khân, who became Râjâ of Chiniot, which was named from Chandan, his sister, who built a palace on the hill as a hunting lodge for her father. Mârî Tappâ was not then populated, but Andherî was flourishing, and north of it lay the *dhaular*,¹⁴ or abode of Râni Chandan, which was called Chandniot, now Chiniot. When Andherî was deserted, Mâchhi Khân¹⁵ shifted his residence to the eastern bank of the river. Rai Singin had four sons: Sarpâl, Hast,¹⁶ Vir and Dâdan. Some of Sarpâl's sons went to Afghânistân and now trace their descent to Shâh Husain Ghorî. Chuchak or Achu was sixth and Malik Shaikh seventh in descent, from Sarpâl, and the latter founded **Shaikha**, a fort, and **Dhankar**, a village in the hill of Bhâwân, north of Manglân, he and his father holding the hill-country and the tracts west of Gujrât. Malik Shaikhâ was appointed governor of Lahore by the king of Delhi, and Nusrat, his younger brother, opposed Timûr's invasion, with only 2,000 men, on the Biâs.

Malik Jasrat, son of Shaikhâ, is a historical personage. In 1442 A. D. he was murdered by his queen, a daughter of Bhîm Deo, Râjâ of Jammû, because her father had been put to death by the Malik. His descendants are found in Mârî and Shakârpur in Gujrât, at Malikwâl in Shâhpur, at Jasrat near Chiniot, and in Dhankar near Khângâh Dogrân.

The Tartars spared the territories of Sarpâl's descendants. After 1200 A. D.¹⁷ they had burnt all the Khôkhar settlements on the Biâs and Sutlej. Râjâ Vir Khân fled towards Multân, but returned and founded **Kângra**, 9 kos from Chiniot, east of the Chenâb, but soon moved towards the Biâs with Kâlû, his kinsman, who founded Kâlûwâhan, now **Kâhnuwân**,¹⁸ in Gurdâspur, on the right bank of the river. For himself Vir chose a tract 32 kos south of Kâhnuwân, and there he founded **Vairowâl** in Tarn Târan, naming it after his son Vairo-Bhâro, another tribesman, founded **Bhârowâl** in the same tahsil. Kulchandar, another Khôkhar, founded Mirowâl, Mardânâ, Auliapur, &c., in **Sialkot**. Râjâ Vir Khân also founded a new Kângra midway between Kâhnuwân and Vairowâl. His territory was 40 kos in length, and the town extended 5 miles along the bank of the Biâs. At its north and south gates stood two forts or *mâris*,¹⁹ now occupied by Bhattî Râjputs²⁰ and Panuân Jats. On the ruins of this town now stands the small village of Kângra,²¹ just opposite to Tahlî or Khokharain on the west

¹² The Nissowânâs are also still to be found in Jhang — in the northern corner of Chiniot Tahsil : *Jhang Gazetteer*, p. 66.

¹³ The Bhikhâs I cannot trace.

¹⁴ *Dhaular*, in Panjâbi = palace (*lit.*, 'white house' ?)

¹⁵ This Machhe Khân appears to be alluded to in the following ballad, which records the deeds of the Chaddrâ tribe of the Sandal Bâr:—

Modâ de Chiniôt leône.

Zôr changêrâ lââ ne

Malik Machhe Khân kutthô ne,

Ragraṇ rōk rulââ ne.

(After their victory over the Kharrales the Chadrâ)
with a push of the shoulder (*i. e.*, with a certain
amount of trouble) took Chiniôt.

They used more force.

They killed Malik Machhe Khân.

They harried and destroyed him.

¹⁶ Hast : a Malik Hast is mentioned in Bâbar's *Memoirs* (Elliott's *History of India*, Vol. IV. pp. 236-237,) but no particulars regarding him appear to be given. Raverty mentions him and Sangar Khân as chiefs of the Janjûas and Jûds. — *Notes on Afghânistân*, p. 365.

¹⁷ c. 600 A. H.

¹⁸ Which place the Khôkhars are said to have held in Akbar's time.

¹⁹ *Mârî* in Panjâbi means a lofty house of masonry, or a small room erected on the roof of a house.

²⁰ Of the Buchâ gôt, whence the present village is called Mâpî Buchiân.

²¹ Kângra is close to Sri Hargobindpur.

bank of the Biās, in Hoshīarpur. In the village is the tomb of **Ladahā Khān, Khôkhar**, called the *pir ghāzi*, at which offerings are still made. This *ghāzi*'s head is said to be buried at Mandī Rohr, a village in Kapūrthālā, 3 miles south of Tahlī, to which place it was carried by the stream when he was killed. Ladahā Khān left seven sons, (i) Jago, whose descendants founded Dinamāl, Akālgadhā and Kotlī Sāra Khān in Amritsar, close to Bhārowāl and Vairowāl; (ii) Rup Rai, whose sons founded Dānd in Rāyā tahsīl, Siālkoṭ; (iii) Bego, who founded Begowāl and 16 villages, now in Kapūrthālā; (iv) Dasihan, the author's ancestor, who founded Khokharain²² as his residence and 12 other villages: Jhān, who founded Balo Chak, naming it after his son Bālo, with 9 more villages. As these *three* brothers owned in all 40 villages the tract was called the **Chālīā Khokharān**. Bhogrā migrated to Murādābād.

B.—The Khôkhars of the Muhammadan Historians of India.²³

In 399 A. H. (1009 A. D.) the Gakkhars, by whom in all probability are meant the **Khôkhars**, then infidels, joined the Hindus who had collected under the leadership of **Anandpāl** to resist the sixth invasion of India by **Mahmūd**. Their number is said to have amounted to 30,000 men, who, with heads and feet bare, and armed with spears and other weapons, penetrated the Muhammadan lines on two sides, and in a few minutes cut down three or four hundred Muhammadans.²⁴

The earliest distinct mention of the Kôkars occurs in the *Tājū'l-Ma'āsir*, a history written in A. H. 602 (1205 A. D.),²⁵ which describes the revolt of the tribe or confederacy under the chiefs Bakan and Sarkī, which occurred upon a false report of the death of the **Sultān Muhammad of Ghor** having been put about by Aibak Bāk, who seized Multān.²⁶ The Kôkars raised the country between the Sôdra (Chenāb) and the Jhām and defeated the Muhammadan governor of Sangwān, who held a fief within the borders of Multān, but they were defeated by Qutbū'd-Dīn Ibak, and one of the sons of Kokar Rai escaped to a fort in the hill of Jūd, which was captured on the following day by the Sultān.²⁷

The next mention of the Khôkhars occurs in the *Tabaqāt-i-Nāsiri*, written about 658 A. H. (1259 A. D.).²⁸ It relates that **Muizzu'd-Dīn** in 581 A. H. (1185 A. D.) ravaged the territory of Lahore, and on his return homeward restored Siālkoṭ, in which fortress he left a garrison, but as soon as his back was turned, Malik Khusrāu, the last of the Ghaznivides, assembled the forces of Hindustan and a levy of the Khôkhar tribes and laid siege to Siālkoṭ. This account is confirmed and amplified by *A History of the Rājās of Jammū*, which says:—“The tribe of Khôkhar, who dwelt round about Manglan at the foot of the hills and were subject to the Jammū dynasty, having received encouragement from the Lahore ruler (Malik Khusrāu), and sure of his support, refused any longer to pay tax and tribute to Jammū and threw off its yoke.” In return the Khôkhars then assisted Malik Khusrāu in his attempt on Siālkoṭ, whose garrison was befriended by the Jammū forces.²⁹

The next notice of the Khôkhars in the *Tabaqāt-i-Nāsiri* is an important one, and confirms the account of the *Tājū'l-Ma'āsir*. It describes the confusion which arose in the Sultān's dominions on account of the rumour of his death, and states that the Khôkhars (and other tribes of the hills of Lahore and Jūd) broke out in rebellion in 602 H. and were defeated with great slaughter.³⁰ In this rebellion the Khôkhars appear to have been in alliance with the **Rae Sāl**, the ruler of the Salt Range, or Koh-i-Jūd, but it is not certain that **Rae Sāl** himself was a Khôkhar.

²² Also called Tāhlī, because one of its quarters was so called from a *tāhlī* or *shisham* tree.

²³ The following account is extracted from Elliot's *History of India*, cited as *E. H. I.*; from the *Tahqāt-i-Nāsiri*, Raverty's Translation, cited as *T. N.*; and from the latter writer's *Notes on Afghānistān*.

²⁴ *E. H. I.*, II. p. 447.

²⁵ *Ib.* p. 209.

²⁶ *Ib.* p. 233.

²⁷ *Ib.* p. 235.

²⁸ *Ib.* p. 264.

²⁹ *Tabaqāt-i-Nāsiri*, p. 455; cf. p. 453, note 4 (Raverty suggests that Manglan is Makhīāla).

³⁰ *T. N.* p. 481; cf. 604.

In 620 H. (1223 A. D.) the Sultân Jalâlu'd-Dîn, driven from Ghaznî by the Chingiz Khân, who pursued him to the Indus, sought a refuge in the Pañjâb. He occupied Balala and Nikala³¹ near Lahore, and, being too weak to advance on Delhi, sent a part of his army against the hills of Jûd. This force defeated the Khôkhar chief, and the Sultân obtained his daughter in marriage, whereupon the Khôkhar Rai³² joined him with a considerable body of his tribe.

The Khôkhars had a longstanding feud with Kubâcha, governor of Sind (which then included the whole valley of the Indus below the Salt Range), and the Sultân's troops, under the guidance of the son of the Khôkhar chief, by a forced march, fell suddenly upon Kubâcha's camp near Uch and totally defeated him.

The Khôkhars, however, do not appear to have been confined to the country between the Jhîlam and the Chenâb, but to have also held a considerable tract *East* of the Biâs (and the good horses to be obtained in their *talwandîs* or settlements are often mentioned), for in 638 A. H. (1240 A. D.) we find them enlisted in the forces of the Sultâna (Queen) Bazîyyat and her consort Malik Ikhtiyârû'd-Dîn, Altûnia, but they abandoned her after her defeat at Kaithal.³³

After the sack of Lahore by the Mughals in 1241-42 A. D., "the Khôkhars and other Hindu Gabrs" seized it.³⁴ And in 1246-47 A. D. the future Sultân Ghiyâsu'd-Dîn Balban was sent against the Khôkhars into the Jûd Hills and Jhîlam.³⁵ The Khôkhars were apparently subjects of Jaspâl, Sihra.³⁶

About this time Sher Khân reduced the Jaṭs, Khôkhars, Bhaṭṭîs, Mînis (Mînas), and Mandâhars under his sway,³⁷ apparently in or near his fief of Sunâm.

In 647 A. H. (1250 A. D.) the upper part of the Pañjâb appears to have been in the hands of the Mughals and Khôkhars,³⁸ but nothing more appears to be heard of them until the reign of Muhammad Tughlaq Shâh, when they again began to be troublesome, and in 1342-43 A. D. they revolted under their chief, Chandar. The governor of the Pañjâb, Malik Tâtâr Khân, had to march against them, and though he was able to subdue them for a time, they caused great disorders under the last Tughlaq kings of Delhi.³⁹

We now come to the *Târikh-i-Mubḍarak-Shâhî*, an imperfect manuscript, the history in which has had to be completed from the *Tabaqât-i-Akbarî*, which copied from it. According to this history, the Khôkhar chief Shaikhâ⁴⁰ seized Lahore in 796 A. H. (1394 A. D.), and Prince Humâyûn, afterwards Sikandar Shâh I., was to have been sent against him,⁴¹ but his father, Muhammad Shâh III., dying suddenly, he was too occupied in securing the throne to set out on the expedition. Sikandar Shâh, however, only reigned some six weeks, and on his death Sultân Mahmûd Shâh II. succeeded him, but it was not for some months that Sârang Khân could be nominated by him to the fief of Dibâlpur and entrusted with the war against Shaikhâ. Sârang Khân took possession of Dibâlpur in June, and in September he advanced on Lahore with the forces of Multân, and, accompanied by the Bhaṭṭî and Main (Mîna) chiefs,⁴² crossed the Sutlej at Tihâra and the Biâs at Dubâli. On hearing of Sârang Khân's advance, Shaikhâ Khôkhar invaded the territory of Dibâlpur and laid siege to Ajûdhan, but hearing that Sârang Khân had passed Hindupat and was investing Lahore, he returned hastily to that city and encountered Sârang Khân at Sâmuthalla, 12 kos from it. There he was defeated by Sârang

³¹ Bankâla or Mankâla — *E. H. I.*, II. p. 553; cf. 563.

³² Called Kokâr Sankâ, who had embraced Islâm in the time of Muhammad Ghori — *ib.* p. 563; *T. N.* p. 294.

³³ *T. N.*, pp. 647-8, notes.

³⁴ *ib.* p. 656 n.

³⁵ *ib.* p. 678; *E. H. I.*, II. 347.

³⁶ *T. N.* p. 815.

³⁷ *ib.* p. 795.

³⁸ *ib.* p. 822.

³⁹ Raverty's *Notes*, p. 367. Farišta turns Chandar into Haidar. — Brigg's *Trans.* I. p. 425.

⁴⁰ Shaikhâ was the general name by which the chiefs of the tribes styled themselves, because "being Hindus by descent, they had become converts to Islâm." Hence Jasarath is often styled Jasarath Shaikhâ. — Raverty's *Notes*, p. 367.

⁴¹ *E. H. I.*, IV. p. 272.

⁴² *ib.* p. 29. Dibâlpur is the ancient Deobâlpur and the modern Dipâlpur. Ajûdhan is the modern Pâkpattan.

Khân and fled to the hills of Jûd, while the victor took possession of Lahore. Four years later occurred the grim interlude of Tîmûr's invasion. Shaikhâ, says the historian, out of enmity to Sârang Khân, early joined Tîmûr and acted as his guide, in return for which he received mercy and honour,⁴³ but before Tîmûr left India he made Shaikhâ prisoner, and with him all his wives and children.

According to the histories of Tîmûr, however, the Khôkhars played a much more important part in the resistance offered to the invading armies of Tîmûr than the *Târikh-i-Mubâarak-Shâhî* is inclined to admit. In October 1398 A. D., Tîmûr halted at Jâl on the Biâs, opposite Shâhpur. Here he learnt that Nusrat of the tribe of Khôkhar was established in a fortress on the bank of a lake. He attacked Nusrat, and completely routed him, taking immense booty in cattle and burning Nusrat's residence. Nusrat himself was slain. Some of his followers escaped across the Biâs, which Tîmûr crossed, marching from Shâh Nawâz to Janjân, a few days later.⁴⁴ We next read of Malik Shaikhâ or Shaikh Kûkar, 'commander of the infidels,' who was defeated and slain by Tîmûr in the valley of Kûpila or Hardwâr.⁴⁵ The *Zafarnâma*, however, differs from this account. It mentions Alâû'd-Dîn as a deputy of Shaikh Kûkarî, who was sent as an envoy to Kûpila,⁴⁶ and describes the advance of a Malik Shaikhâ as being misreported as the advance of Shaikh Kûkarî, one of Tîmûr's faithful adherents, a mistake which enabled Malik Shaikhâ to attack Tîmûr unawares, though he was promptly repulsed and killed. Then we hear of Tîmûr's arrival at Jammû on his homeward march. In its neighbourhood he captured seven strongholds, belonging to the infidels, whose people had formerly paid the *jizya* or poll-tax to the Sultân of Hindûstân, but had for a long time past cast off their allegiance. One of these forts belonged to Malik Shaikh Kûkar, but, according to the *Zafarnâma*, the owner of this stronghold was Shaikhâ, a relation of Malik Shaikh Kûkar⁴⁷ (or Shaikhâ Kûkarî), which possibly makes the matter clear:—Nusrat, the Khôkhâr, had been killed on the Biâs, after which his brother, Shaikhâ, submitted to Tîmûr, and was employed by him during his advance on Delhi.⁴⁸ The Malik Shaikhâ killed at Kupila was not a Khôkhar at all, but in Tîmûr's *Autobiography* he has become confused with Malik Shaikhâ the Khôkhar. Lastly, Malik Shaikhâ had a relative, probably a Khôkhar, who held a little fort near Jammû.⁴⁹

After his arrest by Tîmûr, Shaikhâ disappears from history; but in 823 A. H. (1420 A. D.), or some twenty-two years later, Jasrath (the son of) Shaikhâ makes his entrance on the scene. In that year the king of Kashmîr marched into Sindh, and was attacked by Jasrath, who defeated him, took him prisoner, and captured all his *matériel*. Elated by this success, Jasrath, an independent rustic, began to have visions about Delhi. Hearing that Khizr Khân (whom Tîmûr had left in charge of Multân as his feudatory, and who had become Sultân of Delhi in all but name) was dead, he crossed the Biâs and Sutlej, defeated the Mîna leaders, and ravaged the country from Ludhiâna to Arûbar (Rupar).⁵⁰ Thence he proceeded to Jâlandhar, and encamped on the Biâs, while Zîrak Khân, the *amîr* of Sâmâna, retired into the fort. After

⁴³ E. H. I., IV. p. 35.

⁴⁴ E. H. I., III. pp. 415-6.

⁴⁵ *Ib.* pp. 455-6; cf. p. 510.

⁴⁶ *Ib.* p. 605.

⁴⁷ According to the *Malûzât-i-Tîmûrî*, Malik Shaikhâ Khôkhar was the brother of Nusrat Khôkhar, formerly governor of Lahore on the part of Sultân Mahmûd of Delhi. After Nusrat's defeat Shaikhâ Khôkhar had submitted to Tîmûr, and had accompanied him on his march to the Jamna, his influence being sufficient for him to obtain protection for his subjects from pillage by Tîmûr's army. Shaikhâ, however, obtained Tîmûr's leave to return to Lahore, where he soon incurred the suspicion of being lukewarm in Tîmûr's cause, and Tîmûr sent orders to arrest Shaikhâ and levy a ransom from Lahore. E. H. I., III. p. 473. This account is confirmed by the *Zafarnâma*, which calls Nusrat Kûkarî brother of Shaikhâ Kûkarî—*ib.* p. 485. Raverty states that some authorities say that Shaikhâ died a natural death, while others allege that he was put to death, Jasrath being imprisoned in Samargand. Some years later Jasrath was released and returned home. There he put to death Shâhî, his brother, and, seizing Jâlandhar and Kalânaur, began to aspire the sovereignty of Hind.—Notes, p. 368.

⁴⁸ E. H. I., III. p. 520.

⁴⁹ *Ib.* p. 467.

⁵⁰ E. H. I., IV. p. 54. Raverty adds that he attacked Sirhind, but it was defended by Sultân Shâh Lodi and he failed to take it in 1421.—Notes, p. 368.

some negotiations it was agreed that the fort was to be evacuated and given up to Tûghân, the Turk-bacha (Jasrath's ally, who had taken refuge in his territories), while Jasrath was to pay tribute and return home. But as soon as Jasrath got Zîrak Khân into his camp, he detained him as a prisoner and carried him, securely guarded, to Ludhiâna, whence he marched to Sirhind. That fortress, however, defied all his attempts, and the Sultân Mubarak Shâh, advancing, compelled him to raise the siege and retreat on Ludhiâna, whence, having released Zîrak Khân, he crossed the Sutlej. The Sultân's forces then advanced as far as Ludhiâna, but were unable to cross the Sutlej, as Jasrath had secured all the boats. When the rains ceased, the Sultân withdrew to Kabûlpur,⁵¹ and Jasrath made a similar movement, whereupon the Sultân sent a force to effect a crossing at Rûpar. Jasrath marched on a line parallel to this force, but it effected a crossing, and the Sultân then passed the river without opposition. Jasrath's followers then abandoned the opposition he had chosen without striking a blow, and their leader fled hastily to Ludhiâna, whence he crossed the Biâs, the Râvî, and finally, after the Sultân had crossed the latter river near Bhowa,⁵² the Jânhâva (Chinâb). Jasrath now took refuge in his strongest place, Tekhar⁵³ in the hills, but Rai Bhîm⁵⁴ of Jammû guided the Sultân's forces to the stronghold, and it was captured and destroyed. Jasrath's power was, however, undiminished, for, as soon as the Sultân had returned to Delhi after restoring Lahore, he recrossed Chinâb and Râvî with a large force of horse and foot, and attacked Lahore and was only driven off after nearly five weeks' fighting round the fort. He then retreated on Kâlânaur to attack that stronghold, into which Rai Bhîm had thrown himself in order to relieve Lahore. After protracted fighting round Kâlânaur, Jasrath patched up a truce with Rai Bhîm and then went towards the Râvî, where he collected all the people of the territory of the Khôkhars, who were in alliance with him, but on the advance of an imperial army from Lahore, supported by one which advanced on the ford of Buhî, he again fled to Tekhar. The united forces of the Sultân now marched along the river Râvî and crossed it between Kâlânaur and Bhoh,⁵⁵ afterwards effecting a junction with Rai Bhîm on the confines of Jammû. These forces defeated some Khôkhars who had separated from Jasrath on the Chinâb.

In the following year (826 A. H. or 1423 A. D.) Jasrath defeated Rai Bhîm and captured most of his horses and *matériel*. The Rai himself was killed, and Jasrath now united himself to a small army of Mughals and invaded the territories of Dibâlpur and Lahore, but on the advance of the imperial leader he retired across the Chinâb.

After this the Khôkhars appear to have remained inactive for four or five years, but in 831 A. H. (1428 A. D.) Jasrath laid siege to Kâlânaur, and on advancing from Lahore to relieve the place, his old opponent, Sikandar Tuhfa, was defeated and had to retreat on Lahore. Jasrath then besieged Jâlandhar, but he was unable to reduce it, and so he retreated to Kâlânaur, carrying off the people of the neighbourhood as captives. Reinforcements were sent to Sikandar, but before they arrived, he had again advanced to Kâlânaur and united his forces with those of Rai Ghâlib of that town. These leaders then marched after Jasrath and completely defeated him at Kângrâ on the Biâs, recovering the spoils which he had gained at Jâlandhar. Jasrath again took refuge in Tekhar.

In 835 A. H. (1431-2 A. D.), however, Jasrath descended from Telhar (Tekhar) and marched on Jâlandhar. Sikandar drew out of Lahore to intercept him, but incautiously allowed his small force to be attacked by Jasrath's superior numbers and was defeated and taken prisoner, some of his followers escaping to Jâlandhar. Jasrath in triumph marched on Lahore and laid siege to it, but it was vigorously defended by Sikandar's lieutenants, and on the Sultân's advancing to Sâmâna to its relief, he abandoned the siege, but kept Sikandar in captivity.⁵⁵

⁵¹ Kâbulpur (Raverty).

⁵² Not identified; possibly Bhowa and Bhoh are the same.

⁵³ Thankar or Talhar in other historians. Farishta has Bisal, but that is on the Râvî. Raverty calls it Thankir. — E. H. I., IV. pp. 55-6.

⁵⁴ Raverty calls this *Hindu* Râjâ of Jammû Rai Bhalin, but adds that he was son-in-law of Ali Shâh of Kâshmîr, against whom Zainu'l-Abidin, his brother, enlisted Jasrath's aid. The Khôkhars and their ally marched from Siâlkot against the Sultân, Ali Shâh, and defeated him prior to 1423 A. D. About this time the Gakkhars, under Malik Kad, wrested their conquests from Zainu'l-Abidin.

⁵⁵ E. H. I., IV. p. 74.

In 835 A. H. (1432 A. D.) Malik Allāh-dād was appointed feudatory of Lahore, but he was promptly attacked on his arrival at Jālandhar by Jasrath, defeated and compelled to seek a refuge in the hills of Kothī.⁵⁶

In 840 A. H. (1436 A. D.) the Sultān Muhammad Shāh sent an expedition against Shaikhā (sic) Khōkhār, which ravaged his territories.⁵⁷

In 845 A. H. (1441 A. D.) the Sultān conferred Dibālpur and Lahore on Bahlol Khān and sent him against Jasrath, but Jasrath made peace with him and flattered him with hopes of the throne of Delhi.⁵⁸ After this the Khōkhār power declined, owing to causes of which we know nothing.

In the time of Akbar the Khōkhārs held 5 out of 52 *maḥālls* in the Lahore *sarkār* in the Bārī Doāb, and 7 out of 21 *parganas* in the Chinhaṭh Doāb, with one *maḥāll* each in the Bist-Jālandhar and Rachna Doābs. In the Dibālpur *sarkār* of Multān they held 3 out of 10 *maḥālls* in the Bist-Jālandhar Doāb, and one in the Berūn-i-Panjnad, west of the Indus. Raverty puts their population then at more than 200,000 souls.⁵⁹

It must be confessed that the above notes leave the question of the origin of the Khokhars precisely where it stood. In an account of the Kātīl Rājputs from Gurdāspur it is said that some of the (earliest) converts to Islām became known as Khokhars, but further on it says: "One of our ancestors settled in the fort of Mangla Devi in the Jammu State and then took possession of Kharipur. Hence his descendants became known as Khokhars," after being converted to Islām in the time of Mahmūd of Ghazni. And further on it says that Kātīls do not intermarry with Khokhars, because the latter are of their blood, and are descendants of Kātīls by Muhammadan wives.

II. — A HISTORY OF THE GAKKHARS.

The Gakkhars do not appear, *eo nomine*, in history until the time of the emperor Bābar. Their country, says the *Tabaqāt-i-Albārī*, lies on the Indus, well known as the Nilāb, and the territory from the Siwālik hills to the borders of Kashmīr has been from all times in their possession, though other tribes, such as the Khari,⁶⁰ Janūba, Jatriya, Bhūkyāl (Bhūgiā) and Jaṭ, dwell in those parts in subordination to the Gakkhars. In the *Tūzak-i-Bābarī*, Bābar describes the hill-country between the Nilāb and Bahra (Bherā), as inhabited by the Jaṭs, Gujars, and many other similar tribes under a Gakkhar *hākīm* or ruler, their government much resembling that of the Jūd and Janjūha and the lands adjoining the hill-country of Kashmīr. The government in this time was held by Tātār and Hātī, Gakkhars, who were cousins.⁶¹ Tātār's stronghold was Parhālah, Hātī's country was close adjoining the hills. Hātī was in alliance with Bābā Khān, who held Kālinjar,⁶² Tātār was in a certain way subject to Daulat Khān (the governor of the Panjāb), while Hātī remained independent. Tātār, at the instance of the *amīrs* of Hindustān (the Delhi kingdom) and in conjunction with them, was keeping Hātī in a state of blockade in some sort, when Hātī, by a stratagem, made a sudden advance, surprised Tātār, slew him and took his country. He then sent on Parbat, his relation, to Bābar with a contribution by way of tribute, but the envoy went to Bābar's main camp and thus missed the expedition which had already set out for Parhāla.

⁵⁶ E. H. I., IV. p. 75.

⁵⁷ *Ib.* p. 85: Jaserath must be meant.

⁵⁸ *Ib.* pp. 85-6.

⁵⁹ *Notes*, pp. 366-67. The Khōkhārs of the Jālandhar District do not mention Jaserath, but only date their settlement there from the time of the Sayyid kings. Mr. Purser (*Jullundur Settlement Report*, p. 16) says this is negative evidence that Jaserath was a Gakkhar, but he refers to Major Waterfield's *Gujrāt Settlement Report*, in which the Khōkhārs are quite correctly put down as descended from Jaserath, "who, with Bharat, took Jammu, when in Timur's service," and afterwards settled in the Gujrāt District. — See *Panjab Notes and Queries*, I. p. 141.

⁶⁰ Possibly the Khattars.

⁶¹ Abu'l-Fazl says that in the time of Zainu'l-Ābidīn of Kashmīr, Malik Kad, one of the nobles of Ghazni, dispossessed the Kāshmiris of the tract between the Jhelum and the Indus. He was succeeded by: (1) Malik Kalān, his son; Bīr, his grandson; Tātār, the opponent of Sher Khān and Salīm Khān, who had two sons, Sultāns Sārang and Adam. — Raverty's *Notes*, p. 366. Sārang's sons were Kamāl and Sa'id.

⁶² Kālinjar lies west of the Indus near Swābi. — Raverty's *Notes*, p. 274.

Bâbar, at this stage, arrived from Bahra on his way to Kâbul, and, instigated by the Janjûhas, old enemies of the Gakkhars, attacked Parhâla, which he took, Hâtî seeking safety in flight. Bâbar's guide to Barhâla was Sûrpa, Sarpa or Saropa, Gujar, a servant of the Malik Hast,⁶³ whose father had been slain by Hâtî. Hâtî now submitted to Bâbar.⁶⁴

After the Afghâns, headed by Sher Shâh, had recovered their power in India and expelled Humâyûn after Bâbar's death, the Sultân Sher Shâh made over the Ninduna *pargana* to Ismâ'il Khân Balôch in return for the Sarwânî territory, which had been usurped by the Baloches and which he restored to Shaikh Bayazîd Kalkapûr Sarwânî, its rightful owner.⁶⁵ Sher Shâh also marched through all the hills of Padmân and Garjâk⁶⁶ (or Girjhâk Ninduna⁶⁷), and selected a site for the great fortress of Rohtâs, which was designed both to hold in check the Gakkhars and restrain the Mughal invasions. The Gakkhars, however, prevented Tôdar Khatri, who was in charge of the work, from obtaining labour, and it was only by offering exorbitant pay that the Gakkhars were tempted to flock to the work.⁶⁸ Sher Shâh, moreover, sent a force against Rai Sârang, the Gakkhar, and subdued his country, plundering also the hill of Balnâo. Rai Sârang's daughter was captured and given to Khawâs Khân, one of Sher Khân's nobles,⁶⁹ while the Rai himself, having surrendered or being taken prisoner, was flayed alive.⁷⁰ His son Kamâl Khân was sent as a prisoner to Gwalior,⁷¹ in the Siwâlîks. Rohtâs was then committed to the care of Hâbîb Khân Niâzi and other leaders, 30,000 horse being kept in its neighbourhood to hold in check Kashmîr and the Gakkhar country.⁷² Rohtâs appear to have been thus partially built in 1540 A. D., but it was not completed till eight or ten years later.

In 955 A. H. (1543 A. D.) the Niâzis, defeated by the troops of Sultân Islâm or Salim Shâh Sur, fled for refuge to the Gakkhars' territory.⁷³ Upon this, Islâm Shâh advanced on Rohtâs, the completion of which he urged forward with much earnestness, and which work was carried out in not less than two years, amidst incessant and desperate fighting with the tribe. Sultân Âdam eventually sued for peace and agreed to compel the Niâzis to quit his territories.⁷⁴ Salim Shâh also released Kamâl Khân, son of Rai Sârang, and appointed him to act, in concert with the governor of the Pañjâb, in the subjugation of the Gakkhar territory.⁷⁵

In 1552 A. D. Kâmrân, driven from Kâbul by Humâyûn, sought a refuge in the territories of Sultân Âdam, who had succeeded his brother Sârang, but that chief sent word to the emperor Humâyûn that he was willing to acknowledge his authority and deliver Kâmrân into his hands. Kâmrân, however, took refuge with the Sultân Salim Shâh, on Humâyûn's advancing to Dinkot on the Indus,⁷⁶ but, failing to obtain any assistance in the Pañjâb, he returned in disguise to the Gakkhar territory on his way to Kâbul, and rashly disclosed his identity to Sultân Âdam, who surrendered him to Humâyûn, and he was blinded (September 1553 A. D.).⁷⁷ Humâyûn now marched against Pirâna, a chief of the Janjûha tribe, who held a strong fort in the Bhîra (Bherâ) country and secured his surrender, handing his territory over to Sultân Âdam.⁷⁸

After the restoration of Humâyûn, Kamâl Khân, son of Rai Sârang, was given half the territories held by his uncle (Sultân) Âdam Khân.⁷⁹ Âdam Khân resisted this mandate and a royal army had to be sent to enforce it. Âdam Khân was defeated and captured and his son fled into Kashmîr, but was subsequently taken also. Kamâl Khân then became sole chief of the Gakkhars and he detained Âdam Khân in captivity till his death.⁸⁰

In Akbar's reign the Gakkhars held 7 out of 42 *mahdîls* in the Sindh-Sâgar Doâb of the Lahore *sarkar*.⁸¹

⁶³ Who the Malik Hast was does not appear. See note 16, *supra*.

⁶⁵ *Ib.* p. 389.

⁶⁶ *Ib.* p. 390.

⁶⁷ *Ib.* V. p. 114.

⁶⁴ *E. H. I.*, IV. pp. 234-8.

⁶⁸ *Ib.* V. p. 115.

⁶⁹ *Ib.* V. p. 114, and IV. p. 390. A *Song of Khawâs Khân* is under publication in this Journal, and the present writer hopes to publish shortly a very curious legend connecting him with the shrine of Shâh Daulâ in Gujrât.

⁷⁰ *Ib.* V. p. 114. The *Târikh-i-Dâulat* says that Salim Shâh captured Sârang Sultân and had him flayed alive. —*Ib.* IV. 493.

⁷¹ Probably Kahlûr of the hills, *i. e.*, the old capital of the State of Kahlûr or Bilâspur in the Simlâ hills.

⁷² *E. H. I.*, IV. pp. 390 and 415.

⁷³ Erskine, II. p. 462; *cf.* p. 419.

⁷⁴ Erskine, II. pp. 465-6.

⁷⁵ *E. H. I.*, V. p. 279.

⁷⁶ *Ib.* V., pp. 278-9.

Erskine, *Baber and Humayoon*, II. 407. ⁷⁷ Elphinstone, p. 470.

⁷⁸ Erskine, II. p. 419.

⁷⁹ *E. H. I.*, V. p. 279.

⁸⁰ *Ib.* p. 280.

⁸¹ Raverty's *Notes*, p. 367.

AḤMAD SHAH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZĪR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

THE following narrative is taken from a Persian manuscript, being the third of four works bound together in a small quarto volume which I bought at Quaritch's some ten or twelve years ago. The other tracts are :—(1) *Inshāe Miram*, copied Safar 1198 H. (Dec. 1783) ; (2) *Inshāe 'Abdullah*, copied at Lakhnau, Rafī' I., 1198 H. (Feb. 1784) ; (3) the present narrative ; (4) a fragment of Mḥd. Aḥsān, Ma'ānī Yāb Khān (Ījād), Samānawī's *Farrukh-nāmah*. This fragment carries on this rare work to some date in 1128 H. (1716), that is, much farther than either B. Museum MS. Oriental, No. 25 (Rieu, 273), or the twenty-five folios of it in the Munich MS., No. 265 (Joseph Aumer, 'Catalogue.' 1866, p. 97).

The volume has on the flyleaf a list of contents in English, in an 18th century handwriting which I have seen elsewhere ; I think it is that of Jonathan Scott, Polier, or W. Francklin. Some one has noted that the initials " W. O." on the same flyleaf are those of Sir William Ouseley, presumably a former owner. The book was No. 387 in the bookseller, W. Straker's Catalogue of 1836, and in 1839 it belonged to Dr. John Lee of 5 Doctors' Commons, by whom it was lent to B. Dorn, when his 'History of the Afghans' was in preparation for the Oriental Translation Fund.

The account of Aḥmad Shāh Abdālī's incursion into India in 1757, as here presented, is one of three notable contributions to Indian history of the 18th century, for which we are indebted to the initiative of Captain Jonathan Scott ; and so far as I recollect, not one of them is referred to in the article devoted to him in the "Dictionary of National Biography." The other two works are :—(1) *Ḥadiqat-ul-aqālīm*, by Sheikh Murtaẓā Ḥusain, Bilgrāmī, surnamed Allahyār Šānī, H. M. Elliot's "accurate Moortuza Hosain" ; (2) *Shahādāt-i-Farrukhshiyar wa Jūlus-i-Muḥammad Shāh*, by Mirzā Muḥammad Bakḥsh, Ashob.

Šamīn is the author of *Sharā'if-i-'uṣmānī*, a history of Bilgrām Sheikh families written as a counterblast to Ghulām 'Alī, Āzād's *Ma'āṣir-ul-leirām fī tārikh-i Bilgrām*, a panegyric of the Saiyid families there. He pours fine scorn on Āzād, who was a *Samdhanī*, though he calls himself a *Bilgrāmī* ; that is, his mother was of Bilgrām, but his father Muḥammad Nūh was of Samdhan, an obscure village on the other side of the Ganges, between Farrukhābād and Qannauj. In the *Sharā'if* (my copy, page 255) we find that Ghulām Ḥasan, poetically Šamīn, Šadiqī, Farshūrī, Bilgrāmī, was the son of Sheikh Ghulām Ḥusain, son of Qāzī Faizullah of Bilgrām (now in the Hardoi district). He was born about 1129 H. (1716-17) and had a brother called Muḥammad Šadiq (poetically Sukhanwar). He traces his descent in the 37th degree from Abī Bakr, Šadiq ; and for 25 generations his ancestors had been *qāzīs* of Bilgrām. Up to 1179 H. (1765-6) Šamīn had three sons and two daughters. The present narrative shows that he was alive in 1197 H. (1782-3). I have found no record of his death.

I think the story here given is of great historical value, as it furnishes us with a first-hand account of actual events. The doings of Aḥmad Shāh in India, except those leading up to the crowning victory of Pānīpat in January 1761, are elsewhere recorded for the most part in a vague, confused manner. Many points are cleared up by Šamīn's story, and it helps to do for Aḥmad Shāh's Indian record, what Dr. Oskar Mann has done so brilliantly for his non-Indian conquests, in a series of articles in the Z. D. M. G. for 1893. The intercalated narrative of 'Imād-ul-mulk's marriage troubles is new and curious ; and it throws further light on the character of Mu'īn-ul-mulk's widow, the disagreeable traits in which are largely depicted in Ghulām 'Alī Khān's *Muqaddamah* and the autobiography of her husband's house-slave, Mirzā Tahmāsp, Miskīn.

God the Helper,

In the Name of
God, the Compassionate,
the Merciful.

— and may the
end be
favorable.

After praises and prayer, this humble slave (May God impress truth on him) Ghulām Ḥasan, Ṣamīn, (God pardon him and his connections) states that in the year 1197 after the Holy Flight of the Prophet (the Protection of God be upon him, and Peace), at the instigation of a friend, Shekh Allahyār, Bahādūr (May God on High save him), son of Shekh Allahyār, the martyr;¹ I arrived in the town of Allahābād, and was introduced to the extremely improving audience of the Lord of Benefits, Captain Jonathan Scott, Bahādūr, (May his Good Fortune endure). The beauty of his condescension is more than can be brought forth by the strength of this wounded pen. (Verse.)

<i>Kih dārad ham chū ū luṭf wa saḥhā wa shafkat</i>	"Who like him has grace, liberality, affection,
<i>wa aḥsān,</i>	kindness,
<i>Dil-i-ḥūrram, ruh-i-zibā, lab-i-shirīn, jabīn-i-</i>	"A joyous heart, a handsome face, sweet speech,
<i>anwar ;</i>	an ample brow ;
<i>Zī shukr-i-madh wa aḥhlāq-i-karīm-i-ū farū</i>	"I fail in recounting his praise and his gracious
<i>mānd,</i>	manners,
<i>Zabān 'ājiz, khīrad ḥairān, suḥhan qāṣir, qalam</i>	"My tongue stammers, my wits wander, my
<i>muṣṭarr ;</i>	words suffice not, my pen stumbles ;
<i>Sāzad gar man warā dā'im ba ṭaba' khūsh zī</i>	"If for ever I could do what my heart and soul
<i>jān-o-dīl,</i>	desire
<i>Kunam khidmat, buram farmān, niham gardan,</i>	"I should serve him, obey him, bow before him,
<i>shavvam kihtar.</i>	be his humble servant."

In the said year 1197 H. (1782-83) by order of the said Captain Ṣāhib, I wrote something of the doings of Aḥmad Shāh, the Abdālī king, when long ago, in the year 1169 H. (1755-6), he (Aḥmad Shāh) entered the capital, Shāhjahānābād. It was then the reign of 'Azīz-ud-dīn, emperor of Hind, entitled 'Ālamgīr Ṣānī. All these events the writer beheld with his own eyes ; and I now reduce them to writing. Owing to the haste in which I write, I have paid no heed to elegance or style or the employment of metaphor. In spite of scantiness of acquisition and absence of ability, I have not been afraid to become the submissive carrier-out of that Ṣāhib's orders.

Be it known then, wherever the tongue of the pen mentions "Shāhan Shāh," it means Aḥmad Shāh, king of the Abdālī, and the words "Emperor of Hind" indicate 'Azīz-ud-dīn, 'Ālamgīr II. ; and where the phrase "Great Wazīr" occurs, Shāh Walī Khān, the minister of the Abdālī, is intended. By "'Imād-ul-mulk" is meant Nawab Ghīyāz-ud-dīn, minister of the emperor of Hind and grandson of Nawāb Nizām-ul-mulk. By "Nawāb Ghazanfar Jang" is meant Aḥmad Khān, Bangash, ruler of Farrukhābād ; and "Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah" means the son of Nawāb Abu'l Maṣṣūr Khān, Bahādūr, Ṣafdar Jang, nāzim of the ṣubāh of Akhtarnagar Audh.

ACCOUNT OF SAIYID SHER ANDĀZ KHĀN.

Be it remembered that the writer, in order to gain his livelihood, was for several years with that Protector of Saiyids, one Muḥammad Ṣāliḥ (poetically, Sayyāḥ), bearing the title of Sher Andāz Khān Bahādūr, an employé of the late Nawāb Ṣafdar Jang already mentioned. He was on duty in attendance upon Nawāb Zafar Jang, Khān Zamān Khān Bahādūr, 'Alī Qulī Khān, Dāghistānī (poetically, Wāliḥ), and nicknamed the "Six-fingered."

¹ "The martyr," he was killed in battle on Oct. 20, 1780, outside Aḥmadābād in Gujarāt. He was chief commander under Surbuland Khān, the governor, who fought his successor in the government, Rājah Abhai Singh of Jodhpur.

The deceased Saiyid (Sher Andāz Khān) was a native of the town Shāhī, which lies between the towns of Bareli and Pilibhit. He was exceptionally well-instructed in all sciences, unequalled in valour, generosity and enterprise. At the age of twelve the Saiyid left his country of origin to obtain instruction, and was for nearly two and a half years in the house of this poor one's respected grandfather, with whom he read Arabic as far as the Sharḥ of the Mullā. After that time he went to the town of Ṣaifipur,² the honoured burial-place of the venerable Shāh Ṣaifī, and there the then occupier of the seat of authority, Miyan 'Abdullah Ṣāhib, adopted him as his son.

After the lapse of some time the Saiyid became anxious to make the journey to the Hajāz and other places of pilgrimage. Accordingly with this intent he quitted Ṣaifipur, and binding the skirt of enterprise round the middle of his heart, he made for the regions of 'Arabistān, and by the special grace of the Lord was honoured by a visit to the Holy Ka'bah, Luminous Madīnah, Holy Najaf, Exalted Karbalā, Mashhad the Pure, and other places.

When he came back to Hindūstān Nawāb Ṣafdar Jang urged him to take service and dealt with him honorably. In this space of time the Saiyid was a noted man of the age, honoured and valued by mighty sovereigns, famed *wazīrs*, and high nobles. After Ṣafdar Jang came Nawāb Shujā-ud-daulah, and he, too, omitted no detail of honour and respect.

Then in the year 1173 H. (1759-60) for the second [? third] time the Abdālī king came from Wilāyat to Hindūstān, and rooted out the Infidel, that is to say, Rājah Bhāo and others of the Mahrattah armies. At this period the deceased Saiyid was in the service of Nawāb Ghazāufar Jang, Aḥmad Khān Bangash, ruler of Farrukhābād. At the invitation of the Abdālī king, Aḥmad Khān, Bangash, sent the deceased (Sher Andāz Khān) to see Rājah Bhāo, leader of the Mahrattahs to conduct certain negotiations.

The Saiyid, having to some extent settled the business with the Mahrattah leaders, was returning to the Abdālī king's camp. On his way he was passing through the *parganahs* of the Jāt. There the control on behalf of Najib Khān was in the hands of Sa'ādat Khān, Afridī Afghān. On hearing [of the Saiyid's arrival] this man sent a message. "In God's name come and stay, even for an hour or so, with me. I have something of importance to tell you."

The Saiyid turned off his road and with a limited retinue went to visit the said Khān (Sa'ādat Khān, Afridī). The Khān then asked the Saiyid to tell the Abdālī Shāh that the army of the accursed Jāt was very numerous, while he (Sa'ādat Khān) had a very small force. He hoped that troops would be sent by His Majesty to reinforce him. The conversation was still going on, when a spy came to say that a force of Jāts, nearly 7,000 horsemen, was within a distance of two *kos*, and would be soon close to them. The Khān (Sa'ādat Khān) ordered his troops, one thousand horse and foot all told, to prepare for a fight. To the Mīr Ṣāhib he said: "Let the gentleman withdraw to his own camp." The Mīr Ṣāhib replied: "I am a Saiyid, I do not turn my face from a battle-field. Above all, when it is for a Musulmān, as you are. For God's cause you had called me here; and, by God, to yield up my breath for you will be accounted martyrdom."

So saying he urged his horse on to the field, and began a stout contest with the infidels and defeated them. The infidels, who were advancing boldly, were beaten back. At this point another body came out of the same force and discharged their arrows and fired their matchlocks; the Saiyid was wounded in the right thigh. To this he paid no heed, but pressed like another Rustam on the accursed foe, broke their ranks, and cut off four men's heads. He also sustained three or four sword wounds himself on his right arm and shoulder. He continued the contest and cut down several other men. Accordingly, the accursed ones could not resist and took to flight, and he was the winner of a great victory. The Saiyid, followed by two of his horsemen, started in pursuit of the infidels. Then about one hundred horsemen of the infidel's force appeared on his right flank, surrounding him and his two men. The Saiyid was wounded several times with lance and arrow

² The *Ṣaifpur* of the "Oudh Gazetteer," III. 281; it is in the Unao district.

and sabre. At length a sword-cut took him on the right side and cut through him to the opposite side; he fell from his horse to the ground. Immediately after this the enemy's force disappeared. God also willed that the two troopers, too, should become martyrs. At that time heavy rain came on and both sides retreated to their own quarters.

When the news reached the other followers of that Saiyid received into Mercy, who were encamped at a distance of three *kos*, they returned the next morning and carried the Saiyid back from the place where he fell to the previous camping ground. They say his body had on it fourteen sword and lance wounds between his waist and head, besides two matchlock wounds, one on the right thigh, and the other on the left foot. *Anā, llāh wa anā 'ilāhi rāj'ūn.*

In that year [1173 H. 1759-60] the writer was in the service of Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, son of 'Alī Muḥammad Khān, Rohelah. At that period Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, on the advice of Hāfiẓ Raḥmat Khān and others, had, at the request of the Abdālī Shāh, left the town of Sambhal in his dominions, and was encamped five *kos* off at the town of Ḥasanpur. On hearing of the martyrdom of the Saiyid, the writer composed a chronogram, of which the line containing the date is as follows (*Misra'*) :—

Ba rāh-i-haqq shahid-i-akbar shudāh, āh! (Year 1173 H.).

THE NARRATIVE RETURNS TO THE EVENTS IN 1169 H. (1755-56).

I return to my narrative. When the said deceased Saiyid in the year 1169 (1755-6) left Shujā'-ud-daulah, and had to search for a livelihood, he was summoned to Farrukhābād by Nawāb Ghāẓanfar Jang. The Saiyid took the writer with him.

In that same year the Abdālī Shāh came from Wilāyat *vid* Kābul and entered Shāhjahanābād, causing throughout Hindūstān a great convulsion. In all directions the *zamindārs* raised their heads in rebellion and blocked the traffic on all the roads. At that time the rescripts of the Abdālī Shāh, which in their official language are called *raqam*, arrived one after another, calling for the attendance of Nawāb Ghāẓanfar Jang with the greatest insistence. Quick-riding horsemen of the Shah's, they are called *chapar*, brought these despatches to Farrukhābād. Their tenour was as follows. As soon as the Shāh's order (*raqam*) had been perused, he (Ghāẓanfar Jang) must start for the Shāh's Presence, where he would be the recipient of kingly favours. In case of any delay, he might rely on the arrival of an avenging army, "which will seize thee in whatever condition thou mayest be found, and drag thee to the Exalted Camp, and deliver thee there: and I shall issue an order for thy territory to be ravaged and plundered. It is necessary that in person thou come hastily and at once with thy army and thy treasure to Our Presence."

As is usual in Hindūstān, Ghāẓanfar Jang erected a *farmān-bāri* tent of scarlet cloth outside Farrukhābād at the distance of one *kos*, while he himself advanced two *kos* beyond the tent to receive the *farmān*. He conducted the despatch-riders with all due ceremony to the reception tent. There he first placed the Shāh's letter (*raqam*) upon his head, and then read it and ascertained the contents. In this manner for four days in succession, and without any interval, did letters from the Shāh arrive at Farrukhābād. Every day Ghāẓanfar Jang mounted and went out to receive them and bring them to the Tent of Honour, where he inspected them and read them.

From this cause the Nawāb fell into somewhat of a perturbation and perplexity, forcing him to reflect on many things. He had "neither legs to run away nor strength to go forward" (*Nah pāe garekhtan wa nah yārāe raftan*). He therefore called together all the heads of his army and demanded their advice. He asked what their opinion was, what plan should be resorted to, and what should be devised. For he had no treasure, nor was his army such that he could lift his head in opposition to any one, nor had he any strong fortress in the vicinity of Farrukhābād where he could place his family in security. In addition, the Mahrattah armies

were present in great numbers, moving to and fro in his territories. Over and above all this, Shujā'-ud-daulah's heart was turned against him, because he had procured the betrothal of 'Alī Qulī Khān's daughter to 'Imād-ul-mulk. "While I myself [*i. e.*, Ghazan ar Jang] am lame "and thus useless. If perchance the Shāh's army arrives here and carries me off to his "head-quarters, my country will be devastated and destroyed. After that calamity, what "possibility is there of again restoring it to prosperity. For on every side are powerful enemies, "lords of treasure and of armies, who dwell on the confines of my territories. In this state of "things, what remedy is there?"

Previously, during the invasion of Nādir Shāh, the inhabitants of Hindūstān had seen and heard of the general slaughter and the plundering and destruction of Shāhjahānābād. Moreover, these Afghāns round about Farrukhābād had, subsequent to Nādir Shāh's time, been badly handled by Nawāb Šafdar Jang, being ruined and reduced to poverty, and forced to flee to the hill regions. Thus they were at a loss what answer to give, each one of them lost hand and foot [became helpless] and brought to their lips silly words. But some of them who were famed for judgment and wise planning, represented as follows.

The advisable thing is that Your Excellency march two or three stages in the direction of Shāhjahānābād, and fix on some place for several halts. When these days of halting have passed, you should again march two or three *kos* and once more halt. In this manner the Shāh [Abdālī] will become aware that you are coming to join him and will send no army. Should a force arrive, it will come to join itself to yours. You should leave troops in Farrukhābād to protect your women and family; then, if anything happens, these men can carry off your family to the hills.

To sum up: nothing was decided on, which could allay Ghazanfar Jang's anxieties: fear and dread fell upon every one's heart, both gentle and simple. Great and little men, they all engaged in making plans for flight. Ghazanfar Jang neither ate nor slept.

In the end Mīr Sher Andāz Khān, who has already been spoken of, represented that to his imperfect understanding the following scheme had presented itself. Let a trusty person from the Nawab's entourage be sent to interview the Shāh; let him be provided with letters and petitions to the Shāh and the chief Wazīr, setting forth in detail his (Aḥmad Khān's) position, the power of the Mahrattahs, his enemies, and their occupation of his lands. If this faithful one [Sher Andāz Khān] were thought worthy of this task, Please God Most High! he would return having arranged all these points favourably, or obtain even a little more.

After much discussion and considerable reflection, the above proposal was accepted as wise and prudent. The Mīr Šāhib was to be despatched with some presents and rarities. Accordingly, they collected 101 gold coins, one thousand rupees struck at Farrukhābād, twenty lengths of gold brocade (*kamkhwāb*), seven pairs of shawls, twenty lengths of figured cloth (*mashrū*), and forty silk scarves with drawn-thread work (*kashdah*) designs on them. These last are in length and breadth the size of a shawl; they are the product of Mau town.³ All these things were sent as an offering to the Shāh. There were also five lengths of *kamkhwāb* brocade, two pairs of shawls, ten lengths of figured cloth (*mashrū*), forty yards (*dira'*) of green and scarlet broad-cloth and ten Mau scarves; all for the chief minister, namely, Shāh Walī Khān. Four lengths of *kamkhwāb*, two pairs of shawls, seven scarves from Mau; these were to be given to Jangbāz Khān, Bangash, one of the famed nobles and a commander over 5,000 horsemen. This man was of Ghazanfar Jang's own tribe; and, owing to his excessive valour, the Shāh had been pleased to proclaim him as his own son.

When all these things had been collected, the Mīr Šāhib was sent off with bags containing the petitions and papers, stating the objects sought. One Aḥmad Khān, a petty officer, was sent with him, because he knew the Afghān and Turkī languages. The said Khān joined singly

³ Mau is 16 miles W. of Farrukhābād.

and marched with the Mir, leaving his regiment at Farrukhābād. The first day's halt was made in the *Sarāe* at Atāipur.⁴ Through fear of the villagers and of thieves, every one had run away and our whole night was passed in watching.

Next day we were at Qādirganj,⁵ which is situated on the edge of the Ganges and was founded by Shujā'at Khān. We rested there. Next morning we crossed the river (Ganges) and reached the town of Bisauli, founded by Donde Khān, Rohelah. The Mir Šāhib went to interview Donde Khān.⁶ As it happened, on that day Mullā Sardār Khān, Bakhshi, was present. He said that Ahmad Khān (Bangash) was their sovereign, but when he had taken opium he invented silly ideas. "Your prey is not caught every time. He does not render thanks to God sufficiently; the Most High having protected him from the hands of the Īrānīs⁷ and brought "him back from the hills and set him up again at Farrukhābād."

The Mir Šāhib said : "It is for that reason that I have appeared here, so that what you "advise can be put into execution." Sardār Khān replied : "There is no harm in your going, "for Najib Khān has written to me that the Shāh has mentioned repeatedly that he had come "to uphold Islām ; above all, to support the Afghān clans, whose territories have been occupied "by the unbelieving Mahrattahs.. Since Ahmad Khān, too, is an Afghān, he (the Shāh) will "undoubtedly bestow attention on his circumstances. But where has Ahmad Khān the troops "and the treasure, that he can cope successfully with the difficult undertakings that are ahead "of him. Without a large and powerful force it will be impossible to expel the Mahrattahs. "The Shāh has come to Hindūstān on this occasion, but he will not remain here."

Donde Khān entertained the Mir Šāhib as his guest for one day, and gave him an attendant (*jilwadār*) by way of escort, to accompany him to his boundary and then return.

Thus after three days we reached *pargana*h Baran, which is known as Ūnchah-gaṇw.⁸ There, one Karam Khān was *faujdar* on behalf of Donde Khān. He, too, kept us as his guests for one day. He gave us ten Rohelahs to go with us as escort to Sikandrah, and thence to return. From Baran in three days we reached Sikandrah, which was full everywhere of fugitives from round about Shāhjahanābād.

The Mir Šāhib left his retinue behind at Sikandrah, and taking only the limited number of thirty servants, six cavalry men, and three baggage camels, decided to push on farther. On the fourth day we were at the town of Anūpshahr, which lies on the river (Ganges) bank. On these marches, in every village we passed, not a sign of an inhabitant was to be seen, and along the route unnumbered dead bodies were lying. Anūpshahr, too, was crowded with fugitives from Shāhjahanābād, to such an extent that it was difficult to force a way through its lanes. The Rājah of Anūpshahr came to visit the Mir Šāhib, and made known to us that from of old time *pargana*h Anūpshahr had continued in the *jāgīr* of the *Bakhshi-ul-mamālik*, and at that time was in the *jāgīr* of Amir-ul-umarā, Nawāb Najib-ud-daulah, that is, Najib Khān.⁹ Under the oppressive hand of his Rohelahs its lands had fallen out of cultivation, and every year the amount of waste land was increasing. If the gentleman (*i. e.*, the Mir Šāhib, Sher Andāz Khān, would exert himself to get it (*parg.* Anūpshahr) transferred to the *jāgīr* of Ghāzanfar Jang, and if the said Šāhib were sent there in charge of it on behalf of that noble, they would reach the summit of their desires and their prosperity would return. The Mir Šāhib agreed to try.

As it chanced, the author had gone to water his horse at the river (Ganges). I saw two horsemen, residents of Bilgrām, giving water to their horses. I recognized them and enquired

⁴ Now spelt 'Atāipur' ; it is close to Mau-Qāimganj.

⁵ In the Etah district.

⁶ He died 5th Muharram, 1185 H., 19th April 1771 ; he was the father-in-law of Najib Khān, Najib-ud-daulah (*Tārīkh-i-Muhammadi*). Sardār Khān, Bakhshi, died on the 22nd Shawwāl, 1185 H., 30th January 1772 (*Chahār Gulshan-i-Shujā'i* of Har Charan Dās, B. M. Or., 1732, fol. 187^b).

⁷ An allusion to Šafdar Jang's attacks in 1750, 1751.

⁸ "High Village," now known as *Buland-Shahr*, "High Town"; it is in the Dūābah.

⁹ In other words, Najib Khān held at the time the office of *Bakhshi-ul-Mamālik*.

from them what they were doing. They told me that for three years past they had been living in the service of Rāe Bahādur Singh, master of Dāsnah. At the moment, the Shāh having come to Shāhjahanābād and ordered a general slaughter in *pargana* Dāsnah, Rājah Mushtāq Rāe, brother's son of Rāe Bahādur Singh, had fled from that place with his family, and had come to Anūpshahr, bringing a few of his armed men with him. The writer had a former friendship with Mushtāq Rāe, when the said Rāe in the time of Mahārājah Naval Rāe¹⁰ had come from Dāsnah in search of employment, and for about a month stayed in my humble home; from that time I had a great intimacy with him.

In the afternoon I went to pay the Rāe a visit. Owing to the general slaughter at Dāsnah and the plundering of his goods, he was in low spirits. I said: "As your House (*i. e.*, harem) has escaped, lots more property can be acquired. Praise be to God! Your family and connections have been protected from slaughter and dishonour." Owing to these words he assumed to a certain extent a more cheerful exterior, and occupied his mind with other talk. After three quarters of an hour, I asked for leave and returned to my tent. From among those armed men of Bilgrām, I selected four men who were of tested valour; the Mir Šāhib took them into his service, and they accompanied us.

The Mir Šāhib made one day's halt in Anūpshahr. Thence in three days' marching we reached the camp of Nawāb Najib Khān, whose tents were near a town called Dankaur¹¹ on the bank of the Jamnah river. We paid a visit to the Nawāb and he gave us the information that he was sending back some *nasaqchīs* (armed messengers) of the Shāh, and that on the following day he would send off the Mir Šāhib in charge of some of these *nasaqchīs*, who would not only be a protection, but could act as guides until our arrival at the Shāh's camp. This plan was put into execution, and the Mir Šāhib made a present to the two horsemen of twenty rupees. Then, crossing the Jamnah we made our way to the Shāh's camp.

As it turned out, the Shāh had on this very day begun his march from Shāhjahanābād¹² and pitched his tents at Farīdābād, a distance of ten *kos* from the camp of Najib Khān. When we had travelled two *kos* of the distance, we saw eight *kos* away the dust raised by the Shāh's army, the cloud appearing as if it were a mountain stretching its head to heaven. When five *kos* only intervened, we struck on a body of five thousand horsemen, forming the *qarawal* or skirmishers, who had pitched their tents. They were galloping about in all directions, and whomsoever they caught was slain and plundered. Accordingly, a body of one hundred horsemen turned their faces in our direction, with the intention of laying hands upon us. The *nasaqchīs* advanced to our front and spoke in the Turkish language some words to them, by which they forbore their attack.

You must understand that twenty thousand horsemen are attached to the Shāh's train as skirmishers, five thousand men being sent from the army in four different directions to a distance of five *kos*, where they encamp. There they remain on duty as skirmishers.

To return to my narrative. At one watch before sunset the Mir Šāhib said to the *nasaqchīs*: "Will you take us to the place where are the tents of Jangbāz Khān, Bangash?" The *nasaqchīs* pointed out that the force of Jangbāz Khān was camped in the rear of the Shāh's army, he being on duty as rear-guard. The distance from where we were might be seven *kos*. Therefore, we must put our horses to the gallop in order to be able to reach that spot before nightfall. Thus, following the *nasaqchīs*, we reached the place by dark. There-

¹⁰ The Deputy Governor of Audh on behalf of Šafdar Jang; he was killed at Khudāganj (Farrukhābād District) on the 1st August 1750.

¹¹ In the Bulandshahr district on the left bank of the Jamnah, 28 m. S.-E. of Delhi.

¹² This passage shows that the author's date for his narrative, 1169 H., is not quite exact. Aḥmad Shāh, Abdālī, left the Dihlī fort-palace for Khizrābād on the 2nd Jamādā II., 1170 H., 22nd Feb. 1757; see B. Museum, Oriental MS., No. 1749, fol. 102^a.

we learnt that two days before Jangbāz Khān had been sent off by the Shāh to slay and plunder in *pargana*h Mirāth.

The *nasagchis* said to the Mīr Ṣāhib : " Your best plan now is to go to the division of the " chief minister, and put up there. Outside his camp you will find a place where you will be " safe. We have now to present ourselves for duty at the *Darikhānah*,¹³ and the *Khargah*,¹³ " of the Shāh, and this duty is imperative." The Mīr Ṣāhib gave them a second present of twenty rupees. For the time the *nasagchis* were satisfied and agreed to continue as our guides. When one and a half hours of the night had passed, we came to the standard of the chief minister. This standard stood all by itself in the open plain, while the tents were scattered round it at a distance of two musket-shot. We made the camels sit down close to the flag-staff, and were about to unload them, when, all of a sudden, two *nasagchi*-troopers came out of a tent, rushed their horses at us, and began to beat the camel-men, saying in the Turkī tongue: " Get " away from here, this is no place for camping upon."

Ahmad Khan, Afghān, who had come with the Mīr Ṣāhib from Farrukhābād, and knew Turkī, began to argue with them. Then one of the two drew his sword and came at him, saying: " Thou dost not listen to my orders, I will decapitate thee." While this talk was going on, a horseman rode up from the left hand, and said to the Mīr Ṣāhib : " My commander, " one 'Uṣmān Khān of Qasūr¹⁴ *pargana*h, is serving with the Shāh; he saw you from his tents " and noticed that you were Hindūstānis and he has kindly sent for you to come and pitch " your tents close to his. You should not argue with *nasagchis*, for a lot more will swarm " round, and, without any hesitation, will have recourse to their swords."

Thus the Mīr Ṣāhib went to 'Uṣmān Khān. The said Khān was most hospitable, and forthwith had another tent put up for himself, and gave his own up to the Mīr Ṣāhib. He also treated us as his guests and had a quantity of food sent to the Mīr Ṣāhib, such as Peshāwar rice, the mutton of a fat-tailed sheep (*dumbah*), and thin bread (*nān-i-tanak*), prepared in the Hindūstāni mode by the slave-girls who accompanied that Khān Ṣāhib. We passed the night there in great comfort.

'Uṣmān Khān was in command of 7,000 horsemen, and was a noble of position, with the rank of a *Haft Hazāri*, and the Shāh had given him a jewelled aigrette with a plume of feathers. The Shāh's practice is that, except famed commanders, no one is allowed to place on his cap (*tāj*) any jewelled aigrette or a plume. This is the sign by which the nobles can be distinguished.

To resume. There was one Maulvī Maḥmūd, a Kashmīrī, who formerly acted as *wakīl* (agent) for 'Alī Qulī Khān, the Six-Fingered, in the camp of Nawāb Ṣafdar Jang. At this time, 'Alī Qulī Khān being dead,¹⁵ this man was in attendance on the Mīr Ṣāhib. When three-quarters of an hour remained of the night, he was sent to visit 'Imād-ul-mulk and lay our case before him.

'Imād-ul-mulk said : " Let the Mīr Ṣāhib come to me, I am quite anxious to see him. " Arise and in all haste bring him, saying, that after I have seen him I will attend to the " carrying out of whatever it is wisest to do." That very moment the Maulvī came back and said : " I have been to 'Imād-ul-mulk, and he sits waiting for a visit from the Mīr Ṣāhib, and has " said thus and thus." The Mīr Ṣāhib replied : " On no account shall I go first to visit " the Indian *Wazīr*, seeing that Ghazanfar Jang will imagine that his affairs have been arranged " through his intervention. First of all I shall visit the chief minister [of the Abdālī], and do

¹³ These are kinds of tents, but, as we are told further on, the first name was applied to the office-tents and the second to the Shāh's own quarters.

¹⁴ Qasūr is to the S.-E. of Lāhor, and the head-quarters of a colony of *Khawashgī* Afghāns.

¹⁵ He had died on the 1st Bajab 1169 H., 31st March 1753, *Tārīkh-i-Muḥammadī*, year 1169.

"whatever he directs." Upon this the Maulvī returned to 'Imād-ul-mulk and communicated to him the Mir Šāhib's intentions.

'Imād-ul-mulk said: "I, too, am coming to the chief minister, let the Mir Šāhib make haste, for this is the very hour for seeing that noble." Near sunset the Mir Šāhib mounted, and, taking the sealed bag with the petition and the statements and letters about the present and the requests to be made, arrived at the tent of the chief minister. It was a small tent and the *Wazīr* sat in it with a small and light wrapper (*pirāhan*) thrown over his body, brocade drawers, and a white fillet (*tāqīyah*) round his head. At the door was no door-keeper (*hājib*) or other hindrance. Before him lay a large white bolster (*gāo-takīyah*) in the fashion of Hindūstān. 'Imād-ul-mulk was sitting there too, on one side of the *Wazīr*, and had on a full-skirted coat (*jāmah*) of blue-coloured brocade, and a parti-coloured turbān (*chītrah*) of figured cloth of the same colour; he sat crouched on his two knees, on the left side of, but even with, the *Wazīr*.

Before the Mir Šāhib had arrived, 'Imād-ul-mulk had made a representation to the chief minister. When the Mir Šāhib entered the tent, he said at once, "Peace be upon thee" and then brought out an offering of four gold coins and five rupees of Farrukhābād mintage. This gift was accepted. Following this, the Mir, in imitation of the Abdālī nobles, placed his head on the knees of the chief minister, and the minister placed his hand upon the Mir Šāhib's back, raised up his head, and said: "Let your heart be at rest. In the matters for which you have come you will obtain all you desire and be given leave to depart." Then the Mir was told to sit down alongside of 'Imād-ul-mulk. The author was then presented, and I sat down at the side of the Mir Šāhib.

The chief minister asked about the state of Ghazanfar Jang, the Mahrattah armies, and the fort of Farrukhābād. The talk finished, he sent for one Mirzā Mustafā the Shāh's Secretary, (*munshī*) and read aloud the letter which was addressed to himself. When he had mastered the contents, he said: "I am now going to an audience with the Shāh; you sit where you are and I will state your case. If you should be sent for, you must come; or, if the petition of "Ghazanfar Jang only is asked for, you must send it."

At this moment a runner (*shāfir*) arrived in haste from the Shāh's tent, which had been set up a quarter of a *kos* away, with an open plain between. The messenger shouted out "*Sardārā! Sardārā!*" that is, "O Chief." On the sound reaching the ear of the chief minister he at once put on his attire as a Kizzilbāsh, on his head a hat (*kalah*), and on it a jewelled aigrette, with a plume of feathers. He mounted his 'Irāqī horse and hastened to the audience, followed by one man only, who is called a *yatīm* (servant?) The Mir Šāhib and 'Imād-ul-mulk were left sitting at the chief minister's tent.

'Imād-ul-mulk said to the Mir Šāhib: "There is a question that I have long been desirous of putting to you, give me an answer to it. It is a matter of astonishment to me that a man like you, a man of purpose and valour, should be on the spot; and yet allow Nawāb Aḥmad Khān, in opposition to your advice, to betroth the daughter of 'Alī Qulī Khān, the Six-Fingered, to me and make her over to me."

The Mir Šāhib replied: "I had gone away to Lakhnau and I had told the Nawāb Shujā-ud-daulah to place five hundred horsemen under my orders, and I would bring away the whole family of 'Alī Qulī Khān from Farrukhābād to Lakhnau. But the Nawāb was inspired by his mother with fright at Ghazanfar Jang, and he was also in dread of Your Excellency (i. e., 'Imād-ul-mulk). Thus, he put off a decision from one day to another. Since I had no special interest in the subject I, too, withdrew from the project."

(To be continued)

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 356.)

V. — SUPERSTITIONS.

Omens and Names.

If a Chuhra goes on a journey and meets a *mirāsi*, he goes back. If some one calls after him he goes back. The braying of a donkey meeting him is a good omen. If a washerman meets a man beginning a journey, it is sufficient to send him back, certain of failure if he goes on. Some men are known to carry good fortune, and are sent out to meet travellers.

A Chuhra never steps over a broom. The broom that is used to sweep corn is hung up on a nail in the house. That for ordinary use is placed on a grave, but never upright.

Children are frequently given names arising out of superstitious: thus *Kākā* is used as a first name. *Ghasitā* means dragged, that is, dragged over a dust heap, *rūrī*. *Būrā* has the same meaning. As the name is one of dishonour, the evil-eye will not fall on the children that bear it. *Likar* means having half of the head shaved, and the other not; this is to keep the child alive. *Nathū* means having a ring in the nose, to hold him and keep him from going away, i.e., dying.

Oaths, magic and witchcraft.

The oath by *Bālā Shāh* is used.

The practice of magic arts is confined to *faqīrs* and *pīrs*. It is the *sauhrī*²⁷ that bring evil spirits. A person possessed is cured in the following manner:—The *faqīr* takes a drum, a *thālī* or platter and a *gharāḍ* or earthen jar. The platter is placed over the jar, and the whole is called *gharīdī*.²⁸ The *faqīr* beats the drum, another person beats the *gharīdī*, and others sing. The sick person shakes his head, and when the music (?) ceases they ask him questions: "Who are you?" "I am so and so," he replies. "How did you come into this state?" "Such and such a one put me into this state." "Who bewitched you?" "So and so." "What did he get for doing it?" "So many rupees." "For how long are you sick?" "I have to be sick so many days, and then die." They play and sing again. After a time the sick man perspires and recovers. The evil spirit goes with the perspiration.

A curious and repulsive cure is used among Hindus and probably others. It is called *jarā* or *masān*. An unmarried person dies, and his or her body is burnt at the burning *ghāt*. A *faqīr* takes some of the ashes from the burning pile, goes to the hills for a certain plant, and makes bread of these two ingredients on a grave. The bread is made into pills, one of which is given to a naked childless woman. She gives the pill in a drink to her enemies, and herself has a child. Her barren condition was caused by an evil spirit. *Masān* means demon, and burning-place among Hindus.

Jhundā is an iron whip which a *faqīr* beats himself with for the sake of another, so that the evil spirit in him may be troubled and flee. They also burn oil in a *tavāḍ*, iron dish. The *faqīr* puts his hand in the hot oil and pours it on his person. The evil spirit feels it, but the *faqīr* does not. The *faqīr* also beats his body with a millstone. After the sick man recovers, the *faqīr* takes a fowl, kills it, dips a string in its blood, knots the string, blows on it, and finally binds it round the sick man's neck, assuring him that the evil spirit will not come again. If the man goes where there is impurity, *sūtak*, the virtue in the string disappears.

²⁷ *Sauhrā*, — ♀, lit. (1) parents-in-law; (2) simpleton, wretch.

²⁸ *Gharīdī*, lit. a gong.

Dreams are from evil spirits, and the Chuhṛas fear them. To dream that a person who is dead is cutting flesh, is an intimation that there will be a death in the house. Muhammadan *saiyids* give the *ta'wiz*, a charm, to keep away dreams.

The evil eye is universally believed in. Some men are very injurious in this way. If a man with the evil eye looks at any one taking food, sickness follows. To cure this, the sick person asks a bit from the evil-eyed man when he is at a meal. The morsel given acts as a cure. When a cow is sick, and gives no milk, they give her a bit of the evil-eyed (*bad nazar*) man's food.

Sorcerers and witches act on their victim by making a figure of him and torturing the figure by inserting a needle into it. The torture reaches the person who is personated. Nails and hairs are carried away to be subjected to pain that the original owners may be tormented. They are carefully thrown away when cut off, lest any enemy should get possession of them. Women are especially careful in this particular.

Sickness is caused by evil spirits.

Ceremonial prohibition or taboo.

The Chuhṛas never touch a Gagra, or a Sānsī, gipsy. Women and children do not go near graves. The daughter-in-law never mentions the father-in-law's name. Chuhṛas do not eat monkeys, or snakes, or jackals, or rats.

Agricultural superstitions.

Crops are cut on a Sunday, Monday, or Friday, and sown on a Monday, Tuesday, and Wednesday.

If the Chuhṛas burn a *sūp*, winnowing sieve or fan, in a village, the farmer is injured. It is a curse — the curse of the poor.

Social customs.

The whole household eat together, but the women eat after the men. If men eat after women they are injured, because women are weak of intellect.

'*Yā jāh yā jāh, dōmōn nuqsān pahuchāndē.*' 'Food touched by others and falsehood are both injurious.' They use *shardb* (strong drink), opium (*ajīn*, *post*, *hang*) and *charas*. Drunkards are despised.

Customs of social intercourse.

In salutation, they say *pairiē pañ* to the great, the answer being *tērā bhālā kare Kḥudā*. Also *mathā tēknā, salām*.

Customs bearing on social status.

They eat *pakki* among themselves, and *kachhi* with Gagre and Sansis. They smoke only among themselves. No caste above them eats with them.

VI. — OCCUPATION.

The original work of the Chuhṛas.

They were the tanners of the village communities, and used to live in huts at a distance from the village, the walls of which were made of bones, and the roof of skins. When an animal died, the Hindus beat a drum to let them know that they must come and carry off the dead body. Five rupees was the fee given and also a shroud. The Chuhṛas took off the animal's hide and ate its flesh. Sweeping was also their work.

Formerly, when a Hindu died, the Chuhṛas received a sheet or *kafan* (shroud), and they still receive clothes. In the old days they got five rupees at the Hindu burning-place, and

exacted it with clubs. If a cow dies on a Hindu's land they call it *dúshnd*, and the Hindu who takes the cow's tail to the Ganges to be purified is beaten there by a Chuhra with a shoe.

VII. — RELATIONS TO LAND.

Nowadays their work is farm service. They are landless day-labourers on the farm. They are divided into —

(1) The *áthri*, who gets a maund of wheat for every *mānī* at the harvest; also odds and ends. He has *ghundān*, *pīr dē dānē*, the barley that is sown in a strip round the wheat field; wheat sown by the water course; bread twice a day; clothes and shoes twice a year; tobacco; vegetables and wood.

(2) The *sēp khullī*, who receives three-quarters of a maund for every *mānī*, and bread daily if he goes to a distance to work.

(3) The wife, who takes away dung from the farmyard, receives half a maund of corn.

It was cow-burying that led to their isolation. They say the *Máchhī*, the *Jhiwar*, the *Chuhra*, the *Changar*, and the *Mirāsi* are all of the same caste, but have different occupations.

There is a story told of the Chuhras by Muhammadans and others that does not reflect to their credit. They are believed to be inclined to be uppish and to forget past favours, being ungrateful, and are supposed to work best when they are well beaten, otherwise they take advantage of the kindness of their masters. I give this only as the opinion of their neighbours.

The story is that once on a time the king of the Chuhras met Moses, who was on his way to talk with God.²⁹ The king of the Chuhras asked Moses to carry a petition to God from him, that he might be enabled to take the usual tax from people passing through his territory. Moses accordingly presented the king's petition, but God said, "Moses you do not know what you are doing, you do not know this people. They will turn on you, and dishonour you in the end." But Moses persevered, and obtained for the Chuhra king what he desired, *viz.*, that he should levy taxes on travellers. The next time Moses passed that way he was accosted in a most humiliating manner. "Oh *Mûsrī*, are you the man that carried a petition for me? You must pay the dues." "Did I not tell you, Moses," said God, "that you would bring dishonour on your head. They have no gratitude."

VIII. — LEGENDARY LORE.

1. Legend of Râmsar.

Râm lavāyā Râmsar.

Panj Pāṇḍō lathihē ā.

Chamba, marvā, kēōṛā,

Ras chō chō bhārē talā.

Chugdī chagdī gōkhari

Sar uttē khalōtī ā.

Bān vaguttē Pāṇḍvān

Phatkāl kailī gān.

Chug chag lāndē dhāṇḍariān,

Tē bhundē sikhān lā.

Āndrān mīlyān Bhīm nūn.

Lēhmā janjū bān.

Dīl mīlyā Judishtarē

Un lēyā sankh bān.

Râm built Râmsar.

The five Pāṇḍavs came there and rested.

Jasmine, *marvā* and *kēōṛā*

Filled that tank with their essence.

A cow grazing

Came to that pond.

The Pāṇḍavs killed with arrows

The spotted cow.

They gathered sticks,

And began to roast it.

Bhīm got the intestines,

And made a sacred thread of them for himself.

Judishtar got the heart,

He made a trumpet with it.

²⁹ They and others call Moses *Mīhtar Mûsā*; *mīhtar* being a title of distinction, although used mostly for the Chuhras.

Push mīliya sī Nukaliyē
Us lēyā chaur band.
Tē kharāḍṛē lēyā Sukhdēv nē,
Un lēyē paue band.
Tē sir lēyā Arjun nē,
Un lēyā mukat band.
Tē pōsht lēyā Māt Kuntī nē,
Un lēyā pichhaurā band
Tē kīmia karkē mas dā,
Darōptī chullē dittā charhā.
Hath khundī tē mondhē kambhī,
Krishn gayā tad ā,
' Ō bhāī santō, baiḥhēō.
Mērī dīṭhī jē kailī gān.'
' Asīn nahīn mālōn jāndē
Tērī kaisī sī ōh gān.'
' Aggā hirē hīrn dā,
Ohdā pichhā kaplī gān.'
Chijān sārīān Krishn nē,
Tad lēyān phud uṭhā,
Tē sarāp dittā sū Pāṇḍvān.
' Tusīn Chūhṛē hōvō jā.
Kal jug vich milāngā.
Tad bōlē sach sunā.'

Nukal got the tail,
 He made a fan with it.
 Sukhdev got the hoofs,
 He made sandals of them.
 Arjan took the head
 And made a crown for his head.
 Mother Kuntī got the hide,
 And made herself a shawl.
 And hashing the beef,
 Daroptī began to cook it on the fire.
 In hand a stick, and on shoulder a blanket,
 Krishn came up suddenly.
 'O faithful brethren, sitting there,
 Have you seen my spotted cow?'
 'We do not at all know
 What your cow was like.'
 'Its head was like a deer's,
 The hinder part like a red cow.'
 All the things Krishn seized
 And took away,
 And he cursed the Pāṇḍavs.
 'Go, become Chuhṛas.
 In the Kaljug I will associate with you
 When you speak the truth.'

Another Version.

Rām lōāyā Rāmsar.
Panj Pāṇḍō laththē ā.
Pāṇḍō baiḥhē mihr kar,
Uṭhē ā gayē kailī gān.
Jazba kītā Pāṇḍvān,
Unhān phar lēiye kailī gān.
Jabah kardkē gān nūn,
Unhān chhāndē tē band
Āndrān lēiyān Bhīm nē,
Un lēyā janēu band.
Tē kharaurē lēyē Shāhdēv nē,
Un parvē lēyē band.
Tē sir lēyā Arjun nē,
Un lēyā mukat band
Tē pōsht lēyā Māt Kuntī nē,
Un pichhaurā lēyā rangā.
Pāṇḍō ōthē baiḥh gayē,
Srī Kīshan gaye nē ā
' Ō bhāī baiḥhē hōē, ō sādāgō,
Mērī dīṭhī jē kailī gān?'
Asīn nahīn mālōn jāndē
Tērī kaisī sī ōh gān.'
Us munhōn bōliyā :
' Jis dīṭhī sūf sunā.
Aggā hirē hīrn dā,

Rām built Rāmsar.
 The five Pāṇḍavs came there and rested.
 The Pāṇḍavs were enjoying their rest,
 When a spotted cow came thither.
 High-handed were the Pāṇḍavs,
 And they seized the spotted cow.
 When they had sacrificed the cow,
 They divided her.
 Bhīm got the intestines,
 And wore them like the Hindus' sacred thread.
 Shāhdēv got the hoofs,
 And wore them as sandals.
 Arjan got the head,
 And put it on his head for a crown.
 Mother Kuntī got the hide,
 And had it dyed for a shawl.
 While the Pāṇḍavs were sitting there,
 Srī Krishn came up,
 'O brothers sitting there, O holy men,
 Have you seen my spotted cow?'
 'We do not know at all
 What your cow was like.'
 He spake with his mouth :
 'Let him who saw her speak plainly.
 Her foreparts were those of a deer,

Ôhđđ pi chhđ kapit gđn.
Aisđ aisđ hai sđ,
Mérđ kapit kailđ gđn.'
Khauf jđ kítđ Pđđđđđ,
Kyđđ đéiyđ jhđđh suđđ.
Chuđđđ pđsh karđ hđđđđđ,
Asđđ đéiyđ rđs karđ.
Uđđ pđsh đakđđđ
Tđ laggđ mangđ đúđ :
' Hđ Bhagwđn, tú rahm kar.
Is gđđ nđn tú uđhđ.'
Gđđ bhđ hđjir hđ gđđ.
Unhan đittđ turt vikhđ.
Us jagah Brđhman Chđhđđ hđ gayđ
Aur đittđ óh sazđ.

And her hinder parts were those of a red cow.
 She was like this,
 My spotted red cow.
 The Pāṇḍavs were frightened,
 Because they had lied.
 They covered the bones with the hide,
 Placing the bones in their order.
 They spread the hide on them,
 And began to pray :
 ' Oh God, have mercy.
 Raise this cow.'
 The cow became alive.
 They showed her to him at once.
 In this place the Brāhman became a Chuhṛā
 By way of punishment.

2. Legend of the Marriage of Bālmik's Daughter.

Chal, sađhđ, ham nahđđn nihátđ.
Ghar abyđgat sđđđ áe.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
Brahme đđ đéđđ nđđ kushđđ dháyá.
Jéhrđ Kumbđđ nahđđn jđđ.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
Aggđ Jastrđ kéndđ chđđđ.
Jitthđn Brahđđ ráh puchhđđ.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
' Kđkar áyá Brahmaná ?
Térré kđkar awé hđđ ?'
Jháb mil, Rám jđ.
Đéđ mérrđ nđ kushđ hai dháyá,
Ham Kumbđđ nahđđn đé.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
' Tisrđ gharđ nahđđn térrá.
Téthđn kđkar pahunchđđ jđđ ?'
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
' Tisrđ gharđ nahđđn mérrđ.
Main nđ kéhrđ mard pahunchđđ ?'
Jháb mil, Rám jđ.
' Ék jđ tainđ main chapparrđ dassđ,
Térrá jđ karé té nahđđ jđ.'
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
Kéndđ đđ đhannđ hđđ chapparrđ
Uhnđđ Jastrđ chđ vikhđđ.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
Pahilđ tubbđ gayđ Brahđđ.
Rétđ đđ muđđ lé đđ.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.
Duijđ tubbđ gayđ Brahđđ.
Bhar ghuggđđ đđ muđđ lé đđ.
Jhab mil, Rám jđ.

Come, friend, let us go bathe,
 The man of God has come to our house.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 A Brāhman's body became leprous.
 He had to go to bathe at the Kumb festival.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 On his way Jastrī fed a herd of swine.
 The Brāhman asked the way.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' Why have you come, Brahman ?
 What brought you ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' My body is leprous,
 I have come for a bath at the Kumb festival.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' The right hour for bathing is the third.
 How will you reach the Ganges in time ?'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' The third hour was the time.
 Can any man take me there in time ?
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 ' I will show you a pond,
 You can bathe there if you like.'
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The pond where the swine wallowed
 Was shown him by Jastrī.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The Brāhman dived once.
 He brought up a handful of sand.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
 The Brāhman dived twice.
 He brought up a handful of shells.
 Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

*Tisrī ṭubbī gayā Brahmā,
Lālān dī muṭh lē dē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Lālān dī muṭh jab lē Brahmad,
Har jī kē darshan pāē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Har jī kē darshan pāyē,
Oh dī kāyā dē pāp jhārē dē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
'Bannē ā jā, Brahmanā,
Tērē nahān hō varidē.'*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Isē chapparī Pāṇḍō nahā gaē,
Jihvā nau khand prithvī dhāē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Isē chapparī Gurū Nānak nihātā,
Jihvā Sikhān dā gurū sadhē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Isē chapparī Gōrahā nihātā,
Jihvā Tīllē tē āsan pāē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Kihvā bhagat dī tā bēṭī hai?
Tērē kī oh nām dharāē?'*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
'Bālā Bālmīk dī main bēṭī hān,
Mērā Jastrī nām dharāē.'*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Bālā Bālmīk diyē bēṭīyē,
Main nū ohāē kōl pahunchāēn.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Aggē Jastrī tē picḥhē Brahma.
Dhēn Bālmīk kōl dē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Aggē Bālmīk dī kakḥān dī kullā,
Baiṭhā āsan lāē.*

*Jhab mil, Rām jī.
Baiṭhā āsan uttē jākē,
Har kē nām japāē.*

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

*Har jī kē hazār nām,
Lākh nām Kishan kē.
Kēshō kē karōṛ nām.
Padam nām Bishan kē.*

*Aggē Bālmīk bhagat baiṭhā
Jākē Brahmā sir nāwāē.
Jhab mil, Rām jī.*

*'Tūn kēkar āyē, Brahmanā?
Tērē kēkar aunē hōē?'*
Jhab mil, Rām jī.

The Brāhman dived thrice.
He brought a handful of precious stones.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
When the Brāhman found the stones,
He saw God face to face.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
He saw God face to face,
And his sins forgiven, he was clean.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
'Come out, Brahman,
Your bath is finished.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
In this pond the Pāṇḍavs will bathe,
Who will subdue nine parts of the earth.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
In this pond Gurū Nanak will bathe,
Who will become leader of the Sikhs.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
In this pond Gorakh will bathe,
Who will make his temple on Tillah.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
'What holy person is your father?
What name has he given you?'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
'I am daughter of Bālā Bālmīk,
He calls me Jastrī.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
'O daughter of Bālā Bālmīk,
Take me to him.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
Jastrī went on, and the Brāhman followed;
They both came to Bālmīk.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
They came to Bālmīk's hut.
He was seated in contemplation.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.
When he sat down
He took the name of God.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

Chorus.

Har has a thousand names.
Kishan has a *lākh*.
Kēshō has a crore.
Bishan has a *padam*.

Where the Saint Bālmīk sat
There the Brāhman went and bowed to him.
Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'Why have you come, O Brāhman?
What is your business?'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'*Nām Rabb dé ih béfi dé chhad.*
Térá sufi dân hô jâé.'

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

'*Kahnūn bhulnd, Brahmand?*'

Tū kahnū janam gawdē?

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

'*Tusiñ Brahmé chauñké bahógé,*

Méri béfi nūn pichhé kaḥḍé.'

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Téri béfi rasó pakḍégī;

Sānnū sufi karké khuwdé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Kangni, chinā, té sóñkē ānlā.

Bālmik jag rachḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Té chavāñ kūtāñ dé dévté á gāé.

Ōihé paridāñ mangal gāé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Hārāñ, paridāñ, mangal gāvan,

Ōihé tārēñ mandal chhḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Jad tārēñ nandar chhā kar dēttī,

Tab chḍrē Béd mangḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Pahilā lāñ jab lēi Brahmé,

Dujjé qadam ḥakḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Trijī lāñ jad lēi Brahmé,

Chauthā phérā pḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Panjvīñ lāñ jad lēi Brahmé,

Chéviñ phérā pḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Satvīñ lāñ jad lēi Brahmé.

Har ká nám dhéḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Satēñ lavāñ pūrāñ.

Ōh béfi dân karḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

'*Sab jīñ dā main dân khāñd.*

Aggōñ tū mēḍá lé jḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Jastri ḍólé jab pḍé Brahmé,

Utthōñ Pōñdér ghar léjḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

Ōlthōñ Védvḍé, Purabā, Bhartā,

Siddrā, Dharastā nám dharḍé.

Jhab mil, Rām jī.

'In the name of God give me your daughter.
She will be a great gift.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'Why do you take a wrong step, Brahmana?
Why do you lose your caste?'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'You will eat your food in sacred places.
You will set my daughter aside.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'Your daughter will cook our food,
We will not object to eat it.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

They brought *kanḡñ* and *chinā* and *sōñk*.
Bālmik made a feast.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The gods of the four quarters came.
Fairies sang songs of joy there.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

Hārs and fairies sang.

The stars made a canopy there.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

When the stars made a canopy,
Then they brought the four *Vedas*.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brāhman went round the bride once.
And a second time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brāhman went round a third time.
And a fourth time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brāhman went round a fifth time.
And a sixth time.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

The Brāhman went round the bride the seventh
time.

Praise the name of God.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

He finished the seven rounds.

Bālmik gave his daughter.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

'I take alms from all.

In future I give this right to you.'

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

When the Brāhman put her in a palanquin,
He took her to home among the Paundrās.

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

From her the *Vedvā*, the *Pūrabā*, the *Bhartā*,
The *Siddrā*, and the *Dharastā* took their
name;

Meet me quickly, O my Lord.

IX. — THE TRADITIONS OF THE CHUHṚĀS.

The Chuhṛās have oral traditions which they recite at their gatherings. If a Chuhṛā wishes to learn them, he becomes the disciple of some one who is in possession of them, i. e. who can repeat them from memory. I heard, however, that there was a book of the Chuhṛās in Gujṛānwālā District, but I was unable to obtain it, as the owners had the idea that I would use it to their disadvantage. In the village of Kharōḷiān. in Siālkot, I found a man with a book, which runs as follows:—

1. Bala, the Priest of God.

*Bālā pīr āyā, duniyā tē pahilā awār
Putr sār Brahme dē pūrē chār.
Māthē fikē dharm dē wā janēu nāl
Chugdī chugdī gokharī hō pēi murdār.
Kōl gāō dē ānkē kardē nē arāñ
Asīn Brahman janam dē ga! janēu tanāñ
Uttē chā rakhnēñ dōrē tē lārāñ
Rabbā, sādē bhāññ ih kihāñ banāñ
Rabb chīṭhē likhē ghallā sab khōl bayāñ
Itthōñ gayā sāñ manē hum karnā habmāñ
Tuddē ihnā suṇā tainā parwāñ.
Main sharā challāī apnā is nūñ harām arkua
jāñ.*

*Jhaumpṛē aggē Rabb dē kīñ arjōi
Sanēhē ghalnā eñtōr dē hō khāñ muñh dārāi
Rabbā ghar Brahmanāñ mērā jarm dītōi
Main paṭiyā sār khāñ iksē thāl rasoī
Kōl gāō dē ākē Allah Ta'ala masland lagāi
Chīṭhē likhē Bālā pīr dē phir hath phayāi
Tuddē ihnā suṇā tainā ih dāi
Thnā kaur hurām ākhā main takbīr challāi.*

*Bhēd khāñ paikambarāñ jis chugnā khāi
Rōz qiyāmat nūñ is dī tainā milēgi vādīyāi
Main nūñ Hindū nērē na dūñ dēngē, Mussalmāñ
na parheñgē jāñza
Mērā kīkar nistārā karēngā mērē Rabbi rāzā
Unmat mērī baṭshnī zmin dē Pīr Khwāja
Allah ākhēd Bālā, terī pāk kamāi*

The first to come incarnate to the world⁸⁰
Was priestly Bālā. Brahmā's sons were four.
With painted mark upon their brows and
twined

About their breasts the sacrificial thread.
The cow while grazing in the meadow green
Fell dead: thereafter round about the cow
They stood and wrangled. 'Brāhmans born
are we,

We wear the sacred thread, the Hindu garb.
With cords and fringes. Lord, unhappy we,
Bewail this mishap.' The Lord despatched
A writing bearing full and accurate
Directions. 'You a compact made when hence
You went, but now grown proud you seek
To shun your duty. You it is that must
Prepare to cast the cow away. 'Twas I
That killed the cow by lawful rite, it is
Not therefore now unclean.' Then Jhaumpṛā
prayed.

'Oh thou that sendst thy word reveal thyself,
That I may see thee face to face. 'Twas thou
That causedst me to be by birth
A Brāhman. From the self-same dish with
them

I ate and drank.' Then God Almighty called
Beside the cow a great assembly. Then
Within the hand of Bālā, Priest of God,
Was placed a writing. 'Thou must cast away
The cow — the work is thine. Who dares to
call

That thing unclean which I have duly
cleansed?

The prophets feed on sheep, that feed on
filth,

But on the day of resurrection thou
Shalt sure have praise.' Said Bālā, 'Hindus
then

Will shun me, Mussalmans refuse to read
The burial service over me. How then

⁸⁰ The translation is not literal, but in verse.

Apé kalm pakor lé, té kagaṭ té sīdhī
Allah ākhēd Bāléd, tu hó siyāna
Rôz qiyāmat nū jāké inhān pachhōtānā,
Hindū Mussalmān dé nēm dā main daryō
bandhā
Pār bihishtī bandhē sāmne dikhānā
Sarā nēzē té sārāj dwēgā magrōn hāō dōzakh
dē dāhā
Rām té Rahīm kēān utthē chhap chhap kē bahānā
Ummat tēri lungkhē var bihishtī jānā
Ākhē mērē lag jā, mērā man farmānā
Jhaumprē aggē Rabb dé ēk gal sunāi
Rôz qiyāmat ākhān jihri bhaizal pur sulāt
(pul girāt) bandī
Ôs vélé ummat mēri bakhshnān gāō suṭnā tān
Chlē sifātān jōrān, parh nām sunān.
Rabb Khwāja Khizr saddā phir apnē zabān.

Tad Maulē pakar lēi hath kāgaz té kān,
Kāgaz sīdhī likhā dī us vélé dī nishān,
Jhaumprē ummat bakhshā lēi kam hoyā āsān
Khwāja Khizr ākhē Jhaumprēā, mēra nūn
farmān,
Tērē Shāhī dān dēngē main nūn pās bahān,
Jhalak laggēgā chandōē dā muñh pānī lān.
Shāhīān de bihishtī jān dā ih pakṭā nishān
Na roza na ashāmī na tur Makkē jān
Chlē dassēn khōlkē sārē bayān.
Pir gāō dē val turkē Chuhrā bankē jāhird,
Pir gāō dē kōl jā kharā janēu tikkēwālā,
Us tērōn dhōtā lā lēi ashāb bhī sārā.
Utthōn baniyā Chuhrēān dā aslī rāh niyārā
Jhaumprā puchhē bhāīān nūn mērē nāl karō
takrār,
Kadōn mainū raṭānā jē sachchā dōō igrār
Bhāīān phir Jhaumprē nāl klūd takrār
Mōhlāt lummi kāi nahān dihapē nē chār

Wilt thou me purify, my Lord? Forgive
 My people — give me Khwāja Pīr as pledge
 Of certain covenant.' God said, 'Thy works,
 O Bālā, righteous are and pure. Thyself
 Must write with paper, ink and pen.' God
 said,
 'O Bālā, understand: be wise and know
 That on the resurrection day their deeds
 Will bring to these despairing grief. I'll
 make
 Of Hindu and of Muslim faiths a sea,
 Beyond it I will make a heaven that they
 Shall see but enter not. The burning sun
 Will come within a spear and quarter's length,
 The dread alarms of hell will compass them.
 The worshippers of Rām, and of Rahīm.
 Will hide themselves in fear and dark despair.
 But thine will cross secure, in safety they
 Will enter heaven at last. Believe, obey
 My plain command.' Then Jhaumprā quickly
 said,
 'All in the audience of Almighty God,
 A covenant sure make now with me, that in
 The day of resurrection, when my people cross
 The narrow bridge that spans the mouth
 of hell,
 Thou wilt have mercy on them: only thus
 Will I consent to cast away the cow.'
 Disciples write his prayers and his fame,
 Sing forth his glory, loud proclaim his name.
 The Lord called Khwāja Khizr to appear,
 He summoned him Himself, and then the Lord
 Took paper, ink and pen to write, and these
 Are of that time distinct memorials.
 Great Jhaumprā had his people saved, a work
 For him both quick and easy. Khwāja cried,
 'Oh Jhaumprā mine, give ear to me. With me
 Beside them seated all your Shāhīs must
 Give alms. And as they drink the sparkling
 water
 On every face from out the cup there gleams
 The light from immersed silver, this a sign
 Shall constant be that Shāhīs enter heaven.
 For them there is no fasting; not for them
 Are eighth day moons, or pilgrimages long
 To Mecca. Let disciples clearly tell
 The great prerogatives and freedom they
 Enjoy. The priest approached the cow; before
 The universal world he stood confessed
 A Chuhrā; yes, a priest beside the cow,
 Adorned with sacred cord, and on his brow

Tān ōs gāo suṭ lēi chaunkēōn bāhir bāhir
Jhaumprā gāo suṭlēān dihrā hōe chār
Baddhī rasōi jēundē chaunkē andar vār.

Bhātān nū puchhā main nūn kadōn raḷānā je
nāl,

Jug chauchē nū rālāvānge sādā sachechā qaul
garār

Us gōshā ghat kamāndā paggān lēiān utār.

Phir Jhaumprā gāo suṭkē hō baiḥā pachhvār

Aggōn rāt guzrē jhagarḍēān sakkē bhatijē
Kālak Das

Akhē na us gāo khā lēi na kītā gāo grās

Kīkar tussān nakher chadḍē phir ihē jāt

Jō na lāyā hath bē gōshē ghat kamān dē suṭṭi
āfāt.

Ōh bōlē tū jākē khā, tērā nahēn painīd sāmā
san vasā

Gussa Kālak Das nūn charḥiyā angāh

Kālak Das gāo dē kōl pahutē jā

Kōl gāo dē jākē kardā tadbīr

Ōs vār chaldiyā gāo dē phir vich sarīr

Jitthē tabbīr Chuhrēān dē puhlu dendē nē chār

Likkhē vēkhō Rabb dē vartī taqdīr.

Pichhē Kālak Das dē Silavantī nār,

Ōndē māhē punnē ānkē gharōn ummēdvār

Jēum jēum dīn ōtērē langhā kardī gubār

Karē bichārd dīl nāl duniyā ajab sē bahār

Dāiān aggē jākē nit karē bichārd

The consecrating mark, he stood and doffed
 His waist cloth, and his caste marks all.
 Hence rose the Chulra sect and worship, one
 And separate. For Jhaumprā thus addressed
 His brethren, 'When will you, now tell me
 true,

Restore me to my place and dignity?
 Now promise me.' They promised him that
 they

Would in four days, and only four, restore
 Him to his place among them. So he threw
 The cow beyond the sacred precincts far.
 The cow was cast away, four days had flown,
 When Jhaumpra's brethren dined within the
 bound

That marked the sacred hearth. 'Your promise
 now.'

Cried Jhaumprā, 'true fulfil. Admit me.'
 'No'

Said they, 'Four ages must elapse before
 We can admit thee. Then, our sacred word
 We pledge, thou mayest return.' In sudden
 wrath

With stroke of bow he knocked their turbans
 off.

Then Jhaumprā, all because he threw the cow
 Away, sat excommunicate, the house
 Debarred. Night passed in wrangling. Kālak
 Dās,

His nephew, said, 'He did not eat the cow,
 Not even a morsel : why thus have ye cast
 Your brother out? He did not touch the cow,
 'Twas with his bow he threw the cow away.'
 They said, 'Go thou and eat the cow thyself,
 We trust not thee nor him—we scorn you
 both.'

Then Kālak Dās grew angry ; in his rage
 He stalked towards the cow, and stood to
 pierce

The carcase of the brute, and so since then
 The Chuhra keep the appointed way, to make
 A certain cut upon the dead, and use
 The formula by God appointed. Then
 Went Kālak Das and found his gentle wife,
 His Silavantī wondering. Her time
 Was near with child. She wondered why the
 days

Went by and still no nearer came to her
 Deliverance. In wondering thought she said,
 'The world is strange as spring time.' So
 she went

Méré mǎhē kullē langh gae mahānē hōē né bāran
 Tuhannā sārē khabar hai kull pēt bhandārān
 Mainū dassō khōlkē saridān anwārān
 Dāidān ralkē us nū gallēn sē lāyā
 Kīhrā chand nihētīōn tainū patā nahēn dyā ?
 Pēt tērē vich dard nahēn tainū dukh nahēn dyā ?
 Rāzē hōkē bahēngē jad bālāk jāyā,
 Jān oh bahindā palang tē jad rain vikhānī
 Rabb, mērē pēt vich kē khēl rabbānī.
 Mainū kāt khabar nahēn main āql aniyānī
 Tainū khabardān, Qādirā, phir tūēn jānīn
 Karē vakhōidān dil nāl, duniyā ābaj sē mēlā,
 Tād bhandārōn kū pēyā phir Alif Chēla.
 Din mannē mātā mērē gurū dā tād hath nahēn
 āūnā vēlā.
 Tān mān putr dā hōwēgā phir jald hī mēlā.
 Kēhrā tērā gurū hai, bachchā mainūn dkh sunidān
 Main pallē kharch pākē tur pavdān sabhdān
 Kitthē dhādā pind hai, rahndā kēhrē thādān
 Main bhalakē tur pavāngī paikē lamrē rāhēn
 Akhē Jhaumprā mērā gurū hai, mātā kōi nāl
 imān

Das autār us āūnā duniyā tē shān,
 Dassē autār ussē dē aggē, main japnān nām
 Chuhrē Kālāk Das dā majab hai tamām.
 Jīhrā Shāhī kalma parhēgā Mōhammad dā oh
 bēimān.
 Jīhrē parhngē Bābā Nānak dā oh bhī nahēn
 parwān.
 Jīhrē parhngē Bālē pīr dā dargāhē pawān.
 Chēlē siftdān jōrīdān sab lōhōl bayān.
 Mān chēlē nāl jhagardī, Bachcha kēhrā gurū
 hai sangī.
 Kīkar duniyā tē uss āūnā ōs kēhrē rangī ?
 Sach hōvē tād man lēvān gaul karār karāngī.
 Chēlē siftdān jōrīdān bah rang ba rangī.
 Chēlā dassē mān nūn, phir das autār

To seek the midwives. Thus she used to say,
 'My time is fully come, the twelfth month
 now³¹
 Is past. These things you understand : the
 womb
 With all its states you know : come tell me them
 The truth.' The midwives just to please her
 told
 Her stories. 'Tell us now,' they said, ' what
 month
 You bathed. You have forgotten quite. Well
 then
 Have you no pains : no pangs have you? No?
 Then
 Be comforted, you will be happy when
 You bear a son.' She sat in thought all night
 Upon her cot. She said, 'O Lord, within
 my womb
 What wonder is? All ignorant am I,
 A woman knowing nothing. Only Thou
 Almighty God knowest all. I trust in Thee
 All in her heart she said, 'The world is
 strange.'
 Then Alif Chela spake within the womb.
 'Oh mother mine, be follower of my guide.
 Disciple of my teacher be, lose not
 This happy time, for if 'tis lost to you,
 In vain is consequent repentance. See,
 On your belief depends our meeting.' 'Son,'
 She said, 'who is your teacher? I'll prepare
 And haste me at the dawn to seek him.
 His village name. Where dwells he? At the
 dawn
 I'll go, and find him though the way be long.'
 'My guide and teacher Jhaumprā is,' said he,
 'Believe this, mother. Ten times told he will
 Become incarnate, bringing glory to the world
 In all the ten. His name I will proclaim.
 The faith of Kālāk Dās, the Chuhrā, is
 A perfect faith. If any Shāhī read
 Muhammad's creed, an unbeliever he
 Is branded; and if Bābā Nānak's, he
 Shall be rejected; all that do profess
 The creed of Bālā straight to heaven shall go.
 Disciples have compiled his praises.' Still
 The mother reasons with the Chela, 'Child,
 What guide will be our helper, how will he
 Become incarnate? In what form appear?
 If this be true, I will believe, and make
 A firm profession.' So disciples wrote
 His divers praises. Chela now recounts

³¹ Cf. the note at p. 352, Vol. XXXV., 1906, *supra*.

*Kam vékhān Rabb dé, mātd, Allah dé bé shumār
 Pahilā autār āvēgā phir nāl rī nāl
 Rabb Bābā Adam sajjiyā Amma Havva bī nāl
 Na zamān āsmān sī, hai sī jal pānī
 Na ōs vēlē jirishē sān na dargāh rabbānī
 Na tadōn Bābā Adam sī, na Hawwā sūānī.
 Tē sifāt hai Auwalīn, dī chēlē suhānī
 Ih tras dēvtē Rabb ē āp bandē.*

2, The One True God.

*Trēdīn dēvtēdīn nūn Rabb shabā sikhāē
 Āpō apnē dīn dē kalmē parhāē.
 Faktū parhē Allah ilā, Ishar wah gurū Pandhē,
 Kalma ōhī ēk dā Bālā pīr sundē,
 Siftān chēlē jōrīdīn parh nām sundē.
 Dēvtēdīn kalma parhēdīn jug gujrē chhattī.
 Na tadōn sān majlisān Khudd dī sathīn
 Na ōs vēlē lō sī, na dīvā batī.
 Tē sahāsan bandyā baiṭhē Rabb ē apnē
 haithīn
 Ishar Faqtū dēvtē nū Allah Ta'ala gal ih ākhē
 Ih triyā dēvtā bandyā tuhaddā sāthī
 Dhartī dēō bandkē gal ihō jē bāqī
 Ōthē howē shāla vékhān chaldkē
 Faqtū tē Ishar hōē Allah dē dīnī
 Ōh kēhrā triyā dēvtā hī bandyā saqā hānī.
 Chhattī jug kīṭī sū bhagatī tērē nāmē parhē
 bānā
 Tainūn khabardī, Qādirā, tuēn hain jānī
 Allah lēkē dēvtēdīn nūn Bālā pīr kōl jānī
 Bālā pīr uṭhē chhai sāda bulāī
 Allah mīdīn dī ; Khair Bālē pīr sundī*

*Tras dēvtē Rabb nē kīṭē ikatīhē,
 Dhartī dēs bandkē kull dīam vassē,
 Ambar khūb fīkūnā na sangal rassē
 Tārē nag vich lauē nūr ilāhē vassē.
 Chuṭkī chuṭkī khāṭ dī Rabb hath pharāī
 Māhammad tē Bābā Nānak dōdīn hēṭhān vagā
 Pānī gahrā hō gayā nishānī na dī,
 Na ōs vēlē Granth sī na Qurān kītāb baṭṭī.
 Kam dēkhō Rabb dē, vārī Bālē pīr dī dī
 Gallān kardā jal dē nāl Bālē pīr dā nūr.
 Chhattī jug kīṭī bhagatī, tū gāvah hai jarūr.
 Ōhō mainūn das dē khān jō bhagatī vich pēyā
 gusūr.*

The incarnations ten. 'O mother mine,
 Behold God's works innumerable are.
 The first incarnate comes, and with him God
 Makes father Adam, and our mother Eve.
 There was no earth, no sky, but only then
 A pool of water. Angels were there none,
 Nor heaven's court, nor father Adam, nor
 A lady Eve.' This is the story true
 Of the Original. Disciple read.

Repeat. The Lord Himself these three saints made.

He taught them songs, He gave thus each a creed.

So Faktū said, 'Allah Ila,' and Ishwar said, 'Wah Gurū save' ! only Bālā priest believed In one true God, and worshipped him. These songs

Disciples have compiled. They sing his name. For six and thirty ages long the creeds These three divinities repeated. Then There were no great assemblages with God. There was no light, no lamp, no wick ; God sat And made with His own hands His throne.

He said

To Fagta, Ishwa, holy ones, 'I've made A third divinity, associate With you. The earth a god I make ; that done My work is done. Let there be light in it.' He said, 'The wonder I would see.' But up Spake Fagta, Ishwar, 'Who is this whom thou A third divinity associate With us hast made ? Has he, repeating hymns For ages six and thirty worshipped thee ? All things are known to thee, Almighty One.' God brought the gods, the three, to Bālā priest, Who rose, and six times worshipped. 'Peace to thee,

O man of God.' This said the Lord. 'Peace be' Said Bālā priest, 'to all the world.' So brought The Lord these three together. So a god The earth He made, a habitation fit For all His creatures. Lo, the sky He hung Without ropes and chains ; the stars were placed

Like jewels in the sky, that God's bright light Might dwell within them. Then a pinch of dust

The Lord put in Muhammad's hand, and then In Bābā Nānak's, but they threw it down, And muddy made the water : thus no sign Appeared. There was no Granth nor yet Qordān.

*Madad méri duñd Khwāja hajúr.
Tad páñi té jam gayá phir sôñd búr
Bálé pír khák chhinkiyá dhartí bharpúr
Tad Bálá pír gayá dargáhé qabúr.
Chélé sifñāñ jōññāñ nahññ kōñ qusūr.
Kālāk Dās gāñ khāké, hō baññāñ dūññ
Iksē māñ dā chungiyā sī bah gōññ nār.
Duniyā té hōñ ne barē barē amír té faqír.*

*Kisē nahññ ral vandiyā karmāñ dā shēr
Allah Kālāk Dās nūñ phēr dé dilēñ,
Duniyā āvāñ gaurñ hai, rávañ dī phērñ.
Aggē paindā kahññ hai chalnā rāt hanērñ,
Ummat tērī bahkshāññ gal māñ lēññ tū mērñ.
Kālāk Dās akhē Rabb nūñ, mērā kī sarband.
Vasdeāñ gharāñ vichōññ nikaññ phēr phair té
khirand,
Mērā kavññ dāñ lēññ, māññ hō baññāñ arband.
Kālāk Dās gallāñ kīññāñ Rabb nāl lāñ mas-
land,
Tū karññ Allah dāñ nām, tēra sir mukh laggē.
Aivēñ vēññ na bhulññ kōñ raurē baggē
Tērā buk mitññ dā māññ, dargāñ de aggē.
Jēññ māñññ sidq nāl, har shākhē phāñ laggē,
Kālāk Dās ráññ hōññ, laggāñ jag richāññ,
Savā māññ sōññ kals dāññ.
Hērā, lāl, jawāñññ bññ kōñ na ant bayāñ.
Chabbē laggē chandōñ nūñ kīññāñ té shāñ
Kālāk Dās kīññ dāññ té laggāñ sōññāñ thāñ
Alifē Chélé nūñ phēr imām bañññ
Alifē duññ ākhī jō Rabb dāññ farmāñ.*

*Chélé sifñāñ jōññāñ sab khōñ bayāñ
Alifē kīñññ dīññ nāl duñññ ó kahñññ.*

But, see, comes Bálá's turn. 'Twas Bála's soul
Addressed the water. 'Ages thirty-six
I worshipped God. You are my witness. Speak,
Was there a time when I lacked faithfulness?
Come help me now, O Khwāja.' Sudden then
The pinch of dust all in the water clear
Took shape — the water surface clothed itself
in green.

Yes, Bálá, priest, cast forth the pinch of dust.
And lo! the earth appeared. So Bálá, priest,
Was high exalted in the court of heaven.
Disciples wrote these stories true. Now turn
To Kālāk Dās, who ate the cow. He sat
Apart in sadness. 'I have sucked the breast
Of her who was their mother dear and mine.
Her bosom was my rest as theirs. Many rich
And many poor have been, but never one
Has borne the consequences of the deeds
That others wrought.' But God thus comforts
him,

'The world is fleeting: like a fortune told
It comes and goes. The way to heaven
rough,
And in the darkling night you travel. Still
Thy followers I will save — my word is sure.'
Then Kālāk Dās addressed the Lord, 'Alas!
Provision now for me there's none. A man
Cast out am I. From me none alms will take,
For only they give alms who houses own.'
Such speech had Kālāk Dās with God. 'Con-
fess

The Lord, e'en to the sacrifice of life.
Be not deceived — the white-washed tomb is
vain
While thy hands full of dust adored will be
Within the court of heaven. The righteous
man

Is like a tree whose every branch bears fruit.'
So Kālāk Dās in gladness offered gifts,
Of gold he gave a maund and one-fourth more
To top the flag, and diamonds rare so bright
With rubies red, and jewels rich in tale
Innumerable. Tassels hung in state
Adown the flag, embroidered rich with gold.
So rich a gift gave Kālāk Dās, wherewith
He beautified the place of prayer. The priest
Was Alif Chela. Alif prayed the prayer
Appointed thus by God. Disciples sang
These songs, compiling them in full. The
prayer,

The story, Alif heartily recites.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

LACHCHHAN RÁJÁŌN KE ; OR, THE SIGNS OF ROYALTY IN RAJAS.

I.

Hukm agiyāon ko khat mēn līkhē;
 Jamābandī sūjh farq sē rakkhē.
 Nigah-dost daurah karē, bār bār,
 Siffāt sē bolē, nā ho gul ba khār.

A Rājā should issue his instructions in writing, and must exercise full control over his finances. He should carefully inspect his kingdom throughout, never treat his subordinates harshly, and try to live on amicable terms with them.

II.

Hans, sarūp, bugh, mīn, mōr attī gidh bhanjī.
 Jugal kâg. Guṇ dharē teṇ guṇ bāne lījē.

A king should learn from the swan, heron, paddy-bird, fish, peacock and vulture. He should also learn love and unity from pairs of crows.

Girē parē ho pēḍwākē, tēk dijē boh bistār
 sincharī.

Those who have fallen into misfortune must be comforted, while the oppressors should be punished.

Itnē lachchhan rāj kē, tab pag gaddī pah dharē.

Only when these qualities are attained by the king, should he ascend the throne.

H. A. ROSE.

IS THE CULT OF MIAN BIBI PHALLIC?

THE article (*ante*, Vol. XXXIV. p. 125) on the cult of Mīān Bibī, which flourishes in the Hoshiārpur District of the Panjāb, is not easily explained. In his Settlement Report on the District Mr. Coldstream says that the image of the Mīān is nude,¹ but in the only two charms which I have been able to secure from Hoshiārpur the Mīān and his two wives are all represented as fully clothed. In charm No. 1 the Mīān certainly wears a turban and appears to be fully clothed. He is squatting on a couch and smoking his *hugga*. The wife on the right seems to be holding a fan. This charm is rudely stamped on a thin piece of silver and is considerably worn, so that it is difficult to conjecture what the objects above and near the heads of the figures are intended to be. Below and on the left is conventional ornamentation.

Charm No. 2 is of a more recent type — or is at least newer and stamped from a better die. The Mīan is standing up, smoking a *hugga*, and wearing apparently a cap. Both his wives are fanning him.

That the cult is in its origin a phallic one I have myself no doubt, but a perusal of the songs published in the article above referred to may not leave that impression on every reader's mind, and it is impossible to be certain as the songs cannot be said to really prove anything. I have failed to trace any precise parallel to the cult in d'Alviella's *Migration of Symbols*, in Mr. Rendell Harris' *Cult of the Heavenly Twins*, or in Dulaure's *Des Divinités Génératrices*.

H. A. ROSE.

15th August, 1906.

¹ "Among the lower class of Musalmāns, such as Gūjars, and perhaps among the women of the villages generally, the worship or propitiation of Mīān Bibī is common. The Mīān Bibī, the old man and his [two] wives, is represented on silver charms worn on the person, as a nude male figure attended by two females, one waving a fan (*chaurī*) over him, the other filling his tobacco pipe (*hugga*)." See extract in *North Indian Notes and Queries*, § 3 of Vol. IV.

CULT OF MIAN BIBI.



Charms showing Mian Bibi with attendants,
worn by devotees.

HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS.

BY H. A. ROSE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 252.)

III. — The Twenty-two Tikās of Jungā (Keōñthal), near Simla.

THE State of Keōñthal is one of the Simla Hill States in the Pañjāb, and its capital, Jungā, so called after the god of that name, lies only a few miles from Simla itself. Besides the main territory of the State, Keōñthal is over-lord of five feudatory States, *viz.*, Kōṭī, Theōg, Madhān, Gūnd and Ratēsh. Excluding these States, it comprises six detached tracts, which are divided into eighteen *pargānds*, thus:—

I. — Southern tract, comprising ten *pargānds*:— (1) Fāgū, (2) Khālāshī, (3) Tir. Mahāsū, (4) Dharēch, in Fāgū *tahsīl*; (5) Ratēsh, (6) Karōli, (7) Jāi, (8) Parāli, (9) Jhajoṭ, (10) Kalānj in Jungā *tahsīl*.

II. — Northern tract, which includes four *pargānds*:— (11) Shilī, (12) Matīāna, (13) Rajāna, (14) ? Matīāna, in Fāgū *tahsīl*.

III. — *Pargand* Rāwin, and IV. — *Pargand* Pūnnar, forming Rāwin *tahsīl*.

V. — *Pargand* Rāmpur, and VI. — *Pargand* Wākna, in Jungā *tahsīl*.

The three *tahsīls* are modern Revenue divisions, but the 22 *pargānds* are ancient and correspond in number to the 22 *tikās*, which are described below. It does not appear, however, that each *pargand* has its *īlāḥ* and the number may be a mere coincidence. The fondness for the Nos. 12, 22, 32, 42, 52, &c., in the Pañjāb, and, indeed, throughout India, is well-known, and goes back at least to Buddhist times.

The Simla Hill States form a network of feudal states with dependent feudatories subordinate to them and the jurisdictions of the local godlings afford a striking reflection of the political conditions, forming a complex network of cults, some superior, some subordinate. To complete the political analogy, the godlings often have their *wasīrs* or chief ministers and other officials. Perhaps the best illustration of this *quasi*-political organisation of the hill cults is afforded by the following account of the 22 *tikās* of Jungā. At its head stands Jungā's new cult. Jungā, it should be observed, is *not* the family god of the Rājā of Keōñthal. That function is fulfilled by the Dēvi Tārā.²⁴

The Cult of Jungā.²⁵

Legend. — The Rājā of Kōṭlēhr had two sons, who dwelt in Nādaun. On the accession of the elder to the throne, they quarrelled, and the younger was expelled the State. With a few companions he set out for the hills and soon reached Jakho, near Simla. Thence they sought a suitable site for a residence, and found a level place at Ṭhagwā in the Kōṭī State. Next morning the Mīān, or 'prince,' set out in a palanquin, but when they reached Sanjaulī, his companions found he had disappeared, and conjecturing that he had become a *dēotā*, returned to Ṭhagwā, where they sought him in vain. They then took service with the people of that part. One night a man went out to watch his crop and, resting beneath a *kēṃū* tree, heard a terrible voice from it say, "lest I fall down!" Panic-stricken he fled home, but another man volunteered to investigate the business and next night placed a piece of silk on the platform under the tree and took up his position in a corner. When he heard the voice, he rejoined "come down," whereupon the tree split in half and out of it a beautiful image fell on to the silk cloth. This the man took to his home and placed it in the upper

²⁴ An account of this will be found in Appendix I., attached to this paper.

²⁵ [The family likeness of the legends connected with these hill deities of the extreme North of India to those connected with the "devils" of the Tuluvas on the West Coast, very far to the South, is worthy of comparison by the student. See *Devil Worship of the Tuluvas*, ante, Vols. XXIII.—XXVI., 1894—1897.—Ed.]

storey, but it always came down to the lower one, so he sent for the astrologers, who told him the image was that of a *déotā* who required a temple to live in. Then the people began to worship the image and appointed a *chēlā*, through whom the god said he would select a place for his temple. So he was taken round the country, and when the news reached the companions of the Nādaun prince they joined the party. The god ordered temples to be built at Nain, Bojārī, Thonḍ, and Kōtī in succession, and indeed in every village he visited, until he reached Nādaun, where the Rājā, his brother, refused to allow any temple to be built, as he already had a family god of his own named Jipūr. Jungā, the new god, said he would settle matters with Jipūr, and while the discussion was going on, he destroyed Jipūr's temple and all its images by lightning, whereupon the Rājā made Jungā his own deity and placed him in a house in his *darbār*.

Jipūr is not now worshipped in Keōnthal, all his old temples being used as temples of Jungā who is worshipped in them. Nothing is known of Jipūr, except that he came in with the ruling family of Keōnthal.²⁶ He appears to have been only a *jāthērā* or ancestor. Jungā has another temple at Pojarli, near Jungā, to which he is taken when a *jāg* is to be celebrated; or when an heir-apparent, '*ṭikā*,' is born to the Rājā, on which occasion a *jāgrā* is performed. On other occasions the images made subsequently are alone worshipped in this temple. The ritual is that observed in a Shiwālā and no sacrifice is offered. There are 22 *ṭikās* or "sons" of Jungā. None of these can celebrate a *jāg* or observe a festival without permission from the Jungā temple, and such permission is not given unless all the dues of Jungā's temple are paid. Thus Jungā is regarded as the real god and the others are his children.

The following are the 22 *ṭikās* of Jungā :—

1. Kalaur.	12. Kulthī.
2. Manūnī.	13. Dhānūn.
3. Kanēṭī.	14. Dām.
4. Dēo Chand.	15. Rāṭṭā.
5. Shanēṭī.	16. Chānanā.
6. Mahānphā.	17. Gaun.
7. Tīrā.	18. Bījū.
8. Khatēshwar.	19. Kūsheli Deo.
9. Chaḍēī.	20. Bāl Deo.
10. Shanēī and Jāū.	21. Rawāl Deo.
11. Dhūrū.	22. Kawāli Deo.

1. The Cult of Kalaur.

Legend.—A Brāhman once fled from Kullū and settled in Dawān, a village in *parganā* Ratēsh. There he incurred the enmity of a Kanēt woman, who put poison in his food. The Brāhman detected the poison, but went to a spot called Bangā Pānī, where there is water, in Dōṛan *jāngal*, and there ate the food, arguing that if the woman meant to kill him she would do it sooner or later, and so died, invoking curses on the murderess. His body disappeared. In the Gaṛhal-ki-Dhār plain was a *bakhal* plant. One day a Brāhman of Gaṛāwag observed that all the cows used to go to the plant and water it with their milk, so he got a spade and dug up the bush. He found under it a beautiful image (which still bears the mark of his spade) and took it home. When he told the people what had happened, they built a temple for the idol, and made the Brāhman its *pūjārī*. But the image, which bore a strong resemblance to the Brāhman, who had died of the poisoned food, began to inflict disease upon the Kanēts of the place, so that several families perished. Thereupon, the people determined to bring in a stronger god or goddess to protect them from the image. Two Kanēts of the *parganā*, Dhēlī and Chandī, were famed for their courage and strength, and so they were sent to Lāwī and Pālwi, two villages in Sirmūr State, disguised as *faqīrs*, and thence they

²⁶ Nevertheless Jungā is not the family god of the Rājās of Keōnthal. A somewhat similar legend will be found in Appendix II. of this paper.

stole an *āṭh-bhōjāwālī*, 'eight-handed,' image of Dēvi, which they brought to Dhawar in Ratēsh. The people met them with music and made offerings to the stolen image, which they took to Walān, and there built a temple for it, ceasing to worship Kalaur. The plague also ceased. The people of one village, Gharēj, however, still affect Kalaur.

2. The Cult of Manūni.

Manūni is Mahādēo, and is so called because his first temple was on the hill of Manūn.

Legend. — A Brāhman of Parālī, in the Jamrōt *pargand* of the Patiala hill territory, a *pujārī* of Dēvi Dhār, and others, went to buy salt in Mandī, and on their way back, halted for the night in Māhūn Nāg's temple at Māhūn in the Sukēt State. The Brāhman and the *pujārī*, with some of the company who were of good caste, slept in the temple, the rest sleeping outside. The *pūjārī* was a *chēlu* of the god Dharto, at that time a famous *dēotā*, revered throughout the northern part of the Keonthal State. On starting in the morning, a swarm of bees settled on the baggage of the Brāhman and the *pūjārī*, and could not be driven off. When the party reached Munḍā, where the temple of Hanūmān now stands, the swarm left the baggage and settled on a *bān* tree. Here, too, the *pūjārī* fainted and was with difficulty taken home. The astrologers of the *pargand* decided that a god had come from Sukēt and wished to settle in that part, and that unless he were accommodated with a residence the *pūjārī* would not recover. Meanwhile the *pūjārī* became possessed by the god and began to nod his head and declare that those present must revere him (the god), or he would cause trouble. They replied that if he could overcome the god Dharto, they would not hesitate to abandon that god, though they had revered him for generations. Upon this 'a bolt from the blue' fell upon Dharto's temple and destroyed it, breaking all the idols, except one which was cast into a tank in a cave. The *pūjārī* then led the people to Munḍā, where the bees had settled and directed them to build a temple at the place where they found ants. Ants were duly found in a square place on Manūn hill, and a temple built in due course; but when only the roof remained to be built, a plank flew off and settled in Parālī. Upon this the *pūjārī* said the temple must be built there, as the god had come with a Brāhman of that place, and so a second temple was built and the image placed in it. That at Manūn was also subsequently completed, and a third was erected at Kōtī Dhār. The cult also spread to Nala, in Patiala territory, and to Bhajī State, and temples were erected there. The Brāhmans of Parālī were appointed Bhōjkīs and the *pūjārīs* of Kōtī Dhār *pūjārīs* of the god. Meanwhile the image of Dharto remained in the tank into which it had fallen. It is said that a man used to cook a *rōt* (a large loaf) and throw it into the water as an offering, requesting the god to lend him utensils, which he needed to entertain his guests. This Dharto used to do, on the condition that the utensils were restored to the pool when done with. But one day the man borrowed 40 and only returned 35 plates, and since then the god has ceased to lend his crockery. Beside the god's image is another, that of a *bir* or spirit, called **Tonda**. Tonda used to live at Parālī in a cave which was a water-mill, and if anyone visited the mill alone at night he used to become possessed by the *bir*, and, unless promptly attended to, lose his life. But once the *pūjārī* of Manūni went to the mill, and by the help of his god resisted the attempts of the *bir* to possess him. In fact, he captured the *bir*, and having laid him flat on the grind-stone sat on him. Upon this, the *bir* promised to obey him in all matters if he spared his life, and so the *pūjārī* asked him to come to the temple, promising to worship him there if he ceased to molest people. The *bir* agreed and has now a separate place in the temple of Manūni, whose *wasīr* he has become.

3. The Cult of Kanēṭi.

Legend. — After the war of the *Mahābhārata*, when the Pāṇḍavas had retired to the Badrī Nāth hills to worship, they erected several temples and placed images in them. Amongst others they established Kanēṭi in a temple at Kwāra, on the borders of Garhwāl and Bashahr, and there are around this temple five villages, which are still known after the Pāṇḍavas. Dōḍra and Kwāra are two of these. The people of the former wanted to have a temple of their own, but those of Kwāra objected

and so enmity arose between them. The Dôdra people then stole an image from the Kwâra temple, but it disappeared and was found again in a pool in a cave. It then spoke by the mouth of its *chêla* and declared that it would not live at Dôdra and that the people must quit that place and accompany it elsewhere. So a body of men, Kanêts, Kôlis and Tûris, left Dôdra and reached Dagôn, in Keônthal State, where was the temple of Jîpûr, the god of the Râjâ's family. This temple the new god destroyed by lightning, and took possession of his residence. The men who had accompanied the god settled in this region and the cult of Kanêti prospered. Âichâ, a Brâhman, was then *wazîr* of Keônthal, and he made a vow that if his progeny increased, he would cease to worship Jîpûr and affect Kanêti. His descendants soon numbered 1,500 houses. Similarly, the Bhalêr tribe made a vow to Kanêti, that if their repute for courage increased, they would desert Jîpûr.

4. The Cult of Dêo Chand.

Legend. — Dêo Chand, the ancestor of the Khanôgô sept of the Kanêts, was *wazîr* of Keônthal and once wished to celebrate a *jag*, so he fixed on an auspicious day and asked for the loan of Jungâ's image. This the *pujâris* refused him, although they accepted his first invitation, and asked him to fix another day. Dêo Chand could not do this or induce the *pujâris* to lend him the image, so he got a blacksmith to make a new one, and celebrated the *jag*, placing the image, which he named Dêo Chand after himself, in a new temple. He proclaimed Dêo Chand subordinate to Jungâ, but in all other respects the temple is under separate management.

5. The Cult of Shanêti.

There are two groups of Kanêts, the Painôî or Painûî and the Shaintî. Owing to some dispute with the *pujâris*, the Shaintîs made a separate god for themselves and called him Shanêti.

6. The Cult of Mahânphâ.

The Chibhar Kanêts of Jâtil *pargand* borrowed an image of Jungâ and established a separate temple.

7. The Cult of Tîrû.

Legend. — Tîrû is the god of the Jâtik people, who are a sept of the Brâhmins. A Tîrû Brâhman went to petition the Râjâ and was harshly treated, so he cut off his own head, whereupon his headless body danced for a time. The Brâhmins then made an image of Tîrû and he is now worshipped as the *jathêra* of the Jâtiks.

8. The Cult of Khatêshwar.

The Brâhmins of Bhakar borrowed an image of Jungâ and built a separate temple for it at a place called Kôti, whence the god's name.

9. The Cult of Chadei.

The Nawâwan sept of the Kanêts brought this god from *pargand* Ratêsh and built his temple at Charôl, whence the god's name.

10. The Cult of Shanêi and Jâu.

Jungâ on his birth made a tour through the Keônthal territory, and, having visited Shaint and Jâu villages, ordered temples to be built in each of them. Shanêi is subordinate to Jungâ, and Jâu to Shanêi. Both these temples are in the village of Kôti.

11. The Cult of Dhûrû.

A very ancient god of the Jai *pargand* of Keônthal. All the *zamîndârs*, who affected Dhûrû, died childless. The temple is financed by the Râjâs and the god is subordinate to Jungâ.

12. The Cult of Kûlthi.

The Chibhar sept of the Kanêts affect this god. His temple is at a place called Kawâlath,

13. The Cult of Dhânûn.

Legend. — The image of this god came, borne on the wind, from Nâdaun after Jungâ's arrival in the country. It first alighted on Jhako and thence flew to Nêôg, where it hid under a rice-plant in a paddy-field. When the people cut the crop they spared this plant, and then turned their cattle into the fields. But all the cattle collected round the plant, from under which a serpent emerged and sucked all their milk. When the people found their cows had run dry, they suspected the cowherdess of having milked them, and set a man to watch her. He saw what occurred, and the woman then, enraged with the plant, endeavoured to dig it up, but found two beautiful images, (they both still bear the marks of her sickle). The larger of these two is considered the Râjâ and is called Dhânûn (? from Dhând, rice), and the smaller is deemed the *wazîr* and is called **Wano** (meaning "tyrant" in the Pahârî dialect). This was the image which assumed a serpent's shape and drained the cows. Two temples were erected to these images, but they began to oppress the people and compelled them to sacrifice a man every day, so the people of the *pargand* arranged for each family to supply its victim in turn. At last, weary of this tyranny, they called in a learned Brâhman of the Bharobo sept, who induced the god to content himself with a human sacrifice once a month, then twice and then once a year, then with a he-goat sacrificed monthly, and finally once every six months, on the *ikâdshîs* of Hâr and Khâtik *sudi*. The Brâhman's descendants are still *pujâris* of the temple and *parôhîs* of the village, and they held Bhiyâr free of revenue until Râjâ Chandr Sain resumed the grant. They now hold Sigar in lieu of service to the god.

14. The Cult of Dûm.

Dûm has a temple in Katian, a village of Phâgu *tahsil*, and goes on tour every five or ten years through Keônthal, Kuthâr, Mahlôg, Bashâhir, Kôṭ Khâi, Jubbal, Khanâr, Bâghal, Kôṭi and other States. In Sambat 1150 he visited Delhi, then under the rule of the Tuṅwars, many of whom, after their defeat by the Chauhâns, fled to these hills, where they still affect the cult of Dûm. He is believed to possess miraculous powers and owns much gold and silver. He became subordinate to Jungâ, as the god of the State.

15. Râihâ.

This god has a temple in *pargana* Parâli.

16. Chânananna.

He is the deity of the Doli Brâhmans.

17. Gâun.

The image is that of Jungâ, who was established by the Rawal people.

18. Bijû.

Bijû was originally subordinate to the god Bijat, but as he was in the Keônthal State, he became subordinate to Jungâ. His real name is Bijlêshwar Mahâdêo, or Mahâdêo the Lightning God, and his temple stands below Jori Chandni in the Jubbal State.

Nos. 19, 20, 21 and 22.

Regarding No. 19, Kûsheti Dêo; 20, Bâl Dêo; 21, Rawâl Dêo; and 22, Kawâlî Dêo, no particulars have been discovered.

The Fairs.

It must be understood that the above are not the only cults which prevail in the Keônthal State. For instance, fairs called *jât* or *zât* are observed at Garên and Bhalâwag in this State, and, as will appear from the following accounts, other godlings are popular within its borders.

I. — The Zât Fair at Garên in Parganâ Ratêsh.

This fair is held on the 29th of Jêth. The images of the Dêvî Ratêsh and Kalwâ *déotâ* are brought in procession from the temple, where they are kept, to Garên, 400 or 500 persons accompanying them; and of these some 50 remain at Garên for the night, the rest returning home. By mid-day next day a great crowd of people collects, the men coming in bodies from opposite directions, each man armed with a bow and arrow and flourishing a *dângrâ* (axe), with a band of musicians preceding them. A man in one of these bodies shouts: — *Thadairi râ bhûkhâ, awau jî jhamak lûgî thî,*²⁷ *hó hó*, I hunger for a shooting-match: come, the fair has started; *hó, hó*. The others call out *hó hó* in reply. The tune called a *thadairi* is then sung, and matches are arranged between pairs of players. One champion advances with his arrow on the string of his bow, while the other places himself in front of him, keeping his legs moving, so as to avoid being hit. The archer's object is to hit his opponent below the knee, and if he succeeds in doing so he takes a *dângrâ* in his hand and dances, declaring that a lion's whelp was born in the house of his father at his home. The man who has been hit is allowed to sit down for a time to recover from the pain of the wound, and then he in turn takes a bow, and placing his hand on his opponent's shoulder says 'bravo, now it is my turn, beware of my arrow.' If he hit his opponent he, too, dances in the same way, but if he fail his victor dances again crying, 'how could the arrow of such a jackal hit a tiger's cub?' This goes on until one or the other is beaten. The matches are usually arranged between men who are at enmity with one another. The play lasts for two days. Sometimes disturbances break out. These used to be serious, even resulting in men being killed on either side, but nowadays a stop is put to the play, if a disturbance is feared, by pulling down the *déotâ's* flag, when the players desist of their own accord.

On the third day a goat and two buffaloes, all males, are sacrificed to Dêvî. The latter are killed in the same way as those at the Târab Fair,²⁸ but the shambles are at a distance from the temple, and two picked men take their stand, one on the road to Fâgû, the other on that to Ratêsh, to prevent the wounded animals going towards their respective villages, as it is believed that it is unlucky for one of them to reach either village, and bloodshed often results from the attempts of the different parties to keep the animals away from their village. Efforts have been made to induce the people to allow the buffaloes to be killed by a single blow, but the *pujâris* will not allow this, as being the offsprings of Dêvî's enemies, they must be slaughtered with as much cruelty as possible. After this rite the people make offerings to Dêvî, the money going to the temple fund, while the other things, such as grain, goats, &c., are divided among the *pujâris*. The *chêld* of the Dêvî then begins to nod his head (*khêlnd*, *lit.* to play), and taking some grains of rice in his hand, distributes them among the people, saying, 'you have celebrated my fair without disturbances, and I will protect you against all misfortunes throughout the year.' If, however, any disturbance has occurred during the fair, the offenders are made to pay a fine on the spot to obtain the Dêvî's pardon, otherwise it is believed that some dire catastrophe will befall them, necessitating the payment of a still heavier fine. The Dêvî passes the night at the fair, returning to her temple on the morning of the fourth day.

II. — The Jât Fair, Bhalâwag.

This fair is held at Bhalâwag on the first Sunday in Hâṛ. There is a legend that a *sâdhû* once lived on the Châhal hill. He was famous for his miraculous feats, and was said to be a *sîdh*. He built a small temple to Mahâdêo on the hill, and established a fair, which was held continuously for some years. The offerings made at the temple were utilized to meet the expenses of the institution. After the Gurkhâ conquest this tract was ceded to the Mahârâja of Patialâ in the time of Râjâ Raghunâth Sain. Once Rânâ Sansâr Sain visited the fair, but a dispute arose, and the Patialâ officials having used unbecoming words against the Rânâ, he removed the *ling* of Mahâdêo to his

²⁷ *Lit.*, 'you hunger after archery, come on, since you itch for it.' *Thadairi*, fr. *thoda*, an arrow, means archery, and one of the tunes or modes of the hill music is so called, because it is played at archery meetings.

²⁸ [See Appendix I., below.]

own territory and established it at Bhalâwag, and since then the fair has been held there. It only lasts one day. The Râjâ, with his Rânîs, &c., sets out with great pomp to the scene of the fair, the procession being headed by a band, and reaches the place about mid-day. People pour in from all parts, and by two in the afternoon the fair is in full swing. The Râjâ takes his seat on the side of a tank, into which people dive and swim. A wild *leo* is also thrown into it as a scapegoat (*bhêṭ*) and some people throw money into it as an offering. In the temple of Mahâdêo, *ghî*, grain, and money are offered by the people according to their means. The *pujâris* of the temple, who are Brâhman, divide the offerings among themselves. Worship is performed there daily, and on the *śankrânt* days Brâhman of other villages come there to worship. On the fair day worship is performed all day long. People also give the offerings they have vowed.

There is a legend about this tank, which is as follows :— Once a Brâhman committed suicide in a Râjâ's *darbâr*. In consequence of this *hatîyâ* (a profane act, especially the killing of a Brâhman), the Râjâ became accursed. He tried by all the means in his power to remove the curse, but in vain, for if he had a child born to him, it soon died, and though he performed worship and tried many charms and amulets, it was all of no avail. An astrologer then told him that as a *Brâhman-hatîyâ* had been committed in his *darbâr*, he would never be blessed with a son, unless he sank eighty-four tanks at different places in his realm for watering of kine. The Râjâ accordingly constructed eighty-four tanks at different places in the hills from Tajaur to Mattiâna. Of these tanks some were very fine, and one of them is the tank in question. After making all the tanks, the Râjâ sent for the builder, and, being much pleased with his work, gave him as a reward all that he asked for. But people then became envious of the kindness shown to him by the Râjâ, fearing that he would be elevated to the rank of *musâhib* (courtier), and so they told the Râjâ that if the builder did the same kind of work anywhere else, the Râjâ's memory would not be perpetuated and that steps should be taken to prevent this. The Râjâ said that this was good advice, and that, of course, he had already thought of it, so the builder was sent for, and although he tried to satisfy the Râjâ that he would never make the same kind of tank at any other place, the Râjâ paid no heed to his entreaties and had his right hand amputated. Thus disabled, the man remained helpless for some time, but having recovered, it struck him that with his skill he could do some work with his left hand, and he, accordingly, built two temples, one at Jâṭhî Dêvî and the other at Sâdû, both now places in Patiâla territory. When the Râjâ heard of this, he at once went to see the temples, and was so delighted with their work that he gave a reward to the builder, but at the same time had his other hand cut off, and the man died a few days after. It is said that after the making of the tanks, the Râjâ celebrated a *jag* on a very large scale, and four years after was blessed with a *ṭikâ* (son).

APPENDIX I.

Dêvî Târâ of Târab.

This Dêvî is the family deity of the Râjâ of Keonṭhal, and her arrival dates from the advent of the Râjâ's family in this part of the hills. Her legend is as follows :— Târâ Nâth, a *jogî*, who had renounced the world and was possessed of miraculous power, came to Târab to practise austerities. He kindled his fire, *dhûnd*, in the jungle. When rain came, not a drop fell on his sitting place (*ḍsan*), and it remained dry. Hearing of the supernatural deeds of the *jaṭîr*, the Râjâ went to visit him. The *jogî* told the Râjâ to erect a temple to his goddess, Târâ Mâi, on the hill, and to place her idol in it, predicting that this act would bring him much good, and that it was only with this object that he had taken up his abode on the hill. In compliance with these directions, the Râjâ ordered a temple to be built, in which the *jogî* Târâ Nâth placed the Dêvî's idol according to the rules set forth in the Hindu *Śāstras* for *asthâpan*, 'establishing an idol.' The Paṭo Brâhman, who attended the *jogî*, were appointed *pujâris* of the temple. This Dêvî has eighteen hands, in each of which she holds a weapon, such as a sword, spear, &c., and she is mounted on a tiger. The hill on which the *jogî* resided had, before his arrival, another name, but it was re-named Târab after him.

As the Dêvî is the family deity of the Râjâ, she is revered by all his subjects, and it is well known that whosoever worships the Dêvî will prosper in this world in all respects. It is also believed that she protects people against epidemics, such as cholera and small-pox. It is likewise believed that if the Dêvî be angry with anybody, she causes his cattle to be devoured by hyenas. The *zamindârs* of *pargandâs* Kalânj and Khushâlâ have the sincerest belief in the Dêvî. Whenever sickness breaks out, the people celebrate *jags* in her honour, and it is believed that pestilence is thus stayed. Some nine or ten years ago, when cholera appeared in the Simla District, some members of the Jungâ *Darbdâr* fell victims to the disease, but the Râjâ made a vow to the Dêvî, and all the people also prayed for health, whereupon the cholera disappeared. The people ascribe the death of those who died of it to the Dêvî's displeasure. Some four years ago, and again last year, small-pox visited *pargandâ* Kalânj, but there was no loss of life. Some two or three years ago hyenas killed numbers of goats and sheep grazing in the jungles round Târab, and the Dêvî revealed the cause of her displeasure to the people, who promised to celebrate a *jag* in her honour. Since then no loss has occurred.

Close to the temple of Dêvî is another, dedicated to Siva, which was erected at the instance of the *jôgi* Tara Nâth. The first temple of the Dêvî was at Ganparî village in *pargandâ* Khushâlâ. This still exists, and the usual worship is performed in it. The Dêvî's original seat is considered to be Târab. Her oldest image is a small one.

There is a legend that Râjâ Balbîr Sain placed in the temple at Târab an idol made by a blacksmith named Gosâûn, under the following circumstances:—One Bhawâni Dat, a *paṇḍit*, told Râjâ Balehr Sain that as Târab was a sacred place he ought to present an idol to it, which he (the *paṇḍit*) would place in the temple according to the Hindu ritual, and he added that the idol would display miracles. Accordingly the Râjâ ordered Gosâwan to make the idol required. The blacksmith made an earthen image of the shape suggested to him by the *paṇḍit*, who told the Râjâ that while the idol was being moulded, he must offer five sacrifices. This the Râjâ did not do, and moreover he had a brazen image prepared. Immediately after the blacksmith had completed his idol, he was attacked by a band of dacoits, who killed him with two of his companions, as well as a dog and a cat. Thus the five necessary sacrifices were fulfilled. The Râjâ was then convinced of the veracity of the *paṇḍit's* statement and acted thenceforward according to his directions. He performed all the requisite charities and sacrifices, and, having seated the idol, took it to Târab. He performed several *hawans* in the temple and placed (*asthâpan*) the idol in it. This Dêvî is the one who is mentioned in the *Chandîkî-Pôthî* by Mârkanḍâ Rishi, who killed Mahî Kahâshor.²⁹

The Fair of Dêvî Târâ is held at Târab in October on the Durgâ *ashtamî*, and lasts for a day. On the first *naurâtrî*, the Brâhmins worship Durgâ in the temple, and a he-goat is sacrificed daily, the Râjâ bearing all expenses. On the morning of the *ashtamî*, the Râjâ, with his Râni and all his family, sets out from his court so as to reach the plain below the temple at ten in the morning, and there takes a meal; after which the whole Court goes in procession, preceded by a band of musicians, to the temple, which the Râjâ, with the Râni, enters at about one in the afternoon. The Râjâ first offers a gold *mohar* and sacrifices a he-goat, and each member of his family does the same. Everyone presents from one to eight annas to the *bhōjki* and the *pujâri*. After the ruling family has made its offerings, other people may make theirs, and money, fruit, flowers, *ghî* and grain are given by everyone according to his means. The *bhōjki* and the *pujâri* divide the heads of the slaughtered goats, returning the rest of the flesh to the persons who offered them. This worship lasts till four, and then the sacrifice of bull-buffaloes begins. These are presented by the Râjâ as *sankalp* or alms, and taken to a place not far from the temple, where a crowd of people surround them with sticks and hatchets in their hands. The *pujâri* first worships the animals, making a *tilak* with rice and saffron on their foreheads. Boiling water is then poured on them to make them shiver, and if that fails, cinders are placed on their backs. This is done to each animal in turn, and unless each one trembles from head to foot it is not sacrificed. The people

²⁹ [This reference is clearly meant to be classical, and for Mahî Kahâshor read Mahisâsûra. — Ed.]

stand round entreating the Dêvi with clasped hands to accept the offerings, and when a buffalo shivers it is believed that the Dêvi has accepted his sacrifice. The people then shout '*Dêvi-jî kî jai, jai,*' 'victory to the Dêvi.' When all the buffaloes have been accepted by the Dêvi, the first is taken to the shambles and a man there wounds him with a sword. Then all the low-caste people, such as the Chamârs, Kôlis, Bharos, and Ahîrs, pursue the animal, striking him with their clubs and hatchets and making a great outcry. Each buffalo is brutally and cruelly killed in this way, and it is considered a meritorious act to kill them as mercilessly as possible, and if the head of any buffalo is severed at the first stroke of the sword, it is regarded as an omen that some evil is impending, and that both the person who inflicts the blow and the one who makes the sacrifice will come to harm in the course of the ensuing year, the belief being, that as the buffaloes are the children of the Dêvi's enemies, it is fitting to kill them in this way.³⁰ After this sacrifice, food is offered to the Dêvi, and *ârti* is performed at six in the evening.

The fair is the occasion of much merriment and even debauchery. Women of all classes attend, unless they are secluded (*pardâ nishîn*), and those of loose character openly exact sweetmeats and money for the expenses of the fair, from their 1 ramours, and put them publicly to shame if they do not pay. The plain is a **sanctuary**, and no one can be arrested on it for any offence, even by the Râjâ, but offenders may be arrested as soon as they quit its boundaries and fined, the fines being credited to the temple funds. Offences are, however, mostly connived at. There is much drinking and a good deal of immorality, with a great many petty thefts. The Râjâ, with his family, spends the night on the site of the fair. The *bhôjî* and the *pujâri*, who, with the *bhandâri*, receive the offerings received at the fair, are Sarsût Brâhman of the Rai-Bhât group, while the *bhandâri* is a Kanêth. Brâhman girls are also brought to this temple, where they worship and are fed, and also receive money and *dachhnâ* (*dakhna*).³¹

On the third day of the Dasahrâ, the goddess is worshipped at 2 P.M., in the *darbâr*, all the weapons being first taken out of the arsenal and worshipped, and then all the musical instruments. The essential worship is that of the sword and flag. After this the Râjâ holds a *darbâr* with full ceremonial and then visits the temple of **Thâkurji Lachhmi Nârâyan**, whence the image is brought in a palanquin, while the Râjâ walks just behind it, attended by all his officials, in order of precedence, to the plain set apart for this festival. On this plain a heap of fuel³² is piled at a short distance from a green tree, which is adorned with small flags and round which is tied a wreath containing a rupee. The Râjâ with unsheathed sword goes round the heap, followed by the rest of the people, and the heap is then worshipped and set fire to. It is essential that the *wazîr* of the State should be present at this ceremony, and if he is unavoidably absent, a representative, who wears an iron *sanjûd*, is appointed, and the heap is then fired. The man who cuts the wreath on the tree in the midst of the burning fire and takes the rupee is considered a hero, and his prosperity during the ensuing year is assured. Before the heap is fired, a pitcher of water with a mark on it is placed close by, and whoever hits the mark is deemed lucky, besides receiving a prize from the Râjâ. If no one is able to hit it, the man who represents Hanûmân, and who accompanied the idol, smashes the pitcher with his mace. The image is then carried back to its temple with the same pomp as before, and a turban is given to the Râjâ on behalf of the Thâkurdwâra, while his attendants are given *bhâg* and *charnamrit*.³³ Wreaths of flowers are then distributed. The festival is believed to commemorate the conquest of Ceylon by Râm Chandar, the ancestor of the Râjputs, which was accomplished after worshipping Dêvi.

A somewhat similar festival is the **Sâêr Fair** held at **Khaḍ Ashnî**:—On the morning of the first of Asauj, a barber, having lighted a lamp in a *thâl* (plate) and made an idol of Ganêsh in cow-dung, comes to the Râjâ and his officials and makes them worship the idol. The Râjâ and

³⁰ Mahî Khashwa, Mahisâstira, who tormented the Dêvi, was a bull-buffalo, and, when he was killed, his descendants were metamorphosed into bull-buffaloes.

³¹ A fee for spiritual service.

³² The stack is called *lankâ*.

³³ The water with which the feet of the idol have been washed.

officials then give him presents according to their means. In the afternoon, the Rājā gives alms, and, accompanied by a procession with a band and his Rānis, sets out for Khaḍ Ashnī. The inhabitants of the neighbouring villages assemble there in thousands to enjoy the sight. Some fighting bull-buffaloes, which have been reared for the purpose, are brought to the fair the day before and fed up with *ghī*, &c. The Rājā himself rears six or eight buffaloes for this fair, and they are similarly prepared for the fight. The fair begins at one in the afternoon, when the he-buffaloes are set to fight in pairs, and the person whose buffalo wins is given a rupee as a reward by the Rājā. So long as the fight lasts, music is played.

The people at the fair distribute sweetmeats, &c., among their friends and relatives. Swings too are set up and the people revel in drink. They can commit disturbances with impunity, as no offenders are arrested on this occasion. Many people from Simla bring haberdashery for sale, and the articles are largely purchased by women. At five the people begin to disperse, and the Rājā returns to his *darbār*. About 6,000 or 7,000 persons assemble at this fair, and the Rājā distributes rewards among his servants on its termination. Its introduction is due to the Rājā, and it is not held in honour of any particular god. The place where the fight takes place is dedicated to the god Baḍmūn. Formerly rams were also made to fight, but now only bull-buffaloes are used. Before the commencement of the fight, a *rôt* is given to the god. This *rôt* is made of $5\frac{1}{4}$ *sērs* of flour, $5\frac{1}{4}$ of *gur*, and $5\frac{1}{4}$ of *ghī*. The flour is first kneaded in *sharbat* of *gur* and then made into a thick loaf, which is then fried in *ghī*. When it is cooked, it is taken with *dhūp*, *tilak*, flowers and rice to the place of the god, and after worship has been performed, it is divided in two, one piece being left at the temple and the other distributed among the people.

According to one legend, this fair was instituted by the forefathers of the Rājā, who originally came from Gauṛ in Bengal and were an offshoot of the Sain dynasty. This festival is also observed in that country. It is said that the Rājās of the Sain dynasty were the devotees (*upāsak*) of the Dēvī, who rejoices in fighting and the sacrifice of bull-buffaloes. Although this fiction is not generally accepted, the story is told by men of advanced age, and the late Rājā Malēr Sain also ascribed the fair to this origin. It is said that that Biru dēotā is the *vazīr* of the Dēvī, and therefore the fair is held at the place where there is a temple of the Dēvī or Biru. It is also said that the day of the fair is the anniversary of that on which Rājā Rām Chandar constructed the bridge to Ceylon, and that the fair is held in commemoration of that event. In the everyday speech of the hill people Biru dēotā is called Baḍmūn dēotā.

APPENDIX II.

The Goddess Ath-bhōjā of Dharēch.

Legend.—A Rājā of Kōtlēhr in the Kāngra District, named Jaspāl, had two sons. The elder succeeded to the throne, and the younger, in consequence of some dispute, quitted the dominions of his brother, went to the hills, and took the name of Gajindar Pāl. On leaving Kōtlēhr, he brought with him an eight-handed image from the fort of Kāngra, and came to Bhajjī, where he begot four sons, Chīṛū, Chānd, Lōgū, and Bhōgū. On his death, these four partitioned his dominions thus : Chīṛū took the *ilāqa* of Bhajjī, and Chānd that of Kōṭī, while Lōgū and Bhōgū received *parganā* Phāgū in *jāgir*. The descendants of Chīṛū and Chānd are to this day the Rānās of Bhajjī and Kōṭī respectively. Bhōgū married, and three families of his descendants, Marchhīṭak, Phaṭīk, and Halīṭak, still exist in *parganā* Phāgū. Lōgū did not marry, but became a dacoit. In those days the country round Phāgū was under the Rānā of Ratēsh. Harassed by Lōgū's raids, the people complained to the Rānā, but Lōgū was strong and brave and the Rānā could not capture him. At last he commissioned a Chanāl²⁴ to kill Lōgū, promising him a reward if he succeeded, but though the Chanāl pursued Lōgū for some time, he failed to seize him. Lōgū had a *liaison* with a Brāhman girl, and one day she was sitting with him under a tree, when the Chanāl chanced to pass by, and, taking Lōgū off his

²⁴ Chanāl is a low caste in the hills.

guard, smote off his head and carried it to the Rānā, leaving his body at Hohān village, but the corpse of its own accord went to Dhar, a village surrounded by a rampart and with only one entrance, which was closed at the time. The headless body pushed open the gate, and entered the village. When the people saw it all besmeared with blood, they were terrified and gathered together, but the body disappeared, and though they searched for it, they could not find it. At last they discovered a stone *pindli* (an idol having no special shape). On consulting the astrologers, they were told, that Logū had been transformed into a *déotā* and that they should place (*aṣṭhāpan*) the *pindli* in a temple and worship it as a god. Then Bhôgū and other *zamīndārs* established the eight-handed Dēvī, which Lôgū's father had brought from Kôṭlêhr, at Kiliyā in Dhīraj village and placed Lôgū's *pindli* in the jungle of Ḍawān. The Brāhmans who had come with the Rājā of Kôṭlêhr's sons were appointed *pujāris* of both deities, and it was then decided that Dēvī was the superior and that Lôgū was her subordinate. Shortly afterwards several brazen images of Lôgū were made and a handsome temple built to him in Bakhôg village, where he is daily worshipped. In Ḍawān hamlet he is worshipped once every three years.

A fair is held at Dēvī's temple on the Durgā *aṣṭami* day and at that of Lôgū on the Salônô, i. e., the *pūranmāshī* of Sāwan *sudī*, and at the Diwālī in the month of Kātak.

(To be continued.)

AHMAD SHĀH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZĪR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

(Continued from p. 18.)

NEXT 'Imād-ul-mulk began to talk about the invasion of the Shāh and his own calamities at the coming of the Shāh to Shāhjahānābād, telling the story with all its details. His account was as follows:—

'IMĀD-UL-MULK'S STORY.

The daughter of Mīr Manūṇ, son of Nawāb Qamar-ud-dīn Khān, Muḥammad Shāh's *Wazir*, was betrothed to me. Then Mīr Manūṇ met his death at Lāhor.¹⁶ His widow, by the medium of a woman in the Shāh's (the Abdālī's) family, with whom she had some sort of relationship or connection, wrote a letter to the Shāh, setting forth her unprotected condition. The Shāh was touched and said he would adopt Mīr Manūṇ's widow as his daughter. He ordered certain *jāgirs* to be left in her possession and added some tracts of land as a gift from himself.

As Mīr Manūṇ's daughter had already been betrothed to me ('Imād-ul-mulk), her mother wrote to me: "The feast for the marriage of my daughter remains to be performed. You can either come here [Lāhor], or send for us [to Dihlī], so that this business may be carried through." But the Begam added that she could not come to Dihlī without the permission of the Shāh. In reply I wrote to her: "Get permission from the Shāh and come yourself to Shāhjahānābād." The Begam submitted this proposal to the Shāh, and permission to leave Lāhor having been granted, she reached Shāhjahānābād two years ago.

In the interval mention began to be made [to me, 'Imād-ul-mulk] of the daughter of 'Alī Qulī Khān; and the other matter [of the marriage to Mu'in-ul-mulk's daughter] was

¹⁶ Mu'in-ul-mulk (Mannū) met his death at Lāhor by a fall or by poison on the 9th or 10th Muḥarram, 1167 H., 3rd or 6th Nov. 1753. 'Imād-ul-mulk is telling the story in 1169 H., according to our author. The real date of this interview must have been, however, Jamādā II., 1170, end of February, or first week in March 1757; see B. M. Oriental MS. No 1749, ff., 102a-105b.

postponed for one year, and I was married to the daughter of 'Alī Qulī Khān.¹⁷ After a year the Begam Ṣāhibah was sent for by the Shāh; and repeatedly his letters arrived summoning her. The answer she wrote was: "I came to Shāhjahānābād to see about the marriage of my daughter. Two years have elapsed while I have been sitting and waiting here and Ghīyāz-ud-dīn Khān [*i. e.*, the person speaking, *viz.*, 'Imād-ul-mulk] has never carried out the ceremony. Nay, he is on the point of making his first marriage with the daughter of 'Alī Qulī Khān, the Six-fingered, the Dāghistānī; and her mother was a singing woman."

In reply to this letter the Shāh sent me an angry letter, and over and over again forwarded preremptory orders for the Begam to return to his Court. While this was going on, I had married 'Alī Qulī Khān's daughter, and on this account the Begam Ṣāhibah was to some extent ill-disposed towards me. More than once she wrote to the Shāh that she had been involved in all these complications, yet up to that date her daughter had never been married, "but was still seated solitary at home."

The Shāh, upon the representations of the Begam Ṣāhibah, was greatly incensed against me in his heart. When the Shāh drew near to Dihlī and was encamped at Shāhdarrah,¹⁸ I sent for Nawāb Najīb Khān, and said: "We must deliver one battle against the Shāh." His answer was: "Pay me this day two *lacs* of rupees, cash down, and I will fight." I replied: "Nothing is due to you by the State for your arrears and pay, seeing that in liquidation of your claims I have handed over to you more than one half of the territories. At a day's notice whence can I produce such a sum of money? This claim that you have announced is inconsistent with your loyalty as a subject."

Najīb Khān and his followers raised a tumult and for a whole day barred exit from and ingress to my house, and pressed for payment of the above sum. Then, keeping the fact a secret from me, Najīb Khān appointed one Rasūl Khān, Afghān, as his agent, and sent him to the Shāh's camp, where he was to act under the auspices of Jahān Khān, the Shāh's general-in-chief. That very same day a letter in the most cordial terms came from the Shāh, inviting Najīb Khān to his camp.

At midnight Najīb Khān came out of Dihlī and marched off with his troops to the Shāh's camp, where he was presented through Jahān Khān and obtained a regal *khilā't* (set of robes). I saw that in the realm of Hind there was no defender, I was left alone, "driven off from that side, and on this side, left forlorn,"¹⁹ exposed to dishonour and to death. Thus it seemed best to let come what come might, and go off in person to the Shāh. When it was one watch (three hours) before dawn, without informing any of my people, but taking my life in my hand, I got on to my horse, and, followed by four attendants, an hour and a half after sunrise I reached the tent of the chief minister, where I dismounted. The chief minister was most kind and took me to his arms. Then he called for breakfast for me. In every way he tried to comfort and reassure me. One of the family of the chief minister was related to my mother, and this lady, who was then travelling with him, heard of my arrival, and, following custom, sent out some one to ask how I was.

This conversation ended, the chief minister went away to see the Shāh and reported that 'Imād-ul-mulk Ghīyāz-ud-dīn Khān, the *Wazīr* of Hindūstān, had left the capital and had reached his (the chief minister's) tent all alone, and was stopping there. He was waiting for permission to kiss the threshold of the Heaven-exalted Court.

¹⁷ Her name was Gannā Begam and her mother was a dancing-girl. A translation of one of her poems is to be found in Vol. I. of Sir William Jones' works. Her tomb is at Nūrābād, sixty-three miles south of Āgrah, and it bears the short inscription, 'āh, ghām-i-Gannā Begam' (1189 H., 1775-6). "Alas! weep for Gannā Begam."

¹⁸ On the left bank of the Jamnah, just opposite to Dihlī.

¹⁹ *Az ān sū rāndah, wa az īn sū māndah.*

An order issued: "Let him be brought." I went, and I saw that Najib Khān, and Jahān Khān, and five other commanders were standing there with folded hands. As my offering I produced five gold coins, and a jewelled amulet, having mounted on it a diamond of great price.

The Shāh said: "Art thou Ghiyāz-ud-dīn Khān?" I replied: "I am he; a sinner and a transgressor." He said: "Thou wert *Wazīr* of Hindūstān, wherefore foughtest thou not with me?" I replied: "The Amīr-ul-umārā of Hindūstān was Najib Khān. Behold, here he is present before the Shāh's throne. I said to him: 'We ought to fight one battle.' He paid no heed and, without reporting to me, left Dihli and was honoured by admission to this Exalted Court. Except this noble there was within the realm no other renowned commander having an army. Thus, where was the army I could lead into battle?"

The Shāh said: "It is two years since I sent to you the daughter of Mir Manūn, under her mother's charge, so that she might be married to you. Up to this day you have not been married to her. Repeatedly have I sent for the Begam of Mir Manūn, she being my adopted daughter, and yet you never sent her to me. Over and above this neglect, you made your first marriage with the daughter of 'Ali Qulī Khān, whose mother was a dancing-woman, and yet you failed to carry out my orders."

I replied: "The Begam of Mir Manūn caused me to record a written oath, sworn to upon the back of the Qurān, and took it away with her. It was to the effect that after I had married her daughter I would never marry another wife. Now, the daughter of 'Ali Qulī Khān had equally become betrothed to me, but when 'Ali Qulī Khān died, Shujā'-ud-daulah had endeavoured to get the girl for himself. Thus I was forced to consider my reputation and dignity and name, which were at stake; so I entered into my first marriage with her and thus avoided the breaking of the oath that the Begam Shāhibah had forced me to write out."

Upon this the Shāh said: "Intizām-ud-daulah (son of Qamar-ud-dīn Khān) has filed before me, through my *arzbegī*, Barkhūrdār Khān, an agreement under his own seal, offering two *krors* of rupees on condition that charge of the office of *Wazīr* in Hindūstān is made over to him. The rescript conferring the office of *Wazīr* in India has been written out, and only awaits the seal of my *Wazīr*. If thou agreeest to one *kror* of rupees, thou shalt be maintained as before in that office."

I said: "This slave could not lay his hands even upon one *lakh* of rupees. Whence can I produce a *kror*?" He (the Shāh) answered: "Thou canst bring it from Shāhjahanābād." I represented: "I could not collect a *kror* of broken pebble-stones there. What chance, then, of getting rupees?" He replied: "How much treasure hast thou stored in thy house?" I said: "Fourteen thousand rupees in cash, two thousand seven hundred gold coins, and four *lakhs* worth of jewels, silver vessels, and so forth. If it be so directed, I will send for them this day, and deliver them over to His Majesty's officials."

On this occasion a slight smile passed over the Shāh's face, and he said to Shāh Walī Khān, his chief minister: "This is the *Wazīr* of Hindūstān and you, too, are a *Wazīr*. Take him to your quarters and persuade him. If he agrees to a *kror* of rupees, then make out the rescript for the *Wazīr*'s office in his name, and maintain him in his old position." He presented me with robes of honour of the Qizilbāsh style, six pieces in number, and a jewelled aigrette-holder, with a plume of feathers; then dismissing me, sent me away with his *Wazīr*.

Upon this we came back to the chief minister's tent. He pressed me to the utmost, and said the rescript appointing Intizām-ud-daulah to be *Wazīr* of Hind was already made out; only his (the chief minister's) signature and seal remained to be attached. Any sum that

I chose to promise he would get agreed to, and then would have the order made out in my name. "As the Shāh and I too" (he added), "on account of Mir Manūn, are inclined in heart towards you, we have made some delay in impressing the seal on the rescript for "Intizām-ud-daulah."

I replied that absolutely I could not think of taking or attempting the *Wazīr*-ship in a State where there was no army and no treasure. Nor had I any power of laying hands upon a *lakh* of rupees. True kindness and condescension would, in my case, consist at this juncture in excusing me from such an undertaking. Under no conditions could I accept the office.

The chief minister once more went to the Shāh and made a representation of the case. Then and there the rescript for the office of *Wazīr* was completed in the name of Intizām-ud-daulah; and it was sent off to him at Shāhjahānābād by the hands of a *nasagchī*. Intizām-ud-daulah reeled with excitement, and ordered the kettle-drums to be beaten in honour of his appointment as *Wazīr*.

Two days afterwards the Shāh entered Shāhjahānābād. Five hundred horsemen were set apart to look after me and bring me with them. That same day, that on which the Shāh entered Dihlī, he gave an order that the daughter of 'Alī Qulī Khān should be marched away from Shāhjahānābād and taken to Balkh. Accordingly, that very day their march began and their camp was pitched at the town of Bādli.

At the time of afternoon prayer the Shāh said to me: "This night the marriage ceremonies of Mir Manūn's daughter will be celebrated in my presence. Go away now, and when one watch of the night has passed, be ready for this business in accordance with your own customs, and appear then in my audience-hall." At the same moment he sent notice to the widow of Mir Manūn.

When one watch of the night had gone by, I appeared at the appointed place. Then, with his own auspicious hand, the Shāh applied *henna* to my palms, and caused the ritual of marriage to be carried out in his own presence. He said: "From this time I have taken you as my son; in every way let your heart be at rest." He conferred on me a gift of 5,000 rupees and two shawls he had worn himself. For this I made him my acknowledgments. Then I sent to the Begam 5,000 rupees on account of the Unveiling of the Bride. The Shāh said: "To-night remain where you are, you are a bridegroom." Then he was pleased to honour his own sleeping apartment.

The same day there came to the Shāh a petition from Rājah Sūraj Mall Jāt, to this effect. "This faithful one is a slave and a servant of your government. I entertain no ideas but those of submission and obedience. My hope from your mercy and grace is, that should an order of the Shāh secure the honour of issuing, I will place grass in my mouth and an axe upon my neck, and attend to kiss the Threshold, whereby my head will be raised from among my peers as high as the Seventh Heaven."

The order of the Shāh was: "Let it be written — 'Why delay for the issue of an order, if he is a true subject of the Empire, let him appear and attend our audience.'" Considering the offer of Sūraj Mall to be *bonā fide*, the Shāh went off to his sleeping quarters and retired to rest.

When one watch of the night was left before daybreak, the Shāh arose and entered his oratory, and until the time came to say the morning prayers busied himself in reading portions of the Scripture (*waḥāf*) and recitation (*aurāḍ*), and perusal of the Qurān. After

completion of the morning prayers, he entered the Hall of Public Audience and took his seat upon the throne. At one and a half hours after sunrise the emperor of India appeared, and they gave formal audience together, seated upon one throne.

The Shāh ordered Intizām-ud-daulah to be sent for, so that they might that day collect from him the first instalment of one *kror* of rupees. A general order was given to the *nasagchis* (a sort of military police) to visit the houses of the other nobles, — above all, that of Mir Jumlah, Ṣadr-uṣ-ṣudūr, who had a treasure-house containing trays upon trays full of gold, — and bring in them and their gold.

In fine, from that moment a strange uproar arose within the city, and cries reached the ear everywhere of "Bring gold! Bring gold!" An exceeding fear fell upon the dwellers in Shāhjahānābād.

The widow of Mir Manūn sent a message to me: "At this time the *nasagchis* have not given one moment's grace to Intizām-ud-daulah but have carried him off to the audience. A wooden triangle (*chobhāe qaiñchī*) has been erected with a view to punishment; and the Shāh has said that this day one *kror* of rupees, according to agreement, being one instalment, must be collected. If this is not done, he will issue an order for a beating with sticks."

On hearing these words I hastened off to the Hall of Public Audience, and, making my obeisance to the Shāh and to my own Sovereign, I remained standing in my due place. I saw that what the Begam Ṣāhibah had said was quite true. Intizām-ud-daulah, his face white as a sheet, was standing close to the triangle. In a short time the Shāh would have lost his temper and flown into a rage.

Going close up to Intizām-ud-daulah, I said softly: "What is the source whence you thought of getting the money?" He said: "By asking for time and forming plans; at this moment, beyond this one ring that I have on my finger, I have not control over even one rupee." Hearing this appalling reply, my heart sank within me; and I concluded that of a truth, this man has not the power of paying in even a few thousands of rupees. This day sees the end of the honour of the house of us Turānīs! Whatever force and torture may be used to this man, will, all of it, in the judgment of the common people, be attributed to me Ghīyāz-ud-dīn Khān, because he has claimed the *Wazīr*-ship and displaced me. They will say I had planned that he should be either disgraced or slain."

Therefore, in the most abject manner, I laid my head at the foot of the Shāh's throne, and said: "May I be thy sacrifice! May I be the averter of thy misfortunes! This dignity and honour of the Turānīs, of so many years' standing, — alas! that in the days of a Shāh equal in dignity to Sulaimān, they should be reduced to entire nothingness! and should become a laughing-stock to the Īrānīs! I rely upon the graciousness of the Shāhan Shāh, that as an alms-offering upon his blessed head, they may be preserved from dishonour and granted pardon."

The Shāh said: "This day will I have the money; I have heard that in the house of Qamar-ud-dīn Khān there lie stored twenty *krors* of rupees; and out of this accumulation this son of his has covenanted to pay two *krors*. I relinquished part, but this day I mean to realize one *kror*, be it by gentle means or by torture. Let the position of the treasure-store be pointed out; or, if not, I will order a bastonading."

Intizām-ud-daulah spoke : " Whatever treasure there was, my father caused to be buried " within his mansion. The widow, Shu'lahpūrī Begam knows about it." Forthwith the Shāh ordered the Begam to be produced. Unable to resist, the poor Begam came to the Hall of Public Audience in a woman's litter with a dirty cloth thrown over it. There the Shāh screened off an enclosed space, and called the Begam to his own presence. He said to her : " Thou art as a sister to me ; nor do I wish to shew any disrespect to the family of the " sovereigns of Taimūr's line, or to that of their chief minister ; you should give up their treasure."

The Begam was shaking and trembling all over, and quite unable to return any answer. An order was given that if the woman did not tell where the money was, iron nails were to be driven in underneath the nails of her hand. On hearing these words the poor creature lost her senses and fell down in a fit. Then Intizām-ud-daulah and I were called to the presence. The Shāh said : " Carry this woman away and place her on one side. Find out exactly where the " store of money is."

To make a long story short. After a short time the Begam recovered her senses and said " I am not able to specify the place where the treasure is.. Only this much I know, that what- " ever there is of it is buried within a certain mansion." This statement I reported to the Shāh. He directed that the Begam be carried to that spot. One hundred axe-men and twenty *nasaqchis* were placed on the duty of seeing the ground explored and recovering the treasures from it.

Thus, for six hours the earth was excavated, and at the end of that time the treasure was hit upon. When it had been counted, it was found to amount to sixteen *lakhs* in coin. A report was made to the Shāh that this amount of buried treasure had been disinterred. Since, according to Persian reckoning, one *lakh* is 30,000 rupees, while by Indian rules 100,000 rupees are called one *lakh*, the Shāh, following mentally the Persian mode of account, understood that something about one *kror* of rupees, more or less, had been seized.²⁰

After the recovery of this money, the Shāh pardoned all the transgressions of Intizām-ud-daulah and conferred on him robes of honour as *Wazīr*, and uttered many apologies in connection with Shu'lahpūrī (Begam). Out of the money found he presented ten thousand rupees to the Begam. A general order was given that not a soul should slay, plunder, or oppress within the city of Shāhjahanābād. The Shāh rose and retired to his sleeping apartments.

On that day the slaves and camp-followers of the Shāh had gone out, by way of foraging, towards Farīdābād to bring in water and grass. It so chanced that Kuṇwar Juvāhir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāt, and Shamsheer Bahādur,²¹ Marhaṭṭah, and Antā Mānkher, Marhaṭṭah, were about that time at fort Ballamgaḍh with five to six thousand men. They issued from the Ballamgaḍh fort and, coming upon the foragers, took them unawares, attacked them, and drove away one hundred and fifty horses, while some fifty to sixty of the men were killed. This event was reported to the Shāh the same evening.

That very moment the Shāh sent for 'Abd-uṣ-ṣamad Khān, who was the commander of thirty thousand horsemen, and whispered to him : " Without delay take out your men and " go against the infidels. During the coming night select a hiding-place and go into ambush

²⁰ The sum was really 53½ (Persian) *lakhs*, and thus not much more than half a *kror*.

²¹ Shamsheer Bahādur, son of Bājī Bāo, Peshwā, by a Muḥammadan dancing-girl.

"Send on one hundred of your men in advance into the open country and induce the infidels to fall upon them. Your horsemen must engage them and, by alternately fighting and retreating, bring them gradually close to you. At that point come out of your ambush and offer them up as food to the relentless sword."

'Abd-*u*-ṣamad *Khān* did as he was told. Juwāhir Singh and the two Marhaṭṭah chiefs already mentioned, escaped alive with nine other men, and sought shelter within the fort of Ballamgaḍh, among the nine being one Hidāyat 'Alī *Khān*, *faujḍār* of *chaklah* Shukohābād Manipurī, Bhoṅgām *et cetera*.²² When half a watch had passed after sunrise 'Abd-*u*-ṣamad *Khān* presented himself before the Shāh to make his obeisance, accompanied by about five hundred infidel heads carried on spears, and captured horses, with other goods and chattels. A jewelled aigrette and robes of honour were conferred on him.

The Shāh ordered his advance tents to be sent out and put up in the direction of Farīdābād, stating that on the following day he would enter that place. To the emperor of India he said: "You should march along with me, so that wherever there are any rebellious or turbulent men, or any of your enemies, you may issue your credentials, and they shall receive thorough repression and be forced to give proper tribute. My purpose is this — that in order to reduce your kingdom to order, so far as by my hands it can be done, ample exertion of the most effective sort be brought into play."

The emperor brought forward unworthy objections, and declared then to the Shāh: "We desire that between us the ties of brotherhood should be set up, by the marriage of one of the royal ladies to His Majesty the Shāh." The Shāh replied: "I desire no disrespect to the House of 'Amīr Taimūr." The emperor of Hindūstān became still more pressing in his request — nay, he said to the Shāh: "The longing of the whole body of Begams in the royal family is in secret that this should be done. What harm is there if the daughters of sovereigns are delivered to sovereigns. My pleasure will be consulted by this being carried out."

Therefore, that very night one of the daughters of Zīnāt Maḥal was married to him. The Shāh treated this spouse with such honour and respect that he made her the head over all his other wives. After this ceremony the Shāh said to me: "Thou hast only lately been married. Stay where thou art." I answered: "This faithful one will remain in attendance on the felicitous Stirrup. If you allow, I will bring my family with me. Then, the connections of 'Alī Qulī *Khān*, who form part of the good fame of this slave, have, by the Royal orders, marched off to the town of Bādli, which lies five *kos* from Shāhjahānābād, on their journey to Balkh. On this subject I await, for the present, whatever you may be pleased to order."

The Shāh said: "Let them be brought back to Dihli. Let them be under the control of 'Umdah Begam. When I return to Wilāyat, whatever the widow of Mīr Manūṣ desires shall be done with them." I made my obeisance of thanks, and, in spite of the Shāh declining to take me with him, I managed somehow or other to march along with him, wanting to see what would happen.

[Imād-ul-mulk's narrative to Sher 'Andāz *Khān* ends.]

After this narrative was done, Ghiyāz-ud-dīn *Khān* asked the Mīr Šāhib, saying: "I should like to inspect the memoranda and requests of the Nawāb, my brother (that is to say, Ahmad

²² This Hidāyat 'Alī *Khān* may possibly have been the father of Ghulām Ḥusain *Khān*, author of the *Siyar-ul-muta akhḥir*.

"Khān), to find out what matters he has prayed the Shāh to grant him." The writer at a sign from the Mir Sāhib fetched the memoranda, which were with a servant in a bag, and handed them to him ('Imād-ul-mulk). After he had gone through them, he made alterations in several places. Thus, for "*Ṣabah* Bangālāh six *krors* is offered" he wrote "four *krors*"; and for the Marhaṭṭah country he altered "fifty *lakhs*" of rupees into "twenty *lakhs*," and in regard to the Audh *Ṣubẖ* he replaced "two *krors*" by "seventy *lakhs*." Other memoranda were prepared and made over to the Mir Sāhib.

Let us return to our narrative. 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mir Sāhib were engaged in this conversation, when a messenger from the Shāh's audience ran up and said: "The chief minister has stated the business of Aḥmad Bangash to the Shāh and his petition has been sent for, you must give it to me." Thus he carried off the petition in its bag. The Shāh himself read it, and reassured the chief minister; and two mounted *nasagchīs* were sent off at once to fetch Jangbāz Khān, who had gone to the town of Mīraṭh. Their orders were to bring him back at once with all haste.

When the chief minister returned to his tent, he said to the Mir Sāhib: "The Shah has interested himself in the highest degree in the affairs of Aḥmad Khān, and has announced that whatever Aḥmad Bangash has asked for should be granted." He would send Jangbāz Khān back with his (Aḥmad Khān's) envoy. Accordingly, *nasagchīs* had been despatched at once to Jangbāz Khān. In four days' time Jangbāz Khān will arrive. With regard to you (the Mir Sāhib) he said that the next day being a halt, you are to be presented to him. The chief minister having thus reassured the Mir Sāhib in the most perfect manner, sent him away. At noon he forwarded to the Mir Sāhib one tray of fruit and four trays of food, when the Mir Sāhib presented a gift of ten rupees to the minister's servants.

The next morning we attended at the quarters of the chief minister. The chief minister conducted the Mir Sāhib to the Shāh's presence. The Shāh enquired: "You are a Sayyid?" He replied: "They call me so." The Shāh went on: "Sayyid, let your mind be easy; I have sent for Jangbāz Khān. In four days he will be here, and I will depute him to Farrukhābād in your company. Write to Aḥmad Khān to begin making his plans, and he should be in every way without anxiety. I have entered these realms as an upholder of the Faith and a succourer of the Afghān tribes. My purpose is that the accursed group, the Marhaṭṭahs, who have occupied the territories of that tribe (the Afghāns), shall, through the fear and power of the Lord, be uprooted and expelled by me."

The Mir Sāhib made an obeisance of thanks and produced the list of presents and rarities. The things were all in the author's charge, he having attended in the Mir Sāhib's train and being seated in the Shāh's audience-hall. An order was given to lay the things out for inspection. Mirzā Muṣṭafā, the Shāh's Secretary, came up to the author and placed the gold coins, *et cetera*, and the rest of the things in large and small trays, then laid them before the Shāh. The whole gift was accepted. He remarked: "The rupee of Farrukhābād is better looking and better made than that from any other place in India. I have heard that Aḥmad, Bangash, is a man of valour, though, nowadays, the Marhaṭṭahs have got hold of his territories. He ought to eject them, and, please the Lord! it shall so come to pass, and I will make over the country as far as the borders of Bangal to Aḥmad Khān."

After this speech, he conferred on the Mir Sāhib a robe of honour of seven pieces, together with a jewelled aigrette, a turban of a flowered pattern, a tight-fitting coat of shawl stuff, in addition to

a pleated over-gown and a *yabāe* (?), with a flowered edging, a waistband of shawl-stuff, and a pair of shawls from Tūs.

At this point four *nasagchīs* appeared and made some statement in the Turkī language. The Shāh's face flushed red, and he said in Persian: "Send for Jahān Khān." To Jahān Khān he said: "Take Najib Khān with you and march this very instant. Move into the boundaries of the accursed Jāt, and in every town and district held by him slay and plunder. The city of Mathurā is a holy place of the Hindūs, and I have heard that Sūraj Mall is there; let it be put entirely to the edge of the sword. To the best of your power leave nothing in that kingdom and country. Up to Akbarābād leave not a single place standing."

Jahān Khān made his obeisance and marched off the same day. Then he (the Shāh) directed the *nasagchīs* to convey a general order to the army to plunder and slay at every place they reached. Any booty they acquired was made a free grant to them. Any person cutting off and bringing in heads of infidels should throw them down before the tent of the chief minister, wherewith to build a high tower. An account would be drawn up and five rupees per head would be paid them from the government funds. The next day the march for the territories of the Jāt began.

To the Mir Sāhib the Shāh said: "Sayyid, I have come as an upholder of Islām. The accursed generation of Marhaṭṭahs, how can they withstand me? I will sweep their very name out of this country. In my heart is a firm resolve to pursue them into the Dakkhin regions. So long as you are with the army, come daily to make your bow without fail." Out of those gold coins he picked up ten and presented them to the Mir Sāhib, saying: "I present you with these by way of *ulash* (table money ?)," and then in the kindest way gave him leave to go.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

FURTHER TRACES OF TOTEMISM IN THE PANJAB.

THE following instances of clans or sections, both among Hindus and Muhammadans, which bear totemistic names supplement those already published *ante*, Vol. XXXII. p. 201, 312 ff. Personally I am by no means convinced that totemism can be said to exist in the Pañjāb or North-West Frontier Province, since there is clearly no organised tribal system based on totemism, and most of the instances collected are explicable as *tabus* based on verbal resemblances, or as nicknames.

Khaggā. — From *khaggā*, a kind of fish, so called because their ancestor Jalālu'd-Din Khaggā saved a boat-load of people from drowning. Like the Bodlās, the Khaggās can cure hydrophobia by blowing.

Kahal. — From *kahī* or *kahil*, a weed. This tribe is found in Bahāwalpur, and is an offshoot of the religious tribe of the Chishtīs, with whom they still intermarry. They are fervent in

religious observances. Their origin is said to be that a child was born near the Indus, close to a *kahī* weed. They are quite distinct from the polygamous Kahals, who live on crocodiles, &c.

Labānā or Lobānā. — It is tempting to derive this name from *lān* (salt), and I think it means 'trader in grain,' but *labāna* is also 'an earth cricket, with formidable jaws,' and, in the South-West of the Pañjāb, people whose children have pimples, *pānī-watrā*, tied a *labāna* (or *pānī-watrā*, as the insect also seems to be called) round their necks, believing that a cure will result. It is said of the Labānās that a son was born to a Rāthor Rājput with moustaches, and so he was nicknamed Labānā, after the insect.

Sunārs. — Among the Mair Sunārs, four sections merit notice:—

Baggā. — The Baggā section claims descent from Rāō Ohhabitā of Delhi, whose complexion was *baggā*, which means 'white' in Pañjābī, and hence their name.

The **Plaud** section claims descent from the saint Pallava, whose name is derived from *psallava*, or leaf, because he used to worship under the leaves of a banyan tree.

The **Masūn** claims descent from a child born when his mother became *satī*, at the *chhatā* or *masān*, "burning-place."

The **Jaurā** section derives its origin from the simultaneous birth of a boy and a serpent called a *jaurā*.¹ The serpent died, but the boy survived, and his descendants, who are of this *gōt*, still reverence the serpent.

Brāhmans. — Among the Nagarkotiā Brāhmans of the Kāngra District certain snake sections have already been noted. In addition to these, the **Batehru** (**Pakkā** and **Kachchhā**) have the following sections:—

(i) **Chappal**,² an insect; no explanation is forthcoming.

(ii) **Sugga**,² a parrot; no explanation is forthcoming.

(iii) **Bhāngwaria**, fr. *bhāngār*,² a kind of tree.

(iv) **Khajūre Dogre**: Date-palm Dogar, a section founded by a man who planted a garden of date-palms, and which originated in the Dogra country on the borders of Jammū.

(v) **Ghābrū**,² a rascal; one who earns his living by fair means or foul.

Mahājans. — Among the Mahājans of Kāngra the following sections have been noted:—

(i) **Bherū**, said to be derived from *bedhī*, 'ewe'.

(ii) **Makkerū**, said to be from *makkī*, a bee.

(iii) **Kohāru**, an axe or chopper.

Ghirths. — Among the Ghirths of Kāngra the following may also be noted:—

(i) **Pathrālā**, founded by a leaf-seller (*pattā*, leaf).

(ii) **Khēra**, founded by a woman whose child was born under a *khēr* tree.

(iii) **Banyānū**, founded by a woman whose child was born under a *ban* or oak.

(iv) **Daddā**, founded by a woman whose child was born near a bamboo, and laid on the tree.

(v) **Khunlā**, an animal of some kind. The name was given to a child as a token of affection. Hence his descendants are still called by the name.

(vi) **Ladhāriā**, from *ladhār*, a kind of tree.

(vii) **Ghurl**, a wild goat; so-called because its progenitor cried like one.

(viii) **Khajūrā**, date-palm (*cf.* the Brāhman section of this name); so-called because its founder was born under a date-palm.

(ix) **Khattā**, from *khattā*, a kind of tree: for a similar reason.

Brāhmans. — In Ambālā the Brāhmans have two almost certainly totemistic sections:—

(i) **Pile Bheddi**, or yellow wolves; so-called because one of the ancestors was saved by a she-wolf, and so they now worship a wolf at weddings.

(ii) **Sarinhe**. — They are said to have once taken refuge under a *sarīn* tree, and they now show reverence to it.

Rājputs. — The Rājputs in this District have a *gōt* whose names (*sic*) end in *pakīs* (now corrupted into *Prakāsh*), because their ancestors, once in time of trouble took refuge under a *dhūk* tree. Their women still veil their faces before a *dhāk*, and it is also worshipped at marriages, &c., by them.

Jats — In Miānwālī, a district on the Indus, the Jats have a sept, which is thus described:—

The **Thinds**, who are owners in several villages near Leiah, say they were originally Chughattas, but a boy of that family was found by the Pīr, greased or buttered all over, with insects clinging to him. The Pīr said: "They have buttered you well," and he was called Thind thereafter.³

Chhimbās. — The Chhimbās of Māler Kotla have the four following *gōts*, regarding which no traditions are forthcoming:—

Daddū, frog or toad.	| Khurpā, trowel.
Thuān, scorpion.	| Laurā, penis.

Wasirs. — In Kohāt the custom among the Wazirs is that after the birth of the *first-born* child, the mother walks out of the house, and names the child after the object, such as a tree, animal, insect, &c., that first catches her sight. For instance, one tribe, the Gidar Khēl, is so called after the jackal.

H. A. ROSE.

May 31st, 1906.

¹ *Lit.*, 'twin.'

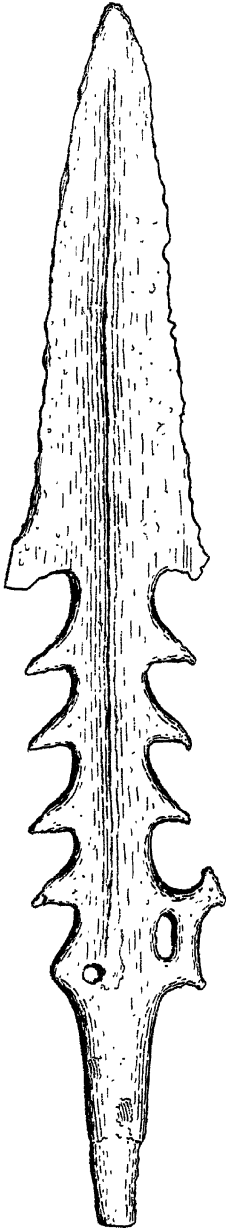
² Not in the *Punjabi Dictionary* of Bhai Maya Singh.

³ *Thindā* = greasy or buttered: *cf.* p. 56 of O'Brien's *Multāni Glossary*.

PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS FROM INDIA.

Plate VII.

Bronze, (?) copper harpoon-head,
from India, presented in 1880
by Sir A. Cunningham to the
National Museum, Dublin.

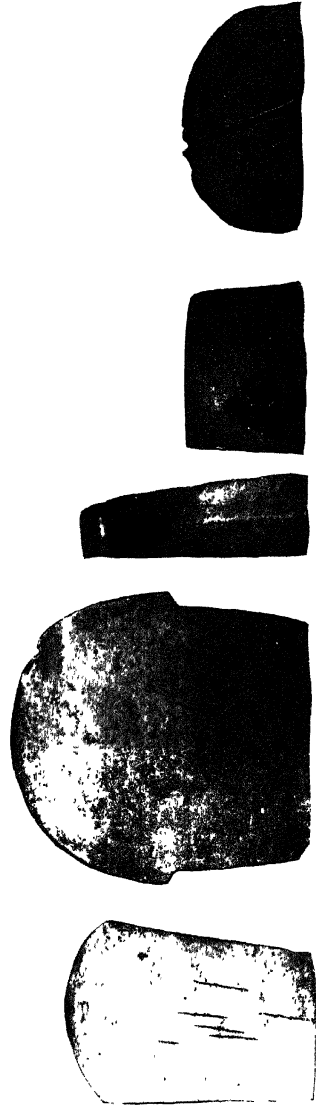


SCALE: ONE-HALF.

DRAWING BY MISS A.; NAT. MUS., DUBLIN.

PHOTO BY PANDIT HIRANANDA, NO. 114.

Bronze, (?) copper implements from Pariár in Unão District.



8½" by 6½"

SCALE: ABOUT ONE-QUARTER.

W. GRIGGS, PHOTO-LITH.

PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS FROM INDIA.

Plate VI.

Bronze, (?) copper implements from Bithūr or Brahmāvarta in Cawnpore District



SCALE: UNCERTAIN, PROBABLY ABOUT ONE-QUARTER.

PHOTO. BY PANDIT HIRANANDA: Nos. 108, 109, 110.

W GRIGGS

THE COPPER AGE AND PREHISTORIC BRONZE IMPLEMENTS OF INDIA —
SUPPLEMENT.

BY VINCENT A. SMITH, M.A., I.C.S. (RETD.)

(Continued from Vol. XXXIV., p. 244.)

I PROPOSE in this short article to complete my review of the present state of knowledge concerning the copper age and prehistoric bronze implements of India by utilizing some materials which were not at my command last year.

In December 1904 Dr. Vogel, acting under instructions from the Director-General of Archaeology, deputed his Assistant, Paṇḍit Hirananda, to examine the site at Rājpur in the Bijnaur District, U. P., and to obtain photographs of copper or bronze implements reputed to exist at Bithūr or Brahmāvartta in the Cawnpore District, and at Pariār on the opposite bank of the Ganges in the Unāo District of Oudh. The Rājpur implements are fully illustrated in Plate I. of my former article. The photographs of the site, which Dr. Vogel has kindly sent me, show that it is a piece of waste ground adjoining a grove, and marked by a mound or tumulus, apparently of earth, a few feet in height. There is nothing sufficiently characteristic in the appearance of the spot to justify the expense of reproducing the photographs.

The town of Bithūr is situated on the Ganges, twelve miles to the north-west of Cawnpore. Local legend affirms that the god Brahmā celebrated his completion of the work of creation by a horse-sacrifice at the Brahmāvartta Ghât. Dr. Führer states that 'numbers of ancient metal arrow-points are found in the soil around Bithūr, said to be relics of the time of Rāmachandra' (*Monum. Antiq., N.-W. P. and Oudh*, p. 168). By 'arrow-points' Dr. Führer meant the large objects which are more properly described as 'harpoon-heads.' Two specimens of this class and two 'flat celts' of primitive lithic type in the Lucknow Museum have been illustrated in Plate IV. of my former paper. The photographs supplied by Dr. Vogel (Plate VI.) now illustrate fourteen more objects from the same site. One of these is a harpoon or spear-head, with three points on each side below the blade, and the rest may be called varying forms of 'celts.' Four of these with broad rounded edges are slightly shouldered, and nearly related to the Midnāpur specimen previously figured in my Plate II., fig. 6. The narrow celts are obviously copies of common forms of stone implements. The bent implement, figured at the end of the top row of Plate VI., is a new form, but a duplicate of it occurs at Pariār (Plate VII.). Presumably all these Bithūr specimens are made of copper, not bronze, but without analysis it is impossible to be certain what their composition is. Dr. Vogel's Assistant has failed to report where the fourteen objects now photographed are preserved, but probably they are kept in a temple or temples.

Pariār is a village in the Unāo District of Oudh, on the Ganges, opposite Bithūr, fourteen miles to the north-west of Unāo, as indicated in the Map to my former article. Like Bithūr, it is sanctified by Brahmanical legends of the usual kind, and is frequented as a bathing-place. The great *jhīl* or swamp, which almost surrounds the village, is called Mahnâ, and probably represents an old river-bed. 'In the temple of Sômêśvara Mahādêva on the banks of the *jhīl* are collected a large number of metal arrow-heads said to have been used by the contending armies [of Lava and Kuśa, sons of Rāmachandra]; they are also occasionally picked up in the bed of the *jhīl* and of the Ganges' (Führer, *op. cit.* p. 272, erroneously printed as 172 in my former paper, p. 237). The photographs now published evidently are those of implements preserved in the Pariār temple (Plate VII.). One implement, as already observed, is a shouldered celt like four specimens from Bithūr and one from Midnāpur, and another is a peculiar bent tool resembling a Bithūr specimen, and, I think, new to science. The paṇḍit unluckily omitted

to note the scale of his photographs, but in the *Progress Report of Panjâb and U. P. Circle for 1903-4*, p. 21, the dimensions of a Pariâr implement in photograph No. 114, now reproduced, are stated to be $6\frac{1}{2}$ by $8\frac{1}{2}$ inches. This object must be the round-headed shouldered celt shown in the Plate, and the scale of the photograph, consequently, is approximately one-fourth of the originals.


In my previous paper (p. 243 ; 15 of reprint) I described 'a fine harpoon-head, presented by Sir Alexander Cunningham to the collections now in the National Museum, Dublin, and said to have been found somewhere in India. This weapon has four teeth, not recurved barbs, on each side below the blade, and the loop on one side of the tang, through which the thong attaching the head to the shaft was passed, is formed by the legs and body of a rudely-executed standing animal. The general appearance of this object, which is apparently made of bronze, not copper, is more modern than that of the copper implements from Northern India.' By the kindness of Mr. George Coffey, Curator of Antiquities in the Dublin Museum, I am now able to present a drawing of this unique implement, prepared by a member of his staff (Plate VII.). The implement may be, as I supposed in my previous paper, less ancient than the copper articles from Northern India and Gungeria, but, even if that be the case, it certainly dates from a period of very remote antiquity, and is characteristically Indian in form.

I conclude by quoting miscellaneous observations with which I have been favoured by correspondents interested in my previous paper. Canon Greenwell, the veteran archæologist, writes: — 'I did not know that so many [copper implements] had been found in India. It is evident that there never was a bronze cultivation there. Indeed it cannot be said that there was ever any real development of a bronze cultivation, except in Western Europe. Assyria and Egypt certainly did not possess one; nor can Greece, the Islands, or Asia Minor be said to have brought it to any high pitch, though there are splendid specimens, such as the Mykenae blades. Still there is nothing like the fine swords, spear-heads, etc., so abundant in the United Kingdom, Denmark, France, Switzerland, and Italy. Hungary developed it certainly; but further east and south it never reached to any height, nor have many bronze weapons, etc., been found in those countries. Spain, too, is very poorly represented, which, as it had much traffic with the Eastern Mediterranean, seems to point to the bronze culture not having come through that channel. The Eastern origin of bronze and its development must be given up; and, so far as we have evidence at present, somewhere about the head waters of the Danube seems to be the most probable place of birth. But we want many more facts before any safe conclusion can be come to.' These weighty observations raise a big question which I am not prepared to discuss at present, but I may be permitted to feel some satisfaction at having had the opportunity of communicating to the scientific world a considerable body of facts to help in the final solution of the problems of the origin and extent of the so-called Bronze Age. Canon Greenwell is of opinion that the Dowie dagger or sword¹ is certainly prehistoric, and observes that 'the handle has something in common with the ordinary bronze sword.' He also thinks, and rightly, that the Norham harpoon was brought to England in modern times, probably by some sailor. He knows of 'several similar finds; Carib stone-axes and North American arrow-points have occurred in England,' and the way in which they came has been traced.

Professor Ridgeway of Cambridge alludes to Major Sikes' 'copper (for they can hardly be called bronze) axes, vessels, and curious rods with a curved end' from Southern Persia, which have been described by Canon Greenwell in the *Archæologia*, and were discussed at the York meeting of the British Association. Professor Ridgeway is inclined to think that these objects are of comparatively late date, the first century B. C., or even the first century A. D.

¹ *Ante*, Vol. XXXIV., p. 243, and reprint of the paper, p. 15, with figure.

This opinion is based on 'the very advanced character of the grooved work on the bottom of one of the vessels, and a similarly late description of the bottom, as well as shape, of the other'; supported by the fact that the owners of Major Sikes' objects buried their dead. I have not followed up these references. The Professor is anxious to get 'more data from Persia itself.' Perhaps some reader of the *Indian Antiquary* may be able to supply them. Professor Ridgeway possesses a copper arrow-head found in a grave near Koban in the Caucasus, associated with a bracelet and beads of glass, which seems to date from the second century A. D.

Mr. Gatty tells me that a copper celt, quite plain, and roughly made, was found some years ago by a keeper, under a heap of stones on the moors above Sheffield, in the parish of Bradfield. Mr. Gatty lived in that parish for twenty years, and collected flint implements, but never heard of any other copper or bronze article being found. The shape, so far as he remembers, was like this: — 

These supplementary notes exhaust for the present all the information which I possess concerning the ancient copper and bronze antiquities of India. Perhaps the publication of them, like that of my previous paper, may attract the attention of observers and scholars interested in prehistoric archæology, and help in the elucidation of problems now very obscure.

AHMAD SHĀH, ABDĀLĪ, AND THE INDIAN WAZĪR, 'IMĀD-UL-MULK (1756-7).

(Contributed by William Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Service.)

(Continued from p. 51.)

Rubric. — The Shāh marches from Farīdābād towards the territory of Sūraj Mall, Jāṭ; he pitches his camp close to Sherkoṭ; on the same day at the request of 'Imād-ul-mulk he seizes by force the fort of Ballamgaḍh, which lay three *kos* from the camp, towards the left; flight of Juwābir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāṭ, Shamshe Bahādur, Marhaṭṭah, and Antā Mānker, Marhaṭṭah, who were within that fort; slaughter of the rest of the garrison.

Be it known that the following was the order of the Shāh's march and encamping. One march was never more than five *kos*. When there remained one watch of the night he started; and performed his morning prayers upon his arrival at his advanced tents. He had not a single kettle-drum sounded, nor music at fixed hours, nor trumpets (*harrah-nāe*) and such like.

Before the Shāh mounted, twelve thousand special slaves assembled, three thousand on each side of the Shāh's tent. The title of these men was *Durrānī* (the pearl wearers), and from their ears hung gold rings, mounted with very large pearls. They remained drawn up in ranks at a distance of one hundred paces, seated on their horses. When the Shāh placed his foot in his stirrup, the twelve thousand slaves, at one and at the same moment, with a single voice, shouted aloud: "Blessed be the Names, in the Name of God, peace be unto His Majesty the Shāh!" This sound rose to heaven and reached the ears of the army, thus enabling them to know that the Shāh had started. Then the rest of the army from that time got ready, and at the moment of dawn began its march, and reached its new quarters at one watch after daybreak. The general rule was to march one day and halt the next; but on some occasions there was a halt of even two days.

The mode of the Shāh's progress was as follows: The Shāh advanced alone amidst the ranks of his slaves, riding a horse, his sword slung from his shoulder, and his quiver on. There were four bodies of slaves, each of three thousand men, one division in front, one behind, and one on each side. Each division of them wore a hat of a different style. It was prohibited for a slave belonging to one division to ride with another division; he must keep with his own set. If by chance any one disobeyed the rule and the Shāh noticed him, the man received a beating so severe that he was left half-dead, or with perhaps only a gasp of life left in him.

All these slaves were well-made and good-looking, of white and red complexion, with gold-lace waistbelts and hats of flowered gold lace. On each side of the hat hung flowered-pattern tufts (*ṭurrah-hāe*), towards the ears, near the cheeks. Their long sidelocks were in curls. Many of the slaves, those who were officers, had jewelled aigrette-holders with feathered plumes fixed on the top of the hat. They rode fast horses of Kābulī breed, and guided them, each in his own station, with a grave demeanour. They moved at the distance of a musket-shot from the Shāh's person, all their faces turned towards him. The Shāh rode alone in the middle, with an open space around him.

In whatever direction he chanced to glance, one slave holding a pipe and another bearing a porous bottle of water rushed up to him. Then the Shah would take the pipe-stem into his hand, rein in his horse, and proceed slowly. When done with his pipe, he would rinse his mouth three times with water from the bottle.

The treasure and the food supplies, the stores of clothes, and so forth were carried in the following manner. On the left flank, outside the ranks of the slaves, there were one hundred camels loaded with bread, baked and then dried, two hundred camels loaded with grain, this was called *sūrsāt*.²³ This grain was given out daily in allotted portions to the nobles and the servants of the Begams. On the right flank were two hundred camels loaded with clothes and vessels, silver pots, and so forth. Such treasure as there was came in the rear of the guard of slaves, which followed the Shāh; it was carried on mules and two-humped dromedaries.

Shāh Pasand Khān and Jangbāz Khān, with the *quwāchī-bāshī*, were told off to the rear-guard and held command over its movements. The three thousand slaves, who rode in front as advance guard, fully armed and ready, bore each a lance whose head was either gilt or silver-plated, having a decorated (*muqaiyash*) and fringed (*musalsal*) pennant. To the onlooker, owing to the multitude of lances, it seemed like the glittering of rain. In the rays of the sun the spearheads and pennants so shone, that you might imagine the stars were sparkling in the sky. It was wondrous as a garden in springtime, and a sight worth beholding.

On the day that the Shāh after the afternoon (*zuhr*) prayer set out to conquer the fort of Ballamgaḍh, the author in company of the Mir Sāhib [Sher Andāz Khān] was in attendance on His Majesty. By a lucky chance the ranks of those slaves formed up close to me. In whatever direction I looked, my eyes rested on countenances lovely as youthful Joseph, as if the slaves from Paradise, throng upon throng, had descended upon earth, and with their fairy-like dispositions were seated firmly in the saddle, thirsting for the blood of the children of Adam. By the Lord! I was so overcome that my head drooped to the pommel of my saddle.

A horseman named Mir Muḥammad 'Aṭā, by race a Barakkī Sayyid, belonging to the troops of the 'Uṣmān Khān already mentioned, who, to a certain extent, was proficient in Arabic and Persian, and used to pay a daily visit to the Mir Sāhib, had set up a friendship with the author. At the time I have been speaking of, he was at my side. He exclaimed: "O So-and-so! What is the matter with thee? Thy complexion has turned saffron-colour and thy eyes red as the planet Mars. The hot rays of the sun have affected thee!" He offered me water from the *chūyal* or leather-bottle that he carried, and I re-opened my eyes. I answered: "I have no need of water"; and I repeated the following quatrain:

Quatrain.

*Ān roz kih ātash-i-muḥabbat afrokhht,
'Ashūq roshan-i-'ishq zi ma'shūq amolhht;*

Az jānib-i-dost sar-zad īn soz wa gudāz,

Tā dar na girift-i-shama' parwānāh na solhht.

"The day when the fire of affection was kindled,
"The lover learnt from the loved-one the brightness of love;
"Through a friend arose this burning and melting,
"So that the butterfly should not fall into the lamp and burn."

²³ Turkish, "requisitions in kind levied from the enemy."

He said : " Say it over again ! What is it ? " I replied : " O brother ! seest thou not that this crowd of lovely faces with white cheeks and rosy lips has brought affliction on my life and faith, and robbed me of my heart ; and these dusky eyes with sword-wielding eyebrows and arrow-like eyelashes, how they stab me as with daggers by their amorous and languishing glances, and spill the blood from many hearts."

He gave a loud guffaw, and glancing towards them he brought forth a heavy sigh, and exclaimed : " Thou speakest truth, come on so that we may be closer to them. I am acquainted and friendly with a number of them." I recited the couplet:—

Harzah-gard-i-bāq̄h chūn bulbul nayam; parwā-naham, " A butterfly am I, no vagrant songster of the grove,
Mitawānam kard parwāzi, kih bas bāshad marā. " I can wing my flight, and that is enough for me."

Two days afterwards the said Mir, on some pretext or other, brought four of these slaves on a visit to the Mir Šāhib; and to some extent an intimacy arose, and they came frequently. The Mir Šāhib (God give him rest) treated them with great kindness, and feasted them and received them with civility. He even gave them money, as much perhaps as fifty rupees.

One of them sang Persian odes (*ghazal*) excellently, to the accompaniment of music, and possessed a heart-alluring singing voice. Every time he came there was a wonderful crowd. He got me to write him several *ghazals* and took them away with him.

One of them is the following:—

Ghazal.

Turā, st qadd chū sarv, wa turā, st rūe chū māh, " Thou hast the cypress' waist, thou hast a moon-like face,
Yake miyān-i-qabā, wa yake ba zer-i-kalāh, " The one girl in thy coat, the other showing below thy cap.
Rabūdī az man jān, wa burdī az man dil, " Thou hast robbed me of life, hast carried off my heart,
Yake ba qadd chū sarv, wa yake ba rūe chū māh; " One by this cypress-like waist, the other by this moon-like face:
Khabar dahad lab-i-tū, wa nishān dahad rukh-i-man, " Thy lips tell a tale, and my face reveals it,
Yake zi surkh-i-la'l, wa yake zi zard-i-gāh. " Those by their ruby redness, this by its hay-like pallor.
Būd chū bakht wa qadam, chashm wa zulf-i-tū dā, im, " Be thy eyes and locks lasting like Fate and the Ages,
Yake zi khwāb-i-nazhand, wa yake zi tāb-i-dū-tāh. " These by venerated sleep, those by their two-fold brightness.
Zi dard wa hasrat-i-tū didah wa dil-am har daur " From pain and grief of thee my eyes and heart for ever
Yake mi-bārad khūn, wa yake bar-ārad āh: " The first rain blood, the other heaves a heavy sigh:
Shudā, st mūe man az'ranj 'āraz, wa zulf-at, " By grief my hair is changed, while my locks
Yake chū shīr-i-sufed, wa yake chū qir-i-siyāh. " Are grown white as milk, thine still black as pitch."

Praise be to God ! Whither are my words wandering !

Hemistich.

Husn-i-in qisṣah 'ishq ast, dar daftar na mi-ganjad. " The beauty of this tale is love, no volumes can contain it."

To return to the narrative. The retinue of the servants of the Begams, which was called the retinue of the *Haram* of the Shāh, marched in the following order. After the morning prayers they started. Closed litters (*imāri*) were placed on camels; these had curtains of red broadcloth, some decorated, but most of them plain. On several of the camels were large closed litters, but on most of them two panniers (*kajāwah*), the furniture of which was also of scarlet broadcloth. There were about two hundred camels. In the midst of them, which was styled the *kalb*, or "heart," went fifteen to twenty persons, carried on *takhts*, or platforms, in the Hindūstānī manner, borne on the shoulders of *kahārs* (a caste of litter-carriers).

This procession, from the number of covered red litters, formed a sight worth seeing. In advance, at the distance of an arrow's flight, went five hundred mounted archers, and as an armed retinue (*qār*) there followed one thousand horsemen. At five to six *gharis* ($1\frac{1}{4}$ to 2 hours) after sunrise they reached their encampment. The horsemen who came first gave a shout, using the words *Yurhā! Yurhā!* that is, "Withdraw on one side." In every lane and passage in the camp through which the retinue of the *Haram* took its way, every one, great and small, remained with his face covered by his skirt, until the last of the procession had gone by. If by chance any one ever glanced towards the retinue, one, two, or three horsemen would ride at him and without a pause most relentlessly thrash him. The retinue would take four or five *ghari* (90 to 112 minutes) to pass any given spot. All the people on their road, through the camp, were in a most extraordinary condition of apprehension, and you might say each of them was a man afflicted by God.

The camp of the Shāh was pitched in two portions. The first was the male and the other the female quarters. Between the two was left an open space of about the width of two or three arrows' flight. The female camp was called the *Haram*; the men's camp had two names; where the Shāh sat was styled *Khargāh*, and where the scribes of the office were placed was called the *Darikhānah*. In the screens of the *Khargāh*, facing the *Darikhānah*, there was one large entrance, constructed of wood, painted of an azure colour, and partly gilt, on which were beautiful flowers of many sorts depicted by the brush. On the top of the gateway was placed a large dome made of copper, two sides of which were gilt. This was called the *Qubbah-i-Shāh* (the Shāh's cupola). It was so high that it could be seen at a distance of three to four leagues (9 to 12 miles?). If the light of the sun were over against it, it shone from afar, and the men in charge of the baggage train were guided by it to their destination. It was there that the Shāh's own tents would be found.

At each of the two wings of this entrance stood a large standard in a gold-embroidered scarlet broadcloth cover. From the top of each standard hung a bow upside down, and a flower-pattern cloth, *viz.*, a waist-cloth, hung down from each end of it. To each bow notch a naked sword was attached to the bow-string (*chillah*). If a halt were ordered, the two swords were placed upright. If there was to be a march, then at nightfall, one sword was let down and placed upon the ground. These were the signals of a halt, or a march.

To go on with the story. When the Shāh marched from Faridābād and reached his camp, the fort of Ballamgaḍh was three *kos* to the north. 'Imād-ul-mulk represented to him that the fort of Ballamgaḍh was close by, and the infidel Juwāhir Singh, son of Sūraj Mall, Jāt, with Shamsheer Bahādur and Antā Mānkher, two Marbatṭah chiefs, were within the fort. His Majesty's wisest course was to detach a strong force to drive the fumes of overweeningness out of their heads.

The Shāh said: "My scheme is to uproot the forts of Dīg and Kumher. What is there for me "to attack in little forts like this?" He ('Imād-ul-mulk) represented: "If these rebellious "fellows did not happen to be in this fort alive, it would be of no importance. At this moment, when "the infidels have taken refuge so near to us, to leave them unmolested and continue our march, "will raise many suspicions."

The Shāh replied: "Take with you Afzal Khān, the Ghilzah, who is at the head of forty "thousand men, and invest the fort." 'Imād-ul-mulk and the said Khān arranged for the

investment of the fort. The garrison went on fighting with swivel-pieces and muskets until the hour of afternoon. The Shāh from moment to moment sent off express riders to ascertain progress. After the afternoon prayer the Shāh started himself and soon reached the spot. The Mir Sāhib followed, and the author with him, as related above.

Then the Shāh in his own pure person inspected the fort from all four sides. He fixed on one direction and caused the ground to be measured with a rod up to the foot of the wall, and caused the cannon called *Kullah-i-khūnbarāh*²⁴ to be brought, and ordered it to be fired into the air. *Kullah-i-khūnbarāh* sent its charge up to heaven and it returned to earth within the fort. By concussion its two pieces, which were of iron in the shape of a large casket (*durj*), split asunder, and, wherever they went, reduced everything to splinters. What chance had a human being of standing against them! The firing continued for four or five *gharī* (1½ to 2 hours), the aim being constantly altered. Changing from one position to another, the balls were sent in one after another. In short, after the same fashion, four other mortars (*kullah*) were brought into action. A number of the infidels within the fort were killed, and great confusion arose there.

At this time the Shāh was engaged in the evening prayers, and continued to sit on his prayer-carpet till the time of sunset prayers (*namāz-i-maghrib*), then night came on. All three chiefs of the infidels came out of the fort and slunk into the ravines adjoining the river Jaman (Jamnah). It was not known in what direction they had gone.

After the lapse of twenty to forty-five minutes, sounds not issuing any longer from the fort, the Shāh ordered it to be stormed. Strong bodies from all directions moved conjointly upon the gates in close formation and effected an entrance. The gates were broken open with axes, and all persons found within the fort were put to the sword. But of Juvāhir Singh and the others not a trace could be found. 'Imād-ul-mulk himself came into the fort and inspected the corpses one by one; but as he reported to the Shāh, the accursed one was not among them.

The skirmishers were ordered to keep a watch over the neighbourhood in all directions and take care that he (Juvāhir Singh) should not get away in safety. In spite of all their activity, no trace could be discovered. Some days afterwards, Hidāyat 'Alī Khān, *faujdar* of Shukohābād, was introduced to 'Imād-ul-mulk by the Mir Sāhib. This *faujdar* told us he was in the fort with Juvāhir Singh. The Jāt chief, Shamsheer Bahādur, Antā Mānkher, and he (Hidāyat 'Alī Khān) dressed themselves in Qizzilbāsh clothes, and, going through an underground chamber into the ditch of the fort, they threaded their way through the Shāh's troops, and hid in some ravines near the Jamnah river.

For two days and two nights they remained concealed in that spot, and got not a mouthful to eat. Such terror had overcome them that they would not emerge even to drink water from the river. When the Shāh had marched away, they came at night time by a route they knew before to a village, and there mounting a bullock-carriage reached a small fort in another village. There he (Hidāyat 'Alī Khān) went to sleep; where the other three vanished to he knew not. All he could find out from the guide was that ten matchlock-men and one horseman had come with three horses, and carried them in some direction or other.

To make a long story short, after the taking of Ballamgaḍh, the Shāh told 'Imād-ul-mulk to make out a list of all the cash and goods found in the fort, and produce it before him. Accordingly, there were found in the fort, twelve thousand rupees in coin, with pots and vessels of silver and copper, and gilt idols, 14 horses, 11 camels, clothing, grain, and much other goods. All this was confiscated. The grain was delivered to the *sūrsāt* (the food-supply department, see *ante*). Of the cash total five thousand rupees were given to Afzal Khān and two thousand to 'Imād-ul-mulk. Two camels were presented to the Mir Sāhib. The Shāh made a two days' halt at this place and issued an order for slaughter and plundering.

²⁴ "The blood-shedding Heel," probably a mortar, and so named from its shortness or shape.

It was midnight when the camp followers went out to the attack. It was thus managed; one horseman mounted a horse and took ten to twenty others, each attached to the tail of the horse preceding it, and drove them just like a string of camels. When it was one watch after sunrise I saw them come back. Every horseman had loaded up all his horses with the plundered property, and atop of it rode the girl-captives and the slaves. The severed heads were tied up in rugs like bundles of grain and placed on the heels of the captives, who by the Abdālīs are called *Kannah*, and thus did they return to camp.

After afternoon prayer (*zuhr*) an order was given to carry the severed heads to the entrance gate of the chief minister's quarters, where they were to be entered in registers, and then built up into heaps and pillars. Each man, in accordance with the number of heads he had brought in, received, after they had been counted, five rupees a head from the State.

Then the heads were stuck upon lances and were taken to the gate of the chief minister. It was an extraordinary display! Wherever your glance fell nothing else was to be perceived but severed heads stuck upon lances, and the number could not be less than the stars in the heavens.

Daily did this manner of slaughter and plundering proceed: *Wa shab rā az faryād-i-zanān kih bak asirī avardah, ba ānhā shūbat mī-kardānd, goshhāz mardum kar mī-shudānd*, It was a marvellous state of things, this slaying and capturing, and no whit inferior to the day of Last Judgment.

All those heads that had been cut off were built into pillars, and the men upon whose heads those bloody bundles had been brought in, were made to grind corn, and then, when the reckoning was made up, their heads, too, were cut off. These things went on all the way to the city of Akbarābād, nor was any part of the country spared.

In addition to all this, five thousand Rohelāh foot soldiers had joined the army. Each man procured some thirty to forty buffaloes. The plundered goods, such as jewels and clothes, they loaded upon these buffaloes, and established a market of their own within the camp, where they sold all these things at low prices. Cloth goods worth ten rupees they sold at one rupee, and those worth one rupee for eighty *tankah*. Copper and other vessels that had been broken up were strewn along the route of the army and no one stooped to pick them up. Excepting gold and silver nothing was carried away.

In this manner Jahān Khān and Najīb Khān went on ahead of us, as far as Mathurā. The towns of Mathurā and Bindrāban were subjected to a general slaughter, and completely plundered. The latter is a principal holy place of the Hindūs, situated upon the bank of the Jamnah; it is in the territory of the Jāt.

On the day that the Shāh marched from Shergaḍh, after the reduction of Ballamgaḍh, he pitched his camp near Ḥasanpur and Nadīnah. The same day Jangbāz Khān arrived from Mirāth, bringing with him much booty. Among other things were four elephants, loaded up with silver only, seventy-six horses, and a quantity of other property. The whole was produced for the Shāh's inspection.

As to the plundered elephants and palanquins it was remarked that these two modes of travelling were specially used by the emperors and nobles of Hindūstān. The Shāh said, elephants were admirable means of baggage transport. But a mount, the control of which is not in the hands of the rider, and it can carry him whither it wills, should not be resorted to; while a litter is only suitable for a sick man.

Afterwards Jangbāz Khān was given robes of honour and a jewelled plume-holder. He was told that an envoy sent by Ghazanfar Jang, Aḥmad Bangash, had arrived at Court; and he agrees to such and such an amount of tribute, and prays that some commander, with some properly qualified claimant (*turāh*), be sent by the Shāh to reinforce him, so that out of dread of the Abdālī might, his

enemies may withdraw from his territories. Patents for the provinces of Audh and Bangālāh were in preparation in his (Aḥmad Khān's) name. "Thou, who art of his tribe, hast been asked for, and "as I look on you as my son, I wish to send you for the execution of this project in the place "of any princely heir. I follow after you stage by stage."

Jangbāz Khān assented, made his obeisance, and straightway sought the chief minister at his tent. Mīr Sher Andāz Khān was sent for. The papers stating the demands of Aḥmad Khān were read. Then he (Jangbāz Khān) said to the chief minister: "I command no more than five "thousand horsemen, while Aḥmad Khān has not much of an army, nor any funds. How can "I eject the Marhaṭṭahs or occupy *ṣūbāh* Audh? Shujā'-nd-daulah possesses a treasury and an army, "and is the governor of that province. The same thing applies to the territory of Bengal. Thus, "the undertaking of these enterprises is opposed to reason and wisdom. I decline to go."

The chief minister said: "When you were in front of the Shāh you accepted and then left his "audience without a protest. Now you are raising difficulties. What does this mean?" Jangbāz Khān answered: "I was unable to say these words to the Shāh himself." Then 'Imād-ul-mulk intervened, saying: "The army is part of the provincial government. Whenever the province has "been made over to Aḥmad Khān, he can collect as many troops as ever he likes. The whole race "of the Afghāns form his army, there must be two hundred thousand fighting men of his tribe. "You are only nominally required to impress people with dread of the Shāh. Knowing you to be "a brother of the same race as himself, Aḥmad Khān applied for you."

Jangbāz Khān would not agree but continued to give a flat refusal. The chief *Wazīr* carried his words to the Shāh. His order upon this report was to send 'Abu-uṣ-ṣamad Khān instead. The chief minister told the Mīr Ṣāḥib what order the Shāh had given, and asked him to write about it to Aḥmad Khān, and call upon him to state his views. The Mīr Ṣāḥib pointed out that what Ghāẓanfar Jang (Aḥmad Khān) wanted was the nomination of some prince of the imperial family — as for the rest, he would see to it himself. 'Abd-uṣ-ṣamad Khān commanded thirty thousand horse, and for the time being the daily expenses of such a force could not be provided. For this reason he indicated Jangbāz Khān, whose force is only five thousand men.

Then the Mīr Ṣāḥib proceeded to the tent of Jangbāz Khān and presented the shawls, *et cetera*, the gifts intended for him, as previously detailed. Out of the whole present he accepted only a pair of shawls and returned the rest, saying: "Nawāb Ghāẓanfar Jang is the chief man of my tribe, out "of politeness I accept a pair of shawls. I am no king or minister that I should extend my foot "beyond my due station." The Mīr Ṣāḥib insisted much, but not another article did he accept. As to marching himself, he absolutely declined to do so.

Two days passed in this fruitless discussion. On the third day, when the Shāh happened to make a halt at one of the camps, 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mīr Ṣāḥib laid before him the proposal that he (the Shāh) in person should march as far as the town of Mathurā, and there make some stay. Then whatever Aḥmad Khān proposed, if it seemed advisable, could be carried out. The Shāh said: "It is well."

Rubric. — March of the Shāh towards Mathurā on the representation of Mīr Sher Andāz Khān, and after reaching it and making a seven days' halt, he starts on his return to his own country.

On the day that the Shāh entered the neighbourhood of Mathurā, he crossed the Jamnah and encamped near Mahmān (Mahābān?), where there is a *sarāe*, built by one Sayyid 'Abd-un-nabī,²⁵ and it goes also by the name of Sarāe Nabī; it lies two *kos* to the east of Mathurā.

²⁵ He was made *faujdar* of Mathurā on the 16th Rabi II., 1079 H. (26th September 1668), and was killed in an attack on a Jāt fort upon the 21st Zu, I Hijjah of the same year (24th May, 1669), *Ma'āsir-i-'Ālamgīrī*, 74, 83.

En route the Mīr Sāhib paid a visit to Najīb Khān, who was at Bindrāban with Jahān Khān. These two nobles had marched fourteen days earlier, and had carried out a general slaughter in the country round Mathurā and Bindrāban, and had halted there. The author went with him (Sher Andāz Khān). Wherever you gazed you beheld heaps of slain; you could only pick your way with difficulty, owing to the quantity of bodies lying about and the amount of blood spilt. At one place we reached, we saw about two hundred dead children lying in a heap. Not one of the dead bodies had a head. In short, we reached the quarters of Najīb Khān and sat there some three quarters of an hour. The stench and fetor and effluvium in the air were such that it was painful to open your mouth or even draw a breath. Every one held his nose and stopped his mouth with his handkerchief while he spoke. The Mīr Sāhib said to Najīb Khān: "How can you relish your food or a drink of water?" He replied: "What can I do, I am under the Shāh's orders; in default of his order I can move nowhere."

When I got to the town of Mathurā I saw exactly the same state of things. Everywhere in lane and bazar lay the headless trunks of the slain; and the whole city was burning. Many buildings had been knocked down. A naked man emerged from the ruins and asked me for a little food. I gave him some money and asked: "Who art thou?" He said: "I am a Musulmān, I was a dealer in jewellery, my shop was a large one. In addition to precious stones and engraved and mounted goods, I had 4,000 rupees in cash in the shop. On the day of the slaughter the Shāh's army suddenly appeared, when nobody had the least expectation of them; it was at dawn. A horseman, drawn sword in hand, came at me and tried to kill me. I said I was a Musulmān. He said: 'Disclose your privities.' I undid my cloth. He continued: 'Whatever cash you have, give to me that I may spare your life.' I gave him my 4,000 rupees. Another came and cut me on the stomach with his sabre. I fled and hid in a corner. My shop was emptied. For several days past I have had nothing to eat, but a few uncooked grains of corn. Camp followers come in day after day and knock down the houses. In many places buried treasure is discovered and carried off. But still there are hoards left in other places not yet found by any one. If you can take me to the camp with you and place men at my disposal, I will point out the hoards."

In brief, I made over to him a sheet to cover him, and brought him with me. When I reached the bank of the Jamnah, I found it was fordable. The water flowing past was of a yellowish colour, as if polluted by blood. The man said: "For seven days following the general slaughter, the water flowed of a blood-red colour. Now fourteen days have elapsed, and the colour of the water has turned yellow." At the edge of the stream I saw a number of Bairāgi and Suniyāsī huts, huddled close together. These men are ascetics of the Hindū faith. In each hut lay a severed head with the head of a dead cow applied to its mouth and tied to it with a rope round its neck.

To continue my story. I brought the man above referred to with me and produced him before the Mīr Sāhib. The next morning, with the permission of the chief minister and 'Imād-ul-mulk, ten horsemen of 'Uṣmān Khān's regiment were sent with him and several axe-men. He took them to a house. After they had applied their axes once or twice, a box was uncovered. It held two hundred gold coins, several pieces of diamond, half a *sér's* weight of jewelled ornaments, and the same quantity of plain gold ornaments. After that, several other places were broken open, but nothing was discovered.

We came back and displayed the property before the chief minister. The *Wazīr* made a sign to the Mīr Sāhib saying: "Half I give to you and 'Imād-ul-mulk, half is mine." The Mīr Sāhib represented that he had never accepted plundered property. "All belongs to Your Lordship, for you have come from your own country with the intent of upholding the Faith and expelling the infidel. You are engaged in a Holy War, and this is a special holy place of the infidel." The minister rejoined: "Well, I give it you from myself." But the Mīr Sāhib still refused.

On the next day the Mīr Sāhib attended the Shāh's audience. The Shāh was inspecting the lists of booty from Mathurā that had been drawn up by Jahān Khān. After he had done this, he

conferred robes on Jahān Khān and Najīb Khān, and told them to move on to Akbarābād, where there were many wealthy men, who are subjects of the Jāt. These must be either slain or made captives, and all their property seized and delivered over to the officials of his government. That same day they made their first march towards Akbarābād.

At the same audience the Shāh said: "Is there any one who can compose a rhyme on this "victory; the meaning must be that I have given Islām peace from the oppression of the infidel, the "words *durr-i-durrānī* to be included in the date-giving line." You must understand that the Shāh styled himself *Durr-i-Durrānī*.²⁶ At the head of his missives, instead of his own name, he wrote these words in gold ink with his own hand.

In the Shāh's army was an Afghān poet, a native of Kābul, whom he knew by sight. His name was Khawāṣ Khān, and his pen-name was Bezhan. The teaching of Prince Taimūr Shāh was confided to him. The Shāh sent for this man and instructed him as to what he wanted, telling him to reflect on it and bring him the result. The Mīr Ṣāhib told this story to me.

Next day the Mīr Ṣāhib was at the quarters of 'Imād-ul-mulk. There Khawāṣ Khān said that two days had gone by and he was still puzzling over that chronogram and the expressions required in it by the Shāh. He could not get it into shape. The Mīr Ṣāhib began to speak of me and then sent for me. I went to the place. 'Imād-ul-mulk said to me: "You, too, must try to think this "out." I gave no reply. He went on: "Certainly — you must have a try." I answered: "I have no choice left; but I must have till to-morrow to prepare it, and I will then produce it."

That same day I set to work and got the hemistich for the date, and then composed a strophe of two couplets, which I made over to the Mīr Ṣāhib. The hemistich for the date is;

Ba Hind āiman namūd Islām Shāh-i-durr-i-durrānī

1169 H.

"The King of Islām, the pearl of pearls, brought peace to India."

The morning afterwards, the Mīr Ṣāhib stated to 'Imād-ul-mulk that So-and-so (i. e., the author), after reflecting two or three hours, had written this chronogram in a rhymed strophe. 'Imād-ul-mulk inspected it and approved it highly; then he said it was very excellently written and quite perfect. He sent for the writer and said to me: "Your Mīr Ṣāhib wishes to place this "chronogram before the Shāh, while I say it is not wise to do so; for this reason that the Shāh "will summon you to his presence, and will doubtless present you with a robe (*hullah*), but he is "sure to say also, 'Remain in attendance on me.' He will appoint a monthly salary and rations, "and carry you off with him. What are your ideas about this?" I repeated this hemistich—

Ai roshnā, i-i-ṭaba' ! tu bar man balā shudī

"O sharpness of wit! thou art my damnation,"

and held my tongue. After a moment or two 'Imād-ul-mulk made a sign again to me, and said: "What is your wish, speak." I replied: "This loyal servant obeying your exalted order brought forth 'moist and dry' (*raṭṭ yābis*?). So long as the Mīr Ṣāhib does not turn me away, men "may offer me *lakhs* of rupees, and I would not leave him." He answered: "The men of towns, in "particular of those round Lakhnau, who are famed throughout the realm for their noble descent and "valour, are extraordinary creatures, full of airs and graces (*bā ān o bān*)."

²⁶ "Pearl of Pearls." No doubt he, like the rest, had worn in his ear a gold ring, mounted with a pearl, when one of the household slaves of Nādir Shāh. Before he rose to power a *fāqīr* had prophesied his success, and styled him *Durr-i-durrānī*, "Pearl of Pearls." Hence his epithet of the *Durrānī*, "the man of the Pearls."

After the writer had returned to his quarters, 'Imād-ul-mulk, in my absence, said to the Mīr Šāhib: "Let me have Muḥammad Ḥasan, and he will live with me as your representative. I will appoint you to the office of Branding and Verification [of troopers' horses] and the inspection of the personal rolls of my soldiers; it will be your office and he will be your deputy." The Mīr Šāhib answered: "Muḥammad Ḥasan is my right hand; if your Lordship designs to amputate my hand, what objection have I?" These speeches were reported to me by the Mīr Šāhib that night, and he added: "Now let us wait and see what happens. Whatever country or whatever office it be, you will not go away from me."

To return to our story. As Jangbāz Khān persisted in his refusal, the chief minister and 'Imād-ul-mulk and the Mīr Šāhib sat from early morning to midday in consultation upon what should be done with regard to Aḥmad Khān's business. After much argument 'Imād-ul-mulk advised that one of the princes of Hindūstān should be appointed to the *ṣūbahs* of Audh and Bengal, and despatched in charge of him ('Imād-ul-mulk). Jangbāz Khān should also be sent. If he agrees, well and good; if not — it is the emperor's country, and in the non-presence of the emperor, the prince affords a perfect claim and title. Wherever he directs his steps, crowds of helpers will join him. The kingdom is his kingdom. Not one of the nobles and *rājās* of Hindūstān, except they be disloyal, will act in opposition.

Thus they reported to the Shāh that if His Majesty had planted in his heart the desire to assist the emperor of Hindūstān, then one of the princes, sons of the emperor of Hind, ought to be sent for; a patent for the eastern provinces should be granted to him, and he should then be sent off in company with Jangbāz Khān. In this manner the said Khān's (Jangbāz's) scruples would be removed, and all others concerned would be re-assured.

In accordance with the chief minister's proposals, the Shāh considered the plan and held it to be a good one. At once he wrote and sent off a letter to the emperor of Hindūstān, 'Azīz-ud-dīn, 'Ālamgīr Šāhī, calling upon him to send a prince at once, without any delay. The emperor of Hindūstān selected two princes; the first was named Hidāyat Bakḥsh, holding the title of Wālā Jāh, Bahādur. He was a son of this same emperor of India. The second was Mirzā Bābā by name and A'lā Jāh by title, the emperor's son-in-law. They were despatched under the care of Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah, the Chief Almoner (*ṣadr-uṣ-ṣadr*). A patent for the Audh province was made out in the name of Mirzā Bābā, and for Bangālāh in that of Wālā Jāh, aforesaid. The emperor affixed his own seal to these, and handed them to the princes. At the time of leave-taking he said to Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah: "I make over these two princes to you in trust. If something in the shape of my heart desires can be accomplished, my purpose is fulfilled; otherwise, these pledges, entrusted to you, I shall demand again. See to it that they fall into no one else's hands."

The said Nawāb, taking the two princes with two elephants, one riding horse for each, and a mere soldier's tent, reached our camp by forced marches. The Shāh also issued to them patents for the provinces in accordance with those given by the emperor of Hind. The chief minister persuaded Jangbāz Khān, and the Shāh added: "My son, I will not leave you to be destroyed, my hand is at your back."

'Imād-ul-mulk received an aigrette and a plume. A handsome set of robes, along with a jewelled aigrette and a feathered plume for Nawāb Ghazanfar Jang, Aḥmad Khān, were made over to the Mīr Šāhib. At the time of leave-taking the Shāh said to the Mīr Šāhib: "Sayyid, wherever I may be, if a letter from thee reaches me, whatever request you make, it shall be attended to. Set your mind at rest."

As the weather was hot and it was the season of the spring harvest, a great deal of sickness appeared in the Shāh's army and it took one hundred rupees to purchase one *sēr* of tamarind,

a drink made of tamarinds being prescribed with benefit. Daily one hundred and fifty men died. Finding that the climate was adverse, the Shāh arrived at a fixed decision in his mind to return to Wilāyat. He despatched the princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk and Jangbāz Khān to Farrukhābād; while he wrote to Jahān Khān and Najib Khān that as soon as they had read his letter, and wherever they might be, they must start for his camp. Giving over this letter to 'Imād-ul-mulk, he instructed him, and two days before his own departure started him and his party off for Farrukhābād. The Shāh himself two days afterwards marched from Mathurā, and, taking the route *viâ* Kābul, made his way to Qandahār.

Let us go on with the story. The Mīr Šāhib went stage by stage with that expedition as far as Akbarābād. Jahān Khān had carried out a general slaughter in that city as far as Nilah-gumbaz; then he invested the fort. Rājah Nāgar Mall and others were shut up in it. They finally agreed to pay Jahān Khān four *lakhs* of rupees, promising to produce the money on the following morning. Three hours after sunrise had passed, when 'Imād-ul-mulk and the others made their entry into Akbarābād. Owing to the general slaughter and the investment, the city was in confusion as if Judgment Day had come. The inhabitants of the city had disappeared.

'Imād-ul-mulk went straight to Jahān Khān and made over to him the Shāh's letter. After reading it he said: "I have a promise to be paid four *lakhs* of rupees to-morrow morning. I stop here to-day and up to midday to-morrow. On receiving the sum named from Nāgar Mall, I will begin my march." 'Imād-ul-mulk retorted: "That is impossible. This is imperial territory. What damage has been done cannot be helped. But now the Shāh is on the march and you have got this order. Relinquish the hope of collecting the rupees, for after the receipt of them there will be delay."

Jahān Khān said: "One *lakh* has been promised for this evening, get that paid over to me. Then what harm is there if I march." Thus 'Imād-ul-mulk sent word to Rājah Nāgar Mall. The latter thought it a lucky escape and sent the *lakh* of rupees to Jahān Khān the same day, and that Khān began his march at the time of evening (*maghrib*) prayer, and went away.

The day after this we made a halt in Akbarābād. The princes and Jangbāz Khān crossed the Jamnah and pitched their camp in a line with Katrah Wazīr Khān.²⁷ Then quitting Akbarābād they moved stage by stage as far as *parganah* Mainpurī. During these marches two or three things happened, the record of which is worthy of being dwelt upon.

From Akbarābād, Najib Khān sent his full brother, Sultān Khān, with four hundred horsemen in attendance on 'Imād-ul-mulk. When the princes, 'Imād-ul-mulk, Jangbāz Khān, and Sultān Khān reached Mainpurī, they consulted and decided to halt there. The Mīr Šāhib was to go on to Farrukhābād, and bring back Ahmad Khān with him. On his arrival, whatever was decided on, could be carried out. The Mīr Šāhib left the author with the tent and baggage at Mainpurī and departed for Farrukhābād. Nawāb Ahmad Khān sent two tents with screens for the princes, and one tent with screens for 'Imād-ul-mulk. They wrote to the author that he was to deliver these tents at their respective destinations and obtain and forward with all speed answers to the letters. The Nawāb himself would join the camp in four days. The author carried out the instructions sent him by the Mīr Šāhib.

On the fourth day, in the morning, a messenger arrived with a letter from the Mīr Šāhib, saying, that on that day at one watch after sunrise the heir-apparent, Maḥmūd Khān, would reach the camp in advance, and the Nawāb himself would reach it in the afternoon. I carried off this letter to

²⁷ On the left bank, opposite Rāj Ghāt, between Nawābganj and the river; see Constable's "Hand Atlas," plate 48.

Imād-ul-mulk. When he had looked at it, he said: "Go to Nawāb Yahyā Khān" (who had also come with us²⁸) "and on my behalf say to him that I am mounting to go out and escort into "camp Aḥmad Khān. He, too, should mount." I went, gave my message, and returned.

At this point another messenger came in to say that Nawāb Aḥmad Khān must have reached a place five *kos* distant, and his son, Maḥmūd Khān, was in his company. 'Imād-ul-mulk sent the author to Jangbāz Khān requesting him to mount and come out to act as escort. I went and said the Nawāb Wazīr had sent this message. He jumped up and said: "*Fulān-i-man* has mounted and "is coming to me, what care I, and why should I go out to greet and escort him in." I came back and repeated his words to 'Imād-ul-mulk. He was putting on his clothes, ready to mount. He sent the author back again, telling me to say that the Mīr Sāhib had handed me over to him when he left, and what could he write to the Mīr. I then left him. At length the said Khān also mounted. He and 'Imād-ul-mulk and Yahyā Khān went out four *kos* to meet the new arrival, and together with him they returned to the camp.

Early next morning 'Imād-ul-mulk went to the tent of Ghazanfar Jang Aḥmad Khān. The two of them then mounted in one litter, and in another litter was Maḥmūd Khān. In this mode they went to see the princes. When they reached the entrance there was a long stoppage and both *pāllois* were struck by men with their maces of office, so that a great uproar ensued at the entrance and it lasted for some hour and a quarter. Everybody exclaimed that this was a part of the ceremonial of sovereigns, and nobles look on it as a part of their grandeur. In fine, after an audience, robes of honour were conferred on both, that is, father and son, with a sword and horse for Maḥmūd Khān.

In the afternoon Nawāb Sultān Khān came to visit Ghazanfar Jang. Upon his reaching the entrance he attempted to enter. One Mushrif Khān, the chamberlain (*arḡ-begī*) of Ghazanfar Jang, said: "Be pleased, sir, to wait a moment until I have announced you." He went in and reported. The Nawāb remarked: "Say to Sultān Khān that he must wait twenty minutes while I put on my clothes." On hearing these words Sultān Khān was offended, and made off to his own tent.

Ghazanfar Jang remarked: "What idea had he got into his head? Is he not aware that he "was once in my service, and to this day the descriptive roll of Najib Khān is preserved in my record-room?" The words were carried to Sultān Khān, and he ordered his advance tents to be sent out in the direction of Dīhlī, as next morning he meant to start for Shāhjahānābād. 'Imād-ul-mulk interviewed Aḥmad Khān that evening, and said whatever the occasion called for, and gave him advice. An outward reconciliation then took place between the two nobles and they had an interview. After that Ghazanfar Jang went to Sultān Khān's quarters, and one day entertained him at a banquet.

After one week we marched from Mainpurī, and all the chiefs on reaching Farrukhābād pitched their tents on the Ganges bank close to Fathgaḍh. Two days afterwards news was received that Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, Rohelah, ruler of Anwalah and Bareilly, had come to an agreement with the Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah, and they had exchanged turbans. Then 'Imād-ul-mulk proceeded to Anwalah and prevailed on Sa'dullah Khān, Hāfiz Raḥmat Khān, Mullā Sardār Khān, Donde Khān, Fath Khān, sāmān, and the other leaders to march for the prince's camp.

At this time news came that 'Imād-ul-mulk had been made a prisoner by the Rohelahs of Kaṭehr. It so chanced that on the same day 'Imād-ul-mulk reached Farrukhābād in safety. The same day at noon another report reached us that the Marhattah army had arrived within two marches of us, and on that night or next morning would be at Farrukhābād. Ghazanfar Jang brought away from Farrukhābād all the inhabitants, and conveyed them to our camp on the bank of the river. So complete was the evacuation that there was not a soul left in the city.

²⁸ The eldest son of Khān Bahādur, Zakariyā Khān, a former governor of Lāhor; his mother and 'Imād-ul-mulk's mother were sisters, daughters of I'timād-ud-daulah, Qamar-ud-din Khān, the Wazīr who was killed in 1748.

At the end of five days Sa'dullah Khān, with the chiefs named above, arrived on the further bank of the river and encamped there. They were written to and asked to cross over the Ganges and join our force. This they did, and the whole army was united near *parganahs* Mihrābād and Jalālābād.²⁹ The tent of Sa'dullah Khān himself was pitched three miles (one *farsakh*) from us.

Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah began a march out of his own territory and arrived at *parganah* Sāndī and there halted. Between the two armies there was a distance of nine *kos*. When a week had passed, he (Shujā'-ud-daulah) sent his wife's brother, Nawāb Sālār Jang, to Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, with a message that if at this time he would espouse his cause in this great and difficult business, it would be the height of favour.

Then Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah one day left his camp and drew up outside of it, and gave an order that commanders should report the mustering of their troops. On that day the regiment Mīm Bāshī of Šādiq Beg, Mughal, was ordered to parade for inspection. Sardār Khān, the leader of five thousand Mughals, attended, but of his whole command only twenty-five horsemen put in an appearance at the muster. All the rest out of fear of the Afghāns — they having of aforetime received a terrible handling from Aḥmad Khān — had fled with their families from Lakhnau, and Banglah, [i. e., Faizābād], some going to Benares, some to 'Aẓīmābād, some to Allahābād and other towns. No man of the Mughal race was left. From that day the said Nawāb discharged all of the Mughals. He was in a high degree anxious and perplexed.

The only course open to him seemed that Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān should, in whatever way was possible, put an end to the war and invasion. Nawāb Sālār Jang remained several days at Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān's tent, while some settlement of the dispute was being arrived at. One day there was a general report in Shujā'-ud-daulah's army that Sālār Jang had been made a prisoner. At that time great consternation arose, especially among the men from Shāhjahānābād, and the whole group of Begams was in a great state of mind. Next day they learnt that it was all a mistake.

To continue the story. With Aḥmad Khān were about fifty thousand horse, old troops and recruits, as entered in the lists. The Rohelah force was even larger. Every day the princes' audience was attended by all the leaders, including Jangbāz Khān, Hāfiẓ Raḥmat Khān, Mullā Sardār Khān, Bakhshī, and Nawāb Aḥmad Khān. They remained until noon and held consultations; but Sa'dullah Khān would not agree to appear.

In the end 'Imād-ul-mulk said that Sa'dullah Khān must come to the princes' audience. That Nawāb paid no attention to this. Still, one day he came and was honoured by presentation to the two princes. A title was conferred upon him, *viz.*, Shams-ud-daulah, Mubāriz-ul-mulk, with the grant of robes of honour and a sword. The other chiefs admitted that they were willing to obey the orders of the emperor and of the Shāh; in whatever direction the princes might advance, they were ready to follow in their train and take part in the contest and battle-fray. Accordingly these assertions they supported by an oath. Sardār Khān, Bakhshī, Hāfiẓ Raḥmat Khān, and Donde Khān, went off to see Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān and informed him. He said: "You may fight, I do not forbid you; but not in the very slightest will I become ally or supporter of any man on either side."

They said he ought to remain with the army until the province of Bengal was recovered; no such opportunity would ever fall to their lot again. The said Nawāb, however, refused absolutely, and repeated his former answer. Then one day a report came to Jangbāz Khān that horsemen from the army of Shujā'-ud-daulah had driven off his camels while grazing. It was noon-time. As soon as he heard this, the said Khān leapt from his place like a coal from a flaming fire and instantly went to see the princes, flung his turban on the ground and said: "At once I ride out to fight;

²⁹ These are to the north of the Ganges, on the Audh border.

"with you I have no concern." The prince took his own turban and placed it on Jangbāz Khān's head and said a few words. Jangbāz Khān came out and rode off, followed by his troops. The rest of the divisions, one after the other, mounted and took the field.

When they had come out two *kos* from the camp, a fierce storm arose, a cloud of yellow dust rose so high into the air that neither sky nor earth was visible. An hour and a half afterwards heavy rain came on, which lasted one and a half to one and three-quarter hours. All this wind and rain blew in their faces. So violent was the torrent of rain that the small streams could only be crossed by swimming. Jangbāz Khān halted where he was, in the expectation that when the wind lulled and the rain abated they would be able to move again, and begin the fight.

The wind and rain were so severe that all the tents in the army were blown over, the horses, pulling up their tethering pegs, dispersed in all directions, and the men were involved in difficulties and discomfort. The disturbance continued for full three hours, and the wind remained as high as ever and the rain as heavy.

Seeing no help for it, Jangbāz Khān ordered a return march from that place at three-quarters of an hour or one hour before sunset, and re-entered his camp. He remarked: "O friends! it seems as if we were acting against God's good pleasure. I am convinced now that for a further space of time the stay in this region of the Marhaṭṭahs and others, our enemies, has been decreed."

After two days he sent a message to the princes through Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān that Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah had agreed to pay five *lakhs* of rupees to the Shāh's army as a tribute. As Jangbāz Khān had heard that the Shāh had started for his own kingdom, he had accepted this proposal. Next morning a *lakh* of rupees arrived in cash; and a cessation of hostilities was arranged. Nawāb Aḥmad Khān lost heart, and was displeased; taking with him the princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk he returned to Farrukhābād.

Two days previously the author had started with a note from princes Hidāyat Bakḥsh and Wālā Jāh Bahādūr, in consultation with Nawāb Saif-ud-daulah, who to some extent had become estranged from 'Imād-ul-mulk; and Nawāb Aḥmad Khān had made several speeches to the Mīr Ṣāhib, through which his displeasure betrayed itself. Thus he, too, (the Mīr Ṣāhib) was a sharer in this consultation. He sent the author with the said note to see Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah.

This was the substance of the note. If a force were sent to a distance of two or three *kos* from us, we will leave this camp on the pretext of a hunting expedition, and come to join that force and then come on to you. You must also send twelve thousand rupees in cash.

When I (the author) got to Shujā'-ud-daulah's camp, I obtained an interview through Āghā Mirzā Muḥammad Ṣādiq and Mīr Ghulām Rasūl (*alias* Mīr Manjhle), grandson of Nawāb Sīpāhdār Khān, deceased, whose grove is at Allāhābād.³⁰ Shujā'-ud-daulah said: "To-morrow I shall be employed in getting together the *lakh* of rupees that I have agreed to pay. The day after that I will give you an answer and send you back with Mīr Ghulām Rasūl Khān." After this I went to visit Shekh Ṣāhib Shekh Allāhyār³¹ and Sayyid Nūr-ul-ḥasan Khān,³¹ both being then in the service of Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah and commanders of cavalry regiments. With them I spent the day.

On that same date Nawāb Ghazanfar Jang Aḥmad Khān and 'Imād-ul-mulk, taking the two princes, recrossed the Ganges and returned to Farrukhābād. The Mīr Ṣāhib (Sher Andāz Khān)

³⁰ This man was the son of Khān Jahān, Kokaltāsh, 'Ālamgīr's foster brother. He was governor of Allāhābād towards the end of 'Ālamgīr's reign, and died in 1180 H. (1718). The name of the grove has been now corrupted into "Bagh Subahdār."

³¹ Both natives of Bilgrām. The former, H. M. Elliot's "accurate Murtaẓā Ḥusain," is the author of the valuable *Ḥadīqat-ul-aqālim*, also written at the instigation of Captain Jonathan Scott. Nūr-ul-ḥasan Khān finally moved his home to Paṭnah 'Aqīmābād and died there.

also went back to Farrukhābād. The next morning, when I reached the site of the camp, I found nobody but Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān there; thus I stopped in his camp along with Mir Ghulām Rasūl Khān. As the zamīndārs were out on the roads plundering, it was impossible to proceed to Farrukhābād. It was with the greatest difficulty that I got a note sent there for the Mir Sāhib.

His answer was that I must stop where I was and begin a negociation to get him (Sher Andāz Khān) into Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān's employment. I (the author) obtained an interview with the Nawāb through Mir Ghulām Rasūl Khān. The Nawāb said: "From this day I take you into my service, and as soon as I reach Aṇwalah, I will send a *parwānah* summoning Mir Sher Andāz Khān."

That same day Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān ordered his army to march in the direction of Aṇwalah, while he himself, unattended, went into *pargana*h Pālī to meet Shujā'-ud-daulah. After they had passed a night in the same place, Sa'dullah Khān returned to Aṇwalah. When he had arrived he sent a *parwānah*, inviting the Mir Sāhib to come with one hundred horsemen. The letter was made over to one Shāham Khān, whose home was at Mau,³² with orders to forward it by the hand of his own servant to Mir Sher Andāz Khān.

Ten days afterwards the said Khān's brother sent back the letter unopened and wrote that Mir Andāz Khān had been appointed *faujdar* of the *pargana*hs near Anūpshahr, which had been granted by the Abdālī Shāh to Nawāb Ahmad Khān. He had received robes of honour and had departed for his charge. The two princes and 'Imād-ul-mulk had started for Shāhjahānābād. Jangbāz Khān had remained on at Farrukhābād, awaiting the money payment promised by Shujā'-ud-daulah.³³

The author took the returned letter to Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, or, rather, after I had opened and read it, I made it over to him. The Nawāb signed an order fixing the author's pay at forty rupees a month, and appointed me one of the gentlemen troopers (*yakkah*). Jangbāz Khān wrote from Farrukhābād for the money agreed on, as to which the Nawāb (Sa'dullah Khān) had made himself responsible. Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah paid one *lakh* of rupees, and in regard to the remaining four *laks* he made a promise to pay in fifteen days, and went back to Lakhnau.

When one month had passed and the money had not arrived, Jangbāz Khān came to Aṇwalah in person and demanded payment. Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān said that Rājāh Mīn Rāe, his *diwān*, was at Bareilī; when he came back a correspondence would be opened with Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah, and in a week the money should be handed over to him (Jangbāz Khān). A week went by, but the *diwān*, from several causes, was still detained in Bareilī and had not returned to Aṇwalah.

Jangbāz Khān crossed the Rāmgangā river which flows between Aṇwalah and Bareilī, and went as far as Bareilī, where he surrounded the house of the said *diwān*, and there was a great disturbance. That very day he obtained the four *laks* in cash from the *diwān*, and then made a start for his own country. Thus the sum fell to be paid by Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān, and not a copper of it was recovered from Nawāb Shujā'-ud-daulah.

The author for twelve years remained in the service of Nawāb Sa'dullah Khān. Upon his death³⁴ (May God give him rest and admit him to Paradise), I was two years in the employ of Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān, the former Nawāb's brother and holder of *pargana*hs Sahswān³⁵ and Ujhyānī, *et cetera*. Having taken a few months' leave and gone home, I heard there that Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān, while engaged in playing with a large snake, was bitten by it and expired. I therefore decided not to return.³⁶

³² Mau Rashidābād to the west of Farrukhābād.

³³ The "Ser Mutāqherin," III. 148, says 'Imād-ul-mulk had reached Farrukhābād on the 7th Shawwāl, 1170 H. (24th June 1757).

³⁴ Sa'dullah Khān died on the 5th Sha'bān 1176 H. (18th February 1763), aged 27 years—*Tārīkh-i-Muḥammadī*. Thus the period of service under him could not have exceeded six years.

³⁵ Both now in the Budāūn district, United Provinces.

³⁶ 'Abdullah Khān died on the 7th Ṣafar 1180 H. (14th July 1766)—*Tārīkh-i-Muḥammadī*.

Nawāb 'Abdullah Khān was an able poet; his pen-name was 'Āṣī. He was also a capable musician and painter; and he knew a lot of secrets about snakes, and spent much time in playing with them. At length his fate came from a snake's poison and by God's decree he passed from this transitory world. May God give him rest.

Couplet.

Dunyā, st dār-i-be-bagā, 'uqbā, st mashrūṭ-i-fanā "The world is a passing show, eternity conditioned by decay:
Bas khūb shud kiz yād-i-mā in ham guzasht, ān "Enough that in memory of me this and that
ham guzasht. happened."

[The End.]

Additional Notes.

The chronology of this invasion may be here farther elucidated from the *Tārīkh-i-Aḥmad Shāhī*, B. M. Oriental MS., No. 196, ff., 62^b. to 98^b., and *Tārīkh-i-'Ālamgīr Sānī*, B. M. Oriental MS., No. 1749, ff., 84^b—128^b.

Aḥmad Shāh sent out his tents from Qandahār on the 22nd Sha'bān 1169 H. (21st May 1756) and marched on the 27th (26th May). About three weeks later Īraj Khān arrived as an envoy from India. Kābul was reached on the 9th Shawwāl (6th July 1756). About the end of August, Qalandar Khān was sent to India with Īraj Khān. On the 22nd Zu'l Hijjah (16th September) the march from Kābul began; the camp was at Jalālābād on the 8th Muḥarram 1170 H. (3rd October 1756), and his advance troops entered Lāhor on the 4th October. The Shāh reached Peshāwar early in Ṣafar 1170 H. (end of October). Qalandar Khān received his first audience at Dihlī on the 6th Ṣafar (30th-October 1756). The march from Peshāwar was resumed on the 22nd Ṣafar (15th November). On the 27th Rabī' I (19th December 1756) Āghā Rizā Khān was sent by the Indian Emperor to Aḥmad Shāh. Some time in Rabī' II. (23rd December 1756 to 20th January 1757) Aḥmad Shāh moved from Sonpat to Narelah. On the 4th (26th December), after a consultation, the emperor's tents were sent out to Kaṭrah Maḥaldār Khān (close to Bādli), and Ya'qūb 'Alī Khān, Afghān, undertook to obtain a favorable settlement from the Durrānī. On the 28th (19th January 1757) 'Imād-ul-mulk appeared in the Shāh's camp at Narelah. Aḥmad Shāh entered the Fort at Dihlī, sat on the throne, and coined money, 8th Jamādā I. (28th January 1757). Khān Khānān (Intizām-ud-daulah) had been made Wazīr on the 26th January; and the marriage of 'Imād-ul-mulk to Mu'īn-ai-mulk's (Mannū's) daughter took place on the 20th of February.

Aḥmad Shāh marched eastwards on the 21st February and Jahān Khān carried out the slaughter at Mathurā on the 28th February 1757. The two princes, who had been sent for, left Dihlī on the 14th and reached the Shāh's camp on the 18th March. The Shāh's return march began on the 27th March; he reached Farīdābād on the 29th, and on the 2nd April moved to a place between Bādli and Narelah. From that point his movements do not concern us.

The dates of the ineffective campaign against Shujā'-ud-daulah may also be given. On the 3rd April 1757 the princes were at Mainpurī, and Aḥmad Khān, Bangash, joined them. They moved on to the Ganges on the 4th and Hidāyat Bakhsh proceeded to Itāwah, while Mirzā Bābā remained at Qādirganj till the 19th. When Shujā'-ud-daulah came out, the prince retreated to Farrukhābād. The princes recrossed the Ganges on the 30th May and Sālūr Jang arrived from Shujā'-ud-daulah on the 10th June. Terms were arranged, and on the 24th June the princes crossed back and returned to Farrukhābād. They moved on to Dihlī and 'Imād-ul-mulk followed with Aḥmad Khān, Bangash. They were at Kol ('Aligarh) on the 14th July, and four *kos* from Dihlī on the 23rd. 'Imād-ul-mulk on the 13th September 1757 introduced Aḥmad Khān at Court, he having been newly appointed Amīr-ul-umarā (*vice* Najib Khān).

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Continued from p. 31.)

3. The Creation.

Awwal Maulā sājiyā sab thīn pāñi
Pāñi uttōñ tōriyā, phir sab bayāñ.
Allah Maulā sājiyā lau, kalam, zamīn tē
āsmāñ.

Chāñd tē sūraj sājiyā tāreāñ nāl bhariyā
āsmāñ.

Barē barē hō gayē nē āqlāñ dē pardhāñ

Tārē giñē na jāñgē, kūrā hai jāhāñ.

Chēlē sifdāñ jōriyāñ sab khōl bayāñ.

Rōz qiyamat nūñ sūraj akhīñ kaqāhōgā sōldāñ,

Kals tē chandōsē diññ tadōñ Shāhīñ nūñ lōrdāñ

Othē Bālā pēr karēgā Shāhīñ diññ gaurdāñ

Sāyā hōwēgā chandōsē dā, baddāl diññ lōrdāñ

Dūd suñō khāñ mōmīñ, phir sat jugwālī,

Khawāja Kālāk Dās hō khayē nipālī.

Ek pañ vaggēgā jūlīm, dūyā chāñd Shāh dēgā
dikhālī

Allah rasōl jīeun lōi bah ikē thālī

Jag sapūran hō gayā, Kālāk Dās dē vārī,

Chēlē sifdāñ jōriyāñ kar barē tiyārī.

Othē Bālā akhiyā Rabb nūñ, mērd man sawāl

First God created water everywhere.

From this beginning all the story then

He gave of the creation. God the Lord

Made tablets, pens, the earth, the heaven.

He made

The sun, the moon, and filled the sky with stars.

Full many wise men lived and died, but none

Could count the stars. The world is vain.

All this

Disciples have in full recorded. Lo,

Upon the Resurrection Day the sun

Will ope his sixteen eyes; the canopy

With golden poles will shade the Shāhs then.

Great priestly Bālā then will help the Shāhs.

The shadow of the flag will refuge be

Like shadow of a cloud: Believers, hear,

The true-age prayer, when Kālāk Dās will

stand

With Khwāja. Both will be our helpers. Then

Tempestuous storm of wind will sweep the
 earth.

The Shāh will come, in form a second moon,

And God will sit and eat with him. What time

The offering was made by Kālāk Dās

It was accepted. Hymns disciples sing,

So carefully preparing. Bālā spoke

To God, and said, 'My supplication hear.

My kindred black thy name adore; do thou

For ever in the sacrifice preside.

Appear to us, and prove our sacrifice

Acceptable to thee within thy court.'

A promise true God made to Jhaumprā. 'See,

Thy Shāhs all must sacrifice — the day,

The eighth, a sacred day must be.' And so

God gave him knowledge of the mystery,

Command to keep the altar swept, and see

That garlands of sweet flowers encircle it.

'The sacrificial portion due to me

The inmost be — it is the first and best.

If they their hearts unlock I will appear

And will accept their sacrifice.' Now read

And ponder well the record of His praise.

So Jhaumprā made petition to his Lord.

'To sacrifice on every eighth is hard;

For me impossible; like moon and stars

Allah dā nām karēgi mēri kālī zāt

Tussāñ jag dē vich āññ, dēñd didār,

Tain jag sapūran hōwēgā, dargāh-i-darbār

Allah othē Jhaumprē nāl, kīdā takār,

Tērē Shāhī jag karngē vār āthō vār,

Allah dassē khōlkē sārē narwār.

Thāñ rakhiñ pōchkē phullāñ dē hār

Chhōndd sādāñ rakhñd āwāl vichār,

Dilōñ ghunḍī khōlahgē tāñ dēdngē didār

Tain jag sapūran hōwēgā, dargāh darbār

Chēlē sifdāñ jōriyāñ, parh nām chatār.

Jhaumprē aggē Rabb dē ārj gujārī

Jag sapūran na hōwēgā vār āthō vārī,

Main nūñ othē ghat dē jīthē dōsakh dē avārī,

Shāhī mērē rakhiñ, jē chand sitārē.

Allah ākhēd Bālād, tērī pāk hamādī

Āpē kalam pakār lē, kagaz tē siyākhē,

Chaudāñ tabak bahshā lē sārī lōkādī,

*Téri gal nahîn phérnî jô kar lée sâi.
Bâlê pîr pakar lée, kâgaz té kânî,*

*Varhê dî jag karogê ik muddîmî,
Bâlê pîr ummat balhshâ lée kam hōyâ âsânî
Chêlê sîftân jôrdân, var Durgâ Bhôwânî.
Ôhî ik sach pavî dhanî.
Awwal sîft Khuddâ dî chêlâ banâdê,
Mân té pitâ nûn sêvîên jain sansâr vikhdê.
Dêvî mâtâ sêvîên, jain shabâ sikhêdê.
Pîr, paikambar, auliyê, Rabb âp banâdê
Bhunnê dâñê bijwêñ jawî khêñ jamêdê,
Jihrd lāwê ajmatdî sôhê ôh pîr kahêdê
Aggê pahre sach dē, kuchh hō gayê nē hōr,
Sach dunyâd thêñ tur gayâ, jhūñh paydê jôr,
Ldlaoh laggâ sach nûn, Rabb banâyâ chôr
Jhūñhê painch hî manniyê, phirêñ barê lîlôr.
Is pahre dē ddmî hōê barê atatt,
Ôrak sîfat sunâûñî kôlî lēñ nahîn rakh
Sidqâñwâlê sunâñgê bêsîdqân nahîn pak,
Jinhân suniyâ sidq nâl, bîhishhîñ varñ bêshaqq*

*Augânkhârd chêlâ hōyâ Langar Shâh dē vâre.
Ôh sannhân bahut mârîdân jhuggê bahut ujârê,
Ôrak dhatîhâ dñlê shâhânê dudrê
Jitnê aib sawab sâñ balhshâ lēyê sârê
Ôs nîñhân dharîdân nâm dîdân dhar sûtâr chârê
Chêlê âpar nîñhân dē chad kôlî usârê
Nâm baniyâ itnâ jôn ambar târê
Barakat Bâlê pîr dē lōñ hanêdr na mârê
Chêlê sîft banâñdî kî kîñî tadbîr.
Aggê Bâlê pîr dē hōyâ dāmangîr
Duniyâ tōñ bē hîrs hân nahîn jag na sîr
Âqîbat vêlê baurîdâ tûên sachchâ pîr
Sîfat shurû karn dē man karê bîchâr
Sab haqîqat pîr dē sunâwân âdhîr
Bâlê pîr âyâ duniyâ té das autâr
Chêlê dānishwand bî hōê talêh hazâr
Unhân nâm banâyâ itnâ lōñ bēshumâr
Ôrak nahîn âyâ nâm dâ sab challê nîhâr*

Preserve my Shâhîs, even if thou must
For ransom me cast into hell.' God said,
'O Bâlâ, thou deservest well: take pen,
And ink and paper, for I grant thy prayer.
Throughout the world thy followers shall be
saved.'

So priestly Bâlâ took a reed and wrote,
'We make a yearly sacrifice,' and thus
Great Bâlâ had his followers' sins forgiven.
'Twas easy. His disciples sang his praise,
Bhōwânî aiding, goddess eloquent.
The Lord of wind and sky alone is true.
The first of God's commands disciples sing.
To father and to mother honour give,
Who showed the world to us: the goddess too
Who taught us truth. The priests and
prophets all
Were made by God. If perfect seeds are sown
Straight barley grows from out the earth,
and so,
When fruits are good the priest is proved
a true
And perfect priest. The former ages all
Were times of truth, but truth has left the
world:

Untruth prevails: Desire attacked the truth
With onslaught fierce. God made this thief
desire.

False teachers are received, and proudly walk
Amid an evil age, where wicked men
Do wickedly. All this I must reveal.
The true will hear, the false reject, but those
That hear with faith at last will enter heaven.
A sinful man am I, disciple born
Within the time of Langar Shâh. 'Twas he
Broke into many a house, and many a hut
He burned. At last he came, repentant he,
To seek the gates of Bâlâ's shrine, where he
Had all his sins forgiven. The name of God
He made foundation sure, and, as with plumb
And compass, straight he built a hiding place,
The base firm resting on the name of God,
The top far reaching to the stars of heaven.
The blessing Bâlâ gave accomplished this.
There is no room for boast. To write a song
Assayed the priest's disciple. Thus he caught
The hem of Bâlâ's garment as he prayed,
And said, 'O thou true priest, the world is
vain,

No sacrifice have I, no merit, none:
Be thou my helper in the end. How shall

*Sāddi jāndi tiyārīdān mān karē rīchār
Hukam Bālē pīr dā kadḥhān nāmōn qahār*

*Siddānwālē sunāngē hōr lōk gawār
Jinhān sunīyā sīdaq nāl-ōh payē azḥbōn pār*

I praise thee in a song? My heart would sing
My theme shall be the virtues of the priest.
Ten times did Bālā come a priest indeed
Into this world—ten millions had he wise
Disciples—men that thought upon the Name.
But never yet could measure it. They left
The world and went in wonderment. I too
Will leave it, and my heart exclaims.' The
priest,

Great Bālā thus commands, 'Adorers of
The Name escape God's wrath: the righteous
hears,

The rest are ignorant. But those that hear,
And trust, shall be set free from fear of pain.

4. Story of Dhagānā.

*Andar Narwarkōt dē Shāh pīr Dhagānā
Ōhād bāp³² pūrā hōyā āp rēhēd aniyānā
Chhē mahīnē guzar gayē pīr murīdī jānā
Variyā Dillī ānkē kar sūhā bānā.*

*Aggē Chuhrā nambardār sī ohād nām Sadhānā.
Ōs palang dāhyā pīr dā sirē tē rākh sirhānā.
Turt ba turt pīr dā chad kitā khānā
Pīr vēkhē palang tē (vēkh karm rabbāna)
Vagār pēi sarkār dī kōṭwāl bhajāyā.
Thattī varē ānkē nambardār bulāyā
Chūhrē sabbhō chā dē bādshāh farmāyā
Āi asāddā jān nahīn ghar pīr ē āyā
Ih dāhḍā kālā nāng hai bādshāh azmāyā
Is dē bāp Akbar Shāh dā manjā gagan
bhōūyā*

*Isā Nand didān kōṭlīdān bāphshān sōhē thān
bahwāyā.*

*Nālē chālī manjēdā dā hālā bāphshāyā.
Sawā pahr dīn chahīyā manjā dhāt lahāyā
Ih bī kālā nāng hai usē pīr dā jāyā*

*Asāddē ghar sahkḍēdān mā āj pīr ē āyā
Chēlē siftdān jōrīdān, parh nām sunāyā,
Kōṭwāl utthōn palṭēyā Chūhrē nahīn jāndē.
Warīr amār puchhḍē tū kyūn nahīn āndē
Puchhan Khair Dīn nū kīthē tur gayē wāndē*

In Narwarkōt there lived a great high priest.
Dhagānā. When his father died he was
A child, but, six months passed, the time
drew near

When his followers must be visited. He came
To Dehli clad in red. The *lambardār*
A Chuhra was, his name Sadhānā, he
A bed prepared all for his priest, and placed
A pillow on it. Then in haste he cooked
His food for him. The priest regards the bed.
How wondrous are God's works. A messen-
ger

In haste came running to the Chuhras' homes,
And to the headman orders gave to send
The Chuhras all—the king commanded. 'But'
He said, 'we cannot go to-day—our priest
Has come—beware, he is as dangerous
As any serpent. All this knows the king:
He tried him once, for this child's father sent
King Akbar's cot straight to the sky, for
which,

He gifted him the fertile village lauds
Of Isā Nand, a golden temple too,
And freed him forty villages from tax.
That priest all in the morning caused the bed.
Suspended in the sky to seek the earth.
This young priest too a cobra is, the son,
Of him we spake of. This we longed for, Sir,
He visits us.' This song all in his praise
His true disciple made. The messenger
Brought word, 'The Chuhras will not come.'
The king

Kôṭwôḍḍā tē Chuhṛēān muḍḍhōn vair jinṇāṇḍē
Chaukīdār khalōkē palātā lāyā

Chuhṛē nahīn ḍundē ghar pīr nē āyā,
Ōs dē bāp Akbar Shāh dā manja gagan bhu-
āyā

Gussā khāḍā Jahāngīr munh muḥkā āyā
Uḥō pīr pakar lēaunā na jānā pāyā
Ōhu phāsī dēnd lōḍkē. Iḥō hukam sunāyā
Lashkar bādshāh dē chā kītī dhātī
Aggē baiḥhā pīr sī Shāh dēh vaḍḍē
Bāl aiyṇḍā baṇ gayā āyā Jag dī Khāī
Huliyē phērē bādshāh dēssān vich sārē
Uḥō pīr pakar lēaunā Rabb mērē bāp dē sirōn
mihḍā utārē

Chuhṛa Ohhapparī Band sī nām Mang saddē
Ōs pīr andar lukāyā, aulād vikḥāḍē
Bārāh baras dī larī lār pīr dē lār

Vidh māḍ jūrī val chhaddī, kaun haṭḍē
Chēlē sīṭān jōṛān, parh nām sunān.
Jān kandrē naddī dē pīr chilā³³ kamāḍē,
Bārāh baras guḍṛīkē phir viḥḍē.
Rōza bārāh barsān dā anḍ na khḍē
Munh thīn Rabb dhēaun pēyā tap kamāḍē
Shāh namūna nām sī tadōn pīr phir akḥḍē
Pīr karē tapassiyā chēlē ākh sunḍē
Māḍl Nūr Divānī ḍarī uḥ jāngal jāḍē
Jāngal sutṭā pīr sī. Jā khalī pōwāṇḍī
Ōh dā mās gayā sūkkē bah kōl bulāṇḍī
Talīdī jhas jāgawṇḍī munh thīn shirmāṇḍī
Jēkar hōṇḍā bāl, pīrā, main pēi khāḍāṇḍī
Angān disḍā sōḥṇā kyān ḍar jāṇḍī
Par main lar laggi tuddē mērī umar viḥāṇḍī
Main ghar baiḥhā tuddē bin damḍān bāṇḍī
Pīr Dhagāṇḍā uṭhēḍāḍl guḍṛī
Barē barē balwant nē ranḍān nē mārē,
Rāwān Lank luḍāyī Sītā dē mārē
Kāḥn churḍē mundrē Guḍrī pair khilārē

Demanded, 'O Khair Dīn, why brought you not

Them forcibly? Where are the idle folk?'

Police and Chuhṛas are old enemies,

A watchman standing by adds fuel to fire.

'The Chuhṛas will not come because their priest,

Whose father sent great Akbar's bed sky high,

Is come.' So Jahāngīr was angry. Drops

Of sweat stood on his brow. 'Go,' cried he, 'Catch

This priest, and see he flee not. Bring him here,

And hang him!' So the king's command. The king

His army marched against him, but he found

No force opposing, for the priest there sat

Transformed into an infant who was brought

To Jagdī Khāī, while every province round

Was taught to seek and him identify.

The king commands that he in chains be brought,

If haply from his father's name God wipe

The old disgrace away. A Chhapparī-band,

A Chuhṛa, Mang by name, concealed the priest.

He hid him in his house and showed, instead,

His children. Then in marriage to the priest

He gave his daughter, girl of summers twelve.

'Twas Vidh, the mother, that united them,

And none may separate the pair. Now far

The praises publish that the true disciple sang.

The priest upon the river bank engaged

In contemplation. Twelve long years he passed,

Twelve years of fasting, solid food he'd none.

He worshipped God, and lived an anchorite.

Then God alone he knew, and so he came

To be a worthy priest. Alone he lived,

Until his own disciples came to say

His wife, his Nur Divānī, missed him much,

And grieved for him. She ran towards the wild,

Even where her priest was sleeping. There she stood

And bowed beside his feet. His flesh was dried

Upon his bones. She called him, standing near

She clasped his feet to wake him modestly.

³³ Period of abstraction and meditation.

*Rājā Bhāj ghōṛā bañ gayā, rānī chāḍuk mārē,
Aisēn jadd paikambarān lap mōē vichārē
Nām lēō ummat dā sab rannān nē mārē
Jahāngīr Chugatta bādshāh, Dillī dē lārē
Uhnū gāh gayī dūmān, assīn kauñ vichārē
Pīr Dhagānū uṭhke an nārā vāhyā
Arsha, azīm kambīyā, bhuchālī sī dyā.
Haibat dharī Dhaul nūn dēōn h lālī dyā
Khabar hūi dargāh vich, Rabb veki puchāyā
Hukam zōrāvarān dā veki bhāunā dyā
Puchhiyā ākē pīr nū, Tussān kī farmāyā ?
Māin diud dhariyā ākē vich tēl bī pāyā
Battē dē chhad bīṭkē sach bar Khudāyā
Dē nūr apnē nūr thīn na rahān trēhāyā
Main manjūd Bālā pīr hūn main ih farmāyā,
Lē sanēhē pīr dē veki muṛ jandā
Jitnā hāl hawāl sī sab ākh sunāndā,
Ōh mauj dā Bālā pīr hai, tūn rāzī honā.
Jhōl piyārē nūr dā Rabb dast pharāndā
Dēn dōdān nū vandkē ikkō jēhā chhāndā*

*Ih bī dūvīn daskē Shāh Bālā dhāndā
Mat kōi chēlā is dē chā gal bhōwāndā
Ih bard zōrāwar pīr hai mat azmat lāhāndā.
Sārē dūvīn daskē ihdē anwān
Ihdā adab karnd kōi nāl dhiyān
Ih ēhāḍ sūrā hō sīd, nahīn ant bayān.
Ih chhattī jug jal bimb vich kītā ashndān.
Par sippān andar rakhīyā khud nāl dhiyān*

She said, 'My priest, had you been still a child,

I would have fondled you as once I did.

Ah me! had my dear home resounded sweet
With children's voices, then I had not thus
Been here. You wed me but my youth, alas,
Is passing swift away. Oh let me stay,
And serve you like a slave.' Dhagānā rose.

And mused, 'A many valiant men have been
Undone by women. Rāwan lost Ceylon
For Sitā. Gujrī fascinated Kahn

What time he stole the ring, and Ranja Bhoj
A horse became; his wife applied the whip.
And thus the sons of prophets fought and
died.

They said they died for men — for women
'twas

They died. Great Jahangīr Chagatta, once
The king of Dillī, gay bridegroom became,
And lost his honour to a dancing girl.

What will become of me?' Dhagānā cried.

He rose, he shouted, till the heavens shook.

The earth did quake; the white ox Dhaul for
fear

Did tremble, and the light of day grew red
Like blood. The voice straight penetrates
Heaven's court.

Forthwith God sends His angel Gabriel.

A message brings he from the Lord; he comes

So speedily all to the priest and asks,

'What seekest thou?' The priest replied,
'A lamp

Have I prepared, and placed within it oil,

And eke a wick: light thou the wick. True
God

Who art. Light from thine own light give
to me,

Quench thou my thirst, for Bālā priest am I,
A wanderer free. My one request vouchsafe.'

So Gabriel, back bearing his request

Presented it, with explanation, 'Lo,

'Tis Bālā, wandering priest, that makes request,
And will not be content till it be given

A cup of sparkling light.' God gave it free,
And placed it in the angel's hands. He said,

'Give them, the husband and the wife, give
both

An equal share, and say that Bālā comes

Into the world again. Let none refuse

To hear him, for he is a mighty man

Of God. He may be angry, in his rage

Aggē gayā duniyā tē nau vēri jawān
 Huñ daswāñ vāri tuñh ghar dyā parwān
 Par sadhē ih dē nām tōñ hōñd qurbān.
 Vēhī nūr dittā vandkē dassē pīr dē añwāñ.
 Jēhṛē ih dē murīd nē, bihishkē jāñ.
 Nahīñ qadr firishitēñ, ihñū dñ buldāñ.
 Jūñ aggē Dharm Rādē dē khar jā puchāñ.
 Shdh Bālē dē murīd nūñ na pawē dhuwāñ
 Jitnē aib sawāb nē sab baḥshē jāñ
 Jō Shdh Bālē dē murīd haiñ, nāl nek nigāh
 Khullē darwajjē varēgā, hō bēparwāñ.
 Massallī jēhṛē bañ gayē unñhñ dē kōī nahīñ jā

Oh Narakē dākhil hōngē, dōzakḥ dē bhā
 Munkir tē Nakir bē, phir lēkhā māngāñ,
 Nēkian badīdāñ puchhāñgē, nālē haḍḍīdāñ bhāñāñ
 Jō Shdh Bālē dē murīd haiñ, na puchhāñ na
 jamnāñ.

Ohdā ādar karñā itnā nālē pakḥē jhulāñ
 Pīr piyāla nūr dā pī ghar val dyā
 Divā balēd jōt dā dhñū Rabb vadhāyā
 Nau mahīnē gujar gayē pīr kukhē dyā
 Ayā rāt sōhāg dē māñ shagan māñāē
 Arshāñ thāñ firishitē ziyārat nūñ dē
 Divēāñ dē bālḥē shamādāñ jagdē
 Hūrūñ parīdāñ baiṭhē sab māngal gāē
 Ziyārat karēō pīr dē Rabb pūrī pāē
 Rāt sanāchar vār dē pīr Bālā jamnā
 Balḍē divē māt hōē uṭh dās bhannā.
 Gurhī āh nūr dē vich sōñē chhannā.
 Pahilā darshan māñ kītā jis pāyā thāññāñ.
 Pīr daswēñ autār jē sunīō akhīñ tē kannāñ.
 Nāvīñ sadī gujar gayē aggē daswēñ punnē
 Pīr pandit ākhēdē, Pīr bhōrē pādō.

He may dishonour some. Go, Gabriel, go,
 Declare to them the signs, and see that they
 Give him due honour. He is great, so great,
 His greatness none will measure. On the deep
 He floated six and thirty ages; then
 He gave oblations; in the shell I kept
 And shielded him from harm. Nine times
 before
 He has incarnate been, now in thy house
 A tenth time he will come. Let all regard,
 And sacrifice themselves to him.' An equal
 share

The angel gave them, and the signs he showed
 'Who follow him will go to heaven at last,
 The angels dare not summon them, nor dare
 To bring them to the presence of the king
 That rules in Hell. No force unlawful will
 Compel the followers of Bālā Shah.
 Their sins will be forgiven who look with faith
 To Bālā Shah. All fearlessly they come
 And enter free the doors of Heaven, but those
 That are Masallis straight will enter Hell,
 Where flames await them. Munkir and Nakir
 Will strict examine them, a record true
 Of deeds, both bad and good, they will demand,
 And then they'll break their bones, but Bala's
 men

Will be nor asked, nor born again. All grace
 Will them be shown, and fans be waved on
 high
 To cool them.' Bala drank the cup of light
 And homewards sped — a lamp with heavenly
 light
 Was given him. Nine months passed, a child
 was born.

One happy night the mother omens sought,
 And lo! from heaven high came angels down
 To see the child. Bright lamps were lit, and
 placed
 On stands; bright fays and fairies came to sing,
 'Behold the priest, and God be with you all.'
 On Saturday, by night, the priest was born,
 The lamps that burned grew dim, the midwife
 ran

In fear. The child's first draught was one of
 light

All in a golden cup. His mother looked
 And saw him first. She gave him milk and so
 The priest was now the tenth time incarnate.
 Hear ye with eyes and ears, the ninth is passed,
 The tenth great age begun. The Pandits said,

*Bārah varhē is nūn na vā lōdō
Sakht sitāra is dā jē sach puchhāō.
Ih dēvtēdān rishchōn bayā hai; na gal vadhāō.*

*Hujrē Shāh Mugīm dē kēi gadāi bhāri.
Pir sāhib dē pōtrē saiyid balkārī.
Kisi dūtī jākē ōthē chuglī mārī.
Tālī Chūhrēan dē pīr dī kōi bēshumārī.
Sunke saiyid pīr nē gadān jōrāidān
Kuhārē umhān ujhā lēyē mōndhē dhar par
nāidān.
Tālī dē hēth ānkē sab nazrān kardē.
Traē darē bañangē sōhnē kārigar sāf kardē.
Phull laggaingē takhtidān buhē sōhnē baidē,
Sōhnidān bañidān chauridān, ghar būrān dhāidān.
Saiyid apō vich bahsē salāh kuttān dī kardē.
Pir Dhagāna jākē mur arzān kardā
Nālē pīr kahindā pēyā, Rabb thīn dardā
Par chācha jis nūn ākhayē pand chā, nahīn
kharāā.
Saiyid, zōrāwar nē, Rabb kīkar ih kardā
Pir Dhagānā Saiyidān dē nāl na hōyā kāhlā*

*Hōr andar pīr hai is tālīwālā
Tālī hath nahīn laund, mat karō uchālā.
Saiyid dhnē, 'Lēd, Khān, tālī dakkanwālā !'
Pir Dhagāna parikhē mur ghar val āyā.
Qufal udr bhōrē dā ziyārat pāē.
Jitnā hāl hawāl sē sabh ākh sunāē,
Pir Sahib dē pōtrē tālī vadhan nē dē
Phir khālī us nē nahīn jāund bājh dēkh dikhāē
Tālī bābat kuchh nahīn jag mēhnā lāē
Bālē nūrī bāp nūn phir arz sunāē
Sāqāē dākhē sahib dē tālī kavī vadhāē
Bakhsā zabān rahm kar sir khākh rālāē
Jekar sāya sāhibdā tur āpī jāē
Pir Dhagānā ākhēā, 'Tussīn bāl amiyānē.*

'The child must hide twelve years in darkness
drear ;
No light must see — his star is powerful. He.
If you the truth would know, among the gods
Is strongest. This keep secret.'

Shāh Mugīm²⁴

Had his last resting place where Saiyids brave,
His grandsons, lived. An enemy brought
them word
The Chuhra dared them cut their *shisham* tree.
The *shisham* tree the priest of Chuhra loved
Is great. The Saiyid priest, this hearing.
yoked
The oxen to the wagons. Saiyids took
Their axes, shouldered saws, and stood beneath
The *shisham* tree. Regarding it they said,
'Yes, three good doors the tree will make, the
wright
The boards shall plane; we'll carve them fine
with flowers.
So beautiful they'll be — and lovely chairs
We'll make — our wives will run to own
them.' So
The Saiyids talked with purpose fixed and
firm,
To fell the tree, but Pir Dhagāna came.
He begged them to have patience, not to cut
The tree. A priest he was and spoke them fair
As fearing God. A man may make request
And humbly say 'Friend, help me with my
load.'
The friend thus meekly asked no aid affords.
Just so the Saiyids harsh comply not. What
Will God do now? Dhagāna, priest, was calm.
He to the Saiyids said, 'The Master is
Within; touch not the tree; you'll rue it else.'
The Saiyids angrily cried, 'Who's the man
That will prevent us?' Priest Dhagāna came.
Unlocked the door that led to chambers dark
Beneath the ground, and looking on his son
The rightful priest, the story told him thus :—
'The grandsons of the Muslim priest have dared
To come with purpose ill to fell the tree,
The *shisham* tree. But learn they must to
feel,
And recognise, our power. The tree itself
Is little worth; the insult offered us
Is great. The world will scoff.' But Bala said

²⁴ Mugīm for Mukīm: cf. *mugat*, which is probably for *mukat*.

*Andar is bhôré dé bārah sāl vihanē
 Aôn utthôn naskē kai dukh vihanē.
 Nāl dagē dé mārde Nathôn bāj chhadānē
 Bē parwadān usdān oh apē jānē
 Bālē Nūri dkhāyā, kyūn hāl gōwāō
 Main nūn apnē dukh dā khōl patā sunāō.*

*Khārē upar chāḥkē mainūn chā nuhāō
 Chhatī sāl dī bandagī lēkhē dhē lāō.
 Jē manjūri Sdhō dē, fateh upar paō.
 Faqr namūnē us nūn ik gal sunāi,
 Hunē dāna bijvān jānē khēt jamdīn
 Jihkar āvē jūlē fath upar pān.
 Nahīn tō dhērī apnē dādē kōl jamdīn.
 Lēkē izan bāp dē pīr kārē taṭyārī,
 Dhānā nēzē vāng hai andarōn kōlē bārī
 Andarōn ēs dargāh dē pīr lāē tāri
 Duniyā utte ghaliyā, main nūn bañ gayī bhārī
 Tūdhē pardē kajnē kar madadgārī.
 Kēhā Rabb pīr nūn kyūn sōch guzārī,
 Takabbar haih talwār hai nahīn chaldī kārī.
 Qabza khōl talwār dā tu banh lē dhārī.
 Saiyid āl rasūl dī panjē shēr dē mārīn
 Chēlē siftdān jōrīdān parh nām chatārī.
 Pīr bhōrēōn niklīyā mā lēndī vārī
 Ohā mathā Bālē chand dā jēṭn asmdnē tārē
 Chand jivēn dsmān tē jivēn chamkān mārē*

*Nūr matihē dā chamakdā lēndī lishkāre
 Pīr pōshdān pahīnān nahālē upar khārē.*

In answer to his father, 'Who will dare
 To cut the *tdli* tree, which is the Lord's.
 Forbid me not and I will lay in dust
 Their heads; if on me rests God's power.
 behold,
 Like chaff they go.' But priest Dhagāna said,
 'You're still a child—within this cell you've
 lived

For twelve long years: defeat means dire
 disgrace,

And if you're killed, a hawk escaped, alas,
 Is not more swiftly lost to sight than you.'

'The Lord is all resourceful,' Bālā said,
 'Why weep you? Tell me all your grief, and
 seat

Me on a basket, bathe me, glorify
 The Lord who gave me grace to worship Him
 For six and thirty years. If He appears,
 My adoration paid, then victory
 Undoubted will be yours.' The father then,
 Like hermit true, made this request. 'Essay
 Your power: a grain of corn sow, which sown
 Shall in an instant grow if victory
 Is ours. If not, then insult and a grave
 Beside your fathers will your portion be.'
 The boy, his sire assenting, now prepared
 To go. Like burning coal he went in wrath,
 With speed as of a spear. His heart was
 fixed

In prayer all close within God's presence.
 'Thou,

O Lord, didst send me to the world; behold,
 Thy servant now is troubled. Succour me.'
 The Lord addressed the priest, 'Why art thou
 sad?

Pride grasps a sword in vain; no wound it
 makes:

Grasp thou thy sword's hilt, sharpen it and
 cut

Clean off the lion's paws, Muhammad's race.'
 These songs are sung, compiled by followers
 true.

Oh read and sing God's name. The priest
 emerged

From out his dark seclusion. Giving alms
 His mother kissed her son — his forehead
 high

Was like the moon. It shone as do the stars
 That shine in heaven, or like the moon aloft
 That beams and glows. The beauty of his
 face

Atar té amār nē uttē kam vichārē
 Pīr bhōrēōn nikliyd salām mā nūn kardā.
 Awwāl sēvān tuḍh nūn mērā pīr hai kharḍā
 Putr jān dēn té mā dā jē nahīn kardā.
 Nain hōwēn qindhāḍlē, rag kalējā bharḍā.
 Bibī ākhē Shāh nūn kivēn ih na jāē
 Mān putr raḷ baiḥkhē chā hēḥ vadhās
 Nainē nīr na ṭhilyā dukh kalējā khās
 Pīr kahlā hō pēyd māt tālī waḍh lē jāē
 Vidid hōyā pīr jē, mān khair pukārē.
 Khalqat āi hamḍkē, lōg pinḍ dē sārē,
 'Arzān karn hath banhkē sab ḍar dē mārē
 Shēr té bhagiār dē, kaun ugḍhī dhārē
 Tālīwāl pīr hai, har kisi nūn jāppē
 Chhinj tamāshā rēkhnē lōg agayē āpē
 Lōg tamāshagīr nē, kōḷ jhurḍē māppē
 Pīr Dhagāna ākhād Allah karē sujāppē
 Dōvēn ikatḥhē hō paē juṭ paē ne sānī

Pīr ih ākhē, Saiyidā, hōi dē nishānī,
 Tālī vadhdhanē ā gaēōn tainā hōi girānī.
 Aithē hī mar javēngā hō jēēngā fāmī.
 Gussa āyā Saiyid nūn, aggān āyā
 Pīr nūn jhiyakkē ḥs kōhārā chāyā
 Pīr panjā ugharīd magar Saiyid dē lāyā
 Jitnā lahu sarīr dā sab bāhir āyā
 Zamīn té jā pēyā na bōlē bulāyā
 Manjē uttē pākē sir nafrān chāyā
 Khudīwālē nūn mārḍā Rabb ē āp furmāyā
 Jadōn chēld ravānnā kar rēhā jadōn vadhdhan
 nūn sī āyā
 Shāh Dhigānā ākhād pīr lakh hajārī
 Ik miyān nahīn meṇdīdīn huṇ dō talwārīn.
 Pēō putr nahīn jēundē raḷ iṣṣē thālī
 Jān Nishaurā mall bahō jēdē mund Khīyālī.
 Lēkē izam bāp dā pīr ghōrē charḥiyā
 Majjālōn majjālīyā ā Nishaurē varīyā
 Aggē choudhrī Rām Chand sī, jis vāggān té
 phariyā
 Bah ja jhandā lākē, kihā hariyā bhariyā.

Shot dazzling rays. The priest on basket
 bathed
 Now fully dressed and scented, issued forth.
 He made obeisance to his mother, who
 In reverence said, 'Tis I shall worship thee,
 O priest of all the house.' She grieved and
 wept
 At parting from her son. Her eyes were full
 Of tears, her heart was breaking. 'Husband
 mine,
 Prevent him.' So she spake and sat her down
 Beside her son, and fondly him embraced.
 Her eyes dropped tears, her heart was wrung
 with pain.
 The priest must leave her, for the *tālī* tree
 Was in dire danger; so he went and she
 Cried 'God speed' after him. A crowd of
 friends,
 The village folk, with folded hands, implored
 The priest to stay — they feared for him. 'A
 wolf,'
 They cried, 'or lion who can face?' But he
 Was Tālīwālā priest — his name and fame
 Brought all the country round to watch the
 sport,
 And view the wrestlers, for they love to see
 A worthy match. The parents of the priest
 Were sad. Dhagāna said, 'God succour thee.'
 So face to face they came, an equal match.
 So thought the people. 'Saiyid!' cried the
 priest,
 'Show me a sign — why came you, tyrant,
 here
 To cut the *tālī* tree? Now die you shall,
 And perish quite.' The Saiyid angry grew;
 He cursed the priest in surly tones, and he
 But laid his hand upon the Saiyid's back,
 When out there gushed a stream of blood.
 and prone
 The Saiyid fell. They laid him then, bereft
 Of sense and speech upon a bed, and brought
 Him from the arena home. God kills the proud:
 It is his Law. And so it was that day
 The brave disciple faced the Saiyid when
 He came to fell the tree: Dhagāna said,
 'A mighty priest art thou. O never shall
 Two swords one scabbard occupy: we may
 No more as son and father eat one food.
 Naushera by Khīyali is thy home.'
 The priest obedient mounted then his horse,
 And reached by stages sure Naushera. There

*Bālā nūrē pīr sī, rahīddā mūñh suchché.
Chhattre, balrē, kōh lēyē mullān nūñ na puchché.*

5. Story of Dānā.

*Atē Imminābād bī dūr nahīñ kōī lammī mukhé,
Ōrak khabarāñ hōngīñ Dānā vī puchché,
Rāj sī Chugattāñ Dillī vich phērd
Jahāngīr Chugattā Bādshāh nīyāñ karē chan-
gērā.*

*Dānē nūñ mīt ākhā, Ustād hai mērā,
Mainūñ karnā aundā tērā adab bahutērā.
Duniyā tē nahīñ duñdā mūr dujjā phērd,
Lai lai mūñhōñ mangkē kōī mulk changērā.
Dānā qāzī dīl vich dālī guzārī
Dē chhaḍī Imminābād dē bādshāhī sārī
Kīñ mērī na mūrē phīr Dillī tārī
Halāl harām nakhēr sāñ chaupdyāñ tōrī
Imminābād likh dittā Jahāngīr Shāh-zādē
Kītē kam Khudā dē phīr nahīñ durāḍdē
Sharā kull Panjāb dī vas tērē tē sādḍē
Chuglī jehṛā jā karē chuk dēñ durāḍdē
Dānā rāsī hōkē Imminābādē ā varḍā
Shahr dīyā hōmākē lōk nazrāñ dhardē
Khabar hō gayē Panjāb vich ā Dānā varḍā*

*Shahrīñ Brahman kambdē Rabb kīkar ih kardā
Jō kōī Imminābād vich viāh rachāē
Piōhōñ mēlī duñdā awaḷ Dānā jādē
Uhnūñ khāññ kōī na mōṛdā jō khāē sō khāē,
Tambbōl lēndā likh, āp neōndrā na pāē,
Mārē ḍar chaugattāñ kōī gal na hīlāē
Aukhē lōg Dānā thīñ kuchh pēsh na jādē
Dānā Imminābād vich rāj sī baīthā kardā
Ḍardā Imminābād vich kōī ā gadā na kardā,
Kōī musāfir ā varē huggā pēyē nālī ḍardā
Faḡīrāñ nū ḍar iñdā jō azāb qabr dā
Chēlē sifīdāñ jōṛīdāñ pēyāñ nām hē parhād.
Shāh Daulā faḡīr sī, hai sī dariyāī
Lagā jāñdā Gujṛāt nūñ kar lammē dhāī
Rāh vich Imminābād dē uhnūñ kaun haḷāē*

*Varīyā shahrē jākē jā sadā buldī
Sakhī vēkh faḡīr dī mēlī Dānā jādē
'Kalmē panj bañā bī, mainūñ ākh sunāīñ.'*

Ram Chand, the Chowdri, seized his horse's reins,
And cried, 'Dismount! Unfurl your flag,
and dwell

O blessed man, with us.' Enlightened priest
Was Bala, pure and holy. Food unclean
He ate not, for he killed his own, both sheep
And goats. No Muslim priest he asked.

Naushera town is near by Imminābād,
And Dānā heard of Muslim law profaned,
Chugattās reigned in Dillī. Jāhāngīr,
The king, did justice. Dānā was his friend,
He said, and teacher. So the king decreed
Him honour great, and said, 'I come not here
Again — man lives but once — make thy
request,
And I will give thee province good.' He
thought,
And said, this Dānā Qāzī, 'Give me all
Imminābād, without appeal to thee
In Dillī: I will cleanse the land of all
Unlawful things.' Great Jahāngīr bestowed
Imminābād on him. The Lord's great works
Are wonderful. Said Dānā, 'Panjāb law
Is ours to make or change: who disobeys
Shall exiled be.' In gladness entered he
Imminābād. All men brought gifts. Through-
out

The Panjāb it was noised that Dānā made
This entrance to the town. The Brahmans
feared.

They knew not what the Lord would do.
Whene'er

There was a wedding. Dānā first of all
In Imminabad was called, the best of food
He chose, and, though no gift he gave, yet he
Kept count of others' gifts. None dared
complain,

As fearing the Chugattās. Dānā was
A king among them. Beggars feared to beg,
And strangers ceased to smoke; faḡīrs indeed
Shrank from him as a man shrinks from a
grave.

This song of praise the true disciple made
To glorify the name.

Shah Doulāh was
A famous saint who loved the streams. He
made

'*Moin Allah dā nām jānān, hōr parhiyā nahīn.*'

*Dānā hōyā qahrwān sir bhār chukāi,
Lōkēn ākh vėkhkē faqir chhuḍāyā,
Us mundē magar lākē aggē bhajāyā,
Itān māran vāvehidān aggē bhannā āyā
Khairā tāt ēi chāḍḍiyā jē shahrōn bāhar sī āyā.*

*Bārā Nānak Gurū sī sab dā sākhiā,
Oh pūrā karāmāt dā tāt gurū sadānā
Uhnūn Hindū mathā tēkē ṣh jit val jāndā
Sail karē saṁsār dā duniyā ajmānā.
Rūh vich Imminābād sī ṣh var gayā vāndā
Thākur duārē jākē Bābā dēṛā lāē,
Shahr āyā hamākē lōj nārān lē ās
Hindū mathā tēkē, Sāḍḍā sat gur ē āyā
Khabar hō gayī Dānā nū ṣh āpē dē
Dānā qāzī baiṭhē uhnūn gal suṁdāi,
Jō tainūn mathā tēkē sab jhūṭh lōkē,
Hinduṁ dā tū gurū haiṁ zahiri kalā dikhāin
'Mān sat Gur dā nām jānān, kuchh parhiyā nahīn.'*

*Aggē Bābā bōliyā, "Sun, mullā Qāzī,
Pir pirkambar anbyē sab vādē qāzī,
Sānī nahīn kōi Rabb dā sab jhūṭhī bāzī.
Faqr Allah di zūt hai, sun ahmaq qāzī.
Dānā hōyā qahrwān chārḥ gussā jāi
Bābā andar dēkē chā chakki chōhāē.
Ṣh pūrā karāmāt dā uttē chādar pāi
Jitnā dūnā shahr dā hō āṭā pihjāi
A-mat pūrī tāt gayā phir naslē jāi.
Chēlē sifān jōṛiān parḥ nām suṁdāi.*

*Mirālīwālē dā mulwānā bahut kitābān parhā,
Aē gayē nūchērdā dhigānē sī larā
Āṭā kēhē faqirān dā Dānē kōi khaṛdā
Chēlā ākhē gāvīēn Rabb kēkar iḥ karā.
Jāndā jihri gāl val, rannān pēyā dārāē,
Maṁṁ māhndē dhari sūrmān kōi na pāē,
Rannān nūn āyā dar itnā kōi phul na hanḍāē
Kōi mard kisi nāl gal karē ṣh kafarat lagāē
Mullā aisā phitṭiyā vādē chēṛā khāē
Chēlā aggōn gāṁdā sūri gal suṁdē,*

His way to Gujrāt by stages long
And entering Imminabad he begged an alms.
But all unhappy met with Dānā, who
'To try him asked the Kalmas five.
'I only know,' said the *faqir* 'the name
Of God. Nought else I know.' Dānā was
wroth.

He laid a load upon the poor man's head,
Despite the people's prayers to let him go.
He set the city boys upon the saint,
Who stoned him from the town.

Then came a saint
Whom all men owned to be a teacher true,
The Gurū Nānak. Hindūs bowed to him,
As here and there he wandered trying the
world.

In Imminābād he stayed: the people brought
Their gifts to him and said, 'Sat Gur has
come.'

But Dānā came to see him, questioning,
'Men honour you without a cause: what sign
Show you that I should honour you who teach
The Hindus?' Nānak said, 'I know but
this,

The name of my Sat Gur. Oh Muslim judge,
All priests and prophets, makers of the law,
Called men of God, are nought 'fore God. A
play

It all is — God alone is the true saint,
Oh foolish Qāzī.' Dānā angry grew.
He locked the saint up — made him turn the
mill

To grind their corn. So Nānak spread his
sheet

And ground the corn of all the town without
An effort. Fleeing then the town he showed
His power so. This song of praise was made
By true disciple. Read and glorify
The Name.

Mirālīwālā Mulla read
So many books, he met all men in strife
Of argument. He sent the poor saints' alms
To Dānā. Let us see, the Chelā sang
What the Lord does. The *mulla's* wont was to
Insult the ladies, who left off to use
Their lace and henna, ceased to dye their eyes
And wear their jewels; even wreaths of flowers
They dared not wear, and, if a man should
hold

Gallān dhādān kardē Bāvē tē Sōdī
Mullān Mirālīwālē dā kōī pakṣā hōdī
Muohohān dhādān kakhān dārhī sī khōdī.

Mullā bēfarmān hai uhdī bhairī vādī,
Namāz rōza nahīn jāhdā chaur ustad bānān dī.
Gullī lēndā jumerāt dā ghar ēkōī jēnī

Mirālīwālēn tur pēyā Gahṇā mulvānā
Aggē garh Nishaurē ā gayā vēkhē jag
shahāna,
Vēkh sirishtā pīr dā Gahṇā ghabrānā,
Chattrē bakrē kōh lē saddēh nahīn mulvānā.
Sarbaḷ kōlā hō gayā Gahṇā mulvānā,
Chēla ālēhē, Gahṇēā, ih jag hī shahānā
Kōī pīr dē āṅkē Gahṇā karē bayān,
Chohhattē bakrē kōhnānē karnānē tū gyān,
Sharāwālē mulvānē, tēri haḍḍh lēngē jān.
Shamas Tabrēz pīr sī vich Multān,
Sharāwālē mulvānē ēs dī ultī khalī lahān
Oh dā bhāndā kītā adrā nāl dēn na khān.
Us sūraj tikkā bhuniyā tān mūnh lagā sī pān.
Itthōn kīkar bachēngā sānnūn das bayān
Chhattē bakrē sūddē apnē sharā hai tuhaḍḍī
Sharā nahīn mangān asīn gayē tainā lān dī
hai vādī
Bhājī tainūn nahīn ghaliyā vich pā rikābī,

Sānnūn tēri khabar nahīn tū kēhrē thān dā
qāzī
Ōh Gujrānwālē na gayā, ōh Imminābādē
dhānā
Rāh vich rōndā jāondān Gahṇā mulvānā
Aggē majlis Dānē qāzī dē ōthē jā kurlānā.
Pag lākhē piṭṭēdī jā Gahṇā mulvānā
Dānē qāzī ākhiyā Ihnūn pakar bahāḍ.
Jān kīsi ihnūn mūriyā main nān puchh sunāḍ
Jān ihnūn kucchh larī gayā kōī mantar pāḍ
Chhēl Kānsar dā khauf hai ihnūn andar pāḍ,
Lōkān uhnā pakariyā Gahṇā tad bī tappē

Converse with any maid, a blasphemer
 He straight was judged. The mulla grew
 full rich

With bribes, and fat — the story I will tell.
 The Bābas and the Sodhis talked about
 The mulla. 'Rogue and rascal he,' said they,
 'Mustaches brown and beard but scanty his.
 He has no principles, his ways are bad.
 The fasts and prayers are nought to him; he
 would

Be called a teacher — takes his Thursday bread
 From all the houses.'

Mullā Gahṇā, marched
 To Garh Naushera: there he saw the rites
 That Chāhrās practised in the sacrifice.
 Their priest killed rams and goats himself,
 nor once
 Called in a Muslim priest. And seeing this
 Gahṇā grew angry like a glowing coal.
 'Oh Gahṇā,' the disciple said, 'observe
 The way the Shāhīs sacrifice.' But Gahṇā said,
 'You kill both rams and goats, how dare you
 have
 Such rites? We that do know the Law of God
 Will kill you. Know you not that Shams
 Tabrēz,
 Priest of Multān, was by the masters of
 The law hung up by the feet and flayed, because
 He broke the law. They cast him out. They
 would
 Not let him eat. The sun approached, and he
 Did roast his fish and ate his scanty meal.
 They spared not him, then how will you
 escape?'

The priest replied, 'The rams and goats are
 ours,
 The law is yours. We do not want your law,
 Nor have we called you. Yours it is to seek
 A quarrel. Go. We know not you, nor where
 You dwell and execute your law.' But he
 Went not to Gujrānwāl, but took his way
 To Imminabad, to see the Qāzī. So
 He went in tears. Gahṇā the priest appeared
 Before Dānā the Qāzī. There he wept
 Such bitter tears, and threw his turban down
 So vehemently, and beat his breast so sad
 That Dānā Qāzī cried 'Take hold of him.
 Here seat him—and see he has been beaten, or
 A serpent poisonous has stung him, so
 Use charms. Or mayhap he has some disease.

*Chugli Bálé píř di aggé Dané dé dissé,
 Chuhréđá dá píř hai vich Nishauré dé vassé,
 Chhattre bakré kóh lai, mullán ná nā puchhé.
 Dana kahé sipáhíđán nún Uđh karé tađyári,
 Asvár hó jáó ghóřéđán khhich ló talvárín.
 Píř nún gal harn na déđní phír d iđi vári.
 Aitthé pakar léđunđ, píř vékhá'igá sári,
 Chhattre kóhnd vékh láđ, vađđá bulkári.
 Chéle sifđán jôříđán, Rabb paj savári.
 Sau asvár tur pýgá ghóříđán té char'kké.*

Control him—and shut him up indoors.'

They tried

To hold him, but he cast them off and railed
 Against priest Bálá, saying to Dáná, 'He,
 The Chuhras' priest, lives in Naushera. He
 Kills rams and goats himself, and disregards
 The Muslim priests.' Thus spake he. Dáná
 gave

His soldiers orders to prepare to mount
 Their horses, ride away, and draw their swords,
 Nor let the priest resist by even a word.

He must not have their leave to utter word.

'Go bring him here in chains, his priesthood I
 Will prove. I'll see if he kills rams himself,
 The headstrong man.' His own disciple wrote
 This song of praise. May God vouchsafe us
 peace.

(To be continued.)

BOOK-NOTICE.

THE TODAS. BY W. H. R. RIVERS, Fellow of
 St. John's College, Cambridge. With Illustrations.
 London: Macmillan & Co., 1903, pp. xviii, 755, 40
 Tables and Map.

EVERY visitor of Ootacamund has met the
 sturdy, shock-headed aborigines of the soil, who
 first greet him with a merry '*salim*' and then
 naively and confidently ask him for his tribute
 in the shape of an '*illám*' (as the Arabic word
in'am is pronounced by them). Their little colonies
 of barrel-shaped huts are scattered all over the
 Nilgiri plateau. Two of them are on the very
 outskirts of the summer capital: one near Sylk's
 Hotel and another close to the Government
 Gardens. Others occupy some of the most
 picturesque spots in the environs: near the
 Marlimund Reservoir, near the Umbrella Tree, at
 the top of the Sigur Ghat, in Governor's Shola,
 &c. From the time when the hills were first
 visited by Europeans (which is less than a century
 ago), the Todas have excited much interest, and
 a pretty extensive literature has grown up
 regarding them. No observer, however, has made
 so deep a study of them as Dr. Rivers, whose
 special accomplishments as an anthropologist, and
 whose previous experience of similar work in the
 Torres Straits, enabled him to gather very accurate
 and detailed information about their customs and
 beliefs. The result of his stay among them is the
 delightful volume to which I seek to draw the
 attention of all friends of India.

Dr. Rivers gradually examined nearly every
 individual of the whole tribe, which numbers

about 800 people. With the help of two
 interpreters—a catechist and a forest ranger—he
 extracted from them a vast mass of valuable
 items of information, which he checked and
 verified by cross-examination and independent
 statements. He found these uncultured savages
 extremely intelligent, veracious, and far from
 reticent except on certain tabooed matters.

The Todas are a purely pastoral race and do
 not possess any wealth or means of subsistence
 except their fine, fierce-looking buffalo-cows, to
 the care of which their daily life is devoted. No
 wonder that in their belief milk has become
 a sacred substance and the dairy a place of
 worship. 'The milking and churning operations
 of the dairy form the basis of the greater part of
 the religious ritual of the Todas' (p. 38). Besides
 the 'ordinary buffaloes' attached to any village,
 there are herds of sacred buffaloes which are
 tended by dairymen-priests. The holiest kind of
 dairy is the *tt*, and its priest the *pdlat* (i. e.,
 milkman). Dr. Rivers gives a full description of
 the complicated dairy ritual, plans of the dairies,
 and photographs of the dairy-vessels, the priests,
 and their attendants. The most sacred object of
 the dairies are certain buffalo-bells (*maní*), which
 are kept in the innermost room of the dairy-
 temples, and to which a miraculous origin is
 imputed. The picture on p. 51 will interest Sans-
 krit scholars, as it shows the native method of
 churning, which is frequently alluded to in Hindu
 literature. Most of the dairies resemble in form

the ordinary dwelling-huts; but a few, such as the so-called 'Toda Cathedral' (pp. 44, 46), are circular, with a conical roof. To keep off cattle and wild beasts, both huts and dairies are surrounded by walls and have a very small opening, which can be passed only by creeping, and is closed by a sliding door on its inner side. The interior has two raised portions on which the people sleep.

One of the most striking customs of the Todas is polyandry combined with polygyny. 'Wives are constantly transferred from one husband, or group of husbands, to another, the new husband or husbands paying a certain number of buffaloes to the old' (p. 523), and 'a woman may have one or more recognised lovers as well as several husbands' (p. 529). The catechist who translated the Commandments was met by the serious difficulty that there is no word for adultery in the Toda language. Dr. Rivers has taken the trouble to work out, and has published, as an Appendix, the genealogies, as far as they were remembered, of nearly the whole of the Toda community. These pedigrees are valuable in various respects. They illustrate the complicated system of Toda kinship and provide statistical material for the study of the marriage regulations. The older census records show a considerable excess of men over women. Dr. Rivers attributes this fact to the practice of female infanticide which, as his new tables prove, has now almost entirely ceased.

As may be expected, Dr. Rivers' volume contains a full account of the funeral ceremonies of the Todas. I have witnessed cases of both varieties: the so-called 'green funeral' at which the corpse is burned, and the 'dry funeral' at which certain relics — a lock of hair and a piece of the skull — are finally cremated. On these occasions the fire is produced by friction, as I am able to confirm from personal knowledge. Before the cremation various articles, which the deceased person is expected to require in the other world, are placed near the body. As a *conditio sine qua non* some buffaloes have to be killed, which will supply him or her with milk and *ghî* in the future life. 'Formerly it was the custom to slaughter many buffaloes at every funeral. This impoverished the people and was prohibited by the Government about forty years ago, and since that time the number of buffaloes killed at each ceremony has been limited to two for each person' (p. 388). The two victims are caught and dragged to the appointed spot, where they are dispatched by striking the head with

the blunt side of an axe. The racing of the infuriated and frightened animals by muscular youths, the dignified bearing of the more aged spectators (who remind us of Roman senators), the lamenting of the mourning women, the musical (?) strains of the band of Kôtas (who receive as their fee the flesh of the slaughtered buffaloes), — all this combines with the grand contour of those lovely hills in producing a weird scene which no visitor will ever forget. The Todas call the abode of the dead 'the world of Am,' i. e., of the Hindu god Yama. It is believed to be situated to the west of the Nilgiris, and to reach it a river near Sispara has to be crossed by a thread bridge. Wicked Todas cannot cross it, but fall into the river, where they are bitten by leeches. When they get out on the further bank of the river, they have to stay in a sort of purgatory before reaching their final destination.

I conclude these hasty notes on Dr. Rivers important work by reprinting from p. 386 the translation of a funeral dirge, which alludes to Ootacamund and its lake and the boats on it, and betrays the influence of the Zenana Mission, under whose protection the author of the poem had lived for some time:—

"O woman of wonderful birth, renowned were you born, O flower of the lime tree! Having found a proper husband, you married; having found a proper wife, I married. I gave my best buffalo to Piedr for you. I took you as a beauty to Kuendr. A house we built, bracelets and buffalo-horns we made in sport. I thought we should have had many children and many buffaloes should we have enjoyed. Liberal you were and refreshing like the shade of the umbrella tree. We thought that we should live long. We went together as we willed. We bought strong buffaloes and we prevailed over injustice. Peacefully we paid our fine. We lent to those that had not. We went to see the bungalows and the reservoir. Many courts we visited and ships also. We laid complaints before the native magistrate; we made bets and we won. We said that we would not be shaken and would fear the eye of no one. We thought to live together, but you have left me alone, you have forsaken me. My right eye sheds tears, my right nostril smart with sorrow. I bewailed but could not find you. I called out for you and could not find you. There is one God for me."

E. HULTZSCH.

Halle, 9th March 1907.

ARCHÆOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

BY THE REV. A. H. FRANCKE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 333.)

III. — INSCRIPTIONS AT BASGO AND NYEMO.

THE villages of **Basgo** and **Nyemo** are situated on the right bank of the Indus, at the two ends of a long plain which is the site of the important **Battle of Basgo**, when the invading armies of the Mongols and Tibetans were defeated with the assistance of the army of the Mughal Emperor of India. The strong fortress of Basgo, the ruins of which come into sight, when the end of the large plain between Saspola and Basgo is reached, was not destroyed during the Mongol war, but by Dogra troops between 1834 and 1841 A. D.

(a) The Fortress of Basgo.

This fortress is mentioned twice in the *Ladākhi Chronicles* before the great siege of c. 1646-47.⁶ We first hear of it as one of the possessions of **Dragspa'abum**, the rival king to 'aBumide, c. 1400—1440. **Dragspa'abum** may have found some fortifications in the place, but he seems to be the man who made a really valuable stronghold of it, and it is probable that all the thick ancient walls and round towers were built in his time. The supply of water in the fortress must have been continuous, as is shown by the length of the Mongol siege, and the existing brook was probably included in the fortifications. Also, there could have been during the war no lack of food, as the grain-stores of all the *Ladākhi* castles were almost inexhaustible, owing to the custom of adding some grain at every harvest. The castle store-houses sometimes look like very deep round wells, and at **Wanla** I was told that the grain stored there of old was not even yet emptied out.

The most conspicuous building in the fort, and the one which alone is still entire, is the **Chamba** ('aByamspa) Monastery, built by **King Sengge-rnam-rgyal**, c. 1590—1620. It contains an image of **Maitreya**, made of copper (clay and wood ?), gilt, in size "such as he will be in his eightieth year" (as the *Chronicles* say), i. e., about three stories high ! The face cannot be seen in the lower story, as is often the case with these statues, because the head reaches through the ceiling and must be inspected from a higher place.

Of the once famous **Royal Palace** here, called **Rabstan-lha-rtse**, there is not much left. A small building, which is locally known as the **Seljang** (probably *γSer-lcang*) Monastery, is to be found inside the ruins. There is a court on the roof with covered galleries all round it, in fair preservation. There are here some very rude Lamaist paintings, with explanatory inscriptions in modern **dBu-med Characters**. One portion of the wall is covered with a very long inscription in black ink in **dBu-can Characters**, which probably tells of the construction of the galleries and the decoration of the palace. It is certainly of some historical value, but in such bad preservation that I could not make much of it. The middle and lower portions are quite gone. I tried to find a king's name in it, and the Lama who assisted me in the task, occasionally pointed to certain words in the inscription. When he took his finger off the wall, away went the word which he had pointed out, and I believe that it is in this way that the most important parts of the inscription have been destroyed. There is, however, some hope left that it will be possible to fix its date approximately. The inscription contains a great number of names of state-officials and similar well-known persons, whose dates will, no doubt, eventually become known by a collation of the various inscriptions in these parts. I copied one of the many names, that of a Lama, **Stag-thsangba-ngag-dbang-rgya-mthso**. The term *Stag-thsangba* plainly indicates that he must have been a disciple or

⁶ I find that the date of the siege of Basgo has been preserved by **Bernier**, the friend of the Moguls (see *Pinkerton's Travels*). He speaks of this battle as having taken place 17 or 18 years before 1664, i. e. 1646-47. I am convinced that a date preserved by a European is more deserving of our acceptance than one preserved by the Tibetans, on whose authority 1386-88 has been accepted up to the present as the date of the siege.

successor of the great Lama **Stag-thsang-ras-chen**, who flourished during the reign of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**, mentioned above, and thus the date of the inscription has to be fixed at any rate about 1600 A. D. or a little later. The Lama **Ngag-dbang-rgya-mthso** is mentioned as a contemporary of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal** on an inscription from Saspola.

(b) Hymn in Honor of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**.

(On Stone.)

This hymn (in **dBu-can Characters**) is found on one of the numerous *mani*-walls which are built along the trade-road, below the **Fortress of Basgo**. Close by is a tablet on stone, containing a hymn in honor of **Nyima-rnam-rgyal**, but the stone has become so much weathered that hardly any part of the inscription, besides the name of the king, can be made out. I also noticed in the neighbourhood a tablet containing a hymn in honor of **bDe-skyong-rnam-rgyal**, but it has not yet been read.

Tibetan Text.

skye dgu phan bdei sbrang char silili
 nang bde dgabai lotog sosor smin
 snyanpai rnga chen nam mkhai ltongsnas rdungs.
 gragspai dpal ldan riboi rtse nas ryo.
 dpung thsogs dragpoi dar skad 'ururu
 dge bcu 'adzompai smon bya thiriri
 dar rgyas skyidpai glu len gyururu
 yulla ryang chags sala 'adurdu mtho
 chos rgyal pho brang rab brtan la rtse dang
 de sog's 'adzam gling yongsla dbang bsgyurpai
 'ajigsmad sengges btegsapai khri stengdu
 Nya khri btsanpo zhes byai sa bdag byung
 mkhyenpa rab rdzogs 'ajampai dbyangs dang
 mthsungs
 mkha mnyam sa skyong thugs rje chenpo 'adra
 thub bstan skyongba rgyangbai bdagpo bzhin
 chos rgyal chenpo sengge rnam rgyalgyi

Translation.

The rain which is of great advantage to all beings, makes *silili*
 And the different kinds of fruit (harvest) ripen, pleasing in their own beauty,
 The great and melodious drum of heaven is beaten in the zenith,
 And shakes [the air] from the zenith of the famous and glorious mountain.
 The strong voice of the noble company [of gods] makes 'ururu,
 The prayers in which the ten virtues are gathered, sound *thiriri*.
 The song of the spreading happiness sounds *gyururu*.
 In the land pleasure grows, and high joy on the earth.
 The palaces of the kings of faith, **Rab-brtan lhartse**,
 And the others, were raised by the fearless lion who
 Really is the wielder of might in Jambudvīpa.
 On the throne
 Originated a lord of the earth, called **Nya-khri-btsanpo**.
 He is like the perfectly wise 'aTani-dbyangs. (*Mañjushosa*).
 He is like the protector of heaven and earth, the great Merciful (*sPyan-ras-zyigs*; *Avalokitesvara*).
 He is like the protector of the doctrine of Buddha, the Lord of mysticism (*Phyag-rdor*, *Vajrapāṇi*).
 May the life-time of the great king of faith, **Sengge-rnam-rgyal**,

sku tshé brtancing dbu rmog mthoba dang
chab srid bcassu rtagtu rgyas gyur cig
sgrolmai rnam sprul bskal bzang rgyalmo bzhugs

sras dang longs spyod chab srid rgyaspar shog
yzugs mdzes spyān legs lhai sraspo nono rgyal
sras

bDe ldan rnam rgyal sras Indra Boti rnam rgyal
stod

lhayī srasmo ycesma Nor 'adzin rgyalmo bzhugs

yab yum drungdu chosla dgābar shog

chos blon chenpos dgu dgā mangpo dgā.

Remain firm, and his helmet remain high !

And may also his political power spread !

There resides also queen bSkal-bzang, the incarnation of the (white) Tārā.

May her children and abundance increase !

Praise to the princes of beautiful shape and good faces,

bDe-ldan-rnam-rgyal, and Indra Boti-rnam-rgyal !

There resides also the daughter of the gods, the beloved princess **Nor-'adzin**.

May [she] rejoice in the religion before father and mother !

The great ministers of faith are enjoying ninefold happiness.

Notes.

smon bya; the word *bya* is probably related to *byedpa*, and the meaning of the construction would be 'doing prayer,' pray.

'*adurdu*, the exact meaning of this word I find it impossible to ascertain. In my translation I have considered it parallel to *nyangs-chags*.

Rab-brtan-lha-rtse is the vernacular name of the castle at Basgo.

Indra-Boti-rnam-rgyal; according to the *rGyal-rabs*, the name of the second son is Indra-Bhodhi-rnam-rgyal. The name testifies to Sengge-rnam-rgyal's inclinations to Hinduism, which are also mentioned in the *rGyal-rabs*. The last lines are somewhat injured and cannot be read with absolute certainty.

(c) The Ancient Ruined Monastery of Basgo.

Outside the present village of Basgo, a little to the east of it, on the plain between Basgo and Nyemo, there are the ruins of an ancient monastery which is generally known as **Sogpoi mGonpa, the Mongol Monastery**. It is locally believed to have been erected by the Mongols during the siege, c. 1646-47, but at Basgo and Nyemo almost everything ancient, of which there is no certain record, is nowadays thought to be connected with the Mongols, who are also believed to be the erectors of many a ruined *mchod-rtēn*. In most cases, however, it is quite improbable that the Mongols had anything to do with them.

As regards the Monastery, it is quite probable that it existed as such at the date of the Mongol War and was destroyed during that war. This supposition is strongly supported by the fact that there are *mani-walls* along the two paths which branch off from the main road and lead to the ruin, because *mani-walls* were hardly built before 1600 in Ladākḥ, as a study of the votive tablets on them proves; and it is not likely that *mani-walls* would be constructed on a road to a ruined building which had lost its significance. These considerations go to show that these two particular *mani-walls* were constructed between 1600 and 1646.

The Monastery consists of a large hall, twelve paces square. On the right and left of the East side are two smaller rooms which project out from the east wall, and probably formed the ends of a gallery that once connected them. The walls are still in existence, but as the roof has long fallen, rain has destroyed the paintings with which they were once decorated. The only traces of paintings now existing are the raised medallions, the forms of which are still quite distinct. In the plate attached the arrangement of those on the West (fig. 1) and of the North and South walls (fig. 2) are shown. The East wall had none, but contains the door. Their existence creates the presumption that the Monastery was built by Kashmīrī monks.

Monasteries with raised medallions on the walls are very rare, and, as far as I know, only in a single instance, that of the **Chigtan Monastery**, are the original paintings on the medallions, or at least traces of them, still preserved, a fact which makes the Chigtan Monastery to be of the greatest importance with regard to the ancient Kashmiri form of Buddhism in Ladákh. A Muhammadan *mullah* is said to have covered the paintings there with mortar, and when I visited the place, the mortar was still on them. But possibly the mortar may prove to have been the means of their preservation, for I can quite imagine that, by working carefully over them with a brush, these ancient pictures, overlaid and hidden probably in the eighteenth century A. D., can be brought to light again.

There are some ancient ruined *mchod-rten* at Basgo, which probably go back to the first days of this monastery, say, between 900 and 1000 A. D. Most of these are to be found in or near the gorge, West of the village, on the road to Saspola. Several of them take the form of a staircase-pyramid, with a ground-plan of star-shape. They thus remind one of the ancient ruined *mchod-rten* at Alchi.

(d) The Ruined Nunnery at Nyemo.

On a rock above the Eastern part of the village of **Nyemo**, near the gorge leading up to the plain between Nyemo and Phyang, are the ruins of ancient buildings, which are popularly known as **Jomoi-mgonpa**, the Nunnery. There is but little beyond the foundations to be seen of it now, and, besides potsherds of the ordinary sort, there is nothing on the spot to remind one of its ancient occupants.

South of Nyemo, on the right bank of the river, there are ruins of a huge castle built in cyclopean style, of the origin of which even local tradition knows nothing; and not very far from this castle, which is called **Chung-mkhar**, in a little enclosure of rough walls, is a stone image of rather rude make and very ancient appearance. This is generally known as the **Aphyi-Tomo-rDorje** (Grandmother Nun rDorje), and is apparently believed to represent one of the ancient abbesses of Nyemo. The figure wears a crown of five points on her head, and carries a crozier in her right hand (see fig. 7). Such croziers are not used nowadays, so I am told. On her face is a black spot which is due to the hot butter which is smeared over it at times; for the cult of this old image has not yet ceased, and on certain occasions, especially on **New Year's Day**, the whole village assembles, and drums and clarionets are played before the image for several hours. For the rest of the year, the image is in the care of a peasant, called the **Chung-mkharpa**, who is the owner of the ground near the castle.

By the name of the ancient abbess, said to be thus represented, one is reminded of the famous **rDorj-ephagmo**, **Vajravarāhani**, who is nowadays continuously incarnated in the abbesses of the **Samding Monastery** on the **Yamdok Lake**. But it is practically impossible to decide now, whether in the name of the image at Nyemo the ancient name of the abbesses of Nyemo has been preserved for us through popular tradition, or whether the name merely represents the fame of the abbesses of Samding.

Between the ruins of the Monastery and the Castle are several ancient *mchod-rten* and traces of rows of *mchod-rten*, which seem to have contained 108 *mchod-rten* each. These rows are the predecessors of *mani-walls*. Popular tradition assigns these relics of a former age to the Mongols, and says that the Mongols constructed all of them during their siege of Basgo. This is, however, quite improbable, because after and during the reign of **Sengge-rnam-rgyal** (c. 1590—1620), the building of *mani-walls* became a popular custom, and entirely superseded the former rows of 108 small *mchod-rten*. This obliges us to date all rows of *mchod-rten* before 1600, and especially those rows at Nyemo, which are in a particularly dilapidated condition and probably several centuries older than the *mani-walls*. Historical information about the Nunnery is hardly likely to ever become available, but the stone-image of the abbess appears to belong to 10th or 11th century A. D.

REMAINS AT ALCHI & BASGO.

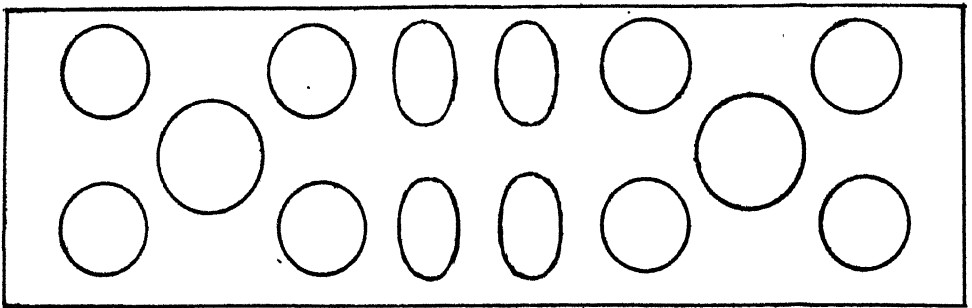


Fig. 1

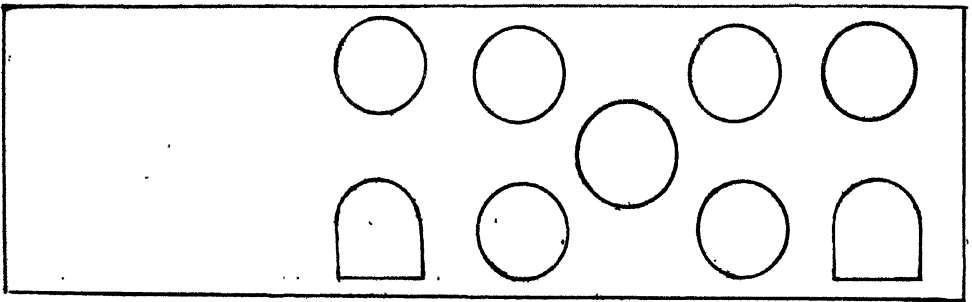


Fig. 2

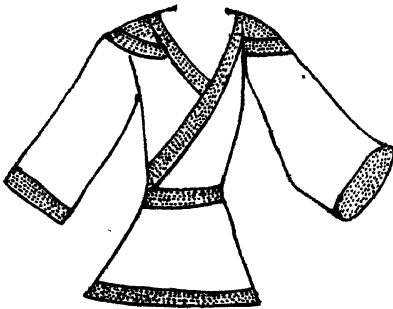


Fig. 3.



Fig. 7

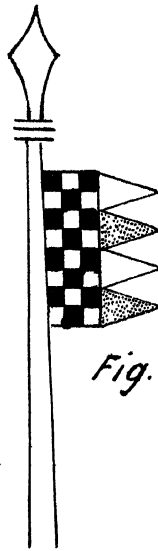


Fig. 4



Fig. 5

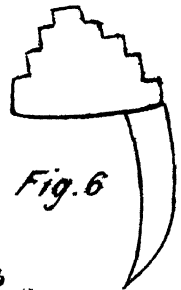


Fig. 6

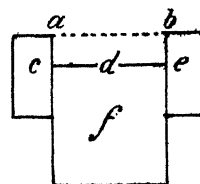


Fig. 8.

Description of the Plate.

Fig. 1. Western wall of the ruined monastery at Basgo, showing arrangement of medallions.

Fig. 2. Southern wall of the ruined monastery at Basgo, showing arrangement of medallions.

Fig. 3. Dress from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi. Dress white, the spotted parts red.

Fig. 4. Flag from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi; black, white, and red.

Figs. 5 and 6. Hats from the historical pictures in the ruined monastery at Alchi.

Fig. 7. Rough sketch of the sculpture of the abbess at Nyemo.

Fig. 8. Ground plan of the ruined monastery at Basgo; *f*, central hall; *c*, *e*, side halls; *d*, door; between *a* and *b* was probably a wooden gallery.

IV. — INSCRIPTIONS AT DARU.

The village of **Daru** is situated a little above the trade road on the large plain, which extends between the villages of Nyemo and Phyang. It is of little importance and hardly ever visited by travellers. It has, however, a ruined castle, which is said to have been built by the ministers (*bkā-blon*) of Daru, who were servants of the kings of Leh.

(a) Inscription of King Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal.

Not very far from the trade road, South-West of the village, there is a boulder, about nine or ten feet high, which has two walls abutting on its Eastern face, and having the appearance of being the remains of a hall. The face of the boulder, which formed one side of the hall, has on it five or six sculptures, among which the figure of **Vajrapāṇi** is the most prominent. Besides the sculptures, there are several inscriptions on the boulder in various stages of legibility and possibly of different times; those on the right side being carelessly executed and having the most modern appearance. One of the clearest of all the words is the name of the king, which has still the traces of its original red colour.

The present writer also found a number of inscribed fragments of stone-tablets lying about the boulder, which he took to Leh and deposited at the Moravian Mission. But in spite of much time spent over them, it was found impossible to fit any two together, and they seem to belong to several different tablets. There may be more fragments under ground, which might be brought to light by the spade. On one of the fragments the syllables *rGyalmo-rTan* Queen *rTan* could be read. Had the historiographers of Western Tibet thought it worth while to mention the names of the various queens of the country, such fragments would have a great historical value.

Of the inscription on the rock, which is mostly in **dBu-can Characters**, I was able to make out the following portion:—

Tibetan Text.

On the left side.

. cam, cam palun

lha chen gun dgā rnam rgyal.

lag ygo (or mgo) 'ajam yangs skyab khomd (?) shi (?)

Under central figure.

blon chen phyag rdor jo, log bas (?)

To the right of central figure.

phyagna rdorje
blo bzang don 'agrubo
dkon mchog bkris dang . . .

To the right of the preceding.

. . . e zhen
. . . . grubpa
bkris.

Notes on the Tibetan Text.

It is almost impossible to give a translation of the inscription; because those parts which can be read with some amount of certainty, consist only of names, and it is in several cases doubtful whether they belong to human beings or to mythological conceptions.

cam is probably a defective writing of the word *lcam*, spouse. The first name would be that of a queen: spouse (or queen), Palun (perhaps Paluna). She is not mentioned in the *rGyal-rabs*, but, as already stated, the names of only a few queens are given in that work.

Lha chen gun (kun) dgā rnam rgyal is doubtless the name of a real king (see below); *gun*, instead of *kun*, corresponds to the actual dialectical pronunciation of the word.

'*ajam yangs*, is doubtless the word '*ajam dbyangs* (Mañjughosha); but, as the 'other words in the line are not clear, we do not know, whether it is meant as a name of the mythological or a real person.

skyab [s], help, in the same line, may be part of a personal name; but it may also be part of a prayer to '*aJam dbyangs*.

About the other words in this line, there is not much certainty. *Laq* means 'hand,' but the connection is not clear.

blon chen phyag rdor j'o; *blon chen* means 'great minister'; *phyag rdor* is Vajrapāṇi; *jo* means 'lord.' If the inscription refers to the mythological being, the title 'great minister' remains strange. There may have been a real minister of such name.

phyagna rdorje is once more the Tibetan name of Vajrapāṇi. This name in its Sanskrit and Tibetan forms is carved also on the west side of the rock several times.

blo bzang don grub is either the name of an ordinary person, or that of the third disciple of *Tsong-khapa*, who lived about the year 1500 A. D. One of the sculptures may thus refer to him. If that could be proved, we should have to date this part of the sculptures and inscriptions at any rate after 1500 A. D.

dkon mchog bkraśhis (bkris) may be the name of a locally famous lama or a state-official.

e zhen is too incomplete to suggest any translation.

grubpa, fulfiller, is probably the second part of the name of a lama.

bkris (bkraśhis), happiness, may also be the second part of the name of a lama or other person.

Identification of king Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal.

This name, which can be read with the greatest certainty on the boulder at Daru, cannot be found in the *rGyal-rabs* of Ladāk. Does this mean that he was a Tibetan king of a line different to that of the kings of Leh, although bearing their dynastic name?

If the ministers (*bka blon*) of Daru are the descendants of some old line of local kings or chiefs; that line cannot have remained independent long after the arrival of Central Tibetan Dynasty, about 1000 A. D. Also it is not likely that any chiefs of Daru could be in possession of the same dynastic name as the kings of Leh. So *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* is not

likely to have been a local Daru chief, and he cannot have been one of the Purig chiefs, because their dynastic names were quite different. Nor can he have been a Balti chief, because the Baltis were Musalmans at the time that they overran Ladākh. And, lastly, there is no history of the arrival of any Central Tibetan kings after 1000 A. D.

These considerations preclude any identification of this king outside the line of Leh, and there is, moreover, much to show that *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* must belong to that line. The names of the Tibetan kings generally consist of two parts: the dynastic name, and the proper name. The dynastic name of the ancient line of the kings of Lhasa was *bTsan* or *bTsanpo*, and is found in many of their names, *e. g.*, *Nya-khri-btsanpo*, *Srong-btsan-sgam-po*. The dynastic name of the first dynasty of the kings of Leh was *Lha-chen*, and is found in most of their names, *e. g.*, *Lha-chen-dpalgyi-mgon*, *Lha-chen-naglug*. Whenever it does not occur, as in the name *bKrahis-mgon*, it may be presumed that the king was not the eldest but a younger son of his predecessor. As the second dynasty of the kings of Leh was descended directly from the first, the name *Lha-chen* was added to many of their names at their pleasure. The dynastic name of this second dynasty was *rnam-rgyal*, and it is found at the end of every one of their known names. This dynasty is particularly well known, not only from the chronicle *rGyal-rabs*, but also from its many inscriptions. Such a name, therefore, as *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* would be that of a king of the second dynasty, but it is curious that the name *kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* does not occur in the chronicle, although even after the second dynasty had been robbed of its power by the Dogras, the syllables *kundgā* occur as part of a very long royal name in *'aJigsméd-(etc)-rnam-rgyal*.

If, then, *Kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* is to be held to have been one of the kings of Leh, and cannot be found among the list of kings of the second dynasty, it remains to be seen if he can be placed among the kings of the first dynasty. There is a passage in the *rGyal-rabs*, hitherto held to be doubtful, which may enable us to so place him. Karl Marx's MS. A. of the *rGyal-rabs* puts king *Lha-chen-jo-dpal* directly after king *bKrahis-mgon*, but Marx notes that Schlagintweit's text of the *rGyal-rabs* (which is quite in accordance with his own MS. A., at any rate in those early parts) places a king, *Lha-rgyal*, between them.

Lha-rgyal, taken by itself, is a strange form, and suggests the omission of something between *lha* and *rgyal*. My explanation of the circumstances is as follows:—The ancient MS. from which both Karl Marx's MS. A. and Schlagintweit's original MS. were copied had some fault in the place where some such name as *Lha-chen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal* originally stood. Several things may have happened to create the omission; *e. g.*, the right bottom corner of a page may have been torn off in such a way that only *Lha* remained of the first part of the name, the last syllable *rgyal* being preserved on the left top corner of the next page. If a European scholar were to find a MS. in such a condition, he would feel it to be an obligation to inform his readers of the fact. It is different with a Tibetan. He believes he has done wonders if he copies all he can make out. Usually he simply leaves out a doubtful passage altogether, and goes on as if nothing were missing. These habits will account for the difference between Schlagintweit's and Marx's MSS.

The presence of the dynastic name of the second dynasty in the names of this king creates a difficulty; but it may be pointed out here that the name *rnam-rgyal* was not new when it was made a dynastical name in c. 1500 A. D., but can be found in central Tibetan names about the year 1000 and perhaps earlier.

If, therefore, this theory of the identity of *Lha-chen-kun-dga-rnam-rgyal* with the *Lha-rgyal* of Schlagintweit's MS. of the *rGyal-rabs* be correct, we have to date this king c. 1250—1275 A. D., which date would very well account for the ancient character of this part of the inscription.

(b) A Passage from a Votive Tablet of King bDeldan and Prince
(or King) bDe-legs.

On one of the *mañi*-walls, a little below Daru, towards Phyang is to be found a votive tablet containing the name of Prince bDe-legs, beside that of his father bDe-ldan, in the form which was usual, while bDe-legs was the heir-apparent. I have not yet found any votive tablets containing the name of bDe-legs as king, but on a tablet at Domkhar can be read the name of bDe-legs alone, with the title *rgyal-sras*, prince. This is remarkable because votive tablets of bDe-leg's father and son (Nyima-rnam-rgyal) are not at all rare. The easiest explanation of the omission of the reign of bDe-legs from votive tablets is that the Lamas forbade the people to mention this king on them, and destroyed all those bearing his name which were in existence, because after the battle of Basgo he was obliged to become a Musalmân. That *mañi*-walls were constructed during his reign, we know from a votive tablet at Nyurla (sNyungla). On this tablet instead of the name of a king, that of a high Lama, Mi-pham-mgon, is given who is styled rGyal-thsabs or Viceroy. After the battle of Basgo, the great Lama Mi-pham-mgon, for whose name *rGyal-rabs* wrongly inserts that of Mi-pham-dbangpo,⁷ was sent to Ladâkh by the supreme government of Lhasa, to conduct the peace negotiations, and the authority of bDe-legs was so much shaken that the great Lama took the place of the king in the minds of the people.

Text.	Translation.
(In dBucan Characters.)	
. . . . lha chen bde ldan rnam rgyal bde legs rnam rgyal, dbu rmog mtho zhing chab srid rgyaspar shog . . . . .	. . . . the great gods, bDe-ldan-rnam- rgyal [and] bDe-legs-rnam-rgyal, their helmets being high, may their reign (or progeny) spread!

Note.

The reason why the inscription was not copied in full was want of time and the fact that some parts of it were in such bad condition that the reading proceeded very slowly. I may here mention that another tablet containing the names of both these kings was discovered at Phe, on the Indus, below Daru.

(c) Sanskrit-Tibetan Votive Inscription by the Minister
Thse-dbang-dongrub, c. 1800 A. D.

(On Stone.)

Along the wall of the present government garden at Daru there is a *mañi*-wall, which is furnished with two large votive tablets. Although both the wall and the tablets are only about 100 years old, the latter are not in particularly good preservation. The state of preservation of an inscription depends entirely on the kind of stone selected, and the softer the stone the shorter the time the inscription lasts. The Tibetan part of the inscription was originally copied in full, but the paper containing the latter portion of the inscription has unfortunately been lost,⁸ and I can now offer only the first part of the Tibetan text.

⁷ *Mgon* and *dbangpo* are almost synonyms, which explains the fact that the name occurs in two forms.

⁸ Together with the copy of the Alchi Bridge Inscription and others.

Text.

(In dBucan Characters.)

Sanskrit.

Om namo(m?) B[h]agavate aparimita ayur
dznyāna subhanitsitastana tsoradzāya ; tathā-
gatāya ; arhate samyaksambuddhāya ; tadya-
thā ; om [punye punye] mahāpunye aparimita
punyer dznyāna sambharopatsite om sarvasam
samskāriparishudha dharmate gagana samu-
nagate subhava bishudhe (vishudhe ?) mahā-
naye parivariye svabhā !

Tibetan.

Mi dbang choskyi rgyalpoi phrinlas ysergyi
shing rta gyendu la drenpai 'akhorlopa bkā
mdzod thes dbang dongrubkyi sku thes
mdzadpa stobs

Translation.

(Of the Sanskrit by R. C. Dutt, C.I.E.)

Om, adoration to the Lord, the immeasurable,
the life of contemplation, the soul fixed on
holiness, the Tathāgata, the Arhat, the
awakened, the self-existent !

Om, to him of perfect holiness, of great holiness,
of immeasurable holiness, of unmeasured
righteous knowledge, of radiant soul !

Om, to him who has done all sacraments, to him
of pure religion whose way is high as the
heavens, to the well purified, to the great
teacher and traveller in the righteous path, —
Glory !

(Of the Tibetan.)

When the great minister, ~~Thse dbang dongrub~~,
the upwards driving coachman of the golden
carriage of the works of the king of faith, the
powerful over men died, power

Notes.

La drenpa, an idiom meaning about 'driving upwards.'

bkā mdzod, literally 'treasure-house of words.' I translated it by 'minister,' but it may more properly mean 'wise man.'

sku thes mdzadpa, 'making his lifetime,' used in the sense of 'completing his lifetime.'

V. — THE ROCK INSCRIPTIONS AT SHEH.

There are three inscriptions at Sheh, one accompanied by various sculptures on the rock on which the castle is built, and the two others on the **Maitreya Rock**, a little below the village on the Indus, which is now popularly known as **Sman-bla**.

There are traces of several other inscriptions on the Maitreya Rock, in both Persian and Tibetan characters, which have been effaced, probably during some war. It is probable that when either the Balti or the Dogra armies marched up the Indus valley, they destroyed the Tibetan inscriptions, and carved others in Urdu or Persian on their place. If this happened, the Ladākhis would in turn destroy the new inscriptions, as soon as the hostile army had left the country. The two very ancient Tibetan inscriptions that have escaped destruction owe their escape to their positions on the rock. One is carved so high up that it cannot be reached unless special arrangements are made, and the other was hidden behind a masonry-wall so that it could not be read, until the wall was broken down by the missionaries in January, 1906. Indeed, I am told that some lines have not even yet come to light.

Nos. I. and III. of the legible inscriptions have been copied by bLo-bzang-thar-rnyed, meteorological observer at Leh ; No. II. by bDechen-bZodpa.

INSCRIPTION No. I.

Position: High up on the Maitreya Rock.

Text.

idkon mehog ysumla phyag 'athsal dang, nga
 (da?) skyabs su ysolte, rgyalpo chenpo, tsan po
 lha sraskyi sku yondu mngārisikyi' abangsla
 rigste, phyogs bcui semscan thamscadkyi
 bsodnamssu bsodsnas, 'aphagspa byams dpal,
 khor tang bcaspai sku yzugs
 . . . pa mthar brtan
 bgyis.

Translation.

I greet the three highest beings (Buddhist Trinity)
 and ask [them to come] to my help. Making
 it as an offering of the great king, the **Tsanpo**,
 the son of the gods, and for [the benefit of] the
 subjects of **mNgaris**, and for the benefit of all
 the beings of the ten regions, the images of the
 august **Byams dpal**-(Maitreya) with his
 attendants *stūpa* made.

Notes on the Tibetan Text.

ysolte; the style of the writing used for this word reminds us of the **Endere Inscriptions** in Turkestan, where we find the final consonant of a syllable written not *after*, but *below*, the preceding one. In this case the *l* is written not after, but below the *s*.

mngārisi, instead of later **mNgāris**. This is the ancient name of **Western Tibet**, as is proved by the *rGyal-rabs*, though in more modern times it has been restricted to the most Eastern part of that country.

rigs is the classical *sgrigspa*, arrange, &c. See *Ladakhi Grammar*, Law of Sound, No. 3.

bsodsnas; I take this word to be another instance of placing the second consonant under the first. Otherwise the word would have to be read *bsngosnas*, which would give it the sense of 'resolve to go the way of Nirvana,' according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Dictionary*.

byams-dpal, the glorious Maitreya. This shows that the inscription refers to the figure of Maitreya with his attendants carved along with it on the rock, giving the same date both for the inscription and its attendant sculptures.

mthar-riten. I am told that this refers to a particular kind of *stūpa*.

INSCRIPTION No. II.

Position: Behind the masonry-wall at the same site.

Text.

dkon mehog ysum dang, 'ajigrtengyi mgonpo
 kunla skyabssu ysolnas, khyaba phagspa
 byamspa 'akhor dang bcaspai sku yzugs khra
 svalpa mthāi bardu choskyi 'akhorlo dampa
 myurdu bslobpar skulla ysoldeing, dus mehod-
 kyi rkyen sbyardpala sogspai bsodnams dang,
 'aphagspa rnamskyi byin rlabs kyis, btsanpo
 lha sras ydung rabs dang phyogs bcui semscan
 phalpo che thamscad, bdeskyid phun-
 sum thsogs shing, blanamepai sangsrgyassu
 myurdu grubpar stonte 'aphagspai sku yzugs
 rdo 'aburdu bgyispao, yysakyi dgebai bshes
 nyen rnamskyis kyang thson ysal bur bgyiba
 dang brtanpar bgyio.

Translation.

Asking the three highest beings (Buddhist Trinity) and all the lords of the world [to come to my] help, the image of the august **Maitreya** with [his] attendants [was made]. Praying that the glorious (bright shining) one may quickly teach and admonish the holy wheel of religion until the ends (of the earth), and that there may be the merit of the confirmed effect and such like of the periodical sacrifices; and through the blessing of the exalted ones, may the *btsanpo*, the son of the gods and (his) family, and the ordinary as well as the great beings of the ten quarters remain in perfect blessing, and be taught to attain soon to the very highest Buddhahood. [For all this] the image of the exalted one was made of stone. All the friends of the virtue of the right hand will [from time to time] renew the colour (make clear colour) [of the image] and protect it (make it safe).

Philological Notes.

khyaba-'aphagspa, I am told that this is a locally well-known title of **Maitreya**; but what *khyaba* means I have been unable to discover.

khra svalpa (or *ysalpa*), I am told that this expression means 'very bright, shining.'

sbyardpa, perfect stem of the infinitive *sbyor*[*d*]pa.

rdo 'aburdu, used in the sense of 'according to stone,' 'of stone.'

Epigraphical Notes.

Though the characters of this inscription are of the ordinary dBu-can type, there are a few peculiarities in them, which point to its antiquity.

(a) The letter *ng* has a stroke attached to the right end of its lower line, which makes it look almost like a dBu-can *p*. This peculiarity has not yet been observed at **Endere** (Stein Collection), nor anywhere else.

(b) The *i* sign has not always the position of the **Dēvanāgarī** short *i*, but often that of the long *i*, as is also the case in the **Endere MSS.**, and many other ancient inscriptions.

(c) The second or final consonant of the syllable is written below the first consonant. Of this we have one certain and one probable case in the previous inscription. This peculiarity is also found at **Endere** and in the **ancient Balti Inscriptions**.

A Comparison of the **Ladākhī** and the **Endere Inscriptions**.

It will be useful here to review the peculiarities of the **Endere relics**, as they are the oldest datable specimens of Tibetan orthography, and to compare the most ancient West Tibetan Inscriptions with them. The question is a very important one, because on it the possibility of dating the Tibetan Inscriptions depends.

The peculiarities of the **Endere MSS.** and **Sgraffiti** (8th century) are the following : —

- (a) The *i* sign takes the shape of the **Dēvanāgarī** long and short *i* interchangeable.
- (b) In several cases the final consonant of the syllable is written below the first consonant.
- (c) The masculine definite article is in most cases *phā* and *pho*, instead of modern *pa* and *po*.
- (d) In many cases the ordinary *c* and *ts* are replaced by *ch* and *ths*; and both *ch* and *ths* have *γ*, *d*, or *b* prefixes attached to them, whilst in the classical orthography they are furnished only with *a* and *m* prefixes.
- (e) When *m* comes before *i* or *e*, a *y* intervenes.
- (f) Words ending in *r*, *l*, or *n* are furnished with a *d* suffix, called *drag*.

A comparison of the ancient **Ladākhī** inscriptions with those of **Endere** discloses the fact, that several of them exhibit some of the peculiarities of the **Endere** epigraphy, but not all. This leads to the supposition that the six characteristics of **Endere** orthography were not dropped all at once, but one by one, and Dr. L. D. Barnett has observed that, according to the **Endere** relics, the *drag* was even then on the point of disappearing (8th century A. D.).

In **Ladākh**, the peculiarities of the **Endere** epigraphy are exhibited in the following inscriptions :—

- (a) Interchange of long and short *i* is found in Inscriptions at **Sheh**; at **Alchi-mkhar-gog** (but only in the oldest); and at **Sadpor** (**Baltistān**).

(b) Subscription of the final consonant is found in the inscriptions at Sheh; in one at Khalatse (at the bridge); and at Sadpor.

(c) The masculine article *pha*, *pho* has so far only been discovered at an ancient gold-mine near Nyurla, where a personal name is spelt *danarnapha* (or perhaps *tanarnapha*).

(d) *ch* and *ths* for *c* and *ts* are found in the Balu-mkhar Inscriptions.

(e) *y* intervening between *i* or *e* and initial *m* is found in the Sheh Inscriptions (see Inscription No. III., below); in the Alchi-mkhar-gog Inscriptions (the oldest); in those at Sadpor; at Khalatse (at the bridge); and at Balu-mkhar.

(f) The suffix *drag* is found in the Sheh Inscriptions.

The latest peculiarity of the ancient orthography to disappear would appear to be the intervention of *y* between an initial *m* and *i* or *e*, as this is exhibited in *all* the ancient inscriptions; and the latest of them which can be dated with some amount of probability, is the Khalatse Bridge Inscription (probable date 1150 A. D.). Peculiarities which disappeared much earlier are certainly the masculine articles *pha*, *pho* and the suffix *drag*.

The Sheh Inscriptions exhibit the interchange of long and short *i*, the subscription of the final consonant, the intervening *y*, and the suffix *drag*.

This last point is of great importance, as the use of the *drag* was supposed to be on the decline at Endere. I propose, therefore, to put their date between 900 and 1000 A. D.

The King of the Inscriptions.

Both the Maitreya Rock Inscriptions are plainly by the same king, and both refer to the same subject, the carving of the image of Maitreya. The personal name of the king is not given, but this omission seems to have been customary at that time, as the Khalatse Inscription also speaks simply of "the great king." We find, however, two dynastic names, in the Maitreya Rock Inscription, the name *bTsanpo* and *Lhayi-sras*. The former is the dynastic name of the Central Tibetan Dynasty, from which the Western Tibetan kings descended, and the latter, which means 'son of the gods,' not only reminds us of *Lha-chen*, 'great god,' the dynastic name of the earliest Western Tibetan kings, but is also used interchangeably with *Lha-chen* by the later kings. We may thus, with some confidence, attribute these inscriptions to one of the kings of the *bTsan-po-Lha-chen* line of Central Tibet and not to local chiefs. The first of this line of kings was *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon*, the conqueror of Western Tibet, who reigned, according to Grünwedel's *Chronology*, c. 975—1000 A. D., or, according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Chronology*, 20—30 years earlier, and I believe that it was under him that both sculptures and inscription were set up. Votive offerings of this nature were mostly made by the kings, not so much for their own spiritual benefit as for that of their parents, as we learn from the *rGyal-rabs*, and my belief is that the king caused the figures and inscription on the Maitreya Rock to be set up for the spiritual welfare of his father, who may have died when he was in Western Tibet. This supposition at once explains the use of the word *bTsanpo*, as *Nyima-mgon's* father was the last of the *bTsanpos* in the family, and the word *bsan* was actually part of his name, *Lde-dpal-'akhor-btsan*. It is of some interest that, in the Inscription, the wish is expressed that the sculpture may be a means of blessing to the people of Western Tibet. Apparently, the king wished to please his new subjects with it.

The result of this examination of the Inscriptions is that they must be most probably dated c. 950—1000 A. D. and must be assumed to be by *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon*, the conqueror of Western Tibet, for the spiritual benefit, in the first place, of his father *Lde-dpal-'akhor-btsan*, and secondly, for that of his new subjects. In any case, the probability is that they are earlier, and not later, than 1000 A. D., and refer to some Central Tibetan king. At the same time it is difficult to see why any king earlier than *Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon* should have taken an interest in the village of Sheh, as it apparently became the first capital of Western Tibet after its conquest by him.



Ancient stone figure at Changspa, Leh.

Photo: Dr. F. E. Shawe.



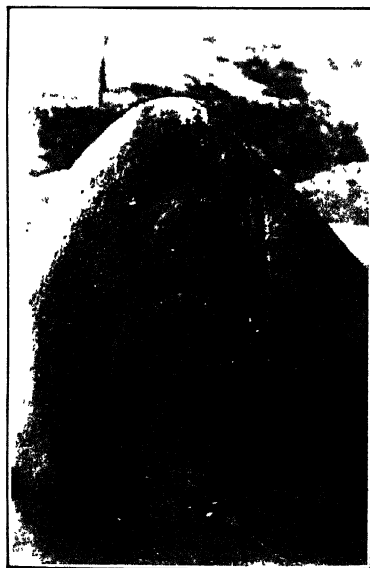
Image of Maitreya in the garden of the
Moravian Knitting School, Leh.

Photo: P. Bernard, Lieutenant, French Army.



Ancient stone figures on the Yarkandi
Road, Leh.

Photo: Dr. F. E. Shawe.



Ancient stone figure by the brook,
Changspa, Leh

Dr. F. E. Shawe.

INSCRIPTION No. III.

This inscription is carved high up on the rock below the castle of Sheh, above an image of Maitreya, and can only be read with the greatest difficulty, even with the help of a field glass. It is impossible nowadays to get close to it. The following is bLo-bzang-Thar-nyed's reading of it:—

Tibetan Text.

dkon mchog ysumla bstaste, phyog cu gyal khangs myo zanggi bter chos khal ga phulbai byang lha byamsbai nyu ku rdo 'abar ('abur?) gi mchodpa dang ku sdob; kho chengyi zhir mayig tsang cing byorbar byas skyong dang tsangyis (or: skyongba tsangyis) en skarba

Notes.

A translation of this is impossible, as it is evident that it has not only become more weathered than the others, but is also written with a more careless orthography. From the few words, which can be made out, it looks very much as if it dated from about the same time and referred to a similar object.

dkon mchog, &c. The first line means 'looking at the three highest beings' (Buddhist Trinity) *phyog[s b]cu*, the ten regions.

byamsbai (or *pai*), of Maitreya.

rdo 'aburgyi mchodpa, 'offering of a stone statue, image.'

mayig tsancing, probably 'the eye getting clear'; *myig* instead of *mig* is a case of the ancient orthography.

skyongba tsangyis, 'by the protector, by the Tsanpo.' Thus, the king at Sheh would appear to call himself Tsanpo, as a descendant of the famous Tsanpos of Tibet. The term may perhaps, however, signify a name of Phyag-rdor, similar to the form Thub-bstan-skyongba.

APPENDIX.

The Age of the Buddhist Stone Images of Ladākh.

All the stone images of Ladākh are in relief. They are found on the living rock as well as on raised slabs of stone, and are in varying states of preservation. The following have come to my knowledge:—

(a) *Outside Leh*. — The images at Dras; the famous Chamba (Byamspa) at Mulbe; the medallion at Sadpor in Baltistān; the rGyalba-rigs-Ingā at Spadum in Zangskar; the images at Kartse in Purig; a stone with sculptures at Tingmogang; a similar stone at Saspola; several reliefs on the living rock at Spitug; the stone abbess at Nyemo; the Vajrapāṇi at Daru; the Sman-bla and figures near the castle at Sheh; the Maitreyas at Igu, with ancient frescoes close to them.

(b) I am told by Dr. F. E. Shawe, who made a collection of photographs, that in Leh and its environs there are a great number of them. Of these the best known are:—four stones with images on the Yarkandi road; one stone with several sculptures at Changspa; three stones with single figures about the brook near Changspa, and another in the village; one figure at Gonpa, above Leh; an inscribed figure in the garden of the present Moravian Knitting School; one, painted red, near the palace of Leh, close to one of the former city gates; one on the plain, south of Leh, in a *maṇi*-wall among a large number of *mchod-rten*; one at Skara, below Leh; and one below king bDe-ldan-rnam-rgyal's *maṇi*-wall on the Sheh road. This last has figures on all four sides.

With regard to the date of these figures we can safely say that they are never made nowadays, and, according to local tradition, it is a long time since they were made, a fact which does not hinder the people from still worshipping some of them. As a few of them have inscriptions, it is possible to assign approximate dates to them. The figures thus made dateable are the following:—The Maitreyas at Sheh, c. 950—1000 A. D., as shown above; the Sadpor reliefs (pictures and inscriptions, *vide* Miss Jane E. Duncan's *A Summer Ride through Western Tibet*), c. 1000 A. D.

from the orthography employed; the Dras figures, with inscriptions in Kashmir *śāraḍa* characters, most probably of the Kashmir Buddhist emigration to Ladākḥ, which was at its height 900—1100 A. D.; the Vajrapāṇi at Daru, c. 1250 A. D. (or 20—30 years earlier according to Sarat Ch. Das' *Chronology*); the figures at Spadum in Zangskar of the time of the Mons, before the Tibetan conquest, which took place c. 950—1000 A. D.; the figure in the garden of the Mission Knitting School at Leh, c. 1000 A. D., from the accompanying inscription. On the whole, although one of the dates is as far forward as far as the thirteenth century, I feel much inclined to believe that the year 1000 A. D. should be taken as roughly the date of these images.

I would draw attention to the striking similarity which many of these sculptures have to the ancient **Buddhist images at Gilgit**, one of which is reproduced in Biddulph's *The Tribes of the Hindoo Kush*. And although the art was continued for some time under the rule of the Tibetan kings of Leh, I feel much inclined to believe that it is Pre-Tibetan, and probably Dard in origin. At any rate it is Indian.

The inscription on the Maitreya at the Knitting School, Leh, runs thus:—

Text.	Translation.
nga zharba	I, a blind one,
ma shii bardu rje	Until death
sam chodeching rkyan	May offer high thoughts and
bai bsodnamskyis	Through the adorning [religious] merit
grol bya sem	May (or will) be delivered, the soul

Notes.

rkyan is probably for *rgyan*.

Signs of age in the Inscription are: three inverted *i* signs; *ching* instead of *cing*; and the form of the *sh*, which reminds us of *zh*.

THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL) IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.

1654—1670.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from Vol. XXXV. p. 210.)

PARTING from them, my boy & I tooke Councell w^{ch} way to steere; My boy advized a back way, for that y^e people of that Contrey weere verry bad, and theires a Towne 12 Corse [*kōs*], w^{ch} is 6 English mile of; Theire we will goe & buy p^{vi}tions, w^{ch} we did, And after Travelled 17 days wthout touchinge at either towne or howse till we caime to y^e great Citty Guzzurratt. These Contreys [*Rajputana*] are not as others, but haue many Kings. Some haue not aboue 600 people feighting men vnder them, so^me 5000. I got safe to Guzzerratt, tho very weary of all my Travells. This was y^e first iunct money [*chungam*, custom, poll-tax] I paid, otherwise cald head money, soe much for a Man & doble as much for a horsse.

I lived in that Citty 17 days privatt in a brammonists [*brahman's*] howse, by reason my sarv^t told me I must live as his' sarv^t if I intended to travell safe in that Contrey, w^{ch} I did, for in those parts they are great Enemies to a Xpian.

They Mervelled to see a whiteman, never seing one before in that Contrey, Caused my Man, then My Maister, to say he bought me in the Bloches Contrey, & I was his slaue. Next morning, I rideing out to water wth my horsse, y^e people stareing on me, A Naagg [*nāik*], y^t

is a greatman, mett me, And askt me in his Lingua who I served. & followed me home to y^t howse I lodged at, being I had not the Lingua. My man, then Master, discorsing wth him, y^e Naagg demanded wth Lingua I could speake. He told him I was but a new sarv^t & could speake noe Lingua. Then, S^d y^e Naag, how doe y^u vnderstand him. He replied, by Signs. He was verry earnest to buy me, but my Man put him of, telling him I was his Brothers sarv^t. The cause of my staying soe longe amonge them was, Wee could not Travell, They being in warre one wth an other.

I had not scaped Sellinge but y^t my boy was trusty, w^{ch} is rare of a Cannarry [Kannarese], for y^t Contrey he was.

From Guzzerratt to Brampoore [Burhānpur] is 400 Leagues. I was 4 Months in goeing it. When we caime to Junkann [custom-house], I lighted of my horsse & gote on y^e Ox, w^{ch} carried y^e boy & things, & the boy mounted On my horsse as Maister Att seuerall villages, for there was noe Cittys on the way; forts there weere, but we went out of the way to misse them. In every 40 Leagues there was Junkanns [custom-house officers], who tooke head money. Wth much trouble wee past, My man haueinge y^e Lingua, but I not. And the people weere verry inquissitive what I was, being a white man, w^{ch} was rare in y^t Contrey. When we caime wthin 60 Leagues of Brampoore, my Man told me, this is y^e great Junkinn Towne called Halloe [Halabas, Allahabad].

When we caime wthin sight of the towne, beinge on the edge of a hill, S^d my sarv^t, Maister stay here, I will observe if we can miss the towne. I told him he knew it was daingerous to goe out of y^e roade way, but left it to his discretion. Mr, S^d he, I beleive yor money is almost gon. I s^d, by tow such Cotte [Bhūi, tu sach kahtā], Brother, thou speakest trewth. S^d he, after we had Consulted together (but I had y^t about me mysarv^t knew not of), we haue a way we may passe, but if not, y^u haue freinds at Brampoore, & y^u shall pawne me heere till y^u send releife. After we had refresht o^r selfs, my boy said, Haw'dow'ca'noun challa [Khadā kē nām, chālō], Lets goe in the naime of god. Am'ar'ra ser'vp'ra bout'bos'hey [Hamārā sir ūpar bahut bhōj hai], I haue, s^d my man, for he was gray wth age, A great Charge vppon my heade. Am'ar'ra, Jou'row char, be'te Amorra Zam man hey [Hamārā jōrū, chār bēṭē, hamārā zāmin hai], My wife & Children lie at stake for me to yor freinds if y^u get anie hurt. Hodah io'hey [Khadā ik hai], S^d he. Theirs but One god, Se'de'ra decking'ga' [Sīdhā rā dikhāṅgē], w^{ch} shall direct vs y^e right way. When we had past y^e towne Holloe [Allahabad] towards Brampoore [Burhānpur], we mett wth a Company of horssmen, w^{ch} had taken 24 Marchants, w^{ch} had past & not paid there Junkin money. S^d my man, these are Rogues; They haue laid wait both wayes, because they knew y^e Marchants would pass by y^e vpper way to save there Junkin money. Ou'ta' amora' bail asway [Uṭhō, hamārā bail aswār], Alight p^sently [at once] & get vppon y^e Ox. He mounted p^sently on y^e horse & rid towards them, And said to me, Ton asta asta pecha hey [Tum āhistē āhistē pichhē āō], com you Softly behinde. Comeinge to them, he knew one of the horssmen, who askt him from whence he caime. He S^d, I caime from Gusaratt, And I and my man are goeing for Brampoore to buy some swords and knives for such a Naag [nāik] in Guzuratt whose sarv^t I am. When I caime neare, S^d my Man, then Maister, to me, Get y^u a heade, this boy is a foole, & cald me naines, Telling his acquaintance of me was but small. S^d y^e Man, Kiss was ny marra [kis wāṣṭē nahīn mārā], Why doe you not beat y^e Rogue. S^d my Mr, Ka'poyng'e' as ham du'han'na o'mar'ra'ga [kyā pāūngā is ham dīwānā mārēgā], What shall I get by beating a foole. My man puld of his girdle & gaue it y^e horssman, w^{ch} pleased him well. Tam'cou a 'marra'sad ca'poss [tum kahō hamārā sāhib kē pās] w^{ch} is, When y^u se my Maister, (S^d he to y^e Marchants, who weere for Guzzerrat), ham is voc'cat dalgeer [ham is waqf dilgīr], I am at this tyme sad & Mellencolly, because he sent a sarv^t wth me I am forst to be a nurse to. The Marchants replied, & y^e Soldiers, Tom bar'ra sa'fect' adam me' hey'tom better ny gente Kiss wast to mor'ra pass Chocke'ra leta

[*tum barā safēd ādmī hai, tum behtiar nahīn jāntē; kis wāṣṭe tumhārā pās chokrā lētā*], yⁿ are an Antient gray man; methinks yⁿ should vnderstand better then bring a Child in yo^r Company. He tooke his leaue, I beinge got a full English mile before them. When my man caime vp full speed a head, he asked me laughinge, ham ho'pe' sad ne [*ham khūb sāhib nē?*], Am not I a good Maister. I told him, yes. S^d he, now its yo^r tyme to be Maister; I did this for yo^r saife deliverance vnder god. In 3 days afterwards we arrived at Brampoore [Burhānpur], Where I was in saifty out of all trobles. The Gouverner there is cald Dowd Caune [Dāūd Khān],⁹⁴ wth whome I had formerly beene In armes, This beinge in the Magulls Contrey. He treated me verry well, but was Jealous [suspicious that] I had runn away from y^e Magull, yet S^d nothing to me, for he knew I could not pass wthout his leaue, questioned me many things but I resolved him nothinge. Beinge there 6 days, weary when I caime but now well refresht, in that tyme caime the french Embassado^{rs}, who had beene att John a Badd [Jahānabād], y^e Magulls Court, But wth litle hono^r.⁹⁵

These 2 Embassado^{rs}, One from y^e french Kinge for his p^{ri}culer⁹⁶ to greet y^e Magull, One from him for y^e East India Company,⁹⁷ in ān 1668, when they Caime neare y^e Court, y^e Emperro^r had notis & Wee the English. They caime not in y^t state vsually y^e Englⁱ or Dutch come in, Soe y^e Emperro^r thought himsele vndervallewed, And sleighted them, Commanding them stay 2 Leagues from Court when they expected to come to rights. Besides the Embassado^r for the K[ing of] ffrence had Express order from his King to deliver his Letters to y^e Emperro^r's owne hand, w^{ch} was refused. However, the English had leaue to vizitt the f^r [French] Embassado^{rs} & did send them there tents & other nessarys they wanted. The Embassado^{rs}, Concluding y^e Emperro^r affronted them, they p^{ro}vide to goe back, w^{ch} the Emperro^r had notis of, & Commanded them to be brought back wth all there goods and attendance, Saying, did they thinke to goe out of his Contrey wthout Leave. The next night The Embassado^{rs} weer assalted in there tents, robb^d of all, 3 or 4 Sarvts kiild & they sadly affrighted. In this Condition They staid a day or two. But after[wards] There Money & Goods weere found & restored & they ordered to come to Court, The English accomping. When they caime at y^e Court gate, there armes weere taken from them & there pocketts sercht, But y^e Englⁱ went in wth sword & Target & pistolls by there sides, w^{ch} greived y^e Ebassado^{rs}.

M^d! This affront was p^{ri}ly ocationed by y^e Contrivance of y^e Englⁱ, for that, in y^e tyme of y^e last Dutch warr, y^e french caused y^e English letters to be given y^e Dutch, w^{ch} was delivered into there hand to be Conveyed for y^e est India Company.

They⁹⁸ would [have] p^{re}sented there letters to y^e Emperro^r, but they weere not p^{er}mitted. They then desired y^e fr [French] father⁹⁹ might interprett them, but y^e Emperro^r Askt y^e Englⁱ if they could not doe it, they being in Lattin. M^r White sd yes, Soe they weere delivered to him. The

⁹⁴ This is probably Dāūd Khān Qurōshī, governor of Allahabad in 1670. Mr. Irvine tells me he is mentioned by Manucci.

⁹⁵ The author is incorrect. Only one of the French ambassadors (Béber) came to Burhānpur from Agra (not Delhi) in the company of Tavernier, at the end of 1637. I am indebted for this, and the two following notes, to Mr. Irvine.

⁹⁶ De la Bonillaye Le Gouz was the King's man. He went eastwards to Patna, and was never after heard of again. He was probably murdered by his hired guard, who mistook his box of books for treasure.

⁹⁷ Béber was the representative of the French East India Company. The story of the embassy is given at length in Tavernier's "Receuil."

⁹⁸ i. e., the French ambassadors.

⁹⁹ Mr. Irvine suggests that the "French father" may possibly be Father Busée, S. J., a Fleming, who was in India about this time.

Embassado^r for y^e Company had his desire granted, his deport humble, Soe they weer dismiss¹⁰⁰ And from Brampoore I travelld wth them as followes. But to returne to y^e Gouverner who stopt me, haueing sent to y^e Court to know If I had come wthout license. But they redy, y^e Embassadors, I showed the Gouvernor my pass from y^e Emp^r, w^{ch} gaue me my liberty, And in 28 Days we arrived at Surratt, w^{ch} is but 60 Leagues from Brampoore. Att Surrat I staid 14 Days, S^r George Oxenall [Oxinden]¹ p^rsident their for The East India Company, with whome I had seuerall affairs, And haueing dispatcht, I left it, But he was verry importun[ate] wth me to know how I succeeded in my Jurney into Prester John; but I knew well what I should tell him would be in England before me. But some things I told M^r Rob^t Smith, the Minister.

From Surratt I went to Madderaslepota[n] [Madras] in Bengall, in w^{ch} is the Kingdome of, Gulcandar [Golconda], Wher are all the Dymond Mines, w^{ch} is A Months Jurney or about 600 English Miles; from thence to MasLepota[n] [Masulipatam], w^{ch} is 60 Leagues; Thence to Checacull [Chicacul, Ganjam district], a great Citty, w^{ch} hath a Kinge of it selfe, a verry stronge place; Thence to Muscatt, w^{ch} belongs to the Arrabbs, the King of it called Wyley²; Its a place was taken from the Portugalls.³

In that time I was there, they sent an Armadoe to retake it, but in Vaine, beinge wth loss & shame beaten away. After this, King Wyley [the *wali*] sent out 11, Elleaven, vessels wth about 800 Men to y^e Portugalls Contrey, to a Citty cald Dew [Diu], A stronge fort & Garrison. They Landed, stormed & Plundered the Towne & brought 800 p^rsoners away, Men, Weomen & Children, 8 Chests of Silver, 4 Caests of Gold. This I, John Cambell, se brought into Muskatt in the Month of August 1668, All don in 14 Days.⁴

This was great dishono^r to y^e Portugall affaires, they cominge to looke out for the Arrabbs & had gon on y^e Pertian Coast and tooke A litle money Dew to them for custome out of Conge [Kung] and returned, On w^{ch}, S^d y^e kinge of y^e Arrabbs in my heareinge, They haue com out to seek me; I will now goe to seeke them, And offerd me great rewards to goe wth him, but my answer was, they weere Christians And I was one, Soe could not gratify his desire.

Att my beinge in Goa, in Anno 1668, was a Portugall ship; the Capt. of hir⁵ had not only y^e Command of the ship but all y^e Ladeinge. And beinge One day at a Gameinge howse (for play at Dice is much vsed there), And there beinge many ffydalgoes [fidalgo], verry rich, this Capt fell in to play wth them, And lost not Only ship, but all his Ladeinge, w^{ch} don, in great troble he went to a Surgion, And caused him cut of his left hand close at y^e wrest; y^e Surgion haueinge don his Dewtie, he, y^e Capt, bought a box iust fitt to hold y^e hand Cut of, & it being put in & y^e Key in his pockett, he tooke it vnder his Cloke & went to y^e Gameing howse, where was at play y^e felalgoe who had won his ship & goods wth a great heape of money & gold

¹⁰⁰ In a letter from Surat to the Court of Directors of the East India Company, dated 26th March 1667, there is the following account of the French embassy:—"The Transactions of the French have bin much wondered att by all, one of the Two that came hither and went upp to Court, he that was sent from the King of France with letters Recommendatorye hath bin much slighted and att last is gone away alone, some say to Bengalla, Leaving his consort, who after a tedious attendance, finding none that would prefer his cause to the Kinge, in regard he came Empty handed, was Returning hither, but was robd of all he had, one dayes Journey out of Agra, and Received three or Foure wounds, which comming to the Kings eare, tooke pittie on him, sent for him backe, gave particuler order for his care, and afterwards admitted him into his presence, Received his petition, Gave order he should be paid out of his Treasury what was pretended to be taken from him."—*India Office Records, Factory Records, Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2.

¹ Sir George Oxinden was President of Surat from 1662 till his death, on the 14th July, 1669.

² The author mistakes the Arabic title *wali*, a governor, for a proper name.

³ In 1650.

⁴ In a letter to Surat, dated from Ispahan, 5th Sept. 1669, Stephen Flower refers to "wt. had past at sea between the Portugalls and Arabs in this Gulfe" and to "the Arabs proceedings at Dio," but there is no record of the occurrence, as given by Campbell, in 1668.

⁵ Hiatus in the MS.

before him, & he haueing y^e Dice, y^e Capt puts downe his box & s^d, para esta. At it, s^d y^e fydalgoe.⁶ Theire gr^t. play is passage, & its y^e play theire, if y^e Caster throw awmes,⁷ ace & a tray, he pays doble y^e stake he throwes at. The fydalgoe or K^t threw awmes, ace & a tray, & seing it, said, open yo^r box & tell yo^r moley, pushing his heape to him. Hold, said y^e Capt., & tooke out y^e Key of his box & opend it & showed his hand & y^e arme it was Cut of, & s^d, y^u haue lost both yo^r hands. They caime to Composition & y^e Cap^t had his shipp & goods and doble hir vallew. The Cap^t is now in Lisbon, And knowne to me Jn^o Cambell & many others, who se his hand & Arme it was Cutt of.

Att the same tyme in Goa, I was Carried to see a father, counted a holly man of y^e Order of y^e Pollistians,⁸ borne in Dunkirk, who had beene deade almost 12 Monts before, but lay aboue ground to be seene by all y^t caime; & of seuerall Nations round about theire caime, viz^t And see him lie as at y^e tyme of his death vnbowelled, or wth out anie art don to him saue y^e shaueing his face every weke & paireing or Cutting his nailes, wth a Naturall fresh Culler. The faime of it caime to y^e Pope, as nothing don almost in Anie p^t of y^e world, but theire are padreys to give advice. The Pope sent for the boddie of this Padre; y^e Pollistians who are y^e richest Scotietie of fathers in y^e world, denied it. But the Pope demanding his right hand, it was granted & Cutt of, Jn^o Cambell then p^{re}sented, and it bled as fresh as if it had been Cutt from y^e Boddie of a liveinge man. They indeavo^r^d after to p^{re}serve him from Corruption but could not, soe 3 days after he was buried.

One day, I sittinge wth King Wyley [the wali], 3 brave Weomen p^{re}soners weere brought before him; 2 Weere Brammonists [Brahmans] wives, theire husbands being kild. The 3^d was a Portugall, w^{ch} I freed. She told me she had to pay me what I laid out, & Did 3 doble, when I delivered her in Conge [Kung]. S^d y^e Kinge to me, will yo^u free thother two. I s^d this is a Christian & I an other, They Gentues.

Two of King Wyleys Sarv^{ts} being by, wth Katārs [daggers] by theire sides, These 2 Brammonist weomen drew each a Katār from them & before y^e Kinge rip vp their Bellys & Dyed.

The next day, about 8 Clock in the morninge, theire Arrived A ship of ours from Bumbay, 220 Leagues by Sea from this place. Wyley y^e Kinge of y^e Arrabbs sent for me & s^d, wth doe y^u make this ship to be. I S^d, English. Welcome, S^d he, y^s or Brother. Comeinge into y^e rode, h^{is} Ladeing was rice & Butter & Coquer Nutts, w^{ch} was great Reliefe to y^t Contrey, for, Except y^e great Ones, they eate only Tammer [*tā'ama*], viz^t, Dates & fish. The contrey is very barren, & haue great respect to y^e English y^t furnish them wth p^{re}visions, for they are often vexed wth fammin.

Cap^t William Hill was commander of the vessell & was verry glad to meete wth an Englishman theire, y^t king Wyley esteemed, & could Speak y^e Lingua, for y^e Cap^t could not. I delt wth the Kinge for him, for his Rice Butter & y^e rest of his Ladeinge, & truckt wth y^e Kinge for 350 p^{re}soners, Both well pleased, And for my Curtesey Kinge Wyley p^{re}sented me wth a Black boy & Cap^t Hill a Dymond Ring, w^{ch} I accepted.

From Muskatt I went to Conge, in y^e Pertion Dominyon, wth my Lady p^{re}soner, for soe she was, & hir husband slaine at Due [Din]. I was much made of & gratified.

Thence I went for Commerroone [Gombroon], w^{ch} the English haue A factory at,⁹ & Receive halfe Custome of it for theire good Service in helping y^e Pertian to take y^e famous Ormous, Once

⁶ Mr. Donald Ferguson suggests the following reading of this passage:—"The Captain put down his box and said, 'Para esta' ['I wager this — *caixa* = box]. 'Atido' ['Done!'], said the fidalgo."

⁷ i. e., ambs-ace, double ace, the lowest possible throw at dice.

⁸ i. e., a Paulinist, the local name for the Jesuits. John Campbell seems to be alluding to the shrine of S. Francis Xavier, whose body was removed to Goa in 1554. According to his wont, Campbell alters dates to suit his purpose so that he may appear to have personally witnessed the events he describes. The right arm of the Saint was sent to the Pope in 1614. See *The Voyage of François Pyrard of Laval* (Hakluyt ed.), Vol. VI. p. 61, f. n.

⁹ The English factory at Gombroon was established after the taking of Ormuz, in 1622. In a letter to the Court from Surat, dated 2nd Nov. 1638 (*Factory Records, Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2) the Council remark that they have a "Right to the Gulph of Persia and port of Gombroon, by a firme League and Covenant made and Concluded att the Expulseinge the Portugall, which cost our nation both men and money to purchase."

soe ominent in y^e portugalls tyme, from whome It was taken by y^e Pertian,¹⁰ That its said of it, If y^e world weere a Kinge, Ormous was y^e Dymond in it.¹¹ But now in the Dust, And Bossara [Basra],¹² wch is 15 days Jurney from Commoronne, y^e great port.

Wee had not beene at Commoroon 2 days, but advice caime Capt. Hill was arrived at Due, haneinge soe good a voyage by my means. Mr Gayrey,¹³ y^e Marcht, not knoweing me, writt to M^r flowers¹⁴ that if such an English man caime, discribinge me, where he had Cognizance or interest y^t he would serve me, though, S^d he, meaninge me, he did me a discortsey once, yet hath he now served me beyond my Expectation & made me trebble mends [amends].

The discortsey I did him was in Conveyinge S^r Humphry Cooke out of India,¹⁵ for M^r Garey would [have] sent him to y^e Company because he traded in India in y^e Companys goods.

My Lord Cooke¹⁶ his father being sent by y^e King of England to be Gouverner of Bumbay, a Towne Given by y^e Portugalls as part of y^e Dowrey of o^r Royall Queene Katheran,¹⁷ lyeinge 24 howers Saile from Surrat & is an Isleland and the best port in India The Christians haue,

My L^d was sent wth 600 English Soldiers, & y^e vice Roy of Portugall had order to deliver it to y^e s^d L^d Cooke, but tooke snuff [offence] y^t he was not treated or respected aboard y^e Engl^{ish} vessell as he expected, set them a shore in a part of y^e Isleland where they had noe fresh water & would not d^d [deliver] the Towne Bumbay till most of y^e s^d 600 soldiers wee[re] kild wth a flux by drinking brackish water.¹⁸

Mr John¹⁹ Flowers factor for y^e India Company at Spahawne [Ispahan] & Commaroon, My Kinsman, I left him att Commaroon & went for Spawhowne & by M^r flowers order had y^e vse of y^e Companys howse theire for my entertainm^t

¹⁰ Ormuz was taken by Shāh 'Abbās, with the help of the English, in 1622.

¹¹ Thomas Herbert gives the proverb in this form :—

"If all the world were made into a ring,

Ormuz the gem and grace thereof should bring." — *Some Years Travels*, ed. 1638, p. 105.

¹² The Company established an agency at Basra, in 1640.

¹³ Henry Gary was Acting Deputy Governor at Bombay in 1367, and assumed the title of Governor after the death of Sir Gervase Lucas, in 1638. He was never confirmed in the office, and was censured by the Court for his arrogance in 1671.

¹⁴ Stephen Flower, with whom Campbell claimed kinship, was a factor in the E. I. Co.'s Service. He was "second" at Gombroon in 1338 and "Chief" from 1635 to 1339.

¹⁵ I can find no foundation for this story.

¹⁶ Sir Humphry Cooke was Governor of Bombay for the King, from April 1685 to the end of 1686, during which time there was constant friction between him and Sir George Oxinden, the Company's representative at Surat.

¹⁷ In 1631 Bombay was ceded to the British Crown as part of the dowry of Katherine of Braganza, wife of Charles II. It was transferred to the E. I. Co. in 1668.

¹⁸ This statement is incorrect.

¹⁹ Stephen Flower was the Company's servant at Ispahan and Gombroon. It is strange that if Campbell really were his kinsman, that he should mistake his Christian name. A paragraph in a letter from Flower to Surat, dated Gombroon, 21st January 1669, shows Campbell in a very different position from what he leads us to infer, at this time :— "On a Jynke y^t (in Company eight more from Seinda) lately arrived att Congo laden with goods, etc. provisions, came passenger one M^r John Cambell who had served y^e King of India as a Gunner seven or eight yeares and having obtained licence to depart for his Country (to w^{ch} his freinds had often solicited him) his resolutions was to travell overland for England, (wth w^t moneys etc. hee had gained in y^e time of his service to y^e vallue of 7 or 8000 rups.) towards w^{ch} hee was advanced as farr as Scynda, when in Company of about 40 persons more in y^e Caphila, they were unfortunately mett wth by y^e who robbed them all of their money and goods stripped him to his shirt and hardly escaped with his life, in w^{ch} miserable condition at his arrivall Scynda finding noe remedy, hee chose rather to proceed on his Intended Journey though with nothing than retorne againe to the service of his old Master, and about six dayes since repaired hither for my assistance, upon y^e relation of which sad story, I have taken his present condition into consideration, and furnish'd him with w^t necessary to carry him to England, where God sending him safely to arrive, I have hope of receiving from himsele or friends satisfaction, in two or three days more he departs in Compa : a Portugall Padre to Busara where I shall Commend him to y^e fathers courtesy there for his safe proceeding to Alleppo, and there noe doubt but y^e consull to whom I shall alsoe write will befriend him in what further needfull, It would bee a shame not to commiserate and assist in such cases as this our owne country man from whose misfortune God defend us." — *Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 105.

But from Commoroon I tooke in the way to Spawhawne [P^lLar] w^{ch} is 70 Leagues from Commeroon, haueing a note from M^r Jn^o fflowers & y^e Commendore of y^e Dutch, we English haueinge noe howse theire but the Dutch had, y^t I might haue entetainm^t theire; 3 days I lodged theire w^{ch} was in the tyme of Gouverners fast, soe could not speake wth him. But at night, After I had spooke wth him, that night caime a letter from M^r fflower to me,²⁰ Telling me of Monsier Demingoes invitation of all y^e English, f^rench & Dutch, wth sarvants, to a feast he had made, being y^e f^rench Agent at Commoroon.

The f^rench Agent at Diuner Dranke to y^e Dutch Commendore; y^e Dutch Commendore had noe sooner pledged, but s^d to Monseieur Demingo, I am poysoned. S^r, S^d Monsier Demingo, theirs noe poyson in my howse, & tooke vp the same Glass & drank of it. He had noe sooner dranke but he fell alsoe to vomitt, & S^d, I think its poyson indeede. This broke vp y^e Mirth, they both sick. Thanks be to god, noe other tasted of it, But had it beene given when we had after Dinner begun to drinke as vsuall, all y^e Company had beene lost.²¹

We Exammoned y^e Attendants & found it to be Contrived by y^e great Banion [Banyan] who ought [owed] y^e Company of y^e Dutch 30000 Tomaine [tomān], every tomaine 30 Ropees, w^{ch} is Eng^l money 3^l 7^s 6^d. And Thretinge y^e Boy who fild y^e wyne, He Confest y^e Bannyon did hyer him for 20 Tomaine, & gaue him the poyson to poyson his Maister & all the Company. This boy or slaue went away p^resently wth y^e Banyan & his sonn. They herd they went towards Larr. M^r fflower writt to me at Larr & desired me for his honors sake to lay hold on them, for we haue laid hold of all y^e rest heere, telling me y^e Cause as aboue. They comeing to Larr, herd of a stranger there, tooke me for a Dutchman Soe tooke y^e Gouverners howse Vockeele [vakīl]²² I had my spies abrode, w^{ch} told me they had giveu & p^rmist [the] Vockeell money & p^rmist to turne Moores [Muhammadans]. On w^{ch} I tooke horsse & went to y^e Gouverner howse, A mile from my Lodgeinge. When I caime, I sent word into y^e Gouverner I desired to speak wth him. He gaue me leave to com in to him; his naim is Auguee [Aghāji].

When I caime in & wth my armes, not vsuall for a Strange[r] to doe in y^t Contrey, One of his men tooke my Armes, y^e Gour bidinge me sitt downe. I showed my letter. S^d he, I cannot vnderstand it. I told him my grevance. Is theire, s^d he, such persons heere. I told him, yes, in [the] Vockeels howse. He sent for [the] Vockeel & the 3 persons wth a gard to bring them Before he questioned them, he s^d, poyntinge to me, Doe y^u know this man. They said noe. But theire songe was they would be mad^e Moores. The Gour askt theire reason, saying, we never knew a Gentue or Banyan turne Moore, but for some great falt. The Casa [qazā] being by, S^d, can y^u deny to make a heathen a trew Beleiver. I, heareing this, s^d to y^e Gouverner, shomma me danney che gusta [shumā mī dānī chah guftā], doe y^u know what y^u say. S^d he, be'ne'she'en [bā nishin], sit downe, be not soe ferce. I s^d these are y^e men, & I charged him wth Shaw Sollyman

²⁰ From Flower's own account, given in the next note, the 'feast' seems to have taken place at Gombroon and not at Ispahan.

²¹ In a letter to Surat, dated at Gombroon, 10th April 1669, Stephen Flower gives the following account of the poisoning affair:—"The heats being entred many begin daily to fall sicke of feavours & others dead, among whom y^e Kings Vizeere Sonne to his Exceeding greife, but 3 dayes since & it were well if this were the onely hazard y^t poore Europeans are subject to in these parts, where many come to untimely ends by poison, both of English & Dutch, by their owne Servants and y^e brokers as too apparent appears and hath bin proved by a late accident and Example of that nature, hapned in y^e house of Deputy Marriage, where himselfe and y^e Commadore by drinking and tasting a cupp of beere had allmost lost their lives as might the rest of y^e Company (among whom I was present) had itt not pleased God by a timely discovery to prevent soe greate an evill, for w^{ch} and all his mercies and deliverance this or at any other time I hope I shall remaine truely thankfull, for a particular relation and more satisfactory acco^t of this sad story I desire you will be referred to the verball repetition of S^r Nicolo Vidall and others."—*Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 105.

²² i. e., took refuge in the vakīl's house.

de Roy [Shāh Salaimān's *luhāi*].²³ When he herd y^e word, he rose vp & made 3 Sallams towards his kinge. I told him, these are y^e men haue, or would [have] beene y^e death of 25 March^{ts} besides theire Sarvants; y^u haue them in yo^r Custody; looke to them; I am goeing for Spawhawne. S^d y^e Gouverner, two of these men looke like gr^t men. Pray, s^d I, question them, He then questioned them & said, tell me trewth, Ile make y^u Moores, & then y^u are fre from all harme. He found they weere guilty of wth I accused them of, And Committed them to a Roome; Soe I left them. The Gouverner att ptinge [parting] S^d, y^e Eng^l, Dutch & french are o^r good freinds, Shall we loose 3 places for 3 men, in w^{ch} are Thowsands.

Next morning he sent for me betimes & askt me wheere I was bound. I s^d for spawhaun. He askt what service I would command him. I told him noe service, but desired Good iustice. He is Gouverner of Conge, Commoroon & Larr. While I was thus talking, caime in 3 wth chaines & Locks on theire hands. Said y^e Gour, how like you this; I S^d well, & y^t y^e Eng^l Dutch fr & portugalls would Commend his good iustice.

S^d y^e Gour, I haue don this on yo^r word & caused a letter to be written & I to set my hand to it & my seale alsoe, y^t if I had abused them wthout cause, the ffanks must give acct of it, and that before I left Spawhawne.

Next morning they weere sent away wth 20 horse as a gard to Coñroon, wth a post before, w^{ch} would goe y^t in 3 days (I was 7 in comeinge), & demanded of me to stay till answer was returned. The 5th day after came answer from y^e Gour [of] Coñroon that they had hanged the Commendores slaue, And 2000 Tomaine was gathered by y^e Banyans, 1000 for y^e Gouverner of Coñroon, y^e other 1000 for y^e Gouverner at Larr & 80000 for to be devidid amonge y^e Marchants [who] weere theire. ffanks, To saue the Banyans lives; & never anie Banyan to Broak or serve in business to y^e Christians On that Coast, w^{ch} is 100^{ds} of thowsands to theire losse, for they did all business for y^e factories.

From Larr I tooke my Journey for Serash [Shirāz], 140 Leagues from Larr. First I came to y^e padreys theire. Next day caime y^e English Broker to me & told me It was not fit I should be here & Carried me to y^e English howse.

The Gouverner of Serash being a great Caune [Khān], y^t is Lord, & for some reason then not knowne, forsake his meanes And betook him to a Mountaine privat, & for 2 mo had a day noe more then y^e quantity of a penny white loafe. His desire after sōme tyme theire was to know how all did wth his fammily. A spirittt appearinge to him told him he could not goe to see his family wthout he would doe one of y^e 3 thing when he caime theire he would p^pound to him, viz^t lie wth his Mother And Daughter or be Drunke. He answered y^e last he would Doe. He went to his howse & great p^vitions was made, And being Over come wth drinke he lay wth Mother & wth Doughter. Nex morning, Remembering what he had don, tooke his Doughter, it being in the tyme of y^e raines, and Threw hir into a great Tanke. She was taken vp by others & knowne to be such a L^{ds} doughter. The L^d, after he had throwne in his doughter, went to y^e Justices & told him what had past, & y^t he iudged himselfe not worthy to live.

The iustice & Governer past it by, but sent for the Mother & Doughter & askt if it was as the L^d had told. They both denie it. In caime y^e Men y^t took vp y^e Doughter out of y^e tanke, & herd what they S^d & Quest how she caime theire; y^e L^d hir father made answer I carried hir theire. S^d y^e Doughter, father now I must speake, begg yo^r p^don, I confess yo^u forst me to it. A counsell was held & y^e L^d was put in Irons. His Brothers sonn, then Gouverner, S^d, my vnkle since he left y^e Gouvern^t hath drank bangg & post,²⁴ w^{ch} makes him talk Idlely.

(To be continued.)

²³ Fryer gives the same spelling 'Deroy, an interdict.' It is an appeal to the King for justice.

²⁴ *Bhang* and *post*, a preparation of opium.

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Continued from p. 83.)

Dānā pakki bahut karē, vāgān tōn pharkē,
 Aggē dhar lēdunā, nāl lēdō pharkē
 Ethē pakar lēdunā vekkōgē na kharikē.
 Unhān ghōrē laē bhajā Atārd langhē,
 Kātē kam Khudā dē phir hōngē chaingē.
 Sōhnē rang oh nē jīhrē Maulā rangē.
 Pēyā dyā gaj dā kēkar lāmbe laggē,
 Oh varē Nishaurē ānkē, mīlē dhāmān Jāmu nūā,
 Jitnā hāl harāl sē sab ākh sunāā.
 Pīr pahilē pahar bāl jē phir jawān hō jādē,
 Dīgar nūlr 'āf hai buddhārā sadāē.
 Dihārē langhē ēk, traē umar hanāē.
 Kūnā nūlr halīm dē kōē barī dānā.
 Apnē āp sambhātēd, main kakhnā jē nūā.
 Ik sipāhī parthē, jā arz sunāā
 Asīn tāt tērē gulām hūn, Dānā pēyā kōhāē,
 Chille charhiyā īr hai pasittā na jāī
 Aggē bhāvēn na pōhē, hōldhmbē jāī.
 Chēlē sifdān jōrīān parh nām sunāā.
 Pīr sipāhīān nūn puchhāā ; Dānā kī farmāā.

Na kuchh dhūā chukiyā na churā lēdē,
 Na us āmin hōkē sūnnū dānē dalāē.
 Tuhānnū sārī khabar hai tussēn utthōn dē
 Rang sipāhī dā udgēd, kuchh chārā na challē.
 Jichar kū vasdē ghar vich hōwān tharthallē
 Ik din na lagdē khāvān dī gallē
 Gal thōn pakarkē kadhdā na kuchh bahadī
 pallē.
 Udgēd rang sipāhī dā, kuchh chārā na challē,
 Ihō vas sipāhī dā (pīr jī !) kuchh mān nahī
 pallē.
 Bālē pīr dāl vich dālāl guadrī
 Pīr paikambar chal gayē ā gayī sādā vārī.
 Dhainsar hātē chal gayā tarlōkē dē vārī

A hundred¹ horsemen marched—they rode in
 force,
 And Dānā gave them orders strict to seize
 And chain him; thus to bring him quickly, nor
 Take time to look again towards him, but
 To hasten back. They spurred their horses—
 passed
 Atāwā, all the Lord's great works are good.
 Those lines above are beautiful that he
 Has painted — Lo a thunderstorm is here.
 How will it pass? They to Naushera came.
 And first a barber Jāmu met them. Straight
 He told them all about the priest, the man
 Who had been boy till just that morning, since
 The boy had in a trice grown man, assumed
 The form of age in the afternoon, and so
 Was called old man — all in a single day
 He reached the third stage — youth and mid-
 dle age
 He passed; and entered white old age. To talk
 With calmness is the property of age
 And wisdom: therefore said he calmly, 'Sirs,
 Beware of harm. I do not seek to vex
 Or injure you.' A soldier then approached
 And said, 'Your servants we—Judge Dana calls
 You. Fixed upon the bow the arrow lies:
 It cannot miss you. If it does, 'tis ours
 To throw again, to make it sure.' Disciple I
 Have made this song. Repeat it. Asked the
 priest,
 'What wants your judge with me? I have not
 bought
 His property; I have not stolen his goods;
 He gave for me no pledge that I might have
 Sufficiency of corn. What reason is
 That ye have come from him?' The soldier's
 face
 Grew pale; he nerveless grew, just like a
 shrew
 That while she stays makes neighbours trem-
 ble, but
 A day comes when rebellious she denies
 To do her husband's will, and he grows fierce,
 Rough seizes her, and casts her out disgraced.
 So stood the soldier, (Praise the priest),
 abashed;

Māsā nāḥā maṭṭhā thīn chārē kūṭān bhāḥīn
 Ōṛak gabrē jā pēyā khā gird pōḥḍī
 Aīḍē aīḍē chal gayē maṭṭh kī nāḥīn jāḍī.
 Bālē pīr dīl vich phīr pātī jāḷī
 Akbar hātē chal gayā, chhaḍ gayē nē Dillī
 Eḍī jāḍ paṭṭkambarān jinhān dhartī malī

Rann pichhē laṛ mōḥē nē, kōṭ mat na challī-
 Bālē pīr dī suṛā gayē dargāh-i-faryād,
 Likh chūḥḥī Rabb ghalliyā phīr kītā yād.
 Baithā tā kyūn Bālē, phīr hō nārā,
 Jō tērē khāss murīd nē vich bilishtān vās,
 Phīr chhatrē khān nūr milāṅgē khāṅgē nāl
 mizāl
 Chēlē sifṭān jōṛiān kar ijīz niyāz-

Ik Chūḥḥī vichōn nikālḥē baṅ masallī bahīndē.
 Bēimān muft dē dujjā dōṛāḥ jandē,
 Pichhōn pachhōtāṅgē jadōn aggē na jāndē,
 Chēlā ākhē Musallīs, kyūn dōṛāḥ nūn jāndē.

Kōṭ Pīr dē bālīkā Multānī Shāh dēyē huṅkāṛā
 Shāh Bālē dā bālīkā laggē bahut piyārā,
 Aḥṭān kōḥān vich shahr hai kull sabbhō sārā
 Jhandā talī tē dhar lawān, na laggē bhārā.
 Pānī vaggē Rāvi dā, Pīr jī, kōṭī bēshumārā
 Har Rāvi vich ḥīḥ sār, rūḥ jāḍ sārā
 Vichhē Dānā rūḥ jāḍ shārā puchhānwālā.

Chēlē sifṭān jōṛiān kar aḥ niyārā.

All shamed and helpless, of authority
 Divested. Bālā priest thus thought in heart
 'Both priests and prophets, all have run their
 race ;

Mine may be ended. Men like Dhainsar died,
 And those that ruled three realms are gone.

One ran

From death, even Moses — sought he hard to
 hide

From death in all the quarters of the earth,

But no, he fell at last in weariness

Into a grave. Such men have died and failed
 To conquer death.' Then Bālā thought of
 God.

Great kings like Akbar died and left their
 state

And Dillī all behind. A great prophetic host
 Have graves that fill the world. They
 fought once here.

Espoused a woman's cause, but perished ; all
 Their plans were frustrated, but God did hear
 Our Bālā's prayer. The Lord a letter wrote
 To him. He summoned him, and thus he
 said.

'Why sitst thou there, O Bālā, why shouldst
 thou

Be so disconsolate and sad ? Be sure

Thy followers will enter heaven : for food

They shall have rams, yes, more than need
 demands.

They shall be fed to all satiety.'

'Twas his disciple made this song with all
 Humility. Some traitors are that false
 Desert the Chuhras, and become great knaves,
 Musallis. Vainly thus they go, for nought
 It boots, and then, besides, to hell they go.

Grieved will they be some day when from
 God's face

They are excluded. 'Why, Musallis, why
 Go straight to hell ?' the true disciple asks.

Multānī Shāh, disciple, stood beside,
 A follower true of Bālā, much beloved,
 Who said, 'The length and breadth of this
 good town

Is eight full miles — I will take up the flag,

It is not great beyond my strength to raise,

And then the Rāvi will o'erflow its banks

And flood the town and judge. In it I'll
 drown

The town, and Dānā, too, will perish with

The rest, because he dared insult our law.'

*Pir kēhā Multānī Shāh, Phir Rabb thīn dāriyē,
Sai mandān dē jēr nūn ik sa'at jarīyē,
Rabb pāsē nē muāmālē sir uttē dhariyē
Shahr vassē ammi jammā chal gallān kariyē.
Bālē pīr nahākē pōshāk hai pū
Bōk band amari bādālā narma safēdī.
Zarī dōshālā pahīnkē pag sōhī baddhī.
Bāhar dīd pīr jī, lōg dēkhan sēijī
Bālē pīr charh nū ghōṛā mangāyē.
Uttē ghattān urdān zīn dōshālē pōwāē,
Mūh kandiālē dēkē hath vāgīn pāsē.
Charh rikābī lat dē, hath hannē pāsē.
Charhtal Bālē pīr dē phir laṭhī na jāē.
Hundē sāvin akh na, sūraj lachkāē.
Jōn rāt dēvālī Hindūān charāg jagdē.
Chēlē sūrat dīṭhīd, tān sīfat baṇāē.
Bālā pīr charh pēyā, jhagrē tē turīyā.
Budhwār dā rōz sī mūh Bhādrōn, charhiyā,
Dhuppē tūrdē ḥ vē jinhān aukhān baṇīyān*

*Oḥnūn sūyā baddal hō gayā phir pānī dīn
kanān
Thandē jhōlē vā dē nālē sukhmanān.
Traē pīr dē bālē Rōshan Shāh tē Multānī,
Trijā Hajrat Kailānwālā, Mihrōn bhar jāwānī.
Chhinwēn karē charh sī nāl Dādū Bhāgū
giyānī.
Sabbhō hath bannhē, phir 'ara sunāē
Asīn tē tērī madād hān, Pīr jī, tū kyūn nakīn
jānē.
Chēlē sīfāt jōrān, parh nām dhihānē.
Pīr kahē phir Bālākē, tusīn sabbhō hō mundē,
Chīr avē kisī nūn hauṇ pīrān vaṇḍē?
Sāḍḍē thān pakarkē Dānā kinān mangē?
Rang sōhī ḥ nē, jīhrā Maulā rangē.
Painḍā dhē itnā jēuṇ khiyālē langhē,
Kitē kam Khudā dē jīhrē hōngē changē,
Pīr Nishaurēn tur pēyā chaudhrī sī Gujrdān-
wālē
Uḥnūn jākē dassiyā Shām barwālē,
Ḡ pīr kitthē hai jīh dē nāl baihnā sān dārē.*

With prudent judgment the disciple made
This song. The priest said, 'O Multānī Shāh.
Let us fear God. Even though our strength
could lift

A hundred maunds, we must show patience.
God

Has sent this grief. Let us bear up like men,
And let the town live prosperously in peace.
We go to talk with Dānā.' So he bathed,
And dressed himself to suit the interview.
A silken girdle donned he on a coat
Of velvet; vest of white, a silken shawl,
A turban beautiful. Thus from his house
He came. They flocked about him. Then he
called

For's horse, caparisoned in gold — rich shawls
Were placed for saddle — bridled was the
steed,

And Bālā caught the reins. He lightly placed
His foot in stirrup, laid his hand upon
The pommel — but in writing who can show
The grace of Bālā Pīr? Eyes could not stand
His glory — even the sun could not endure
To look. 'Twas like (the) Dēvālī with its light
Of many lamps, which this disciple saw —
He therefore wrote this song. So Bālā rode
To this great controversy. Wednesday it was
Of the week, the month of August. They
who make

A journey in the sun must needs have care.
A cloud o'ershaded him; small drops of rain
Began to fall, a gentle cool breeze blew
Refreshing. Happy was he; with him were
Multānī, Rōshan Shāh, and Hazrat of
Kailānwālā — doughty wight was he
By grace of God, for ninety-nine crores
Of soldier angels, Dādū Bhagn too,
The bards, did follow him. With folded hands
They made petition to him thus, 'O priest,
We are your helpers, be assured.' This song
A true disciple made. O read and seek
With reverent heart the Name. The priest
but said :

'O children mine, all young you are, untried ;
If one receive a wound who then shall share
His pain? My capture and not yours
Will please this Dānā. Only hues that are
God made

Are beautiful.' The journey, though 'twas long,
Was quickly made. Whate'er the Lord does
must

*Uhnân pēi sipāhī shara' dē, lē gayē sirkārē.
Chaulhrī ūthōn ūḥiyā hath hathān tē mārē.
Chēlē sifṭān jōṛiān parh nām chitārē.*

*Jitnā tappā Sainsāriān diān ghōṛiān sab
mangwāiān,*

*Muñh kanḥēdīān dēkē uttē kḥiḥiān pōvāiān,
Charhē rikābī lat dē haith vāḡiān chḥiyān.*

Ghōṛiān jāṭ valāiyatī bhar lēn kaḷāiān.

Atāwē dē mundh jākē wārḥān mēl āiyān.

Chaudhrī ottē jākē mur dē dukāiān

Chaudhrī puchchē pīr nū Tērī kī si salāh,

*Āēōn tū anpuchchiyā jānā sōi kḥwāh ma
kḥwāh.*

Assiñ tūn jaṭ gōwār hān kōi bē nawā.

Dhāiñ pāndē gunnhē ātē dā gāh.

Ihō sādāḍā karm hai, pīr jē, dhakkē dā rāh.

Main tē baddhā jāndā tōṛ Dillī dā rāh.

Sipāhī ākhañ chōudhrī kyūñ paindēñ saurā

Ōthē aḍḍā lam nahān kōi lammā chaurā.

Ajōi mur āvēgā, nahān dār Nishaurā.

Ōthē maslē dē bāt hai kē matlab tērā?

Pīr ākhē chaudhrī tu kachchē kḥā layē

Dānā kḥātē pawēgā tērā pinḍ ūjārī,

Kahnū bhainḍē lūn nūn vich dharkē thālī,

Allah dā kam vēkh kḥiān na kar tū kḥiṭī.

*Chaudhrī ākhē pīr nū varh nālē challē,
Panj sai mēri ghōṛī hai kar pawēgi hallē.
Vārḥ pichḥān nū mor sūn mērā vas na challē.
Tē kḥātī jē main mur giyā kē karāṅgā pallē*

Be good. The priest had left Naushēra when The headman came from distant Gujṛānwāl. Shām, village watchman, went and told him all.

'Where is,' he cried, 'the priest that used to sit

And talk with you within the rest-house here?'

'The minions of the law have seized him, Sir, And taken him away to judge him.' Up

The headman sprang and struck one palm in grief

Against the other. The disciple made

This song, and thinks upon the Name. Forth-with

From all the land the Sainsāris' mares were brought,

And bridled all and saddled, so forth rode

The Sainsāris, firm grasping with their hands

The reins. The mares were good, of Afghan breed

And swift. So near Atāwā met the bands.

With threats the headman faced the captors of

The priest, and to the priest, he said, 'Why did

You go and leave us? Say, what were your plans?

And why, if forced to go, you told me not?

All rough and ignorant are we, but fear

We know not, No. We bruize our flour when you

Do knead it, and we knead our rice when you Do thrash it. This our way. O priest; our

law

Is force.' The priest replied, 'A prisoner I Bound hence for Dillī.' Quoth the soldiers,

'Sir,

Be patient. No great business calls him there ;

To-day he will return — it is not far

From your Naushera. Only here we have

A slight dispute about religion. For you

There is no business there.' The priest said, 'Take,

My friend, no foolish step, for Dana will

Become your enemy, and ruin your home.

Why break a lump of salt in earthen plate?

Wait on the Lord, nor e'er impatient be.'

To whom the headman, 'We our band retain.

Five hundred horsemen have I, fighting men,

Without them what can I? And if I go

Without you to my village, what will then

*Ik eipāhī daur̄ke mur̄ Dānē kōl jās,
Jitnā hāl hawāl sī sabh ākh sunās,
Pīr pahilē pahar bāl hai, mur̄ jawān hō jāē.
Ḍīgar nāl zaif hai, buḍḍhā sadhās.
Dihārū langhdā ik sī traē umar hanḍāe
Nālē sāyā baddalān, phir kañḍān pān.
Aggē tērī mar̄sī jō izan farmān.
Shirkōn bāj ā jā, ih bhalī hai, bhū,
Rūh Mōhammad yār dā Rabb āp banāyā.
Zamin tē āsmān kahndē Rabbe āp banāyā
Na phir sāyā baddalān? Na kañḍān pāē?
Jān gar̄bebandā bālīkā? Baddal chār dikhāi?
Jān lēyā ilm Bangālōn, pēya umar vaṭāē.
Lōk āhndē auliyā hai, Dānā azmās.
Kārigar sab shahr dē, Dānē mangwās,
Shahr dē vich bāḍlī oḥē lē jāē.*

*Bharīn ohḍān paurīn banērē bhanwās,
Kēi ambar kūgātān Dānē rangwās,
Uttē saffē vān dē bhār kakh na chās,
Rakh qī bē nūn sāmhnā, mirāb banās.
Kandhōn labbañ pakḥān, pūnī phirwās.
Jitnē āshig Rabb dē Dānā chā likhwās.
Hukm Dānē qāzī dā phir kōi na mōrē,
Masit dudlīlē hāñjiyē, iṭṭān tē rōrē.
Kēi phar̄ kastūrīn Dānē cha rōrhē.
Jihra langhē koldōn oh daurā jāē.
Bālīkē āhndē pīr nūn, sun̄ murshid mērā,
Imminābād dis pēyā, huñ ē āgayā nērē.
Dōghayīn nūn machāngē sab jhagrē tē jhērē,
Painā vas mulwāñhān, hō jān chauphērē.
Parhē hōē Qurān dē, rivāyatān nē jēhrē,
Qurān tē kītābān dē, pīr jī, maslē hain ukhērē.
Sāḍḍā laḥā-khushk hō gayā, aḍḍō aḍḍī bērē.
Sānnā khōl sunā khān, kī pallē tērē.
Ikko sachechā nām hai, sahaiñsī nān.
Rabb dittā sī jōr Har Nāshak tēn,
Uē apnā āp japā lēyā, nikḥē, vadḍē tēn,
Ohnūn thammān vichōn baurīā, Rabb jāṭā tēn.*

My people say? 'A soldier ran to tell
The tidings of the day to Dānā, how
That coming this same priest was but a boy,
And, strange, at noon he was full grown, and
then

When evening fell an old old man was he.
And people called him Old Man — just a day
Had seen the changes three. And on the way
A cloud o'ershadowed him, and rain came
down

Refreshing. 'Do your will; you may;
command.

But do not spiteful be. It will not serve.
Muhammad's soul, God's friend, was made by
God

Himself. This heaven and earth proclaim.

But how

Did never cloud o'ershadow him, nor rain
From heaven refresh him?' 'Nay,' said
Dānā, 'Nay.

A babe is he who's newly born. The clouds,
How could he summon clouds? As for his
form,

He may have learnt in Bengal arts for this.

The people say he is a man of God.

I'll try him.' So he summoned artisans

And led them to a well within the town,

And gave them orders to fill up the steps.

To raze the higher part, and even it

Close with the ground; to dye great spreading
sheets

Of paper, which he laid on the well mouth.

So thin it would not bear a straw's weight.

Then

A paper mosque he made around it, with

Its *mihrāb* towards the Qāba, and its walls

So brick-like painted, and white-washed, with
names

Of God's most faithful written upon it. For

The will of Dānā must be done, and none

Dared disobey. He caused his men to sweep

The court, remove all dust, and handfuls sweet

Of fresh *kastūrī*³⁵ throw, that passers by

Might tempted be to enter. To the priest

A follower said, 'O hear us, teacher mine.

In sight is Imminabad, quite near; soon will

Disputes arise. The *mullas* will with zeal

Surround us. The Qurān they know. They
know

*Ohô aukhâ vêlâ assân té, Rabb bauré sahaï
 subhân,
 Bâliké dîhde pîr nân, tû Bâlâ pîr sadânâ,
 Atîhân pahriñ rôz tû dargâhê jânâ,
 Kalma parhên Ôh Ik dâ, kam karên kamânâ.
 Gallân karên Janâb nâl, sânnâ azmânâ ?
 Lôi bhagat Kabîr dē ghar sūdâ âs,
 Ghar ann na sujjē pañîân, bhukhê trihâs,
 Lôi nē dēh gakhē ghatkē chha sād̄h rajâs,
 Ôrak qarza dēûnâ, bânîyē kôl jâs,
 Aggē baiñhâ bânîyâ phullân chhēj vichhâs.
 Lôi dhil na rakhiyâ chayh chhējē jâs.
 Ihdē kâhlē Rabb nē shitâbē jâs.
 Sainat kar gayâ Dhaul nân, dhartî hilâs.
 Bânîyē dē man vassiyâ munh mammâ pâs.
 Tē Lôi vûngân baurē Rabb dhil na lûs,
 Imminâbâd shahr dē dis pēyē mundârē,
 Âs lōk hamâkē ziyâpat dē mârē,
 Bhannîân jân kôvûrîân var mangânkhârē
 Var dēd pîrâ bandē laggân bahut piyârē.
 Pîr murûdân dittiân har arz natârē.*

*Chêlê sifâtân jôriân, parh xâm chitârē.
 Jitnē qâzî mu'tbar Dâné lēyē sadâs,
 Sabbhê jâkē bah gayē masit dē duâllē,
 Hêth bichhâtîyân shutrânjîân galichê nē dâlē,
 Sâmhîê hôkē bah gayē pîr dēkhan dē mârē.
 Qâzî kôl masit dē baiñhē mall maidân,
 Matâ pakdyâ qâzîân Shâh Sandalwalî makân.*

Traditions also — intricate and deep
 Their doctrines are — our blood is dried for
 fear —

We tremble. Tell us plainly if you have
 The gift of superhuman power.' Said he,
 'I have the One True Name — which has in
 the world

A thousand different forms. God gave great
 power

To great Har Nâshak, him who caused all men
 To worship him in place of God. Polâd
 Obeyed him not. He bound him fast in
 chains;

From red hot pillars God released him. God
 Was then believed in, and even now He will
 In this great trouble aid us in His own
 Good time.' Then the disciple, 'Bâlâ priest
 Art thou. Thou goest to the house of God
 Once every third hour of the day. One God
 Alone thou worshippest and wonders dost.
 The Most High is thy friend: thou triest us
 To prove us true. Once on a time the Sâdhs
 To Lôi came, the wife of Saint Kabîr.
 She had no food or water in the house
 And they were hungry, thirsty all, so she
 To feed them sold herself, and then at last,
 As debtors must, she went to pay, and he,
 The Bânîyâ creditor already had
 With flowers prepared his bed, but Lôi quick
 Ascending straight the couch, God heard her
 prayer,

And made a sign to Dhaul to shake the earth.
 He touched the Bânîyâ's heart, who like a
 child

Began to suck her breasts. As God helped her,
 He will not then delay to succour me.'
 The towers of Imminâbâd were now in sight,
 The people came in crowds to see the priest.
 The maids to get good husbands made request,
 'O priest, a blessing seek we — husbands good
 Whom we may love.' He granted their
 requests

As they preferred them one by one. These
 songs

Of praise the true disciple made; he reads,
 And still he glorifies the Name. Resume
 We Dâná's story. Priests and lawyers all
 Sat round the mosque on rugs and carpets
 spread

All in the open field, a great concourse,
 Desiring they to see the priest. The saint

*Tainūn sūri khabar hai, zēman tē āsmān.
Pīri ihāi vēkh dē phir karkē dhiyān,
Sandalwālī pīr dā jā karē dīdār,
Rabb tēvīdīn qudratīn tu apar apār,
Ih miyānōn bāhar hai sūn charhē talwār,
Tē Dānē dē karm hīnē hō gayē karmān ditti sū
hār.
Qāzī Sandalwālī nūn lēkē, bahīn durādē.
Kī kuchh āyā vēkhkē, das aggē sūddē,
Jhuthā makt pīr dā kī dīvā jāgē,
Baīh hathiyār larīgā ki aggē bhāgē,
Sandalwālī ākhād phir nālī imān,
Jhuth main nahīn ākhādīn, jānīd chhad jāhān,
Ih khambānwālī sap jē, udd charhiyā āsmān.*

*Kaun banēgā māndrī, kaun paṭārī pān.
Ākhē mērē lag jādō, na banō aiyān.
Sādm kar dēō sir opā, tū kar dē dān.
Qāzī gussē hō pēyā, vaṭ mathē ghattē,
Tērē jēhē darindē ghalliyē phir chōr uchakkē,
Tū bī Imminābād dē tukrē haīn chakkkhē.
Sach nahīn tū ākhād, phir hāl hai zāhīr,
Maīn garīb faqīr jē tukrē mang khāndā hān
chār,
Bhāvēn kaqāh chhad khān shahrōn bāhar vār,
Vāng baṭērē tarāph dēō huī jālī taiyār,
Matē laggē ānkē na jhagrē jute,
Qāzī karn ākhādīn, pīr nālī oh puthē,
Sharā tudh nahīn samajhiyā kyān chhattre
kuṭhē ?
Sharā uttōn sir vārdē, pēō puttr nū puchchē.
Murdār khānwālēān chhattre nahīn parwān,
Harām ākhē murdār nūn phir kull jāhān.
Shamas Tabrez pīr sē phir vich Multān.
Sharāwālī usdī ulī khāl lōhān,
Pīr jō ākhēd Danēd, chizān chār harām.
Khāndēān mar jāyē, mauhrā ik harām.*

Shāh Sandal they addressed, 'Thou knowest all,
In earth and heaven. Try this man's right to be
A priest by insight spiritual.' He went,
And seeing the priest he cried, 'O Lord how strange
And wonderful Thy works ! This is a sword
Outside its scabbard, whetted, ready drawn ;
The fate of Dānā now is sealed ; 'tis clear
That fortune is against him.' Leading then
Aside Saint Sandal all the lawyers wise
Interrogated him, 'What hast thou seen ?
How can the lamp of falsehood of this priest
Keep on to burn ? Say, will he fight or flee ?'
But Sandalwālī said, 'No lie speak I.
As sure as death is sure, he is in truth
A winged serpent. He can fly aloft
And touch the sky. There's none can charm
him
And dump him in a basket. My counsel hear,
Be not like children — yield obeisance meet,
And give him gifts.' The Qāzī straight
grew wroth.
He said, 'Away with such as you, you thief,
You rogue ! For nought you eat your share
of food
In Imminābād. You lie. You seek to save
This priest from shame.' But Sandalwālī
said,
'Tis plain. I am a poor *faqīr* ; I beg
My four poor bits of bread from door to door.
Expel me if you will, but know that like
A quail you're fluttering — the net is spread,
And ready for you.' So the Qāzī did
Not dare to meet the priest in argument,
But trifled with him, saying, 'You have no law.
Why did you slaughter sheep ? Men give
their lives
To uphold the law ; a father for it will
Behead his son. And those that eat the dead
Must not kill rams. The dead, as all men
know,
Are food unclean. Even Shams Tabrez the
priest
In far Multān was hanged and flayed, because
The law abiding willed it.' 'Dānā,' said the
priest,
'Four things unlawful are ; poison that kills,

*Dujjá paisá dhí dá, tríyá gussa harám,
Té murdár khákké mukarná chauthá tú harám,
Panjwaqt namáz guzardá bah andar parhá,
Talásh karén Qurán dí kitábán parhá
Murdár alháin nazr jó áwé us wal qadam nahín
dhará,
Wáz karén Rabb dá muñh thín kalma parhá.
Dáné, kalma parhá muñh thón tuddh Rabb
nahín yád,
Murdár áthé pahar khákké léindá rahén swád.
Sira kháén sátsé dá vadáá bhar rikáb,
Murda dabbañ tán déndéén jó lé léná askát.
Ih farmáda Rabb dá murdén nún kadón kadí
lagí zakát.*

*Kéhrí gallón Dáné, murdár thín hóná tú pák?
Dáné nú pata lag gayá murdár dá tólá lish-
káná.
Chúhréán dá pír hai, kóí bará saiyáná.
Gallón karé Janáb díán, vékhó Rabb dá bháíná.
Parhiyá kisi masit na, na vaid sujáná.
Pír ákhé, Dáné, hath Rabb dé bázi,
Zátín Rabb nahín ríjhí, bhagatín té rázi.
Aidé aidé maulazí, kithé phángáñ tusááí,
Pichhón dassán khólké, qiráfát tusááí.*

*Tarphánán dé gharón kaákké tussán ih pai-
kambari sázi.
Chéle sifáñ jôridán kar himmat bázi.
Dáné ákhýá pír nún, "Parándár hó jáín
Gussa bará harám hai, mat kuchh qahr karáín
Mihé dévén siré dé, paikambarán nún
tarphán banéén.
Tainún tán chháñ sán, patá láks díkhéén
Ádar Hindú lók sí, nit nám dhídháwé,
Qasab karé tarphán dá, thákur nit banáwé,
Shahr vich khar véchda, nit rózi páwé,
Oháá putr Ibráhm sí, ik din béchañ jáwé.
Tángáñ rassá ghatké dhur bázáñ lé jáwé,
Qímat léáwé déodhí, láh khat léáwé
Ihdú aggé paikambari kóí parh sunáwé.
Chéle sifáñ jôridán parh nám sunáwé.
Chaudán tabaq jáákké Rabbé áp banéé.*

A price paid for a daughter when she weds,
An angry outburst, and the use of food
Unlawful. Carrion you eat and straight
Deny, for five times in a day you pray,
You read; you search your old Qorán; you
read

Your books, and will not even look towards
A creature dead. You preach; the *kalma* too
You oft repeat, but only from the lips;
Heart of godliness you know not. Carrion
Is sweet to you the whole day long. You love
The taste of food that's given the seventh day
past

A burial — a full dish you devour, nay
Interment you forbid unless the fee
Is paid. Is this God's will? Who forced a
tax

Upon the dead? Is this not proved to be
To eat the dead? Speak *Daná*. 'Daná
learned

What real carrion is — he saw the priest
Was wise, and in his heart he said, 'He speaks
Of godly things — how wonderful the ways
Of God are. See this man has never
learned

In mosque, or been to school to any wise
Philosopher.' 'Daná,' the priest said,
'Learn

That he whom God gives victory will win,
He hates our castes, and worship true he
loves.

Great teachers ye, but whera are seen your
shrines.

I tell your errors, those that lived before
Your prophet, made them idols false just like
Your carpenters. That's where your pro-
phetship

Arose.' The true disciple without fear
Composed this song. Said Dana to the priest,
'Begone! Excite me not to sin, for rage
Is sin. You taunt me with the gift of food,
My right to the interment of the dead.

You call the prophets carpenters. You must
Full satisfaction give.' The priest replied,
'Adar, a Hindu, once addressed the Name.

A carpenter was he, his work was sale
Of idols, which he made and hawked about
The streets. His son was Ibráhm, who went
One day to sell his idols. He tied a rope
To the idol's leg, which dangled from his
arm,

*Khwāhish nabī paikambar dī munh thān
farmāē
Ōh dā rūh rēhā vich kutāb dē, duniyā tē
pichchōn dē
Paikambar vadde tussān thān kōī parh sunde,
Dānēd, na zamīn dsmān sī na qalam siyāhī
Ādam paidā karn dī Rabb khwāhish pāī.*

*Hōyā hukam firishtēān, mitṭī aṇvāī.
Aql challī phir Rabb dī unhnān gō banāī,
Sēhnā but ban gayā, chihra bandā nahān,
Aggē pāk Janāb dē, unhnān arz sunāī.
Allāh Ta'ālā ākhiyā phir apnī zabānī
Pānī vallōn vēkhō khān kar shishī nishānā.
Pānī firishtēān dīṭhiyā Bālā pīr dī pēshānī
Rāzī firishtē hō gayē, kam hōē asānā.
Chūhṛā aggōn milān dī ih paklā nishānā.
Paikambar vadde pēyā ākhnā ēn, phir apnī
zabānī.
Nindiyā karēn paikambarān haiṇ ummat
nishānā,
Jinhān dittē aggē Rabb dē putr qurbānā.
Kar kutṭhē qiblē; sāmhnē kaḍh kard miyānān.
Allāh āumā bhējīyā kṛtī mīhrbānā.”
Pīr jō ākhē, “Dānēd, hai barā imānwālā.
Jān tūn masla ākhnāēn, vich rakhēn ālā
Trakkar dharkē tōliyā Rabb nē sidq paikam-
barā dā sārā,
Paikambar akhīn badhān, putr lago sū piyārā.
Kāhād rah gayā Rabb dā oh bhagat piyārā?
Chēlē sifātān jīrīdān kar 'aql niyārā.*

*Bālā nūrī pīr sī Lal Bēg dē autār.
Rahnā tarāf Kashmir dī kōī vich ujār.*

As to the market place he carried it.
The price rose twofold and the boy made
more
Of profit than his father. Tell me now
Was ever greater saint than Ibrāhīm? 'The true disciple has compiled this song
To praise the Name. The fourteen spheres
God made,
One half the earth, one half the heavens. He
made
Them all in wisdom — so the prophet wished
God said and it was done. The prophet's
soul
Was then in Polar star so high. It came
To the world, A greater prophet let us name
Than yours. O Dānā, neither earth nor
heaven
Existed then — nor pen nor ink was there
When God made Adam. Angels at his word
Brought earth, and fashioned it : the face
they could
Not make. Therefore to God himself they
went
With a petition. Then the Most High God
Spake thus himself, 'Look into water pure
And steady look.' They saw great Bala's face.
With joy the work was all completed. This
Is why, when anything that's great must needs
Be done, a Chuhṛā's face is omen good.
You call your prophet great, but only great
Because you say it. Said Dānā, 'You speak
ill
About the prophets who have children still
Among us. Gave they not their sons to God
In sacrifice? Unsheathing knives they gave
Their sons to God with faces Mecca-wards,
But God in mercy sent a ram instead.'
The priest said, 'Dānā, good and faithful,
you
In such discussion keep a window in
The wall. You err. God has with perfect
scales
Weighed prophets' faithfulness; a bandage
On his eyes did Ibrāhīm the prophet place,
Because his son was dear to him. Was this
Done like God's lover true? Ah, no.'
'Twixt right
And wrong the true disciple makes, with care,
A difference. He sings God's praises. Priest
Of light was Bālā, who became Lal Beg
Incarnate. Lived he in Kashmir, among

Dôvé usdê bál sâñ, rahin mátd nâl,
 Nau dâñú panj dévte Rabb lai layé nâl.
 Matthé ñiké láké vês unhân dhâlê,
 Jinêu málân pahînkê dhôtî parnâ laê,
 Dêré Bálê pîr dé, já karn sawdl.
 T'u Bálâ pîr bhagat hai, sâqâd vart upâr
 Jô ghar di jáddât sí, pîr sabbhé lai vaggé.
 Shahr varé jáké rakhé báñiyé dé aggé.
 Véchi nâl lifâde hath dâñé laggé,
 Pîr partiýd kahl nâl, ghar jag suraggé.
 Bálê nurî pîr né chhe chakkî chuhâñ
 Pîr áhndâ kâññi nû méré sâdh rajdân
 Lôh Máñ málâ dhar ditti, parsâd pakdî.
 Ann pakdâ par dhêr sí, rahî kamî na kâñ
 Áó rasôñ jiêun lô, méré Thâkur sâñ.
 Chêlé siftdñ jôñdñ, parñ nám sunâññ
 Sâdh khân nûñ á gayé karké Rabb dé á,
 Bôññ khânñ vekhké nâl riddhâ nahîñ mäs.

Assân té Bálâ pîr samajhêd sâññ kôñ Rabb
 dâ dâs.

(Chêlé siftdñ jôñdñ hó bé visvâs)

Assân té suniýd sâññ bhagat tú kôñ Rabb dâ
 bhârâ.

Aivên val bahâññi kî kîññ kârd.

Huñ tññ jáké mangdê, kôñ ráj divârd
 Mäs pakdê khud kân, jag kar khân sârd.

Sâdh challê ruskê kauñ mandunhârâ.

Chêlé siftdñ jôñdñ kar 'aql niýdâ.

Bálâ nurî pîr sí mandwan jáññ

Miliýd jáké sadhûññ lammé qadam chaldî,

Miliýd já ujâr vich us arz sunâññ,

Bhukhâ duniýd dhêr hai, phir vich lukdî.

Mêrd kunîd chalêó chhadhê kî dil vich di.

Chêlé siftdñ jôñdñ, parñ nám sunâññ

Sâdh aggôn partkê phir sukhan sunâññ,

Dô téré ghar bál né chîr déghê pânñ

Jé sat vâñ khvâññi hai tññ môñ lé jáññ.

Jé Rabb piýdâ tudh nûñ tññ bál khôvâññ.

Pîr manûkê sâdhûññ mur ghar val áyâ,

Bálak dôvé khêddê báñññ mangwâé.

The ruins there. Two sons he had, Mahin
 Their mother lived with them. Nine genii
 And angels five God took with Him. They
 had

The sacred marks upon their foreheads —
 Threads

And rosaries they had, and garments used
 By holy men. All in this guise they came
 To Balmik's house. They said, 'A priest of
 God

Art thou, O Bálâ, give us food our fast
 To break.' The priest took all his house-
 hold goods

And sold them in the town to purchase corn
 Enough to satisfy them. Home he came,
 And set six mills agoing. 'Kaññi, see,'
 Said he, 'the men of God be satisfied.'
 Then Mother Mahin cooked their food upon
 The fire. Enough there was and more. 'Now
 come,'

Said Bálâ, 'dine, ye men of God, my friends.'
 This song the true disciple made — tell forth
 The glory of the Name. Those godly men
 Sat soon to dine, with hope in God. 'It is
 But bread,' they cried, 'There is no flesh,
 We thought

That Bálâ was a servant of the Lord.'

(Without a fear the true disciple sings.)

'We heard thou wert a mighty man of God.
 And hast thou entertained us with such food
 As this is? What is this that thou hast
 done?

At some king's door we might have begged
 for alms.

Cook flesh and feed us, make a sacrifice
 Complete.' They rose dissatisfied. Who
 could

Restrain them? Reason's eyes had then the
 true

Disciple when he made this song. A priest
 Of light was Bálâ, therefore ran he quick
 To plead with them. He met them in the
 wilds

And made request. 'There are a many men
 That wander in the world. Why did you not
 Taste my poor offering: what thought kept
 back

Your favour?' The disciple framed this
 song.

They answered him, 'Thou hast two sons at
 home,

*Pāñ garm karākē phir jhōl muhādē,
 Kar kuthē Allah sāmhnē Shāh kard challādē.⁷
 Mahin māid kōl vēkhā, jis gōd khiqdē,
 Nainān nēr na phuṭiyā na gairat khādē,
 Bālak haiñ Rabb dē, ohdē lēkhē lādē.
 Chélē siftdān jōridān parh nam suñdē.
 Laykē chār chārke dēgān dñ dharāññ
 Lūñ visār dōdhāññ vich marchāñ pāyāñ
 Jāñ dēgāñ sāñ riddhāññ chd hēphāñ lāyāñ
 Aō rasōi jiēuñ lō, mērē Thākur sūññ.
 Gurzāñ sādāññ chuk lē, chal khāyē chhāññd
 Rahādrē dā thāñ hai, mat kōi chuk lējāññd.
 Chor hōwē aggāñ piēhāññ man pachhōtāññd.
 Ghar apñd sambhāyē kauñ chōr sadāññd.
 Pīr sādē nū Dāñdē, Rabb dē azmāññd
 Chélē siftdān jōridān parh nam suññāññd.
 Gurz il main pakaykē lē chālāññ dērē,
 Jāñ main itthē baithāññ tukhādē pās valēvē,
 Kis khādē Rabb nū puttārāññ dē bēvē,
 Chélē siftdān jōridān parh nam vadhērē.*

*Gurzāñ sādāññ chaudah chuk lē sī vārī,
 Chuklē jandē nūñ vēkhē phir parjā sārī,
 Jag sarpāran hōwēgā gal hōwēgi niyārī
 Sōhāb tērī hōwēgi khalag Allah sārī.
 Pīr gurzāñ karkē ikatthāññ karē nazr dhiyāñ
 Main nūñ pēyāññ nēñ chukñññ ih Rabb dā
 jārman.
 Ghat bāññ bāl chukñññ chhātī gayā trāñ
 Nau dāññ panj dēvī vēkh hōē hairāñ
 Is chukñññ nē chādāññ, sāñññññ il nahāñ māñ*

Them dress and boil if thou in truth dost wish
 To take us with thee. Prove thy love to
 God,
 And feed us with thy sons.' The priest
 consents
 And leads them back. The boys were sent
 for from
 Their play: hot water straight was brought;
 the boys
 Were bathed: in sight of God the Shāh
 himself
 Did kill them; Mother Mahin, who had held
 Them sporting in her lap, was standing by,
 Nor ever shed a tear, nor sorrow felt,
 Her sons were God's, His gift. This song
 The true disciple made and of the Name
 He sings. The boys were cut in pieces, and,
 The pans being set on the hearth, they were
 with salt
 And yellow dye, and liquid spices, red
 Hot pepper too, well-cooked, and set before
 The strangers. 'Come, my friends, ye men
 of God,
 And eat,' said Bālā. 'Lift,' said they, 'our
 clubs
 Of iron. We will go to dine. We need
 To careful be, for if some one should steal
 Them, we should grieve, and some one would
 be called
 A thief.' Give heed, O Dānā, thus our
 priest
 Was tested by the Lord himself. To sing
 The Name the true disciple made this song.
 'I can,' said Bālā, 'lift an iron club,
 And home convey it, or to guard your clubs
 I'll sit beside them.' Who has given to God
 The flesh of his own sons to eat? This
 song
 The true disciple, thinking of the Name,
 Has made. 'We have,' said they, 'clubs
 fourteen told,
 Uplift them all, the world will see thy might,
 Thy sacrifice will be complete; thy griefs
 Will end. All men will praise thee.' So he
 made
 A bundle of the iron clubs, and said,
 'Lift them I must. 'Tis God commands.'
 He put
 His hands about them, then with effort strong

(To be continued.)

THE INSCRIPTION ON THE PIPRAHWA VASE.

BY A. BARTH, MEMBRE DE L'INSTITUT.

(Translated from the French by G. Tamson, M.A., Ph.D.; Göttingen.)

[THE original article, of which a translation with the author's permission is given here, appeared in the *Journal des Savants* for October, 1906, p. 541 ff. M. Barth, who some eight years ago, almost simultaneously with the late Professor Bühler, first translated the Piprahwa vase inscription, has examined in it the interpretations which were afterwards given of that interesting document by other eminent scholars; and a translation of his paper will be sure to be welcome to all to whom the French Journal is not readily accessible. Those who are interested in the matter must be aware that the discussion on the meaning of the inscription has been carried on by my friend Dr. Fleet, in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for 1907, p. 105 ff. — F. K.]

THE Academy of Inscriptions was the first to be made acquainted with this short but interesting document.¹ I had the honour of laying it before that body² more than eight years ago, when the steatite vase on which it is engraved had just been discovered. The vase was found under a large Stūpa, near the hamlet of Piprahwa, at the north-eastern extremity of the district of Bastī, still in [542] British territory, but only about half a mile from the Nepal frontier. The following is the text, which I reproduce as I then received it from Dr. Führer through M. Foucher, and as it was accepted till quite recently. I add the translation that Bühler³ and myself gave of it immediately, almost at the same time and independently of each other:—

yanam

iyam salilanidbane budhasa bhagavate saki sukutibhatinam sabhaginikanam saputa-
dalanam.⁴

“This receptacle of relics of the blessed Buddha (*is the pious gift*) of the Sākya, the brothers of Sukirti (*or* Sukīrti and his brothers⁵), jointly with their sisters, their sons and their wives.”

This short inscription, of which more careful fac-similes that came in soon after had left not a single letter doubtful, and the sense of which also seems at first sight sufficiently clear, has since that time continually occupied the specialists and even been brought before a larger public; for, the daily press deigned to be interested in “the tomb of Buddha,” and all that has been written on the subject would fill a volume. Yet, as all these controversies presented only solutions that, in my opinion, could not be accepted, and did not bring forward a single new fact, I for my part did not wish to re-open the discussion. But now a new fact has been disclosed, against all expectation. One of the scholars that have rendered the greatest services to Indian epigraphy, Dr. Fleet, has rectified the order in which the inscription should be read; and from the result thus obtained — a result which, in my opinion, strengthens rather than weakens the position taken up by Bühler and myself from the beginning — he has drawn a different interpretation and far-reaching considerations which his great authority, as well as the minute learning and the confident tone with which he has produced them, [543] might cause to be accepted as established facts. I have, therefore, thought it my duty to take up the whole question again and in some detail. I do not, however, intend to

¹ This article reproduces a lecture delivered before the *Académie des Inscriptions* at its meeting of 15th June 1906.

² *Comptes rendus de l'Académie*, 1898, pp. 146 and 231.

³ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1898, p. 387 ff.

⁴ The two syllables *yanam* are engraved above the line. Of course, the words are not separated in the original, which forms a single continuous line.

⁵ Three interpretations are possible: the two given above and “the Sukirti brothers.” In support of the second one I know of no other example in epigraphy. For the third we have the case of ‘the three Vasubandhu brothers,’ but it is only given in documents derived from China, in which misunderstandings may always be suspected. Thus, the first one remains, of which also there is no exactly similar instance, but which is supported by the analogous use of the metronymic replacing the name. It is at the same time the most natural one, and, upon the whole, the one I deem preferable. It must be assumed that the donors thought themselves sufficiently indicated by what was probably their common surname. — [Compare now also Prof. Hultzsch in *Ep. Ind.* Vol. VIII. p. 317, note 1. — F. K.]

draw up the bibliography of it, which would be too great a trial of the reader's patience. Of the numerous opinions expressed I shall examine only the principal ones, those that are the most characteristic and really original.

The first objection — first, if not in order of time, at least by the authority of him who raised it — came from Professor Rhys Davids.⁶ The word *sukīrti*, which corresponds to the Sanskrit *sukīrti* and means "glorious, illustrious," instead of being the name of some unknown person, would in his opinion here denote the Buddha himself, and the Stūpa of Piprahwa would be the identical one that, according to the ancient account preserved in the *Mahāparinibbāna-Sutta*, the Sākyas of Kapilavastu, — here "the brethren of the Illustrious One," that is to say, the men of his clan, — had raised immediately after the Master's death over their share of his ashes. The Stūpa of Piprahwa, which is only about eight miles south-west of Rummindēī, the site of the ancient park of Lumbinī, the birth-place of the Buddha, was certainly, if not at Kapilavastu itself, in close proximity to that ancient city, the exact position of which has still to be determined. On the other hand, Professor Rhys Davids has learnedly demonstrated — and on this point I entirely agree with him — that we must not take too literally the legends that show us king Aśōka breaking open (with the exception of a single one, that of Rāmagrāma, which is not that of Piprahwa) the eight Stūpas among which the relics were said to have originally been divided, and distributing their contents among 84,000 new Stūpas, miraculously constructed by himself in one day at the four corners of his empire. The explanation, therefore, is a very attractive one; it is, at the same time, so natural that it must have presented itself to the minds of all who have dealt with the inscription. And, in fact, Professor Rhys Davids is not the first to whom this idea occurred: from various quarters and immediately after the discovery, it was brought forward in Indian newspapers. Nor have I any doubt that it was considered by Bühler, and at any rate I myself thought of it. If, nevertheless, we both of us set it aside, it may be supposed that we had our reasons for doing so.

Among those reasons I will not reckon the objection raised by Professor Rhys Davids himself, namely, that *sukīrti* is not a current epithet of the Buddha. The fact is that hitherto it has not been noted as such either in Pāli, or in Sanskrit, or in the Prākṛit of the inscriptions; nor is it found among the 81 appellations collected from the *Mahāvūyutpatti*, nor among the 58 in the shorter list published by [544] Minayev. But we might readily admit that, after having expressly mentioned the Buddha, the author of the inscription should afterwards have referred to him by a simple laudatory epithet. Nor do I attach any importance to the fact that neither to Fa-hian, nor to Hiuen-tsiang, was any Stūpa shown containing relics of the Buddha, either at Kapilavastu itself or in its neighbourhood. But the two following considerations appear less easy to be set aside.

In the first place there is the writing, which is so perfectly identical with that of the inscriptions of Aśōka engraved in the same characters that it seems impossible to separate the two by an interval of more than two centuries. Bühler, who with good reason was ever on the look-out for any facts that might prove an early use of writing in India, simply declared that he considered the inscription to be anterior to Aśōka; but he died, without telling us by how much or why. I suppose that his sole reason was the absence of any notation of the long vowel. But, in addition to the fact that this notation is practised with a certain amount of laxity in the authentic inscriptions of the king⁷ — (it is well known that in the other system of writing which reads from right to left it has never been in use) — it is entirely absent from one of the inscriptions of Rāmgarh-Hill,⁸ which no one has yet desired to date before Aśōka, and it is equally absent from the copper-plate inscription of Sāhgaurā,⁹ with one single exception. And it is this very exception that, as it would

⁶ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1901, p. 397 ff.

⁷ For example in that of Rummindēī. *Comptes rendus de l'Académie des Inscriptions*, 1897, p. 258.

⁸ *Corpus Inscr. Ind.* I. Pl. XV, *Ind. Ant.* II, p. 245. Cf. A. Boyer, *Journ. Asiatique*, III. (1904), p. 485, and R. Fischel, *Sitzungsberichte* of the Berlin Academy, May 1906, p. 494.

⁹ *Proceedings As. Soc. Bengal*, 1894, p. 84. — [Now see also *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1907, p. 509 ff. — Ed.]

seem, ought to give us a hint as to what was the real state of matters. The simplest explanation clearly is to see in the general absence of the long vowel the result of an intentional simplification, and to regard the exceptional occurrence of it in the plate as a mere slip of the writer or engraver who at the very end and in this one case only reverted to a practice that came familiar to him, not, as Dr. Fleet wishes, as a sign of the still uncertain use of a newly introduced notation. In our inscription, on the other hand, there is no similar inadvertency; here the simplification is a consistent one, and is moreover justified in this kind of graffito, where the characters, slender and somewhat cursive, are traced distinctly but very slightly, as if cut with a knife, but yet without presenting either in detail or in their general aspect any trace of those modifications that usually reveal a difference in time. It is certainly rash to judge of the age of a document [545] from simple palæographic analogies. But when, as is the case here, there is a complete identity, not only as to the component parts, but also as to the style, with memorials of the same origin, hesitation is no longer permissible. It would require an incontrovertible proof to make us separate our inscription from the neighbouring ones of Nigliva and Rumnindāi by two centuries or more.

This argument concerns only the age assigned by Professor Rhys Davids to the inscription. The following one touches the very core of his interpretation, namely, the description of the Sākyaas as "brethren of the Buddha." In Sanskrit, as well as in Pāli, the word that here occurs in the Prākṛit form of *bhātī* properly signifies "brother," and in the present case, where it is immediately followed by the words for "sister, son, wife," there is, *a priori*, every probability that it has been employed, like these, in its proper sense. In certain cases it can also be used, by extension, for a very near relative, such as a cousin. Now we do not know of any "brothers" of the Buddha,¹⁰ and the cousins whom we know he had have nothing to do with the matter in hand. For more distant degrees of relationship we have *jīvātī*, *varuṣya*, *bandhu*, *saṅgōtra*, and others, but never *bhrātṛi*; at most, this word might be employed in such a sense in direct address, but in that case with a shade of familiarity which would be absolutely out of place here. Even spiritual brotherhood does not admit the use of this term; we find *Buddhaputras*, *Sākya-putras*, "sons of the Buddha, of the Sākya," but the religious language knows of no "brethren of the Buddha." When ascetics meet, they address each other as "venerable one," or with *āyushmat* (equivalent to "may you live long"), never as "brother" and when a monk accosts a nun and calls her *bhaginī*, "sister," it is in a very different sense, so as distinctly to mark the purity of their relations. All the more would pious laymen have scrupled to use, in an authentic document, the familiar term of "brother" in connection with Buddha Bhagavat, "the Saint, the Blessed Buddha," the exalted being who in the oldest books of the sect is called "the Master of gods and men." Even for the period contemporaneous with that of the Buddha the supposition appears to me improbable, and I may add at once that it would be still more so if the inscription were of a later date. Professor Rhys Davids asks himself if the sole reason of the sceptics, who feel doubts as to his demonstration, might perhaps be that "it is too good to be true." And, indeed, there is something in this, but there is something else besides.

Professor Pischel has arrived at the same conclusion as Professor Rhys Davids, [546] but by another way.¹¹ He objects to the word expressing the idea of gift or of pious act being understood, although the case frequently occurs, perhaps in one out of every three similar documents,¹² and even though in the present case the word need not really be understood at all. It is so, in fact, only for us, in consequence of the requirements of our languages; in the original it is sufficiently expressed by *nidhāna*, "receptacle, repository," this *nidhāna*

¹⁰ Tradition ascribes to him a half-brother, Nanda, who became a monk.

¹¹ *Allgemeine Zeitung, Beilage*, 7 Jan. 1902; *Zeitschrift der deutschen morg. Gesellschaft*, LVI. (1902), p. 157 f.; *Sitzungsberichte* of the Berlin Academy, July 1903, p. 710, and May 1905, p. 526.

¹² A quite similar ellipsis is the rule in inscriptions on coins and seals, where the name of the king or of the owner is simply put in the genitive, without a governing word.

being that of the Buddha whose relics it contains, as well as that of the Sākya, whose work it is. Professor Pischel, nevertheless, seeks for this superfluous word, and finds it in *sukiti*, which, according to him, stands for the Sanskrit *sukṛiti*, "pious foundation." No one will deny either the sense of the Sanskrit word or the possibility of the Prakṛit equivalent, although according to the analogies of the Pāli and of the Māgadhī of the inscriptions one would rather have expected *sukati* or *sukaṭi*. But all the same the expression is found nowhere in the numerous inscriptions of that period, which are nearly all deeds of gift or of consecration and in which stylistic formulas abound; so we find in them *dāna*, *dānamukha*, *lāyadhamma*, *dharmadēya*, *dhamma*, but nothing resembling *sukṛiti*. However, passing by these objections, which certainly make one suspicious, we have the translation: "This receptacle of the relics of the blessed Buddha is the pious foundation of the Sākya, of the brothers with their sisters, with their children and their wives." In this translation we at once feel the halting character in the original of the construction proposed by Professor Pischel. The genitive *bhātināṃ* stands in the air. We are not "the Sākya brothers," any more than we are "the French brothers" or "the German brothers;" we are "the brothers of somebody." It is necessary that this genitive, striding not only over *sukiti* but also over *sakiyaṇāṃ*, should go on to attach itself to *budhasa bhagavate*, where it has not even a grammatical connection, — a kind of verbal gymnastics perhaps admissible in the artificial style of the poets, but one which would be surprising in this language of the inscriptions which, though often elliptical and involved, is always direct. For surely this is how Prof. Pischel takes the matter: these Sākya are the brothers, that is to say the distant relatives of the Buddha; and as he is accustomed to speak out plainly, he asserts as an established fact that the Stūpa is "the very tomb of the Buddha," and that the inscription, the most ancient hitherto found [547] in India, was engraved immediately, or shortly, after his death, exactly in the year 480 B. C. After what has been stated above, namely, that there is little suitability in this fraternal relationship and that it is practically impossible to date the writing so far back, I hardly need add that Professor Pischel's interpretation appears inadmissible to me.

Professor Sylvain Lévi, too, has turned his attention to this patient, so obstinate in not allowing himself to be cured.¹³ Pursuing the course of investigation started by Professor Pischel, he also sets upon the word *sukiti*, but he makes it an adjective corresponding to the Sanskrit *sukṛitin*, "meritorious, pious," and qualifying "the brothers." From the point of view of the dictionary, nothing could be more legitimate; what is much less so is the joining together, in a compound, of this adjective with *bhātināṃ*. For, in this language of the oldest inscriptions, an adjective which is simply used as an epithet does not ordinarily compound with the substantive it qualifies, unless the two together constitute a standing expression. These "Sākya, pious brothers," then, are naturally the brothers of the Buddha, which produces another difficulty to which I need not return again. I shall only remark that Professor Lévi, who points out the "awkwardness" of Professor Pischel's construction, proposes another which also is not very good, for with him, too, *bhātināṃ* is separated in a most untoward fashion from the word by which it is really or logically governed. Professor Lévi gives us the choice of two interpretations. According to one we should have the relics of the Buddha consecrated by the Sākya, his pious brothers, together with their families. This, on the whole, is the conclusion of Professor Rhys Davids, with a less easy construction, and I think I have explained why I cannot accept it. In one point, however, a single one, Professor Lévi has improved it: he has clearly seen the difficulty of dating back this writing to the time of the Buddha, and he has not failed to warn us against the robust faith that allowed Professor Pischel to set it aside. He therefore supposes that the inscription merely recalls a more ancient consecration, and that it was probably cut on the occasion of

¹³ *Journal des Savants*, 1905, p. 540 ff.

a reconstruction of the Stūpa, such as tradition ascribes to Aśoka, and, who can tell?, perhaps by order of the king himself. Out of discretion, in which I have little faith, the promoter of the new consecration would have withheld his name. The improvement is a welcome one; but all the other difficulties continue to exist: one of them, the epithet of brothers bestowed on the Sākya, happens to be even increased, as this qualification was no longer conceivable at a time when the Buddha, in the eyes of his followers, was invested with all his superhuman dignity.

According to the second interpretation, which Professor Lévi prefers, [548] we should no longer have to deal with the relics of the Buddha, but with those of the Sākya, his pious brothers, who, in the well-known legend, are massacred by Virūḍhaka, together with their wives and little children. The monument, no doubt erected afterwards, as the writing seems clearly to indicate, would perhaps be the Stūpa mentioned by Fa-hian, or one of the numerous Stūpas seen by Hsien-tsiang on the field of the massacre. The explanation is certainly ingenious; yet I doubt if it will bear examination, on account of the many difficulties it raises. There is, first, the construction, which, this time, is decidedly defective: with the meaning proposed, *sukitibhatināṃ* would have to come before *sakīyanāṃ* and immediately after *buddhasa bhagavate*. Then there is the absence of all mention of the promoter or promoters of the consecration. The researches in the Stūpa have brought to light no trace of it; it ought therefore to be found here. On reliquaries this absence only occurs where the inscription, a very short one, is a mere kind of label.¹⁴ For the moment, at least, I know of no other example of it in a formula so fully developed as this one. And the fact is easily explained. The recording of such names was certainly not a case of mere ostentation, on objects destined to be buried deep underground and never again to see the light of day. When we see how on the reliquary of Bhaṭṭiprōḷa, for instance,¹⁵ which presents so striking an analogy with ours, there is a long enumeration of names not only of the promoters of the foundation but of all those who took even the least part in it, — and, I will add, when we see how in our own case also, if the inscription is understood as it ought to be, the brothers of Sukīrti associate in their work their whole house, — we are bound to reflect that there was in this something more than a gratification of vanity, and that a mystic efficacy was attributed to the recording of such names. The invention of the “pious brothers” does not compensate us for this deficiency.

There still remains the erection of the Stūpa in honour of those Sākya and the consecration of their relics. Professor Lévi calls it a canonisation, and so it would be, but a strange one. These Sākya of the legend are by no means the innocent victims that Professor Lévi presents to us. On three occasions, we are told, the Buddha averted from them the vengeance that they had brought upon themselves by their arrogance and bad faith; on the fourth time, he calmly allowed their fate to overtake them. In general, and in spite of forced eulogistic amplifications, tradition does not deal tenderly with the Sākya: it represents them as proud, obstinate, and quarrelsome; it by no means hides the fact that the Buddha had no reason, exactly, [549] to be satisfied with his people, and that, in his case too, the proverb was verified that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. That afterwards people should have been moved to pity by this catastrophe, real or not so, of Kapilavastu, and that Stūpas should have been erected in honour of the victims so as to indicate the traditional locality of the massacre, is most natural. The Chinese pilgrims saw these Stūpas, and the fact that in recent times Dr. Führer took upon himself to invent them anew and to manufacture for each of them a nice epitaph in Pāli, is not a reason for doubting their naïf testimony. But this is a long way from the existence of a worship of relics. For, what we find at Piprahwa is neither a tomb nor a simple commemorative monument; it is a veritable repository of relics. Even without any inscription, the objects discovered there would prove this,¹⁶ namely, some pieces of bone mixed with *maṅgalas*, ornaments in gold, gold beads, pearls, small trinkets and images, &c., all that is usually found in similar cases. And these relics must have been

¹⁴ As on those of Sōṇāri; Cunningham, *Bhilsa Topes*, p. 317.

¹⁵ *Archæological Surv. of India, Imp. Series*, XV. For the inscriptions, Bühler, *Wiener Zeitschr.*, VI. p. 143, and *Epigr. Ind.* II. p. 326.

¹⁶ See the Report of Mr. Peppé, *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1898, p. 573 ff. Cf. *Archæol. Surv. of India, Imp. Series*, XXVI. 1; Pl. XIII, XXVII, XXVIII.

of the very first order, for the Stūpa is one of large dimensions; even now, washed as it has been for so many centuries by the diluvial rains of that region, it presents a structure of considerable bulk, and excavations to a depth of 28 feet were necessary to reach the sacred repository consisting of steatite vases, two of which were large urns of the finest finish, and of a precious crystal casket of admirable workmanship. That this should have been done for laymen — to the number of 9,990 myriads according to the statement of Hiuen-tsiang — who never passed for saints, who, still for Fa-hian,¹⁷ were only *śrōtaāpannas*, simple candidates for sanctity and such only *in articulo mortis*, appears to me, of all suppositions, the most improbable.

Such was the state of matters when, by a simple remark, Dr. Fleet put things in their proper light.¹⁸ He informed us that, hitherto, we had all of us misread the inscription: that it does not begin with *iyam salilanidhane*. To prove this, he had only to draw our attention to the fact that it must necessarily end with *sakiyanam*, the last two syllables of which are engraved above the line. The inscription is written in a circle round the neck of the vase,¹⁹ and, as the circle was completed before the inscription, the engraver was forced to add the end by placing it above the line. This is clearness itself. That it was not [550] perceived sooner, is owing in the first place to the apparent exactness of the first copies, and next to the fact that the faulty arrangement they gave raised no important difficulties. The copies which Bühler and myself had at first received, indeed, presented the inscription expanded into one or two lines; we did know, it is true, that it was written in a circle, like most epigraphs on reliquaries; but it was not till later that we learned that this circle was quite complete, and then the matter had taken its bent. For my own part, I might even plead an additional lame excuse: in my first copy the text began not with *iyam*, but with the puzzling reading *yam*; the *i* had been taken for a flourish and represented as such in the copy, and in my turn I was naturally bound to see in it one of those symbols often placed at the head of this kind of documents.

However this may be, Dr. Fleet's correction, though late in the day, is none the less certain; and what definitely proves it is that it removes the last anomalies and difficulties that might still have remained in the inscription. We have in fact now the following translation in telegraphic style: —

“Of the brothers of Sukīrti, with sisters, with sons and wives, — this receptacle of relics of the blessed Buddha of the Sākyaas.”

Here, everything is in order: the string of genitives, which might have given rise to objections in the first arrangement, is distributed in an irreproachable manner; first, the donors or founders; then, the nature and object of the foundation, which is the normal construction; equally normal, as M. Senart reminds us by referring to numerous instances,²⁰ is the genitive plural at the end, *sakiyanam*, to indicate the tribe or sect; applied to the Buddha, it is a development of expressions like *Śākyamuni*, *Sākyasinhha*, “the hermit, the lion of the Sākyaas.” So the first interpretation, which Bühler and myself gave, has been confirmed, with the exception that the promoters of the consecration are no longer described as Sākyaas. In their own time they were no doubt great personages; but, as in the case of so many others, we know nothing of them but their name. The detail, however, is not without importance; for it is not very probable that, at the period indicated by the writing, *Sākya* should still have existed as an ethnical designation.

And, at the same time, there is an end of the other interpretations that I have just examined. The one least affected is still that of Professor Rhys Davids; but [551] it, too, is affected, and deeply; for *sukīrti*, having again become decidedly a proper name, but now coming at the beginning, and being no longer an epithet used as a reminder, can no longer indicate the Buddha. Still more impossible are Professor Pischel's “pious foundation of the brothers,” and Professor Lévi's “pious brothers,” who would no longer be connected with anything. Except as a previously adopted

¹⁷ Translation by Legge, p. 67.

¹⁸ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1905, p. 680 ff.

¹⁹ See the reproduction I gave of it, after a copy by the hand of Dr. Führer, *Comptes rendus de l'Académie des Inscriptions*, 1898, p. 232. In this reproduction the outlines of the letters are accurate, but the strokes are too thick.

²⁰ *Journal Asiatique*, VII. (1903), p. 135.

conclusion, there can be no longer any question either of "the tomb of Buddha," erected shortly after his death, or of relics of the Sākya's massacred during his life-time. These interpretations fall to the ground so completely that I might even have been dispensed from discussing them, if Dr. Fleet himself had not forced me to do so by his attempt to re-establish them, at least partly, by a new interpretation, in my opinion as untenable as the others. As it would have been necessary, in any case, to combat them, it was as well to do so in the order in which they were brought forward.

Dr. Fleet accepts, in effect, Professor Rhys Davids' now so improbable interpretation of *sukiti* as a designation of the Buddha: from Professor Lévi he takes over the latter's general conclusion that we have to deal with the relics of the victims of the massacre. But then the *sakiyanāḥ* at the end can no longer be an ethnical name, as "the Sākya's of the Buddha" would have no sense in any language. So he makes it an adjective, representing it as from the Sanskrit *svakiya*, "suus, proprius," with the meaning of "relations, kinsmen," which the word really has; and he thus obtains the following translation²¹ which I reproduce while preserving as much as possible the order of words of the original:—

"Of the brethren of the Well-famed One, with (*their*) sisters, with (*their*) children and wives, this deposit of (*their*) relics — of the kinsmen of Buddha, the Blessed One."

I shall not return to the weak points, already sufficiently discussed, which this interpretation has in common with the previous ones; I shall examine only those that are peculiar to it, the construction by which it has been obtained, and the manner in which it disposes of the ethnical *sakiya*.

And first as to the construction. By merely casting a glance at the above literal version, we notice at once that it is a strange one; that the first part of the inscription and the last one, which are in apposition to each other, are awkwardly separated by the medial clause, the mention of the reliquary. Neither in the Indian dialect nor in English is this clause in its place; in English this place would be at the beginning; in Indian it would be at the end. [552] And what shall we say of the tautology of the whole wording? After having indicated "the brethren of the Well-famed One," was it necessary to add that these brethren were kinsmen? And is it not as if the authors of the inscription had themselves felt the want of precision of the first designation? But then why should they have chosen it? This ancient epigraphic language, anxious to say what is necessary, and nothing but what is necessary, does not usually express itself in this redundant manner.

It will be seen that to bring to trial Dr. Fleet's construction is at the same time to bring to trial his interpretation of *sakiya*. I really do not know what he has against this ethnical term. In Sanskrit we find it under the form of *Sākya*; in Pāli we have *Sakka*, *Sakya*, *Sākiya*; the Prākṛits of the inscriptions show us *Saka*, *Sakya*, and here *Sakiya* which probably is not to be corrected into *Sākiya*. Of these forms, of which Dr. Fleet has drawn up a very useful list,²² none is suspicious; they are all in conformity with what we are taught by innumerable analogies of the phonetic or simply orthographic variations of these idioms; moreover, they all enter into phrases which correspond without the least discrepancy. Why, then, should we expel this term here, where it fits so well, for the benefit of a substitute which the lexicon undoubtedly furnishes, but which fits so badly? Is it, perhaps, because the tradition gives various and fantastic etymologies of it? We should be carried a long way in following this track. If I correctly understand Dr. Fleet, — for his theory is somewhat complicated and is not easily summed up in a few words, — he does not deny the existence of a nearly similar ethnical term, but he will have it that all the forms in which the name occurs in epigraphy, and, with a single exception, in Pāli literature, arise from a misunderstanding, and should be referred back to the possessive adjective *svakiya*. By dint of calling the members of the community or of the clan of the founder *Buddhasya svakiyāḥ*, "the kinsmen of Buddha," they would finally have been called simply the *svakiyāḥ*. The hypothesis is ingenious, but I doubt if it will find many supporters. At least instances of the use of this prolific phrase ought to be produced, and hitherto, as far as I know, none has been cited, except the one in this very inscription understood as Dr. Fleet understands it.

²¹ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1903, p. 149 ff. Dr. Fleet did not all at once arrive at this translation; another one will be found (*ibid.* 1903, p. 680), with the same interpretation of *sakiya*, which is still more improbable. I shall say nothing of it, as Dr. Fleet appears to have abandoned it himself.

²² *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1905, p. 245 ff.

Yet on this frail basis Dr. Fleet would build an entire chronological edifice. In our inscription, which, moreover, does not mark the long vowel — (I have already stated what should be thought of this omission), — *sakiya* would still be taken in its original sense; [553] the inscription must, therefore, be anterior, by at least a full century, to that on the pillar of Aśoka at Rummindēi (the middle of the 3rd century B. C.), in which the notation of the long vowel is established and in which the designation of the Buddha as *Sakyamuni*, “the hermit of the Sākyas,” shows that the possessive adjective has had time to change into an ethnical term. The inscription would, therefore, be far more ancient than any yet found in India. Dr. Fleet does not venture, positively, any further than about half way between the reign of Aśoka and the date generally accepted for the death of the Buddha: for he is too experienced an epigraphist to carry back this writing, without more ado, to the very time of the *nirvāṇa*. Yet he allows us to perform the rest of the journey at our own risk. On the other hand, he does not disguise his hope that, thanks to the light the document has now thrown on the true history of the name of the Sākyas, a methodical investigation into the use of the various forms of this name may lead to important results in connection with the chronology of the books of the Pāli canon. We may wish that such an investigation may be made; but we must give a warning against too hasty conclusions being drawn from it.

One word still as to the construction proposed by Dr. Fleet. I have already referred to the strangeness of it; I must add that this, but not the other anomalies of the redaction, would be more or less attenuated if the inscription were in verse. Now, quite recently²³ Mr. Thomas thought he actually recognised in it a very irregular *Āryā stanza*, which Dr. Fleet afterwards proposed to scan as an *Upagīti* [or *Udgīti*] almost as irregular. It is always difficult to recognise an isolated *Āryā*, especially when it presents anomalies as great as would be the case here. But the fact is that in Pāli and mixed Sanskrit some are found which are hardly better, and that, if such a one were met with among the verses of the *Thēriyāgāthās*, for example, to which Mr. Thomas refers, it would really have to be accepted as an *Āryā*. It is true that, in that case, there would remain the expedient, which we have not here, of suspecting the manuscript tradition. Without believing it very probable, I will, therefore, not absolutely reject the suggestion; but I wish to point out that it would in no way prejudice the meaning to be given to the word *sakiyamañ*. Whether the latter really corresponds to a Sanskrit *Sākya* or to a Sanskrit *svakiya*, it would still have its first syllable short; for, long ago Professor Jacobi has shown²⁴ that, if Pāli and Prākṛit necessarily shorten the vowel in position, Pāli often and Prākṛit still oftener do not restore the long quantity when position has been removed.

[554] In conclusion, I therefore believe, with M. Senart,²⁵ with whom I am happy to be in entire agreement, that we may admit the following as a definitive translation of our inscription:—

“This receptacle of relics of the blessed Buddha of the Sākyas (*is the pious gift*) of the brothers of Sukīrti, jointly with their sisters, with their sons and their wives.”

In short, we must be resigned: the inscription teaches us none of the sensational novelties that some interpreters have thought they found in it; it does not afford us any testimony contemporary with the Buddha, whom it leaves in his vague and legendary twilight, and whose “tomb” it will not allow us to visit; it in no way tends, even indirectly, either to strengthen or to weaken the accounts of the distribution of the ashes, or of their removal by Aśoka, or of the destruction of Kapilavastu and the Sākyas; nor does it supply us with materials for constructing a chronological system; it simply makes us acquainted, together with the name of an unknown personage, no doubt some local *rājā*, with the existence (after so many others, teeth, frontal bone, alms-bowl, hair, even the very shadow) of new relics of the great reformer, relics probably more ancient, and which we may, if so inclined, suppose more authentic, than any others. This is little; but a negative result is better than illusory data.

The relics are now at Bangkok, where, after so many centuries of oblivion, they once more serve for the edification of the faithful.

²³ *Journ. Roy. As. Soc.* 1906, p. 452.

²⁴ *Zeitschr. f. vergleich. Sprachf.*, XXIII. p. 594, and XXV. p. 292.

²⁵ *Journ. Asiatique*, VII (1906), p. 136.

THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL)
IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.

1654—1670.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 105.)

THE iudge answerd (y^e L^d brought on tryall before him), we must iudg according to Law w^{ch} condemns this fact. I tooke my iurney after this to Spawhawne [Ispahan], w^{ch} is 50 Leags. This L^d was sent to Spawhawne & Confest all before Shaw Sollymon [Shāh Sulaimān] Kinge & his iustices, & I saw him beheaded. He might [have] beene saued but was willinge to die. This was end Aug 1668.²⁵

Att Spawhawne, y^e court of King Sollymon, Em^{per} of Pertia,²⁶ I did lodge at y^e Companys howse; 3 dutchmen, 4 frenchmen, Kinge Sollymons Sarv^{ts}, wth y^e padreys caime to see me, I haneing lett^{rs} out of India. We weere verry merry at y^e English howse. The first 2 days I was in y^e citty we kept wthin doores, the Kinge haneinge made a Crooke [qūruq]²⁷ wth his Weomen & if any mankinde aboue Elleaven yeares old be abroad dureing the tyme of the Crook he is kild, [whether in the] Citty or Contrey for 2 leagues, for Notis is given y^e day before he make y^e Crooke. Its only to be merry wth his weomen, w^{ch} ride in all manner of habbits as they best fancy for Mirth. This was told me by y^e Wife of a Eng^l surgion, One of them before she married.

The 3^d day, about 3 clock in y^e afternoone, y^e Crook broke vp, y^e Kings 2^d or adviser, Sheth Alley Cowley Cawne²⁸ [Sayyid 'Alī Qulī Khān], sent for me & demanded if I belonged to y^e Company. I s^d I was a poore Subiect of my King. What, s^d he, is not y^e Capt of y^e company come, meaning Mr fflowers. I told him he would come in 4 or 5 days. Newes caime y^e King satt out. He rose in hast to goe to Court. I took my leaue. He said, you must goe before y^e Kinge. I went & made my Obeasience after y^e Industan Manner & phraise, be'ing in that habbitt, Sollam Alley [*As-salām alaikum*]. He S^d, Allegan Solam [*alaikum as-salām*], y^{ts} yo^u are welcom. Wheere, S^d y^e King, haue yo^u lernt y^t phraise being an Eng^l man, & laught. I said, I had served y^e Magull Oram Zebb. S^d y^e K., he is my enemy, soe yo^u are welcom from him; y^e Kinge out of his gate showed me some of his great Gunns w^{ch} lay disorderly, And two Mortars w^{ch} none in his Court knew how to vse. I told him I would charge them & show him y^e vse of them. S^d he, are they to be discharge[d] wth stone shot. I S^d, wth a shell. S^d he, pray show me this, w^{ch} I did, y^e King giveing ord^r to y^e Nasa [*nāzir*],²⁹ w^{ch} is Mr of all his Artillery, I should haue what desired. I cast 2 shells. In 4 dayes tyme I had them redy Coted

²⁵ ? 1669. See note 19 on p. 103, *ante*.

²⁶ Shāh Sulaimān reigned from 1633—1694.

²⁷ "Kourouk signifies a Prohibition to all Men and Boys above seven years of age, upon forfeiture of Life, to be seen in any place where the Kings Wives were to pass, if he were in their company. All the ways are hung on both sides with such stuff of which they make their Tents, to prevent the Women from being seen. And notice is given to all the Men to retire home at such an Hour; besides that, the Guards at two Leagues distance round about, were ready to prevent any one from coming near the Places so canvast in . . . It is said, that during the five Months from the Coronation of the King till the year 1078 of the Hegira, which answers the Spring of our 1377. the King commanded no less than sixty-two Kourouks, going abroad with his Wives every time, and visiting the Places round about Ispahan."—Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 77, ed. 1391.

²⁸ For an account of "Hali-Kouli-Kaan's" restoration to favour on the accession of Shāh Sulaimān and of the various offices conferred on him, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 79 f., ed. 1691. See also Tavernier, *Persian Travels*, Book V. ch. VIII. p. 218, ed. 1684.

²⁹ "The Nazir or Seer; Superintendent General of all the Royal Demesnes; and who also takes particular care of the Treasuries, Furniture, Buildings, Manufactures, Magazines, Stores and Servants."—Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, p. 13, ed. 1691.

over all wth y^e Carriages. The Kinge plac^t himself On a Hill wheere seats weere mad for y^t purposs, And his Ladyes wthin a Roome wheere they might see. The King came after nearer & demanded what should be don wth them, if A marke was to be set to shote at. I S^d, bringe men or sheepe, & y^e Execution would show how to reveng himselfe On his enemis. Sheepe weere brought, And one of y^e Shells fitted y^e way we call hen & Chickens, w^{ch} shell does y^e greatest Execution & made the kinge Amazed seinge it flie, & s^d, it flies in the aire ; it will doe noe Execution.

I returned answer by y^e L^d that brought y^t word from y^e Kinge, yo^u shall p^sently se wth Execution it will doe. It flew at y^e hight 244 Minutes & fell amonge y^e sheepe & kild 250 besides w^t land. Immediately y^e King sent me a horss & rich furniture (the same horse & furniture was that day led before him), & said, Bircala [*baraku'llah*], Well don.

The other shell fell amonge An other flock 230 paces of. The height it assended was 43 Minuts & fell & kild 132 sheepe. The kinge was verry Joyfull of this, for the Mortars his Grandfather had taken from y^e turks, he driveing them out of Pertia.³⁰

He cald me to him & bid me sit downe. I begd his p^on, being hote, weary & black, & desired leaue to refresh my selfe. I tooke leaue, y^e ff [French] & Dutch accompaning me to y^e English howse. He Sent for me againe & I had the honor to eate & drinke wth him & weere verry merry wth Musique & Danceing weomen (one of these weomen toss vp 7 : 8 : or 12 balls & keepe them all in play aboue ground), & had wth elce desireable. The Kinge desired me Serve him. I s^d I could not, my King had Comanded me home. S^d he, yo^r kinge is my Brother & what service yo^u doe me, he wilbe well pleased wth it. He vrge^d it noe more, but s^d, lets be merry, & drank 3 small Gobletts One after an other, standing vp to y^e King of England his Brother. I was to pledg out of a Golden ladell³¹ q^t [containing] a pinte & $\frac{1}{2}$, and was to drinke 3 of them, w^{ch} I did, & all y^e xpians theire, Abondance of L^{ts} & other Courteers by ; & his weomen see vs, but we not them, from aboue. The Kinge danct amonge vs & so^me of y^e Danceing weomen.³² Y^e King would set his hands a side & laugh heartily, saying, spare me not, when tugg was or Cushings flyinge, I am at this tyme as one of you ; oure wyne mad vs equall. But none of his L^{ds} drank a drop. This was in Supper tyme, dishes standing & tost downe. But they & the Carpetts then spred weere taken away & fresh Carpetts brought. After y^t, he Comanded one of his french sarvants to play on y^e violin, And drinke in that tyme was plentifull wth y^e franks ; y^e Kinge did not drinke as we weere obliged as to y^e Quantity.³³ Verry merry we weere, & y^e King verry pleasant & iocouse. This french man y^t plaid comes vp to y^e Kinge 3 seⁿall tymes & tells him such a Nobleman was fitt to be his G^en^l. The king bid him sit downe, Sayeinge, I know how to make G^enⁿalls. This french man, Drunke, vrge^d it againe ; Soe y^e Kinge Comanded him be ript vp & given to y^e Doggs, w^{ch} is y^e Death for offend^{rs} in that Contrey, & others out of Christendome. But y^e King gaue some privat notis y^t he should Only be carried into an other Roome & stript, & soe stood naked for 3 howers, w^{ch} tyme we past in Merth, & mist not y^e french man. The Kinge, seing vs farr enough in Drinke & Nodinge, came and shoke me by y^e Shoulder, & S^d, rise vp, its tyme to goe home. Wheeres yo^r Brother, & brought me his Clothes, & s^d, carrie them to him. This was about 2 Clock in y^e Mornings.

³⁰ Sulaimān's grandfather was Shāh Safi, 1629—1642. He did not drive the Turks out of Persia. On the contrary, Murād IV. recaptured Bagdad from the Persians, and its possession was confirmed to the Turks by a peace made between the two nations in 1639.

³¹ See Tavernier, *Persian Travels*, Book IV. ch. XVII. p. 181, for a description of the Golden ladle in which he pledged Shāh Abbās.

³² For the way in which Sulaimān gave himself up to drinking and dissipation, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solyman III.*, pp. 77, 78, 87, 88, 123, 129, ed. 1691.

³³ Chardin, writing of events in 1668, says, "the young Prince had forborn wine all the last year, by reason of an Inflammation in his Throat occasion'd by his hard drinking."—*The Coronation of Solyman III.* p. 130, ed. 1691.

Two days after, we weere sent for, & Mr fflower being come home from Cammerroon [Gombroon], [who] had a p̄sent for the Kinge from the Company,³⁴ went wth me. Ye Kinge askt me what I had brought from India rare, & s^d, theirs few travellers by land but bring rarities wth them. I S^d, Only my person. S^d ye King, we haue seene many french, but few Engl̄ travell home by land, & ye french bring not only theire persons. I then told him I had a Stone [Bezoar] would Expell poyson. Ye Kinge desired to see it. I showed it; he sleighted it, sayinge this is but a stone, what vertue can theire be in it. I S^d, giue me wth poyson yo^u can, & then ye vertue will be showne.

One of his Capons [eunuchs] brought a Glasse of poyson. Mr fflowers then left me wth a looke as if he would [have] kild me.

One of ye Kings Cheife Docters gaue it to me. I dranke it, ye Kinge first desireing me sit at a distance & s^d, freinde, if y^u kill yo^r selfe I haue noe hand in it; haue a care.

I cald for a Basin. A Jarr of gold was brought. I then tooke my poyson stone & put it into a glasse of wyne q^t [containing] $\frac{3}{4}$ of a pinte & kept y^e stone in y^e wyne a quarter of an hower or more. S^d the Kinge, his Nobles & Docter by, when I had dranke, He stumbles not at it. S^d the Docter, he hath as much as would kill Ten Ollyfants; he cannot live; Its the wyne makes him soe Curagious. With that I drank of my wyne & put y^e stone into a little warme water (y^e quantity I had dranke of wyne), & drank it. Immeadiatly I fell vommittinge. S^d the Kinge, now hes deade. I vommitted $\frac{3}{4}$ of an hower; y^t don, I tooke water & washt my mouth and face & cald for a glass wyne. Now s^d ye Kinge, I se y^t stone hath vertue. Not, S^d the Docter, for a Kingdome would I doe soe much. I must, S^d ye Kinge, haue y^e Stone, & what it Cost or y^u will haue for it, I will give y^u; But first purged me on my Oath wth it cost me. I, on my Oath, told him it cost me 3000 Ropees, w^{ch} is 337^{lb} 10s Engl̄ money.³⁵ He then said, ask a Gift. (M^{dd}. This was but a peece of A Stone.) In then comes my Cozen fflowers.³⁶ S^d the Kinge, yo^r freind is not deade. S^d Mr fflowers to me, now y^u haue a good occation if y^u vallew my hono^r or the Company, Ask y^e Arreeres at Commerroon w^{ch} weere for 4 yeares. I was silent. S^d he Kinge, aske. I askt y^e arreeres. Ye Kinge granted it, & caused thee Accompts to be stated, w^{ch} caime to Two lack of Abasses, w^{ch} is about 50000 ffty Thowsand pounds Engl̄ money.³⁷

When ye Lds gane ye Kinge this acct, The Kinge S^d to me, had y^u not better [have] asked for yo^r selfe. A smaller thinge would [have] contented y^u, But my word is past, & yo^{rs} granted.³⁸ But will not y^u, yo^r word beinge granted, be willinge to serve me. I replied, wth all my heart, but I must obey my Kinge. Give, S^d he, it vnder yo^r & Mr fflowers hand, if yo^u come not, y^u will furnish me wth 3 as good men. Mr fflower past it vnder his hand.

The King gaue me a Serpaw [*saropā*], that is Sash, cote & Girdle worth 300 Dollars.

³⁴ This was Flower's second visit to Ispahan. In 1665, at the time of the Coronation of Shāh Sulaimān, he was sent by the President of Surat to the Persian Court. He had orders to keep an eye on the Dutch deputation and their "great present; to attend their motion and observe att Court, and learne what their business is, as also by his persone appearance cheeke the liberty which they would otherwise take in abusing yo^u our Masters and the nation."—General Letter from Surat to the Court, *Factory Records, Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2. On the occasion spoken of in the text, Flower arrived at Ispahan on the 9th Aug. 1669. Writing to Surat on the 5th Sept. (*Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 105), Flower remarks that "The King with his Court lately retired to one of his Gardens with purpose after 8 or 10 dayes stay to proceed towards Gundeman (not farr from Bussera) being Jealous for the Turks who are masters of it." Flower gives an account of his interview with the "Ettamon Dowlett" on the 3rd Sept. and of the minister's promise to "Acquaint the King with our Complaints," but does not say that he had any personal interview with the King, nor does he allude to Campbell. For Flower's first embassy to the Persian Court, see Chardin, *The Coronation of Solymān III.*, p. 66, ed. 1691.

³⁵ i. e., at 2s. 3d. the rupee.

³⁶ I have not been able to trace the relationship between Campbell and Flower. See note 19 on p. 103, *ante*, where Flower writes of Campbell as of a stranger.

³⁷ The author's calculation cannot be right. Sir Thos. Herbert in 1677 rates the Abassi at 1s. 4d. This would make the two lac amount to £13,333 6s. 8d.

³⁸ The records of the time make no allusion to any such concession by Shāh Sulaimān.

The Snowes beinge then in pertia, in y^e end of y^e Month August, & soe Extreame y^t, in o^r way to Spawhawne, my Sarv^t lost his toes, w^{ch} wth extremity of cold rotted of. Soe left him wth Mr flowers, he being my Slaue (my other Hamstring^d in my voyage to Prester John⁸⁰ [and] haueing wife & Children at Bagganogare [Bhāgnagar, Hyderabad, Deccan], I gaue y^e vallee of 60th to carrie him home. He would not [have] left me but I Considered his wife & Children, soe p^ted [parted].

Leaveinge Spawhawne y^e first day September 1668,⁴⁰ I wth my slaue, a black, A french Padre & 2 Dymond Marchants of Paris, One Monsier Jordan a protestant, & Monsier Raisin⁴¹ Roman Catholic, tooke o^r Jurney homewards, Beinge Accompanied out of y^e Citty wth all y^e Engl french & Dutch, 2 Leagues, & after returned.

My Kinsman, Mr flower,⁴² knoweing in part what Charge I had wth me, S^d to me, Woe is me y^t I cannot p^swaid yⁿ against this iurney; yⁿ vndertake it against my will. Doe not yⁿ know S^r Humphrey Cooke, who yⁿ Conveyed out of India,⁴³ how he was served. He, imbraceinge me, told me, tho I caime not saife home to England, my service don to y^e Company & for his hono^r, w^{ch} yⁿ know Cozen yⁿ haue vnder my hand, shall be made good to yo^r father, Or vnkle Whitty; Soe we parted. The 2 dymond March^{ts}, I, My Sarv^t, & y^e Padrey I brought from Surratt in India, whose naime is Farre Capusena [Capuchin Brother]. The next towne from Spawhawne was 60 Leagues cald Pannuloe;⁴⁴ in 5 days wee Arrived theire, all in helth.

Theire we consulted whether we should goe by y^e way of Bagdatt Or Towreys [Tauris, Tabriz]. S^d y^e Dymond March^{ts}, we desire for Bagdatt but haue a great Charge; Towreys is the surer way. We agreed to goe by Towreys, and all went wth y^e Coffla or Carravan, w^{ch} consisted of 40000 feightinge men, y^e whole (horssees, Cammells, & asses), 100 000.

The next great Towne from Pannuloe to Towreys was 80 Leagues of, cald ⁴⁵ We, 8 horsemen, wth sarv^{ts}, left y^e Coffeloe & caime to Radie [P Rai close to Teherān], a ver-rie great Citty, in 9 days tyme; Thence for Towreys. In the way was noe Citty, only villages & Serays. Y^e distance was 172 Leagues, w^{ch} we went in 28 days, all comeing to Towreys in helth. Four days before we got to Towreys, theire was a french Docter y^t had cut 8 slaves for y^e Gouverner to make Coides [Khwāja, Coja, Eunuch] or Efnukes [in modern Greek] them to p^sent to y^e Emperror of Pertia his Maister, Shaw Sollyman Kinge.

But y^e Condition of y^e Padreys or fryers in those parts, as elce where out Chrissen-dome, if not in, is y^t noe Man, how good an artist soever, should live where they are, they p^tending to all arts, & by that meanes get into places & make prosolites.

A french Padrey in y^t citty went to y^e Gouverner & told him he could cut Cheaper & safer then y^e Docter. The Gou^r had giuen y^e Docter 40 Tomaines,⁴⁶ w^{ch} y^e padrey knew. Y^e padrey was ficed, w^{ch} y^e Docter knoweing, Left y^e Citty, takeing 2 Sarv^{ts} & 2 Mules, & tooke his way towards Smyrna, w^{ch} is cald in y^e pertian tongne, Cashmoer [Ismir], & weere in the way buried in y^e Sands.

⁸⁰ See Vol. XXXV. p. 177.

⁴⁰ Campbell must surely mean 1669. See the note on his departure from Gombroon, *ante*, p. 103.

⁴¹ Monsieur Raisin was known both to Tavernier and Chardin, "Monsieur Raisin of Lyons, a Person of Very good Repute, and my Companion in my former Travels, embarkt himself once more in this sort of Trade; and though we differ'd in our Religion, Yet for all that we liv'd Peaceably and in Unity together."—Chardin, *Travels into Persia*, p. 2, ed. 1691. See also Tavernier, Ball's edition, Vol. II. p. 364.

⁴² See *ante*, p. 127, note 35. On Flower's return to Gombroon he fell under the displeasure of the authorities at Surat on account of the involved condition of his affairs. He eventually satisfied the Company's demands on him, and, though he lost his appointment at Gombroon, he was, in July, 1671, ordered to "succeed in the Custom house of Mayhim if Mr. Barton dyes."—*Factory Records, Surat*, Vol. 104, and *Miscellaneous*, Vol. 2.

⁴³ I can find no verification of this story. See the note on Sir Humphrey Cooke, *ante*, p. 103, note 16.

⁴⁴ Pannuloe may be the modern Kashan, but it is difficult to trace the route followed by Campbell.

⁴⁵ Hiatus in the MS. here. The town meant may be Kum or Kasvin.

⁴⁶ Fryer, in 1677, gives the value of a tomaun as £3 6s. 8d. See *Hobson-Jobson*, s. v. Tomaun.

The Padre Cutt 4; all Dyed. Newes beinge carried of it, y^e padrey Kild himselfe, w^{ch} thing brought a p̃udice [prejudice] to all frenchmen in y^e Citty.

Next day caime a Coffeloe from Cashmeer [Smyrna], y^t said they mett a Xpian, 2 Sarvants, 2 Mules, wth a horss (w^{ch} was starved) by them, and all deade. The Gouverner, when Monsier Jordan & Rasin⁴⁷ went before him, told vs the aboue relation, demanding wth we 3 weere. They S^d, they weere fr̃ [French] men. I S^d, I was an Engl̃ man. S^d he, all french men are Haram Zadds [haramzāda], Deceivers. For Engl̃ men I haue not to say of them, never haueing anie tryall of them.

Must not, S^d he to y^e fr̃. men, y^or Padrey be cald to Acc. for y^e men hes kild & himselfe, besides he, being to yⁿ as our Casa [qāzī] is to vs, cannot answer it to God.

I am, S^d y^e Gou^r, not soe sorrie for him and y^e Slaues As for the Docter, y^t Goodman, who by his meanes I slighted, and is now lost,

Wee tooke our leaves & went to y^e Seraie, But y^e Padreys of that place invited vs to theire Convent, w^{ch} Monsier Jordan & Rasin did refuse by reason of y^e Gou^rs language.

4 Dayes wee staid in the Seraie; every day the Gour sent vs 6 dishes of Meate. Our Coffelo [kāḡila, caravan] beinge gatherd to a heade, & redy to goe, we went to y^e Gour^r to take leave & p̃sented him wth some small gifts; but he refused them, & S^d, when yⁿ come this way againe, bringe me sõne Europe token. Soe we parted; & went thence wth y^e Coffiloe 23 Leagues before wee caime into y^e sands. 17 Days we travalled in y^e Sands wth great losse of Men & Cattle, viz^t Cammells, horsses, and Asses. In all y^e 17 days, wee weere not hable to see o^r horss lenth before vs, or One an other, Or to open o^r mouths or eies; but when we would eate or Drinke, y^e Sand got in like to Choake vs; yet we had Muffellers Over our faces.

They Stringe 100 Cammells together to follow One after an other, And every 100 haue a man On y^e foremost Cammell wth a howse in w^{ch} he sits In, y^e howse Coverd both day and night, And in it Is a light & a Compass to guid y^e Cammell y^e way, for y^e sands drive soe wth y^e wind, its not possible to see.

Wee haueinge 1 monts Journey more to goe ere we should be Cleere of y^e Sands, and o^r Cattell died soe as wee weere forst to put two loads on One Back, I said, letts turne back, And, Consultinge wth y^e eminentest Marchant, an Arminyon, & y^e 2 fr̃emen, Judged it best to hyer a guide to pilote vs o^r way an other way Towards Neneveigh [Nineveh], w^{ch} was a nearer way; & Leaeinge y^e Coffeloe, we could goe in One day 3 times as farr as wth it. 15 Arminyon Marchants (horssemen), y^e 2 fr̃emen, my selfe, and o^r sarvants went, giveinge 11 Dollers a heade for Pilot money.

Wee had 140 Leagues to Neneveigh, neither pile gras, water or Ought elce in o^r way for refreshment^s but what we carried wth us. Our Guyde brought vs to Neneveigh in 23 days all verry weary. We staid theire 7 Days, and in that tyme refresht o^rselues verry well.

From Nenevey we went to Cornway in 12 Days, w^{ch}, at 20 Mile a day, I gess to be about 75 Leagues.

From Cornway we went to Kirkway [Kirkuk], y^e fr̃: men & I then only in Company; we went it in 7 Days, w^{ch} is about 60 Leagues.

From Kirkway to Bagdatt, 120 Leagues, in 13 Days. We arrived in Bagdatt in helth, but left o^r Boyes in Kirkway & tooke fresh horsses there, o^r Boys to follow to Bagdatt.

We had but beene 4 days theire, when y^e 2 french Marchants feel sick, it being soe hote, y^t wth y^e Brees of y^e Sunn, it kild the Natives; & Many I saw, as white as Engl̃ men, kild immediatly & turnd as black as a Coale.

⁴⁷ See ante, note 42 on p. 126.

I my selfe beinge at noone in the Sunn, a hote breese hath taken me & skind my face. Those y^t weere scorcth wth y^e Sunn, was of y^e Bashaws [Pāshā's] Soldiers, w^{ch} lay w^{thout} y^e Citty, for y^e Bashaws of Bagdatt, Kirkway & Neneve weere goeing wth theire Armies in y^e Grand Senior's service agst Bassora, now in y^e hands of y^e Arrabs. This was in ffebruary thus hott, & in Spawhawne in August soe Cold as my Sarv^t in Pertia had his toes rotted of.

M^{ad} I went to old Babbylon w^{ch} is 12 Leagues from Bagdatt, and assended the Tower, & plumd it wth a line I carried for y^t purposse, & its iust 60 fathom from y^e top to y^e earth; but theires a great depth of earth aboue y^e foundation, w^{ch} depth is not knowne; its ⁴⁸ foote broade at top. They are every day loading a way from it stones to Bagdat or new Babylon.

In Bagdatt I staid 23 Days, And On y^e 4th Day of ffebruary I tooke my Jurney for Aleppo, And in the way, the first great Citty was Hanna [Anah], A Citty w^{thin} a ffort in y^e Middle of a River [the Euphrates] w^{ch} goes to Bossara, The River Tygrisse & it joyneing theire to gether, And on each side of the River a Citty, And is distant from Babylon 130 Leagues. This Hanna is in y^e Wildernesse of Arrabia.

The french Padrey hyred a guide in Bagdatt, & had security by his wife & 4 Children & an Arrabian Marchant that this guide should bring vs saife to Aleppo & bringe vs every 2 days wheere we should haue water. All was On my charge, And I would not haue patience to tarrie till y^e Coffelo went. We tooke wth vs noe more then One days water, My Company beinge with my selfe, The padre & his sarvant, My Slaue, the padreys horss & sarv^{ts} Mule, My horss & slaues Mule. All of vs beinge w^{thout} water 2 days, I questioned y^e Guide, & he gane me Crosse language; Soe I shott a pistoll at him to scare him, but after drubd him wth my stick. Y^e Padre desired me, for Gods sake, to let him alone, Now we are in y^e wildernesse & know not whether to turn o'selves. I was vexed, being redy to Choak, Bound y^e Guyds hands behind him, thretned him & cald him naimes, and said, if wee die, we will all die together. This was about 7 Leagues short of Hanna. W^{thin} 2 Leagues of y^e place y^t I bound him he Cried, Aga [Aghā, my Lord], water. Give me, S^d he, my life & I will show y^a water. We had not rid a league & halfe, but he lights & S^d, heeres water, y^e Well impossible to be found but by y^e guide, for it was not a yard over, and Turft as if It had beene firme ground. These Guides Conseale y^e water, they geting theire liveinge for Conducting travellers & releiveinge them wth water in y^t Jurney throw the Wildernesse of Arrabia. The Guide drew out a line he brought for that purpose, and a sheeps skin, [and] tyd y^e 4 Corners to gether [for] y^e Bucket. The line was 60 fathom Longe & would but iust reach y^e Water. I, Jealous [afraid] y^e Rogue would run away, I bound him againe. The Padrey & my slaue neere, both sick for want [of] water. But, refrest a little, we mounted, & p'sently I spied 7 horssmen, w^{ch} caime vp boldly w^{thin} 500 paces of vs, On w^{ch} I fyred a pistoll. They then retreated back. The guide then addrest him to y^e Padrey to make his peace wth me for his liberty, Sweareing by his beard, his god & Mahommett, he would not run away. On y^e I unbound him, & we weere 5 days in gettinge to Hanna [Anah], y^e Padre & my Slaue sick, w^{ch} was y^e cause.

By perswasion of y^e Guide we past aboue Hanna a league and a halfe On purpuss to saue o^r head money. We past the Towne and caime to a river 5 Engl miles beyond it, & theire sat downe & refresht o^r selves. S^d the Guide, heere are Rogues. S^d I, all Arrabs are Rogues. Before we could mount, caime 28 horsses and carried vs back to Hanna on foote, for that we had past y^e Citty indeav'ing to saue o^r head money. It Cost me 144 Dollers & all y^e excuses I could make to y^e Gouverner. We staid at Hanna ⁴⁹ days.

We had not left y^e towne 2 Leagues but 7 horssmen caime ridinge after me. I S^d to y^e guide, who are these. He S^d, Haram [haramzāda], Rogues & Robbers. S^d I, will y^a stand to

me. Yes, S^d he, if yⁿ will let me haue One of yo^r pistolls. S^d I, noe, yⁿ haue bow & arrowes, & if I see yⁿ stand not to it, thou shalt be y^e first Ile kill, tho I die afterwards.

The guide answered (We seinge them Exercize theire lances), I was 4 yeares agoe Guide to Six Xpians, 4 dymond March^{ts} and two Padrees who went this way, & by fyerig a pistoll, w^{ch} wounded an Arrabb in the thigh. was y^e cause they all lost theire lives by haneing theire heads cut of. This is a great trewth & told me by y^e padreys at Babylon, who advised me by noe meanes resist if we mett anie [bandits]. And would [have] had me left my Armes & other things of Concernem^t. I S^d I had not anie. Said y^e two ffrench Dymond Marchants I left theire Sick, espetailly monseir Jordan, Wee know he hath a Charge⁵⁰ & One Dymond w^{ch} we haue beene all about & [?for] o^r Kinge, & could never attaine to it. Except he left it at Spawhawne, we are sure he had it.⁵¹ The padreys did vrge me againe, & S^d, what ever I left wth them should be safe Conveyed to me to what place I pleased; but by noe meanes doe yⁿ travell w^{thout} y^e Coffeloe wth a Charge. I denied y^t I had ought. S^d they, if yⁿ haue, it wilbe y^e cause of y^e loss of yo^r owne life & Company.

The 7 horssmen Caime vp againe. They had only lances; I wthstood them, haueing a cace of pistolls, bow & arrowes & a Cutlase. Y^e Padre cried, for godsake haue a care wth yⁿ doe: if we resist not they will not kill vs. I was angry, & S^d, if he would not feight, I would kill him. He S^d it was not his Religion to feight. The Guide & he then run into y^e enemy. The enemy Cried, surrender yo^r selfe & you shall haue noe harme. I would not. Y^e Padre cald to me, yⁿ had better Surrender; if yⁿ doe not, yⁿ will loose yo^r life; I haue saved mine. I told him, in y^e Portugall tonge, I had some Consernm^{ts} about me.

I left him wth y^e Rogues & past forwards, faceing about everie Minute for y^e lenth of an Engl^l Mile. They followed me, & when they se they could not p^rvaille, they returned y^e padre & Guide. My horss beinge weary wth faceing them too & againe, I went a League further, & by a river side refresht o^r selves; on thother side of vs was a Bogg, and but One way to come to vs, soe as One Man was as good as 20 in an other place.

My Guide S^d, these weere noe rogues but only tried wth xpians weere; they had noe Sables On theire horsses.

After 3 howers stay, y^e Padrey haneing got a napp, S^d to me, those weere Rogues, & my heart [mis]gives me they will follow vs; what yⁿ haue, berry heere or give me. I had sent y^e Guide to get grasse for o^r horsses, for, in y^e Wilderness of Arrabia, is grass in most places vp to y^e Belly, but noe rode but wth Deere make or Wyld Beasts.

While y^e Guide was gon, I tooke out my thngs out of y^e Padd of my Saddle & gaue y^e padrey some, & some I kept my selfe. When y^e Padre see them, he Cried & S^d, these wilbe y^e Death of vs both. He had:—

- 3 Dymond stringes wth Crosses
- 2 Stones y^e Expell poyson [bezoar]
- 2 Great Dymonds
- a Blood Stone
- a greene stone
- 120 Saphers
- 4 Dymond Ringes
- 3 spetiall Rubies

Kept by my selfe, viz^t — a great dymond wth Kings arms on it, 8 other great Dymonds.

In y^e meane tyme comes y^e Guide wth grasse, &, packing vp y^e things those I had in a litle pursse, [I] ty'd them about my members. About an hower after, we see 14 horss men, 7 of them

⁵⁰ This does not agree with Campbell's condition of destitution as described by Flower. See note 19 on p. 108, *ante*.

⁵¹ For the diamond with the King of England's arms engraved on it, see *ante*, Vol. XXXV. p. 133.

y^t had beene wth me in y^e Morninge. This was 3 Clock in y^e afternoone. We see them before they could see vs. S^d y^e padre, we are betraid. I askt y^e gide who these weere. He S^d, men goeing to y^e next great towne, soldiers. Y^u lie, y^u Roogue, s^d y^e padre; y^u haue betraid vs.

I was at a stand, consideringe what to Doe best. Y^e Guide S^d, lets goe. Noe, S^d y^e padre, lets stay heere till night. Did not y^u, S^d y^e Guide, agree wth me in Babylon, w^{ch} I hane given security to performe, & y^u are to march when I say goe & to stay when I say stay. I replied, will y^u beare vs harmless. He s^d, yes I will. Wth y^t he went out, p^tending to see if y^e way was Cleere & staid from vs $\frac{3}{4}$ of an hower, & returninge, he bridled o^r horssees & S^d, vp, y^e way is cleere. We had not rid a League, but we spied y^e 14 horsmen in ambush in a valley. They let vs pass till we caime to y^e top of y^e hill, & then spred them selves. 4 caime One way, 4 An other, 4 the 3^d & 2 more, all w^{ch} Compassed vs about. I had made my bridle fast to my horse legg & made my bow & arrowes redy, but they caime poothering soe fast, y^t all theire lances was about me in a trice, & S^d, we haue now got Gunns, fyer if y^u darr, for if y^u either fyer or shoot arrow, y^u are a deadman, & y^e rest.

The Padre cried, do not shoote. In y^e meane tyme, they struck in wth me & stript me Naked, all saue my boots, w^{ch} saued me some thinge. They weere all muffed vp; I could only see theire eies. Some few Dollers I had about my Midle, w^{ch} they p^sently eased me of, And, starke Naked, made me lead my horse to a valley. I went not fast enough, Soe One gaue me a push wth y^e butt end of his lance, w^{ch} put me on my Nose. In that fall he spied y^e pursse & Snatcht it away; I was affraid all had gon together. Beenge in y^e Valley, made me sit a side till they parted my things, vizt. My wearinge Clothes & Lynnen, 3 Serpaws [*saropā*, dress of honour], One Prester John gaue me, One Oram Zebb y^e Magull from his owne boddie, & One Shaw Sollymon King of Pertia,⁵² wth other things of Vallew. The Rogue Guide, after Devided, Cast lotts who should haue this & who that Share. Besides these, there was 3 of his Mai^{ties} Great seales y^e Magull gaue me, being had On y^e occation before Exprest.

They caused likewise y^e Padrey to be stript, & set downe likewise, & set us both downe to cnt of o^r heads. S^d y^e Guide, my wife & Children is pawne for y^e padre; ⁵³ Cut of y^e head of y^e other. They gaue y^e Padrey his Coate againe, Settinge me by my selfe wth a lance at my back & 2 swords Over my heade, sayinge, take yo^r leave of y^e world. I desired them suffer me to say a few prayers, w^{ch} they did, & in that tyme they tooke Councell, And mutined amonge themselves. 3 went one way, & s^d they would goe & complaine; 3 followed them to bring them back. He w^{ch} tooke my Jewells from my members, said, Is it not enough we haue taken his goods, but we must take his life; Theires a God. They made me come to them, & fall downe & Kiss every One of theire feete, & say they had don well in takeing away wth I had, & to say God blesse them for it, And houe me a Cammeel Coate, showeing vs the way. I would [have] gon ffor Babylon but they would not let vs goe that way.

Wee had not gon an Eng^l Myle, but two of them caime after vs, & comeinge vp to vs, demanded my slave (w^{ch} was a Black as Those Arrabs are), & tooke him and My Mule, sayinge he was not to travell that way,

Wee travelled all that night, & next day, weary, haueing neither mans meate nor horss-meate, And haueinge lost our way, we caime to a den at whose mouth lay about 20 dead sheepe. It was about 3 Clock in y^e afternoone. S^d y^e Guide, wee are all yndon, iudgeinge it a Denn of Lyons Or Tygers; But we see noethinge to hurt vs. Att 12 Clock at night, we, redy to die and our horsses quite tyred, we caime to a River cald Olson, w^{ch} runs into Tygris. Then weere wee from anie inhabitant 9 (Nine) days iurney & had noe p^rvisions. By Gods providence caime downe the River Men vpon Rafts of Wood wth tents vpon them, Goeinge for Bossera. Wee weere affraid, but o^r nessessity sent y^e Guide, who spooke Arrabb, to haile them, The whilst y^e

⁵² See ante, p. 127.

⁵³ See ante, p. 130.

Padre & I sculkt. The Guide got of them 40 Cakes of bread, Cost 2 Dollers, w^{ch} served vs to an old Citty cald Tyabe [Taiyibeh, Taiba]. We travell-d 14 days, day and Night, ere we could reach it, and iudge it from Hanna 130 Leagues, for y^e Certan Leagues in that Contrey is not knowne, but they reckon days iurney accordinge as they & horsses are hable.

When wee caime to Tyabe, theire weere we heart broken, haueing neither meate, money, nor freinds, And must pay head money, 10 Dollers a heade. ffor want of it, we weere put in preson & weere 3 Days theire, but they sent vs meate, & cared for or horsses. The 4th day caime A merchant from Aleppo, And caime to vs, & askt me wth I was. I s^d a Christian. S^d he, theire are of That Cast seuerall, As Ittall [Italians], Spanyards, fr : [French] and others, of w^{ch} are y^u. I S^d, An English man. S^d he, give me a note vnder yo^r hand & I will give y^u y^e Money y^u desire, w^{ch} was 24 Dollers, & take it Att Aleppo. I tooke y^e Money & gaue y^e Note as he desired. Wee p^d or (paid our) heade money And tooke Our Jurney ffrom Tyab towards Aleppo, esteemed 40 Leagues or 4 days Jurney. Its all a hard sand. In the Midest of or way Mett vs a partie of Arrabbs, w^{ch} fyred at vs before we caime w^{thin} shot of them. Wee sent a young man, w^{ch} caime from Tyab wth vs (y^e Marchants sarv^t y^t lent me y^e money). He returning, S^d, they are Rogues, y^u haue nothing to loose but yo^r horsses, & if y^u will give me 2 Dolls a man, I will secure them. We did, by parroll.

These Arrabbs had taken a Caffeloe of 16 or 17 Cammells and some 20 small assenegers⁵⁴ of theire owne Contrey mens. Wee askt the reason why they robbd theire neighbors. He S^d, theire was an Arrabb Kinge in the Hills y^t the Marchants had agreed to give him soe much p^r Cammell for fre passage, but had not p^rformed ; Soe he made bold wth y^e first he mett. Its common to agree thus in those parts for every carrier, wth y^e Arrabbs that lie in his way, ffor they say, when Jacob had gott all the blessings, Esau caime & askt ; soe his father told him he had given Jacob all & he must take what he could get. They owne them selues of that race, and Soe soone as vp in y^e morninge, doe pray a good prize may come in theire way, as we doe for our dayly breade, & take it wth as much fredome as if really it had beene sent them.

The first towne we caime at from Tyab was Sallamity, Two Leagues from Aleppo.⁵⁵ We rested theire a night. S^d I to y^e Padre, now we are out of all Dainger. But y^e people where we lay had sent to y^e Kinge of the Arrabbs, not far from them, and told him for ⁵⁶ Dollers they would Deliver two Xpians into his hands. We had not gon a league but we Overtook a drove of Laded Oxen. S^d y^e Guide, come lets put on ; Now wee are out of Dainger. We put a head of these Carriers or markt people, Arrabbs too, and p^rsently I espied twenty (20) horssmen comeinge easily downe a hill. When they see vs get a head, beinge 4 horssmen, They caime poweringe downe vppon vs. S^d I to y^e Guide, who are these. S^d he, Rogues. We made all speede back we could, to gett amongst the Oxen, But they weere vppon vs. I left my horssse and [ran] into the thronge of y^e Carriers, & gott behinde an Old Arrabb weomen for shelter. She Cald them Rogues, and railed at them for hindering travellers, but Carried I was to theire Kinge, but did not part wth my Old Arrabb weoman. Comeinge before him, y^e Kinge askt what I was. I said, a pooreman, Robd comeinge from Babilon. Well, S^d he, thou lookest like noe richman. He caused y^e weoman, by whome I held by, to serch me. Fyndeinge noethinge, S^d he, my luck is nought, y^t I mett not wth y^u before y^u weere Rob^d, And askt me wheere I had y^t horssse. The weoman S^d, he is mine. I haue lett him ride, he beinge foot sore. He S^d in Arrabb, Gome Gidde [*qūmī jiddah*]⁵⁷ w^{ch} is get y^a gon, y^a Cuckold. Att last we p^rted, & I gaue y^e poore weoman a Doller, w^{ch} made y^e teares start out of hir eies for joy of it.

Att 12 Clock the ⁵⁸ day of August 1669 I caime into y^e Consulls In Aleppo, Rich. Bell⁵⁹ then at Dinner wth him, & saw in wth a Ragged & weather beaten Condition I caime thether in ; And of or [? after] Examiti^on of or Guide, whose life I had offerd me by y^e Caddie [*qāzī*] in

⁵⁴ *Asinego* (Port.), a young ass.

⁵⁵ This place does not appear in the modern maps.

⁵⁶ Hiatus here in the MS.

⁵⁷ *Qūmī jiddah*, vulgarly pronounced *gūmī jiddah* = get up grandmother, and was addressed to the old woman.

⁵⁸ Hiatus in the MS. here.

⁵⁹ This is the first mention of him, although he figures as the author of the MS.

Alleppo, but reserved him to bring out y^e things I was rob^d of, I deposited him into the hands of Consull Delakoy [De Lannoy]⁶⁰ & parson Frampton,⁶¹ wth whome I left full power to ackt on my behaife, [they] pteuding great kindnesse, not only for my sake, but theire Deere frend, Mr. John [Stephen] flowers at Spawhawne.

The Padrey I had brought out of India wth me, 3 dayes after I had beene in Alleppo, caime to see me, & askt me when he might waite On the Consull & Minister. I askt, & gaue him a tyme, but was in hopes, when I see him, he had saued some thinge & was come to bring me them; for, from the tyme I was Robd, he never told me he had Saved ought, nor did I aske him; But he see me weepe frequently & tooke notis of my heavy & disquieted spirrit, but gaue m^e not y^e lest hopes to expect ought I had given him; Soe y^t w^t I had, I was to thanke my Bootes for.

But the next day comes The Padrey, wth y^e Padrey Gouvernodore of y^e Scotiety of y^e fathers ffrench in Alleppo, And askt me if it weere seasonable to vizitt y^e Consull and Minister. I carried them In, & left them All together. S^d the Padre Gouvernodore, One of yo^r nation, now in yo^r howse, hath beene at Greate Charges wth this ffather of or^s, And to show to yⁿ or honesty And thanks for his charge & Loue, We come to give him what is his, he trusting o^r padrey (& he hath saved them for him), & tooke theire leaue, leaueing the jewells on the table.

I was cald in, & noe sooner in the roome, I se what I knew well, & laid at first dash my hands On them. S^d y^e Consull & minister, yⁿ said yⁿ weere Rob^d. Heeres more than anie K^t in England hath. Besides we haue advice M^r fflowers hath returned to yo^r father for yⁿ 2700 pounds,⁶² w^{ch} if yⁿ had noe more, is enough for anie honestman to live well on. Yes s^d I, I was robbd, w^{ch} the padre witnessed & swore to, as before related.

I began to put vp my Jewells. S^d y^e Consull & Min^r, If yⁿ please, we will lay them by for yⁿ, w^{ch} I refused. Then, s^d the Minister, theires a stone y^e Consull thinks wilbe a fitt p^{se}nt to his wife in England, & would by it. I said it was at his service; but, said he, he will not haue it a gift, but will buy it; make yo^r price. S^d I, it cost me in India 2000 Ropees,⁶³ besides y^e hazard yⁿ know & loss I haue had in getinge it bether; But he shall haue it as it Cost me first penny. They told me out 100 Lyon Dollers, w^{ch} is 20^{lb} English money. I looked coldly on it. Come, s^d y^e Consull, I will put him to it 50 Dollers more. I was ill pleased. S^d then the parson, can yⁿ denie the Consull; he is y^r freinde & canbe serviceable to yⁿ, & yⁿ haue enough and more. Yes, S^d the Consull, besides what M^r fflowers hath writt. (Harry, bring my papers) S^d the Consull, he hath 20^{lb} p^r an [per annum] his father gaue him, & 50^{lb} p^r an left him by his vnkle Whitty; And soe bated me, y^t I was whedled out of my Jewells.

They gaue me 60 ^{lb} for what was worth 200 ^{lb}, & gaue me a Bill payable by One M^r Chillingworth at Legorne, w^{ch} he could not pay; But I haue both theire hands & seales for it. And this theire vnkindness to me in y^e tyme of my Anguish for my loss hath disoblged me, & I haue revoked y^e trust I gaue them, & put it into the hands of M^r John Shepperd, March^t in Alleppo, by writeing, the 2^d Jany 1669.⁶⁴

Dated from Roome [Rome], & witnessed by

Rich. Bell & Joseph Kent

in

Roome.

(End of Part I.)

⁶⁰ Benjamin De Lannoy was Consul for the Levant Co. at Aleppo at this time.

⁶¹ Robert Frampton was appointed as Chaplain at Aleppo on the 30th August 1655. He held the post till 1670. He was the seventh to fill the office, and was chosen for his "extraordinary merit." He paid a visit to England in 1666, when he gave an account of the abuses suffered by the English at Aleppo. After his final return from the East, he became Bishop of Gloucester. In 1691 he resigned his see as a non-juror, and died in retirement in 1706. For a fuller account, see *A Biographical Sketch of the Chaplains of the Levant Company*, by J. B. Pearson.

⁶² If Campbell were really as destitute as Flower describes him to be (see note 19 on p. 108, *ante*), it is difficult to understand how he could have acquired so much property in a few months.

⁶³ *i. e.*, £225, reckoning the rupee at 2s. 3d.

⁶⁴ *i. e.*, 1669-70.

THE CHUHRAS.

BY THE REV. J. W. YOUNGSON, D.D., CHURCH OF SCOTLAND MISSION; SIALKOT.

(Concluded from p. 116.)

*Ih sattān zīmān dā bhār hai, sattē hain
 dsmān,
 Pichhē chukṣān Hajrat Shāh sān, oh barḍ
 jawān.
 Us gōḷēān tīkar āndīdān sab fūṭ gayd samān.
 Kumb karn Dainisar ajēhē jinhdān dī chōṭī
 dhur dsmān,
 Ih dhan Bālā pīr bhagat hai dargāh-ē-parwān
 Pīr jō gurzān chukṣē lag aggē paindā
 Tān us swāmī mōṛkē mur ghar nūn āndē,
 Sudmī mangē dachhān, bhōjan nahīn khāndē,
 Na unhdān lagī bhukh hai, na andar jāndē,
 Khānā kīkar khāyē tuddh hatted kītī
 Sakṣā nahīn aulād dā, gal burī dh kītī.*

He lifted them. The genii and gods
 Did wonder. 'Fourteen clubs,' they cried,
 amazed,
 'He's lifted; one's enough for us. They weigh
 Seven earths and seven heavens. Once
 Hazrat Shāh,
 The strong, did lift them, but even he could
 lift
 Them only to his knees; then his great
 strength
 Did fail him. Dhainsur, tall as heaven, could
 show
 Such power, and only he. But Bālā, priest
 Of God beloved, is great.' The priest
 marched on
 In front, and so he brought the saints back
 to
 His house. They ask for *dachnā*, *sadhu's*
 fee.
 They seek not food, they are not hungry,
 nay,
 They even refuse the house to enter, saying,
 'How can we eat thy food? Thou'st murder
 done.
 Thy sons thou lovedst not; we but jested;
 wrong
 Thou'st done. Raise now thy sons to life, if
 thou
 Hast worshipped God.' The priest made
 answer,
 'I have earned no merit. But three cubits
 and
 A half my body is; and even so
 It full of trouble is, God given.' They said,
 'Thou art a mighty saint, with honours
 crowned.'
 The priest replied, 'O God, thou once didst
 send
 The fish, and from the heavens the bow:
 Thou didst

*Assān tē kēhā sī hasdēān, gall ohē kītī
 Bālāk tā jawāl lai jih bhagṭī dh kītī.
 Na main kītī bhagṭī na kōī kamān
 Mērd sūdhē trāē hath vit hai, Rabb dhandē lāi.
 Tū barḍ bhagat mahān balī hai, pur asmat lāi.
 Tū Machh agasōn lā laiḍ dē dhāmāk kālāi.
 Tū Nāmē bhagat nūn baurēōn mde gae jawāi,
 Sīp salāmān dhariyān, bīptā kaṭwāi.
 Dhanākh dharē sīr sēhrē Sītā Rām malāi,
 Tuḍdhē Rānī Drōṭī dīkṣīdān kajwāi
 Tū jag gēōn Bāldēv dē, tain dē vaḍiyāi,
 Dainisar kē sīr kaṭiyā Rām nē Lāink lūṭāi,
 Tū rāt Bhavīsar kaṭiyā hōēōn sant sahāi,*

*Tērī chār jugāñ vaḍīdī hai chār Vēdā gawḍī.
Nānak, Angad, Amar Dās, raḷ bhagat kamāñ,
Tēg Bahādur, Gurū Govind Singh daswīñ
badshāhī,
Itneḍāñ bhagatāñ baurēñ vāñ mērī āñ,
Ihdē pardē kajñē phir hō sahāñ.
Bālēd, na zamīn āsmāñ sī na kalan siyāñ
Tērd rūh rēhā vich siy dē, tērī umar vihdāñ,*

*Na tāt khāḍḍā ann sī, na pīt pāñ.
Tāt nām mērī jap lēyā kar amrit bāñ.
Tāt qarāñ hōyā main vaḍḍā āñ,
Bālak tū jagḍ lē, phir eutē jāñ.
Dachhāñ main lē lēñā tāt rōñ khāñ.
Chēlē sītāñ jōrīñ parh amrit bāñ.
Dōāñ jīñ nāñ pakar lē chal vēch bāzār,
Jāñ kōī gāhak sadlēdō kōī dassē kār,
Dachhāñ pūrā karn nāñ barōbar māl,
Nālē sādḍāñ vēkh lēyā sab hāl hawāl,
Rājī hōlē khā lēyā bah vart o pār.
Chēlē sītāñ jōrīñ parh nām chatār.
Sādḥ rāñ hōlē oḥ baiṭhē āñ.
Bālak dōvē dñkē kōl khalōtē āñ.
Sādḥ bālak vēkhkē hō rēhē hairāñ.
Ih barā bhagat mahāñ balī hai phir vich jāñ.
Khalq Ullāh sārī vēkhkē, hō gayī qurbāñ,
Qurbāñ hundi istarah, kar samajh bayāñ.
Chēdā ākhē, Dānēd, ih jag hī parwāñ.*

Help Nāmā once, thy servant, and didst raise

The cow to life again. And Balmik's shell
Salaamed thee — Balmik thou didst take
from out

It. Janak once adorned fair Sītā's head
With flowers. Thou once didst send her
Rām to be

Her husband. Drōptī too thou veildst, all
To hide her nakedness. Thou wentest once
A guest when sacrifice Baldēo made.
The glory thine. The head of Dhainsur
thou

Didst lop, and helpedst Rām to plunder once
Ceylon. Bhavisar too thou stayedst a night
With. Helper always thou art to thine
own.

In every age thy glory is. The Vēds
Give witness. Nānak, Angad, Amar Dās,
United all to worship thee, and Tēgh
Bahādur, Gurū Govind Singh, the tenth
Great leader of the Sikhs, were all by thee
Assisted. My turn comes: 'tis thou that
can,

Save me from all disgrace: now help thou
me.'

God said, 'O Bālā, when there was no
earth,

Nor heaven, nor pen, nor ink, thy soul then
lived

In pearly shell for many ages. Food
Thou atest not, nor didst drink of water cold
A draught, but with sweet words thou oft
didst take

My Name. I owe a debt to thee which I
Will pay. Now raise thy sons believing
them

Asleep. My fee I'll take, and then I'll dine.'
In language sweet the true disciple made
This song. The priest caught up his sons,
and straight

To the market place to sell them, or to hire
Them out to work, that he might have a fee
To give the holy ones in full. They saw,
They undertood; they broke their fast and
dined.

The true disciple has compiled the songs

Kahô, Dânéâ, paikambar Rabbê ðy bañdê?

*Lâ nazdik bañdkê Rabb pás bahâê,
Ihnân paikambarân nâ Rabb bhâi chârê pâê,
Mûsâ rôlî varjiyâ Rabb sad khôwâê.
Aidê aidê darsh né paikambarân lâê.
Kauñ rîsân karangê, amman dâ jâê.
Pîr âkhêd, Dânéâ, haiñ Mussalmân,
Wâz karêñ Rabb dâ téré vich nahîñ imân,
Maîhmânî Mûsâ varjiyâ Rabb na kitâ hai
parwân.*

*Chhe mahîné ann paklêkê phîr hór pakân.
Nûrî jhubbâ pahînkê, Rabb mangân jân,
Surîyâ mandâ dâkê paikambar, magrôn dhakkê
lân.*

*Magrôn maggarî Rabb nûñ, phîr saddân jân.
Sarîyâ mandâ vikhlâ dîtâ szb put gayâ mân.
Gaddê ann ladâkê, phîr nadlî lé jân.
Khâlhlâ ann jê machchhîdîñ gayâ samajh
jahân.*

*Hoyl jag sapûran na, vich dargâhê parwân.
Chêlê sifâtîñ jôrîdîñ szb khôl bayân.*

*Shahr Dhanesar vich sî, ik pândâ bhârî.
Pustak jad ôh vâchdâ, dissê arsh mundrâ
Shahri lôg uhnûñ âkhê jôtashî bhârî.*

*Dân nahîñ ôh chukdâ uhnûñ Râm piyârâ.
Jân ghar ê âwê pândhâ dalîlân kardâ.
Kalêja mērd khâ lēô, jadôn main mardâ.
Aivēñ vich chikhāñ dē chētā sar mardā*

Of praise. Now read — adore the Name.

Were pleased

Those holy ones. They sat, they ate, and near
Them close the brothers stood to their sur-
prise.

'A mighty devotee is this,' they said,

'And full of power in the world.' The
people saw,

And loved. This Dâná was, confess, a good

And proper sort of sacrifice. This sort,

The Chela says, is acceptable. Say,

O Dâná, did not God the prophets make?

God made them his own friends, and seated
them

Beside Him. Moses once invited God

To dine. He went to call him. Such great
things

The prophets did. Who are their equals?

None.

There is no mother now to bear such sons

As they were. 'Dâná,' said the priest, 'thou
callst

Thyself a Muslim, preachest God, but faith

In thee there is not. Moses called the Lord

To dine. In vain he called. Moses cooked

For full six months, when God, enrobed in
light,

A pauper came to beg, but Moses thrust

Him from the door bestowing on him one

Burnt cake. Soon after Moses went to call

His guest, but there, when showed the cake
which he

Had given the pauper, greatly shamed was he

And carted all his fresh made cakes to feed

The fishes in the river. This the whole

World understood. The sacrifice was not

Accepted.' Thus the true disciple gave

In song a full account.

There lived one time

A Hindu teacher in Dhanesar town

Who read wise books, and had great love.

He was

A great astrologer, received no alms,

And loved great Râm. One day from thought,
he said,

'My liver eat when death comes; do not let

It burn upon the funeral pile — who eats

*Jihṛā khāḡā, kalējā pāndhā hai ghar dā.
 Jān ghar āwē pāndhā ih salāh pakāḡ,
 Pāndhā bhārā hōwāḡā, jō kalējā khāḡ.
 Suṅkē gallān Jastrī nit hannēn pāḡ.
 Tē rēḡā hath Bhagwān dē jihnū Rām duwāḡ,
 Gaṇē na khuḡē jōsīyē, ā punnā hāl,
 Vēhī nē jind kadḡh lēī, sāhs niklē sō nāl.
 Pēt chāl kar lō nē kulējā bhāl,
 Chhikē attē rakhīyē vich kaj rumāl,
 Mānkhāne suchē ḡh ḡur payē ḡhāl karn
 shishkār,
 Chēlē sifṭān jōṛiān paṛh nām chitār.
 Jastrī us gal nūn nit pēi pukārē.
 Tē kalējā chhikēḡōn lāh lēyā muṅh rakh dō
 lārē,
 Bāhar shahrōn ḡur gayī mānḡh rakh vjārē.
 Chētā kōi ghar ē āṅkē, mat mainūn mārē.
 Jistrī ḡurkē puhaṭiā jākē banbās.*

*Ik lakh tapiyā tap kardā sī kītā niwās.
 Tapitān kōl Jastrī gayī vār ō vār
 Chhe mahinē labhiyā Bālē pīr dē darbār.
 Jastrī Bālē pīr dē jā sāmḡhē baṭṭhī,
 Tā mērd hai bāp jē, main tērī hān bēṭi.
 Pīr jō ākhē Jastrīyē, phīr suṅ tā bēṭi
 Bahūā sāḡh dharma hai, phir karmān seti
 Chūhṛēān dā main pīr hān, tā Brahman bēṭi,*

*Jarm piyārā, pīr jē, jihṛā Rabb nūn bhāwē,
 Main tapiyē āi vēkhkē kull sabhō sārē.
 Duniyā dē vich tapī nē, pāndhē mulwānē,
 Lōkān nūn das tārē āp dōzakh jānē.
 Narak dē vich tapī hān, pāndhē mulwānē,
 Main labhiyā hai bhālḡē phir chhaḡ nahin
 jānd.*

*Pīr jō ākhē Jastrīyē, suṅ bēbī rānī,
 Jō kuchh Bhagwān likhiyā amrit kar jānīn,
 Dittā Bhagwān dā khāḡē, bah umar langhānī
 Māl sādḡd chār khān vich jāh babānī,
 Jastrī kairān chārḡi, kōi baṛī aiyānī,
 Kairān jākē chugḡiān vich jāh niwānī.
 Sārā din ḡh chārḡi piyānḡi sī pānī,
 Dērē āwē pīr dē, jād rain vihānī.
 Suṅkē gallān pīr diān rāzī bah bānī,*

My liver will succeed me.' This he told
 To all. 'Whoever will be teacher great
 Must eat my liver.' Jastrī often heard
 And well remembered it. She thought, In
 God's
 Good time some one will have it. Death
 approached
 The old astrologer, his breath grew short,
 The angel of grim death took out his life,
 He ceased to breathe, — they opened him,
 they took
 His liver out — they hung it in a bag
 Suspended from the roof and hidden in
 A handkerchief. Then fasting, at the dawn
 Of day they burned him. The disciple sang
 These praises. Read and think about the
 Name.

But Jastrī well remembering his last
 Bequest, took down the liver, swallowed quick
 Two parts, and went towards the desert, for
 She feared the people of the house. A lad
 Of holy men were in the wild, 'mong whom
 She lived. She went among them till at last
 When full six months had passed, she found
 herself

With Bālā face to face. 'Thy daughter I,
 My father thou,' she said. The priest replied,
 'My daughter, hear. It is not right that thou
 Shouldst sit with me a Chuhṛa priest, and thou
 A Brāhman's daughter. Go seek thou, my
 child,

Another.' But she said, 'That caste, O priest,
 Is good that God loves. I have seen them all,
 Hindu and Muslim priests that lead to heaven
 And go to hell themselves — yes there there
 are

Both *pāndās* and *mulwāns*; I have found
 And will not leave thee.' 'Jastrī,' said the
 priest,

'My gentle queen, what God decrees, be sure,
 Is living water; eat what He provides.
 Here live, and tend our herds within this
 wild.'

A child she was. She tended his black kine
 In pastures low. All day she herded, and,
 At even she led them to the water. Then
 At night she heard the words of Bālā with

*Déré bahndé rât nân karé nám kahndi.
 Jastrí sâdhni lók hai, Pír Bâlé târi,
 Duniyâ uhnân yâl nahîn, main rihâi hân ki
 korâri,
 Yâl nahîn uhnân vérvé, na jân piyâri.
 Jastrí hô gayi sâdhni, kôî Bhagwân né târi.
 Ik din kailâîn chârûi, pîr râh dé nâl,
 Bhanné jandé lók né, kôî beshumâr,
 Nu kôî sâkhî ik dâ na kôî dujjâ nâl,
 Khalôti Jastrí vekhdi, aj ki hawâl ?
 Phir Jastrí aggé pîr dé, â arj gujârî,
 Bhannî jândi, bâp jî, aj duniyâ sâri,
 Râh nahîn kôî vekhdi, pâr jân ujârî.
 Aggôn nahîn main puchhed, sharmân di mârî.
 Phir Jastrí nân pîr dasdâ, sabh khôl bayân,
 Bhalaké mēlâ kumb dâ vadâdâ ashân.
 Fich jidilê phir nahatâdî pâp sarirôn jân,
 Êhō mēlâ kumb dâ, lôg bhanné jân.*

*Jastrî âhndî pîr nân chalê chuliyê asîn,
 Ajihâ nahân sikh dâ chalê nahâriyê asîn
 Râjî hokê tîr bâp jî, âvân rât ajjô hî
 Sunkê gullân Jastrî, hô taiyâr khalôti,
 Kumb nahân Jastrîyê, phir êk palkârâ,
 Us vėlê kôî nahâ lavê, ôh dharm dôvârâ,
 Utis bahinâ thâkurân phir êk palkârâ
 Us vėlê kôî nahâ lavê, phir karmân wâlâ.
 Jô vėlâ yâl hai mâr pândâ sârâ.
 Chêlê siftdî jôridî, kar'agî nihârâ.
 Jastrî âhndî pîr nân, kar manôn vichâr,
 Thâkurân dē bahî di nahîn mainâ sâr,
 Ajehâ nahân sukh dâ, chal mainân tîr.
 Chêlê siftdî jôridî, parh nám chitâr.*

*Savâ pahr din chahiyâ, Thâkurân dē bahî di
 vâri,
 Main pâni bhar lēvāngâ êk gadvâ kharî
 Tû gharê hî bahkê nihâ lēi, pâr pâp utârî
 Jâ tû vich ujâr dē, pēi kailâîn chârîn,
 Ik Bâhman bâl umar sî, dēhî kushîh satând,
 Lēkân uhnân âkhiyâ, Bâhmanâ hô siyânâ,*

Great reverence. She sat within his hut
 And heard strange stories of the Name. A
 saint
 Is Jastrî. Bâlâ blessed her. She the world
 Forgot, nor cared to be a wedded wife,
 Nor cared for life itself — a nun she was.
 God blessed her. Caring for her cows one day
 She saw great crowds of people run, and
 wondering
 She asked the priest, 'O father, all the world
 Is hastening to the jungle, shunning quite
 The road. No questions dared I ask.' The
 priest
 Explained, 'We have to-morrow morn the
 great
 Kumb-mēlâ, when they bathe in Ganges
 stream.
 At season opportune a bath one takes
 In Ganges water washes all one's sins
 Away. This is Kumb-mēlâ. People run
 To it.' Said Jastrî, 'Let us also go
 And bathe, or else send me, my father, I
 Will straight return to-night.' He gave her
 leave,
 And Jastrî in the twinkling of an eye
 Will bathe before the world. All such as
 bathe
 At such an hour are meet for heaven. The
 gods
 Will sit a moment at the river's mouth
 And happy he who bathes at such a time.
 If you, such fortune have, go all the way. *
 With wisdom has the true disciple made
 These songs. Said Jastrî to the priest, 'Thou
 knowest
 The time when gods sit; if indeed to bathe
 Ensures such blessing, help me to obtain
 It.' The disciple made these songs to sing
 And praise the Name. The priest said, 'When
 one
 And one full quarter of the morning watch
 That sees the sun has passed the gods sit. Stay
 At home. A basin full I'll give thee. Bathe.
 It is enough to wash your sins away.
 Then herd your cows again.' A Brâhman
 was,
 Who once became a leper. People said,
 'O Brahman, wisdom learn, to-morrow is
 The bathing day.' So he prepared his flour,
 And grain, and when they asked him whither he
 Was going, 'To the Ganges,' said he, 'I

Bhaljé mēlā kumb dā, tā ḡhē jānd,
Pallé kharch pā lēyā ād tē dān,
Puchham uhnūn lēy jad, āhndā main Gangā
jānd,
Chilē sūtān jīrīdā, mangē fuzl rabbānd,
Bāhman rākān ghushē pā gayā ujārī,
Ohāḡ lēkh matih dē khul gūyē, kītī mastak
yārī,
Apē Jastrī rich ujār dē, pēl kailān chārē.
Pachhiyā Jastrī, Bāhmanā, tēri dōhī hai
bhārī,
Jerm dītā sī māpēdā, dukh Rabb chā lāḡ,
Dānē pānī parālūbhat, tainūn ān mīlāyā,
Nikkē vaḡḡē bhārā nē, phir sabbhō vihkāḡ,
Blāḡlān sūdānān jinhān lālōk jāḡ,
Main chalyā nahān kumb dē, Rabb kōḡh
garāḡ.
Kumb nahānā Bāhmanā, phir hai nahīn vēlā,
Tainūn tih jāndān hō jāḡ ku vēlā,
Pickhān nūn mūr jā lkhān, ghar jā sarvār,
Bārāh barsī āḡ sī, phir ihō vēlā.
Bāhman main anāth sān, dukh Rabb chā lāyā,
Dānā pānī parālūbhat, tainūn ān mīlāyā,
Bāhman hath chhā jāyā, phir
Hath jōḡhē khārā hāyā, sīr qadamān tē
lāyā,
Mīhr ā gayī man Jastrī, dil tarsān āyā,
Pērc sādḡḡ chā lkhān, jikar pīr ē āyā.
Jāndē Bāhman rākī nūn Jastrī pā lēyā bāndhā,
Jēun Hīr pattān toḡ mōḡhē, ghar Rānjhā āndā.
Jēun sassī pattān malliyā, ghar Punnu āndā.
Jēun Sōhī dūbbī nār rich, nī 'ashq satāndā.
Jēun Rēḡḡ mārān khadhān khārē kurlāndā
Jēun magar Balōch dē bhannā sī jāndā.
Jastrī āhndī pīr nū, Tainūn karm rabbānd,
Ih Bāhman hai anāth, dēhī kushṡh satānd.
Mārēd hōyā kōḡh dā, āhndā main Gangā jāndā
Ihāi kayā suḡh hō jāḡ, ih jag hai shahānd.
Pīr dē dil tars āyā, man sū āyā mīhr,
Ikkō gadā pānī dā, sūnnūn trēhāyān nūn dhēr,
Gangā jal tā saḡhē, hath pīndē pher,
Pīr Dālā baurāḡ nahīn lāndā dēr.
Pīr jō āḡhē Jastrīyē, chauphērē vēkh
chauphērē,
Gangā jal tā saḡ dēhī, ih hath pīndē phērē,
Dukh ihā phir kūtīyē, ghar jāḡ sarvār,
Bāhman dē haḡḡ Jastrī jēun pāndē mēlē,

Must go.' The true disciple has composed
 These songs — he seeks God's grace. The
 Brahman lost
 His way, but fate marked on his forehead
 helped
 Him — fortune him befriended. Jastrī fed
 Her cows in the jungle. 'Why,' she asked,
 'look you
 So swollen?' He said, 'My parents gave me
 birth,
 But God has smitten me. My bread, and fate's
 Gift, water, brought me here to you. I have
 Both elder brothers and some younger too.
 But I an outcast am. My sisters have
 Fair children. Now I go to bathe on this
 Great Kumb day, that my leprosy my God
 May cure.' 'O Brahman, now there is no
 time
 To bathe in Kumb. Go home, and twelve
 short years
 Will bring the blessed time again.' 'A poor
 And hapless Brahman I! God sent this ill,
 A water and my fate have brought
 Me here.' The Brāhman stood with folded
 hands
 Before her; placed his head upon her feet.
 She pitied him. 'Come to the hut,' she
 cried.
 'The priest may now have come from Ganges
 stream.'
 She captured him as Hīr did Banja when
 She made him leave the boat-bridge on the
 stream;
 As Sassi sat on the bridge and brought
 again
 Her Punnu; just as Sohni for her love
 Was drowned, being sick of love; as Roda
 cried,
 Being beaten. He ran after the Baloch.
 And Jastrī said, 'O priest, God-blessed art
 thou.
 This Brāhman, leprosy, goes to wash himself
 In Ganges stream. If he is cured indeed
 A Shāhi sacrifice we see.' The priest
 Was moved—a basinful of water was
 A stream for thirsty souls. 'The Ganges
 stream
 Pour on thy body; rub thyself.' The priest
 Great Bālā helps, and lingers not. He said
 'O Jastrī, find a pond and straightway throw
 The Ganges water in, and in it let

*Jastri utthē pōṭiyā hathān tē pānē,
 Ih bī shagun tadōn dā, phir jug kahānī,
 Rīzq mōhārān chukīdān, phir dāhē pānī.
 Chēld ākhē Jastri, Bāhman lē jānī.
 Chapprē vēkhī Jastri, bhannī tē gahrī,
 Gīngā jal us saṭṭiyā, tubhkhē Bāhman māri,
 Ōhā kzyān suddh hōgayī, jēun lāl angiyāri.
 Dujjī ṭubhī mārkē, phir dalāl guzārī,
 Mērē lēkh mathē tē khul gaē, phir mastak
 sārī.
 Ih mērā Bhagwān hai, kōī kishan autārī,
 Muñh uttē hath phērkhē, Bāhman ṭubhī trīyī
 māri.
 Jastri mang lain dī dil vich dalāl guzārī,
 Us dekhalleñ pānī saṭṭiyā, lāl sū tārī,
 Bāhman puchkhē Jastriyē, Vidhī hai, kōvārī?
 Bāhman ākhē Jastriyē nāl mērē jānī
 Pārīn kṛīdān pākē hamēl hanḍānī,
 Nath, dandīdān, ārsī, sir chauñk chā pānī.
 Nāl mērē ṭar paō, Bāhmanī suddān
 Jangal vich baiṭhkhē, aithē kī bandēñ?*

*Trēvar lai lai paṭ dā bhūrī chā lāin,
 Jastri ākhē, Bāhmanā, ih gal hai kūrī,
 Mañ channīn lagī hāñ pīr dī, mērī pai gayī
 pūrī.
 Na trēvar lēñd paṭ dā, mañ nūñ changī hai
 bhūrī.
 Na dōlī chapṛnd shagan dē, na khāñī chūrī.
 Tū jākar kōī Bāhmanē, mañ kunī hāñ
 chūhī.
 Chēlē sifṭān jōṭān, harkē manjūrī.
 Bāhman ayyē pīr dē, kīṭī arāṭī.
 Tussī jangal andar hō rahē, nahēñ ṭabbar kī.
 Ghar tuhḍḍī Jastri, kithōñ paṭḍā hoī.*

Him bathe, and whole return.' So Jastri,
 just
 As Hindu priests on Ganges' banks are used
 To do, poured water on his hands. From
 thence
 The custom rose in the world. 'Twas then her
 bread
 And water took their rise. The *chela* says,
 'O Jastri, thee the Brāhman will take clean
 Away.' The pond that Jastri found was full
 Of mud and stagnant water, so he poured
 The Ganges water in, and forthwith dived.
 His body grew like burning coal, quite whole.
 A second time he dived and in his heart
 Conceived a thought. 'Fate's impress on my
 brow
 Has helped me — now my fortune's clear—the
 priest
 Is like a God to me—he is for me
 Krishn incarnate.' Once again he rubbed
 His face in his hands, and dived a third time.
 Now
 He firm resolved to ask fair Jastri. Then
 He splashed and swam, and said, 'O Jastri, say
 Are you a virgin or a wedded wife?
 Come, Jastri, come with me — I'll give you
 gifts,
 Feet ornaments and necklace you shall have,
 A nose ring, ear-rings, thumb ring, golden
 crown,
 All these, and you will be a Brāhman's wife.
 What have you here in this wild jungle? Put
 You off your plaid, and you shall have a gown
 Of silk.' But Jastri said, 'O Brāhman
 this
 Can never be, for I have humbly sat
 At this priest's feet, and he has blessed me. I
 Care nought for silken clothes. I love my
 plaid.
 I care not for a palanquin, how good
 So e'er the omens be. Rich food is not
 My choice. Go wed a Brāhman girl. I am
 A Chūhṛī.' With great pains these songs
 were made.
 The Brāhman humbly made request before
 The priest. 'The jungle is your home; you
 have

Chélé siftdn jôrdn kardd arzô.

Main phir jaddi Bahmân hân, na Dûm na Nâ,

Têré bûhé té ânké, main sêvd hai lî,

Jastrî mainûn chû dē, gast mandî sahî,

Jē phir Jastrî na dē ên, marân kaṭârî khâî.

Pîr jô âkhé, Jastî iyé, vêkh Bâhman bēnavâ,

Huñ jhûldd dukh nûn, huñ mangdd viḍh,

Nâl ihdē phir tur paḍ, sir ḥhân na charḥd,

Vas mēré phir kuchh nahîn, magar andôn ilâ Jastrî aggē pîr dē, lî batîhî chârâ,

Kyûn râh bhulânâ haqq dâ, kî karnâ kârâ.

Magar mēré pai géôn, Bâhmanâ gawârâ,

Rannân phirná bhûldâ, ajē huñ sâên duk hiyârâ.

Bâlê pîr Jastrî nûn, ik gal suñdî,

Sûd sî sat vantî, ghar Râm viḍhî â,

Harichand lāvân lē lēidn, parî arshôn tîn â.

Lôî bhagat kabîr dē ghar viḍhî â,

Kubjan dē ghar kâhn hōyâ, Bashdēv viḍhî.

Jis Bâbâ Nânâk jammiyâ, dhan hai oh mâtî,

Kithôn vadhē pîrmathî, gal bandî nahîn,

Chélé siftdn jôrdn, parh nam suñdî.

Chup kar gayî Jastrî, ây sharmân dâ vêlâ,

Bâhman dē nâl jâ ḥhân, dâ dēân changêrâ.

Jad nau nêzē pânî vaggiya sî, aemânî ghêrâ

Têrî kuṭṭiyâ sukki rihî sî, pânî nahîn ghaṭṭiyâ phêrâ.

Tû bî sukki rêhâ sâhên, karm kîtd changêrâ.

Dêôtêdn kîlôn mang lēâ, chand, suraj, zamân hai têrâ.

Ôh dâ dē ḥhân, mang ḥhân changêrâ.

Chêlâ siftdn jôrdn, kar 'aql vadhêrâ.

Bâlê pîr us vêlê siklaump kardî,

No wife; how could fair Jastrî be to you
A daughter? This the true disciple makes
These songs with lowly heart. 'A Brâhman I,
No bard or barber, I sit at your doors
A suppliant — give her to me, a boon.
Or else I will with knife relentless take
My life.' The priest said, 'Jastrî, look at
this

Weak Brâhman—but a moment gone he was
A sorry leper, now he wants to wed.
Go with him — let him not for your sake do
Himself an injury. And blame me not,
For you yourself did bring him.' Jastrî then
Began to make excuse in presence of
The priest. 'Why send me hence away
out of

God's way? Why should I take this step? Oh
why,

O Brâhman, have you followed me? But now
A leper, you come women to pursue.'

The priest to Jastrî said, 'A virgin pure
Was Sita. Harichand did marry her

To Ram, the fairies in attendance. Once

Too Loî fair became the wife of saint

Kabîr. Kubjan gave birth to Kahn, the wife
Of Bashdev was she. Blessed was the one

Who bore great Baba Nanak. Thus the world
Was peopled.' The disciple made these songs,

Then sing and glorify the Name. So still

Was Jastrî, bashful grown. 'Go,' said the
priest,

'This Brâhman wed. I'll give you dowry
large.'

She said, 'When once a flood full nine spears
deep

O'erspread the earth, the sky was dark with
clouds,

Then thy house only stood as dry as dust

When all the world was flooded. Thou did'st
get

A blessing from the gods — the moon and
sun

Are witnesses. That blessing give to me.

The privilege of begging, which is good.'

The true disciple has compiled these songs

With wisdom. Bâlâ gave to Jastrî right

To alms and gifts at every eclipse

Chand grahn kâ dâ dîttd phir Jastrî tîn.

*Bétd tére vichôn hōwégd, nām Vēdvā dharān
Chand grahn ming khāngé, rôz qiyāmat tādīn
Sāqde dān dītē, Dānéd, aj dēdā aiyanīdān
tādīn,*

*Jhūthē maslē karké, kisī Mussalmān nūn
sunādīn.*

*Dānē ākhé pīr nūn, Mussalmān hō jān,
Musallī karān palk vich, shartān karvādīn,
Kalma parhē Muhammā dē, mōmīn hō jān.
Mazhab 'Ādam dā saddīyē, bīhishtī jān,
Pīr jō ākhé, Dānéd, sun sādī bāt,
Na kadī rôza rakhiyā, na parhī namāz,
Na 'Ādam dē mazhab dē vich haūn, na kalmē
dē sāth,*

*Pichchādīn dassādīn khōlké, sārī qurāyāt,
Bāvē 'Ādam lēd sī, vich bīhishtīn vās,
Us dāna khādhd kānak dā, pēt bharvās.
Ōrak maīlā dūnd, ih bhairī bāsh,
Hukm kītā Rabb bhēd nūn, us lēd sū bhāsh.
Us tē shard chālādī paikambarādī, maīlē tē kītā
na visvās.*

*Kīkar khādhdī, Dānéd, bhēd, paikam barādī
pāl,*

Das, kadōn tū rēhd sādē vich bīhishtīn rāt ?

Kīhrī ōthē dīthī sādā, ik Rabb dī sāt ?

Us dā kalma parhāngé, karké ikdās.

Chélē sīftādī jōrīdān hō bē vasvās.

*Jē tē shard chālādī paikambarādī, ōh chīz nahīn
makrūhāt,*

Mussalmān khādūnī phir nāl ravādī,

Paikambar jīhrī kar gae, phir kull hikādī,

Assādī tūrnā usdē, phir nāl hidādī.

*Pīr jō ākhéd, Dānéd, paikambarādī dī sabh
jhūth kahādī,*

*Bhēd nahīn sī maīlā chādīyā, tān nahīn sī
khādī.*

*Shartāy lūd, dēō istrī dīdī, dhndē Rabb dī
farmādī,*

Chaudah tabak kahndēō, nau qutb rabbānī,

Phir kīkar dōhrē mar gayē, phir bājōn pādī,

Chélē sīftādī jōrīdān parhē amrit bādī.

Na rôza na ashīmī, na hajj 'īd guzdī.

Of the moon, and said, 'My child, from thee
will spring

A people called Vēdvās, who till the day
Of Resurrection will take alms, the moon
Eclipsed. O Dānā, know that Vēdvās take
Due gifts, this blessing being the cause.

Repeat

False teaching to some Mussalmān.' 'Be-
come,'

Retorted Dānā, 'Mussalmān yourself.

Musallī I can make you in a trice.

The way I know — repeat the *kalima*

Of our Muhammad ; be among the true

The faithful. This is Ādam's faith, that will
Bring you to heaven.' The priest replied,
'Fasts we

Have never kept, nor offered Muslim prayer,

We know not Adam, nor the *kalima*

Shall I to you your history tell? Know then

Your father Adam lived in Paradise.

Where once of greed he ate a grain of wheat.
That in him caused corruption, which the
sheep

At God's command did eat. All refuse is,

Therefore, forbidden. But the sheep you
eat,

And it is all unclean. When did you spend
A night in Paradise? What caste was there?

His *kalima* I'll speak with all my heart

Who came from thence.' The true disciple
made

These songs, being free from care. Dānā
replied,

'The law allows us ; we will eat such things

As history approves. The prophets gave

A perfect law — we follow them.' Then
said

The priest, 'O Dānā, false are all the tales

That are of prophets told : the sheep did not

Abstain from food forbidden. For your wives

You gamble, saying, God bade you, Fourteen
parts

You say the world contains, with nine great
poles

And all Muhammad's. Why then sadly died
His daughter's children without water ?'

See

*Nu 'Adam dé mazhab dé lôr hai na kamlé
dé vâri,
Tâ bî khôlké dus lîhân, apîr gur parndî,
Chêlé siftdn jôridân Rubb paij sawârî.
Pîr jô âkhêdâ, Dânzâ, sun sâddîdân bâtdân,
Bârd 'Adam thîn hoîdân nî, phîr sabbhó zâtdân
Magrôn uttpatî hôî hai Brahmé thîn jéun
shâlpâdn,*

The true disciple made in language sweet
These songs, and sings them. 'Fasts we
keep not, nor
Do we keep Hindu days, nor go pilgrims
To Mecca, nor keep festival like you,
Nor Adam's faith we follow, nor repeat
The *kalima*. Speak of your own quite plain.,
The true disciple has composed these songs,
God victory gives. The priest said, 'Dâná,
hear

My true defence. From Adam sprang the
castes,

And after him like branches people grew
Of Brahmâ. None else has there been. For
six

And thirty ages floated I in deep
Dark water, where I the creed did say
Of him who is the Only One. Whom then
Can I call equal to him?' None. These
songs

The true disciple made, and vindicates
The truth. Then outspake Chaudri Râm
Chand, 'Hear,

Thou, Dâná, teacher of the law, speak as
Thou pleasest. Use no force: in Delhi
rules

A brave Chugatta. I will swiftly ride
To him.' Said Dâná, 'What knowest thou,
my friend,

To eat eight loaves, and sleep in the shade, or
drink

Curd water, or go plough the fields. The law
We doctors only know.' A Khatri was
Rich Dêvi Das, who showed much kindness
to

The priest. So rich he was that other men
Did borrow from him. This man standing
up

Amidst the crowd said, 'Dâná, doctor of
The law, you have become a fool. We saw
The priest's strange powers, although I am
Hindu

And worship stones, and offer bread and
say

To idols, 'Eat;' the sun we worship, see
The marks upon our brows. We doff our
clothes

*Main jug chhattî rêhâ sâh vîch jal bhîmb dé
râtdân,*

*Ôthé kalma parhiyâ us êk dâ, dujjâ kôhrâ
âkhân,*

Chêlé siftdn jôridân, khôl sachchîdân bâtdân.

*Chaudhri Râm Chand tad âkhiyâ, sun Dânzâ
gâzî,*

Gullân kar lé muñh nâl, na karîñ darâzî.

Pichhê Dillî dâ talîht hai, chugattê Gâzî,

Ôthôn tîkar jângâ, churî ghôrdân tâzî,

Dâná âkhê, Chôudhrî, phir tâ kî jâdnêñ,

Atîh tikkîdân khâkê, pai rahên parchhâvôn,

Sanghnî lassî pilê, hal tô pâyâ vâhên,

*Is paikambar dî sharâ nûñ, assî jânnêdn
mulvânê,*

Dêvi Dâs Khatri lôn mâyâ dhârî,

Us parvarîsh kîfî pîr dî, kôî beshumârî,

Paisâ ôhâd vartê, Khatri hath pasârî.

Parhê dé vîch lîhâlkê us arz guzârî,

Sun tâ, Dâná gâzîyâ, mat têrî mârî

Assân té ihâî vâkh léî, auliyâî sârî

Assî jô Hîndû lôk hân, patthar nûñ sêvôn,

Rôfî dândê hân khân nûñ, lôô patthrô, jêvôn,

Tîkâ mathê lâkê sâraj nûñ sêvôn,

*Lîrê duallôn lâhkê nahâvôn tê dhôvôn,
Dêvî Dâs âkhiyâ, Hindû mêrâ nân,
Main kadî nahîn gal chhapâî, kun chhapândâ
nâhân.*

*Dîvâ bhariyâ pâîs dâ, vich battî ih pâî,
Dîvâ dâ chhadî bâlîkê, gal sachchî ih tâî,
Dîvâ jêkar na bâlîyâ sharî jhûthî hai tâî,
Dânê ikatthê kar lîyê sârê mulvânê.
Vaddê âp qâzîân, dâ tafsîrân jânê.
'Âlîm fâzil mauvî ravaîyatân wâlê,
Sabbhê jâkê bah gayê, phîr dîvê dâ duvâlî,
Ôh dâ hêth dharn Qurân bî, kitâbân vârn.
'Innâ tuainnâ kullôhu,' parhn, muñh thîn
parhkê pukâran.*

*Fazîl Îlâhî mangdê, parh sahifân mâran,
Dîvâ pâîs dâ balîdâ nahîn, hath kannân nâ
mâran,*

*Jhûthê qâzî hô gayê, phîr hañ na hâran,
Bhâwêñ jhûthê hô jân, paê raulâ ê mâran,
Dânê qâzî âkhiyâ, Dîvâ Pîr Shâh bâlê
Khalâtî hâñ khalqat hai, phîr sabh duallê,
Sabbhê mathâ têtangê, rañ qâzî sârê,*

*Phîr sir ô pâ dâangê, lâ jâlê duallê,
Bâlê nârî pîr nê Nâm Dhârî saiddê,
Dâdû Bhaggâ giânî, aggê hath nê baddhê,
Chôp rabbânâ sêkkê, Pîr Bâlê aggê,
Nâm jappê khân Dhâdîhâ, phîr dîvâ jâgê.
Bâlê nârî pîr nê phîr nârâ vâhyâ,
Dîvâ bhariyâ pâîs dâ Pîr Shâh jagâyâ
Ôhâdîñ Allâh lajjân rakhîñ âp madad sî âyâ.
Lâl khân dâ pôtîrâ Pîr Dhagânê jâyâ.
Dânê qâzî âkhiyâ, Tâ sîrâ pûrâ.
Vich masîti chal bahô khân kaun tainûñ âhnâd
Châhrya,
Tâ dîvâ pâîs dâ bâlîyâ kam kitô pûrâ,
Asîñ tân têrê chhêlê hân, tû pîr hai pûrâ.
Sunîkê pîr masîti dâ dargâhê jâsê,
Jâ kharâ dargâh vich, jâ ara sunâî,
Lakh rupiyê lâkê qâzî masîti banwâî,
Ôh dâ ôttê parda pâkê, mêrî maüt sâ banâî,
Tuddhê pardê kajñê mur hô sahâî
Châlê sîftân jôrtân var Durgâ mâtî.
Allâh âkhê, Bâlêd, tû pîr hai bhôlâ.*

And washing don them. Hindu I, I speak
The truth and fear not. Here a lamp filled full
Of water stands — a wick I place in it.
O doctor, light it by a miracle.
We then shall know you true : unless you can
Your boasted law is proved a lie.' He called
The teachers all, did Dâñ, and he sat
With all the learned men around the lamp.
The book Qurân they placed beneath it, then
They ranged their books about it, while they
said,
'Innâ tuainnâ kullôhu,' and breathed
Upon the lamp. They asked God's grace, they
threw
Their verses at the lamp, but all in vain ;
It would not burn, and they were ashamed
indeed,
But still they kept their spite, and made a
noise
In anger. Dâñ said, 'Let the Pîr Shâh light
The lamp. The whole assemblage will bow
down
Their heads before him, and a robe we'll
give
Of honour, which he'll wear and go.' The
priest
Great Bâlâ, priest of light, sent for those that
Revere the Name, and Dâdû, Phaggâ, who
Proclaim the truth, stood up with folded hands.
They warmed their wooden drum and sat
before
Great Bâlâ, priest. 'O sing,' cried Bâlâ, 'sing :
Sing hymns in praise of that great Name. The
lamp
Shall lighted be.' So Bâlâ, priest of light,
Did shout, and lo, the lamp with water filled
Burst into flame, and Bâlâ's fame was saved,
By God who helped him. This was grandson to
Lâl Khân, the son of Pîr Dhagânâ. 'Thou,'
Cried Dâñ Qâzî, 'art a doughty weight.
Sit in the mosque. Thou art no Chuhra, thou !
A wonder thou hast done — disciples we
Are henceforth. Thou art a saint.' When the
priest
But heard the name of mosque he went into
God's presence, where he standing made
request,
'This Qâzî here has made a mosque that
cost
A lîkh of silver, and a curtain he
Has curiously contrived to kill me. Come,

*Bhaṅgūrē lē lē gaib dē tē uḍḍan khaṭṭōlā,
 Sāl karīn masīt dā na rakhīn raulā,
 Rabb kisī nālīn vėkhīyā, māsēd kī tōlā,
 Bālā dkhē Rabb nūn, dē pak pakān,
 Nāl mērē ṭur paḍ, phir hōkē sach nām.
 Jalōn masīt varenḡā lēin agḡōn vekh,
 Main sūmnē hō khalōvāṅḡā faqīrān dē bhēkh,
 Rabb baṇāyē, Balā, tērē uchchē lēkh,
 Tīrā sūnī nahīn hōi, hō dē haiṇ anek,
 Bālā pīr partkē masīt val jān,
 Agḡē khalōtā Rabb sī, dhūle sūmnē jān.
 Mathā tēkē Rabb nūn Shāh sīs navā,
 Chēlē sifṭān jōrīdān parh nām suṇān.
 Bālā pīr masīt vich, bāh arzūn kardā,
 Nālē pīr kahāṇdā nālē Rabb thīn dardā
 Panj waqt namāz guzārīdā bah anṭar parhā,
 Mang duḍ Rabb thōn pīr pair bāhar sī dhardā.
 Pīr masītōn niklōyā, hō agḡē nālōn changā
 Kandhān ḡigḡīdān ḡirrakē, khān hō gāyā nangā.
 Shahr sārā sī vėkhāḍ, lā dīl dī sangā.*

*La'nat dēndē Dānē ḡāzī nūn, kam kītā nahīn su
 changā.*

*Pīr masītōn nikalē, phir bāhar āyā,
 Dānē ḡāzī dīl vich, hēr shuḡal jagāyā,
 Pīr rōṭī jāē khāukē sir ō pā mangwāyā,
 Ihnūn jān na dēūnā, pīr kadkī nahīn āyā,
 Kārīḡar sab shahr dē Dānē mangwāḍ,
 Ghēḍ dīē khaṇḍ dē chā dhēr lagāḍ,
 Kussaṇ dūmbē bakrē Shāh jab ḡhar āē,
 Andrassē kachaurīdān karāḥ baṇwāḍ,
 Ghēḍ maidē mōkē, pakwān kaḍḍē,
 Bāsbatī tē mushkānān, chāwal mangwāḍ,
 Tarkē laggaṇ pulḍō nūn khushbōḍē jāē,
 Chēlē sifṭān jōrīdān parh nām suṇān,*

And help me, save me from dishonour.' The Disciple has composed these songs, by help Of Durgā, goddess eloquent. God said, 'O Bālā, thou art simple, take for me Strange vehicles unseen, and flying beds, And move about the mosque unharmed. Let not This thing remain disputed. None has seen God, nor does any know what weight or size He is.' So Bālā said to God, 'Give bread, Even holy bread to me, and with me be A true Name.' 'When I enter look on me: I in the garb of holy man will stand Before thee. God made for thee, Bālā, fate, Good fortune. Second hast thou none, although Pīrs there are a many.' Bālā Pīr returned And straight advanced towards the mosque. God there Was standing. Bālā went to Him, and bowed His head. The true disciple has composed These hymns, and reads them to proclaim the Name. Within the mosque our Bālā sat and prayed To God. A priest was he and reverent. Five times he prayed, and then appeared unhurt Without the door, when crash the masjid walls Fell flat; the well lay there exposed to view Of all the world. The whole town saw and stared. They cursed the Qāzī Dānā, saying, 'Thou Hast meanly done.' But Bālā stood before Them in the open. Dānā planned again. 'We'll feed the priest,' he said, and sent for him A robe of honour. 'We'll not let him go. We'll say he never came.' And so he called The cooks most skilful of the town and loads Of *ghī* and flour prepared, and said, 'I will Kill rams and goats when Bālā comes to be My guest.' So cakes and rice and all things good He had — the flavour spread afar. These songs The true disciple made, and sings them for The Name. So Dānā thought, 'This priest shall not

Dânê qâzê dîl vich dalâl daurâi,
Pîr aivên tur na jaên, phir bâz azmân,
Ghar dî kuttî billî ôh zabh karâé,
Kimiyâ khûb banâyé, phir sômpî nâi,
Ihnûn ghêô vich bhunnâ, pânî mul na pân
Rinnhên khûb banâkê, muñhôn parda na hatân
Ih khânî Bâlê pîr nê, sânnû dujjî pân.
Chêlê sifân jôridn parh nám suñdân.
Kuttî billî suñkê pîr dargâhê jâé
Jâ khayâ dargâh vich, ja arz suñdî,
Kuttî billî vêkh lêi chayh riddhî hoi,
Pîr paikambar auliyâ nahîn khândâ kôî,
Muñh bismillah parhkê, hath chuk pân thâl,
Kuttî billî uñhégî, hukam méré dé nâl,
Paihlôn kuttî uñhégî, phir billî nâl,
Kâhl karkê chuk lén thâl uttôn rumâl,
Bâlê pîr Rabb nûn, ik gal suñdî,
Ik zandnê utrî us yârvîn châhî
Uhnûn Rabb murâdân dittân, us bêtê jî.
Ôhîd putt jawân hô pâyâ, buddhî kâj rachâi,
Mêl mandâl us saddiyâ, dhôlî bajwâi.
Janj vidiyâ hô pêi, nâl turîyâ nâi,
Aggê râh vich jândéân ik nadî sî dî,
Janj pâr langh gayî, mîllah lêi millahî.
Janj pahutî jâkê, unhân dâré bahâi,
Tê paisâ dhêld vartiyâ, râh changî âi,
Dôlî vidiyâ hô pêi, nâl tur pêi dâi.

Aggê râh vich jândéân, ôhê nadî dî,
Sañê janj dôlê dub gayî, phir bâhar na âi,
Bûrâh varhê rôndi rahî phir Rabb âs
pahunchâi.
Jân Bâlê pîr nû saddâ karêô, aggê farsh
bichâônâ.
Nafrân jâkê Shâh nûn kâhâ, rôjî khâ murbânâ
Aggê Shâh dé sâvâ tôta, zikr karê subhâna,
Hukam kîtd Shâh Rôshan tân, Samajhê
kaisê khând?
Amar Idhî vêhî âyâ, môyâ tuddh jârvâna
Dânê khudî dharô kamâyâ, Rabb nê mul na
bhândâ.
Jad khânê uttôn parda lahiyâ, hâyâ khêl rab-
bâna.
Kuttî billî zinda hô gayî, chummê gadam
shahâna.
Manjê uttê gayâ baithâ uqâé uqâ asmânân,
Hêtham Dâná karê salâmân dur hâyâ havvâna.

Without good trial go.' He killed and hashed
 His cat and dog, and gave them to be cooked
 By the village barber, saying, 'Fry it well,
 And put no water in. The lid do not
 Lift off, and Bâlâ will partake.' The true
 Disciple made these songs. Proclaim them
 for
 The Name. The priest in due course heard
 about
 The dog and cat, and going into God's
 Most holy presence said, 'I saw the dog
 And cat which they have cooked. Priests,
 prophets, saints,
 Have never eaten food like this.' God said,
 'Whenever thou shalt put thy hand within
 The dish, say 'In God's Name,' and cat and dog
 Will rise at my command, the dog and then
 The cat. But quick the dish uncover.' So
 He told to God a story. 'Once there was
 A woman, who to God gave one-eleventh
 Of all her income. Gifted he her with
 A son, who in due time was married. Then
 The drums were beat, and the party with
 The barber took their way. A stream they
 crossed.
 The boatmen got their fee, the journey full
 Was made, and all and sundry dues being paid
 Homewards they came, the barber's wife
 herself
 Being with them, but midway across the stream
 The bride with palanquin, and all the rest
 Were drowned and lost. The mother wept for
 twelve
 Long years, and God restored them.' Dâná
 called
 For Bâlâ, spread a carpet for him, sent
 His servants with a message, 'Come, my lord.'
 A parrot white did shout loud praise to God,
 But Bâlâ Shâh said to Shâh Rôshan, 'Dost
 Thou know what sort of food this is?' then
 came
 A heavenly message, 'Thou shalt raise the
 dead,
 For Dâná has deceived thee. God doth like
 Him not.' The dog and cat were presently
 About the feet of Bâlâ, licking them,
 And Bâlâ on his cot rose to mid heaven.

Dharti upar manjā āyā, nēōn nēōn karē salāmān
Dānā sūrā pūrā kahānā, dīṭhā, sañ nazrānā,
Sai sūrē mān aggē dīṭhē, karē gayē salāmān
Gurū Nānak nūn phay andar dīṭhā, chakki
pakar shamhāna.

Shāh Daulā chhap langhā mān tēn, munda
magar bhajānā.

Tainūn sūrma Rabb bāṇāyā, baḥshē mēri jānān

Rāzī hō Shāh nazrān lēiān, āyā, vich makānā
Sāmān Shāh dī shukar bajāyā, sharm rahē
Rahmāna,

Vich nishānī jhāṇā layā, nālē gōr zandā,
Randē vān pakaru pīrā, mushkil karn asāna.
Aid aḥharē Bālē kītē, dīṭhā jumal jānāna.

Main augānhārā nām japandā, bhair Jamdōn
pānā.

Oh ih ik sach Nām dhanī.

Then Dānā bowed, his pride was broken; and
 'Asūrā' said he, giving gifts. He said,
 'I many holy men have seen, who me
 'Much honoured; Bābā Nanak made I grind
 My corn; Shāh Daulā fled; the boys I made
 Eject him; thee alone has God made great.
 Oh spare my life.' The Shāh accepted all
 His gifts, and homewards went; his followers
 thanked

Great God, who saved him from dishonour.
 Raised

He his fair flag, and made his grave where all
 The people go to pray for help in pain.
 Such wonders Bālā did — the whole world
 saw.

A sinner I repeat the Name. From heaven
 Give gifts. There is one Name, Eternal,
 True.

ARCHÆOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

BY THE REV. A. H. FRANCKE.

Supplementary Note.

IN the Plates attached I exhibit three photographs by Dr. E. Neve of Srinagar, Kashmir, which are of special interest, as the objects represented have never before been depicted for the information of scholars. Two are from Alchi Monastery near Saspola (*ante*, Vol. XXXV. p. 325) and the third from Khalatse.

Alchi Monastery.

Plate I. shows a portion of the gallery with its trefoiled arch and wood-carvings, Plate II., fig. 1, shows a portion of the interior. The fresco of the monk behind the statue of Buddha is said to be a portrait of Lotsava Rinchen bZangpo.

Dogra Fort near Khalatse.

Plate II., fig. 2, represents the most ancient inscription on stone (whitened before photographing for clearness) in Ladākh according to Dr. J. P. Vogel. It is situated a few yards below the Dogra Fort at Khalatse. The characters are Indian Brahmi of the Maurya period. Dr. Vogel reads them to represent the word Bharad[v]ayasa. (See *Annual Progress Report, Archæological Survey*, pp. 31-32.)

ARCHÆOLOGY IN WESTERN TIBET.

Plate I.



Gallery of the Monastery at Alchi-mkhar near Saspola.



Fig. 1. Interior of the Monastery at Alchi-mkhar near Saspola.



Fig. 2. Ancient Inscription at Khalatse, Ladakh.

ON THE NAVASAHASANKACHARITA OF PADMAGUPTA OR PARIMALA.

BY THE LATE PROFESSOR G. BÜHLER, C.I.E., LL.D., AND DR. TH. ZACHARIAE.

(Translated from the German by May S. Burgess.)

I. — The Manuscript.¹

THE following short account of a hitherto unknown Mahākāvya is based on one manuscript only. This manuscript belongs to the little-known collection of James Tod, preserved in the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society in London, and is numbered 113. It consists of 185 (written, and a number of blank) palm-leaves, with two to four lines on the page, in old Nāgari writing. The two first, with the two last leaves, have been completed by a later hand, apparently because the MS. had been injured at the beginning and end. The date of the MS., if it ever was given, has not been copied by the writer of the 185 pages. It may be presumed, however, that the MS. is of great age, from the fact that the numbering of the single leaves is carried out on the right side by means of the usual figures, and on the left by letters: compare Kielhorn, *Report on the Search for Sanskrit MSS.* (Bombay, 1881), p. viii. ff. Besides, manuscripts, such as the one under consideration, have been so often described, — *e. g.*, by Kielhorn in the report just quoted — that further description would be superfluous.

The manuscript is, on the whole, very well preserved. Only on a few pages is the writing blurred and indistinct. Leaf 82 is broken and part lost. Corrections on the margins of the leaves, as also completions of verses or parts of verses, are often carried out in Sāradā writing.

If the manuscript shows errors and defects — the text is not as a whole quite so correct as one could wish, — it is at least complete, and in this respect, in the meantime, unique. It is, indeed, still possible, that in India complete manuscripts of the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* may be found. Still, with each year that becomes less probable. Manuscripts which have become known up till now are incomplete. This is also true of the two manuscripts, which, according to Burnell (*A Classified Index to the Sanskrit MSS. in the palace at Tanjore*, p. 163 a), are found in Tanjor. While the work of Padmagupta (Parimala) consists of 18 sargas, these manuscripts only contain 17 sargas. Besides, as one of them is not inked, and the other (written about 1650), imperfect and much injured, it may be taken for granted that the manuscript material at Tanjor would not be sufficient for an analysis or even for an edition of the work; — for the rest, the title of the Kāvya is, according to Burnell, *Śhasāṅkacharita*, and the name of the author, Parimala Kālidāsa (!).

Also the manuscript, which the publishers of the *Subhāshitāvali*, Messrs. Peterson and Durgāprasāda, have brought out, was imperfect.² The “fragment” includes “several sargas” and extends at least to the sixth sarga, as may be gathered from the account of the scholars just mentioned. The beginning of the work, however, is assuredly not preserved in this fragment, otherwise Peterson and Durgāprasāda would doubtless have drawn up a more exact chronology of Padmagupta than that given in the words: “In his *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* Parimala or Padmagupta refers to Kālidāsa, somewhere between whom and Kshemendra he is therefore to be put. His Kāvya is in praise of a king of Avanti” (*Subhāshitāvali*, Introd. p. 53). Further, it is shown below that the date of Padmagupta may be fixed as precisely as possible in the literary history of India.

¹ This paper appeared in the *Sitzungsberichte* of the Wien. Imp. Akademie of Sciences for 1888, in the Phil.-hist. Class (Bd. CXVI, Hft. i, S. 583—630). The first 20 pages of the German are by Dr. Zachariae, and the last 27 by Dr. Bühler.

² Conf. *Subhāshitāvali* of Vallabhadeva (Bombay, 1886), Introd., p. 57 ff. Here also in Peterson's small pamphlet, the *Auchityālakāra* of Kshemendra (Bombay, 1885), p. 25 f., is found collected all that is known concerning the poet Padmagupta and his works.

II. — The Author, his time, and his work.

The name of the author is **Padmagupta**: so he is called in the colophon to the first sarga of the *Narasāhasāṅkacharita* in the manuscript before us, in the first of the four tail verses which are attached to the poem: —

*Etad vinilrakumudadyutiPadmaguptah
śrīSindhurājanripateś charitam babandha³ ||*

in the *Daśarūpa* (ed. Hall, p. 96); and in the *Suhhāshītāvali* under No. 168, another name — and as it appears the more usual name — of Padmagupta, is **Parimala**. He is almost always called so in the sarga signatures of the manuscript before us; also, for example, in the *Gaṇaratnamahodadhī*, p. 117.

Padmagupta's father was called **Mṛigaṅkagupta**, as given in the colophon to the first sarga.

The period of Padmagupta is easily fixed. Padmagupta composed the *Mahākāvya* *Narasāhasāṅkacharita*, which treats of the winning of the snake-king's daughter **Sasiprabhā** (*Sasiprabhādībhāḥ*), for the glorification of his patron-king **Sindhurāja** *alias* **Navasāhasāṅka**. This is clearly and distinctly expressed in the concluding verses of the poem — compare the passage quoted. Who was this king **Sindhurāja**, however? Where did he rule? This point is explained for us in the first sarga, especially in these two verses —

*Sarasvatīkalpalataikakandaṁ
vandāmahe Vākpatirājadevam |
yasya prasādādāvayamapyamutra
kavindrachīrṇe pathi saṁchardmah || 6 ||
divaṁ yiydūrmam vāchi mudrā-
madutta yān Vākpatirājadevaḥ |
tasyānujanmā kavibāndhavasya
bhīnatti tām saṁprati Sindhurājā⁴ || 7 ||*

Padmagupta was therefore court-poet to **Vākpatirājadeva**, a friend of poets (*kavibāndhava*), and after his death, court-poet to **Sindhurāja**, who is called a younger brother (*anujanman*) of **Vākpatirāja**. Now we proceed to find **Sindhurāja** described as **Avantipati**, **Mālavaminaketana**, **Paramāra**, **vaṁśaketu**, &c., thus it appears quite certain that, in **Vākpatirāja** and **Sindhurāja**, we have two well-known kings of **Mālava**, belonging to the dynasty of the **Paramāras**. The time of the rule of these kings is ascertained pretty closely from inscriptions,⁵ and from that the date of Padmagupta may be fixed. The period of the literary activity of Padmagupta falls in the last quarter of the tenth and the beginning of the eleventh century A. D.⁶

³ This story of the celebrated king **Sindhurāja**, which is beautiful as a full-blown white lotus, Padmagupta has composed.

⁴ We praise the one (incomparable) root of the wishing tree of the **Sarasvatī**, king **Vākpatirāja**, by whose grace we also wander in the path trodden by the poet princes.

The seal, which **Vākpatirāja** put upon my song, when he entered heaven (by his death), the place and allowance of a court poet I lost, and ceased to compose poetry: Now **Sindhurāja**, brother of that friend of poets, frees me.

⁵ Conf. *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. p. 48 ff., especially p. 51 ff.; and Vol. XIV. p. 159 ff. *Bezzenger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogerman. Sprachen*, IV. 71 ff. **Sindhurāja** was the son of **Siyaka** (as mentioned in the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, 8, 77; 11, 85; 13, 59) and father of the renowned **Bhoja** of **Dhārā**.

⁶ The period of Padmagupta is first correctly fixed by *Zachariae* in the article: *Sanskrit vichchhitti*, *Cosmetic*, a supplement to the science in *Bezzenger's Beiträge* XIII., 99; Anm. 2. It points out also that Padmagupta was a contemporary (it is added: and an intimate fellow-countryman) of **Dhanapāla**, the author of the *Paṇḍitachchhī*. On **Dhanapāla**, conf. *Bühler*, *ut supra*, IV. 70 ff., and in the *Sitzungsberichten der Phil.-hist. Cl. der K. Akad. der Wissenschaften zu Wien*, 1882, p. 568 ff.

This is almost all we can extract from the *Navasāhasānkacharita* respecting Padmagupta. It may be mentioned that, according to his own statement in the fourth concluding verse, he composed his poem at the command of king Sindhurāja, not from poetic pride (*ājīva hetur . . . na kavitrādupah*). In the colophon to the whole work, the author is called a *leṭitikavi*, a clever poet — a title which was held as specially honourable.⁷

As regards the title of the *Kāvya Navasāhasānkacharita* it must be remembered that there is another work of this name not yet discovered: *Sriharsha* is also known to have composed a *Navasāhasānkacharita*.⁸

It may be accepted without dispute that Padmagupta wrote other works besides the *Navasāhasānkacharita*. There has even been expressed a conjecture as to the contents of a lost poem by Padmagupta. *Kshemendra*, in the *Auchityālamkāra* namely, quotes a number of verses under the name of *Parimala*, which, it may be remarked, do not appear in the *Navasāhasānkacharita*. From these verses Peterson has concluded that "the theme of the (lost) poem was that expedition into Gujarāt despatched by Tailapa under a general of the name of *Barapa*," against *Mūlarāja*, the founder of the Chaulukya dynasty of Anahilapattana, who for some time was hard pressed, though, according to the Gujarāt chroniclers, the general was eventually defeated with slaughter. "The striking verse in the *Kāvyaprākāśa*: *Rājan rājasutā na paṭhayati mām* (p. 450, Calc. Ed. 1876) wears every appearance of being from the same work, for which we should be on the outlook" (*The Auchityālam* of Kshemendra, p. 26). Peterson's conjecture may be looked upon as a good one, in so far at least as there is nothing against it from a chronological point of view. Tailapa, king of Kalyāna and *Parimala*, were contemporaries. One only wishes that *Parimala*'s lost poem could be found.

III. — Quotation from the *Navasāhasānkacharita*.

As the time of Padmagupta can be pretty exactly fixed, it will be of interest to find out, on the one hand, which poets he names in his *Kāvya*; on the other hand, by which authors verses from the *Navasāhasānkacharita* are quoted.

Unfortunately Padmagupta very seldom mentions earlier poets, and only those whom we know were earlier than the end of the tenth century. They are the following:—*Kālidāsa*, 1, 5, 2, 92; *Guṇāḍhya*, the author of the *Bṛihatkaṭhā*. 7, 64, in a play on words (*śrutā guṇāḍhyasya bṛihatkaṭhā tava*); finally *Bāṇa* and *Mayūra* in a verse, which, in some degree, recalls the well-known verse of *Rājasekhara* — *aho prabhāvo vāgdevyādh*.¹⁰

sa chitravarṇavichchittihārīṇoravanīśvaraḥ |

Sri Harsha eva saṅghaṭṭuṇ chakre bāṇamayūrayoḥ ||

The place has been described in detail by Zachariae in a sketch on Sanskrit *vichchitti*¹¹ in *Bezenberger's Supplements*, XIII, 100.

⁷ Conf. *Vikramāṅkadevacharita*, 18, 101, and also Jacobi in the *Literaturblatt für Orientalische Philologie*, III., 66.

⁸ Conf. *Naishādhacharita* 22, 151; *Vikramāṅkadevacharita*, ed. Bühler., Introd., p. 2.

⁹ In the Calcutta edition of 1866, p. 292, the verse is quoted with variations also in the *Sarasvatikanṭhābharaṇa*, ed. Borooah, p. 255, in which is added: *atrāṇayoktibhaṅgā śṛṅgikṛitārinagarasya narapatēḥ kaśchit pratāham varṇayati* (p. 256). — Incidentally attention is directed to the verse *Vāsishṭhaiḥ Sarasvatik*, p. 349, 17, upon which *Anfrecht* has already remarked in the Catalogue, p. 497 n.

¹⁰ Quoted for example in the *Subhāshitāvalī*, Introd., p. 86.

¹¹ Here a correction and addition is acknowledged. The expression *varṇavichchitti* means with regard to the arrow of king Sindhurāja "putting together of letters," arrangement of syllables. The arrows of the king were marked with his name — The rare Sanskrit word *vichchitti* is also used in *Navasāhasānkacharita*, 17, 19.

Lāṇḍh samālam subhāṣipatiraiḥ

saśarasaḥ śonitaśika[rā]rādhāḥ |

utālaraiḥsvatatālarvintā-

vichchittim akurḥ karikarpatāldhāḥ ||

We must give greater attention to the quotations which are to be found in grammatical, rhetorical, and other writings of India under the name of Padmagupta or Parimala. A number of such quotations have been already collected by Peterson and Durgaprasāda in the introduction to the *Subhāshitāvali*, p. 51 ff. These quotations will now have to be gone through with the greatest possible avoidance of unnecessary repetitions.

The phrase *namo namaḥ kāvyaśāstāya tasmai* in *Subhāshitāvali*, No. 168, is taken from the introduction to the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, Sarga I., v. 13. The verse *chitravartiny api nripa*, which Dhanika quotes in the commentary to the *Daśarūpa*, II. 37 (compare Hall's publication, Preface, p. 36 n.; Petersburg Dictionary, Supplement under Padmagupta), occurs *Navasāh.* 6, 42. This is the only verse which Peterson and Durgaprasāda have found in the fragments accessible to them. All other verses, which have been quoted by these scholars chiefly from the *Auchityavichāra-chārāṇḍ* of Kshemendra, as belonging to the Parimala, do not appear in the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, and must therefore, in so far as we do not accept another Parimala beside our Parimalāparanāmā Padmaguptaḥ, be derived from lost poems of Padmagupta's. One thing is still to be remarked that the strophe *adhākskēn no Laṅkā* can hardly belong to Parimala. In the work or works where it is ascribed to Parimala there is probably an error. It is to be remembered that the fourth Pāda of the strophe (*Hanūmantam*, &c.) is quoted by Ujjvaladatta (at Un I, 11, p. 6, 10, ed. Aufrecht) under the designation *bṛihatprayoga*. This expression means¹² something like "renowned example," "classical example." Is it to be accepted that Ujjvaladatta — or his authority — has honoured a passage from a work of Parimala's with this designation?

In a systematic examination of certain classes of literature quite a number of quotations might perhaps be pointed out, either given under the name of Padmagupta (Parimala) or anonymous. There are indeed often verses quoted without naming the author. We can here furnish only a small supplement to the groups in the *Subhāshitāvali* (above referred to). Parimala is quoted¹³ (which Peterson and Durgaprasāda have overlooked) also in Vardhamāna's *Gaṇaratnamahodadhī* (p. 117, 7, ed. Eggeling): *chāpo dhanuḥ | yathā Parimalasya*.

*Vipakṣahṛiddhāṅgakṛitā nitāntam
bhrūlekhayā kuñchitayollasantyā |
nākdramātreṇa parāṇitapasya
yasyānvakāri kriyayāpi chāpaḥ ||*

= *Navasāh.* I. 74; *yasya*, i. e., Sindhurājasya, The *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* is quoted anonymously four times in the tenth Ullāsa of the *Kāvyaaprakāśa*, p. 323, 2 (in the publication by Mahesha Chandra Nyāyaratna, Calcutta, 1866).

*Bhimbaushika eva rāgaste tanvi pūrvam-adriṣyata |
adhund hṛidayepy-ēsha mṛigaśāśvāṅkshi lakshyate ||*

= *Navasāh.* 6, 60; Böhtlingk, *Indische Sprüche*, No. 4461. The verse serves as an example for the figure *pariyāya*.

*Kāvya*pr., p. 335, 7, 11, are given as examples for the figure *vishama* —

*śiṛṣhādāpi mṛidvaṅgi kveyam-āyatalochand |
ayaṁ kva cha kukūlāgnīkarkaśo madandānalaḥ ||*

= *Navasāh.* 16, 28, where the third Pāda begins with *ēsha kva cha*; and—

¹² On the meaning of *prayoga* accepted above, conf. the commentary to *Gaṇaratnamahodadhī*, I. 3; Zachariae, *Beiträge zur ind. Lexicographie*, p. 75, note I. The lexicographers explain *prayoga* by *nidarāṇa*. — Böhtlingk takes *bṛihatprayoga* for the title of a work. Aufrecht seems to look upon *bṛihat* as an abbreviation of *Bṛihatkāthā*; (conf. the Pet. Dictionary under *Bṛihatprayoga*).

¹³ Pointed out by Zachariae, *Göttinger Gelehrte Anzeigen*, 1880, p. 922.

*sadyaḥ karasparśam-avāpya chitrāṁ
raṇe raṇe yasya kṛipāṇarekhā !
tandlanīlā śaradindriyāṇāṁ
yāśas-trilokyābharaṇaṁ prasūte ||*

= Navasāh. I. 60 (with immaterial variations). The first of these verses is found besides in the *Alaṅkāravimarsini* of Jayaratha (Deccan Coll. MS. No. 23, fol. 166^b) according to Pischel. *Gott. Gel. Anzeigen*, 1884, p. 511; the second in the *Sāhityadarpaṇa*,¹⁴ under No. 720. Both verses are, to all appearance, copied from Jayadeva¹⁵ in his *Chandrālīka*, V. 85, 86 :

*bhayanā śiṛīṣhamrīdvāṅgī kva tūvaṇ-madanajvaraḥ ||
kīrtiṁ prasūte dhavataṁ śyāmā tava kṛipāṅkū ||*

(in Jibānandā's publication (Calcutta, 1874). Finally the *Kāvyaprakāśa*, p. 339, 9, is quoted as an example for the figure *ekāvalī*).

*purāṇi yasyāṁ savarāṅganāni
varāṅganā rūpapuraskṛitāṅgyaḥ !
rūpaṁ samunnīlitasadvīḍa-
m-astram vīḍāḥ kusumdyudhasya ||*

from the description of the town Ujjayini, *Navasāh. I. 21* (*purāṇi yasyāṁ savarāṅganāni*, MS.).

No single passage from the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* is quoted in the *Sarasvatīkaṇṭhābharaṇa*. This is rather remarkable, for Bhojadeva, the recognised author of the *Sarasvatīkaṇṭhābharaṇa*,¹⁶ must have known the court-poet of his uncle (Vākpati) and of his father (Sindhurāja). The possibility that the verse *Vāsishṭhaiḥ Sarasvatīk*, p. 349, belongs to a lost work by Parimala has already been pointed out, p. 151, note 9.

If, on the other hand, verses by Parimala are seldom quoted in *Anthologies*, it may be understood from this, that his poem is poor in fine phrases and maxims (*subhāshita*).

IV. — The Navasāhasāṅkacharita.

The *Mahākāvya* of Padmagupta contains 18 Sargas, which, as in other poems of this class, bear special names. In the manuscript under notice all these names are not given completely. So far as they are preserved they will be given below.

The total number of the strophes is roughly 1525. With reference to the investigations by Jacobi¹⁷ as to the use of the metres in the *Mahākāvya*s we ought, at least, to give the measures Padmagupta has used. The chief metres are : in 1, 9, 14, 17 sarga, *Upajāti*; in 2, 6, 11, 16, *Anuṣṭubh*; in 3, *Pushpitāgrā*; in 4, 7, 13, *Vamśastha*; in 5, *Aupachchhandasika*; in 8, *Rathoddhaid*; in 10, *Manjubbhāṣiṇī*; in 12, *Vaṭṭalīya*; in 15, *Udgatā*; in 18, *Vasantatilakā*. Besides this, in the closing verses of single sargas, the following are used as side metres :— *Praharṣiṇī*, *Mandākrāntā*, *Mālinī*, *Vanamālā*, *Sārdślavikṛīḍita*, *Sālinī*, *Sikharinī*, *Sragdharā*, *Harinī*. Thus 19 metres are used in the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, that is, exactly as many as in the epics of Kālidāsa. It is also to be noticed that Padmagupta is free from all metrical tricks.

¹⁴ In the English translation, p. 416 f., His (i. e., Sindhurāja's) sword, wonderful to say, dark as it is like the Tamāla tree, in every battle having obtained contact with his hand, engenders at the very moment a fame, white as the autumnal moon glorifying the triple world.

¹⁵ Pischel's assertion (Rudraṭa's *Śṛīṅgaratilakā*, p. 8, 17) that Jayadeva, with one exception only, uses his own examples, must be somewhat qualified.

¹⁶ Bhojāḥ *Sarasvatīkaṇṭhābharaṇakartā*, Gaṇaratnamahodadhī, p. 2, 11.

¹⁷ Conf. *Die Epen Kālidāsa's*, p. 135 ff. *Verhandl. des 5ten Int. Orient. Congresses*, II. 2, and *Zeitschrift des deut. morgenl. Gesellschaft*, 38, 615.

Three or more verses, which, according to the meaning, form a unity, are expressed as such by the expressions *kalāpaka*,¹⁸ *kulaka*, *tilaka*, and *samānītaka*. The last two of these expressions have been till now used but sparingly; besides, their use does not always agree with the rules of the Indian theorists. Thus *samānītaka* as a rule is used in order to combine two verses, through which one and the same sentence runs, while this expression, for example, according to the *Śāhityadarpaṇa*, No. 558, serves to join three verses.¹⁹ If in sarga 14, 79—85, seven verses, is called a *tilaka*,²⁰ this is apparently merely a slip of the pen for *kulaka*.

Padmagupta's language is, on the whole, pure, simple, and easily understood. In individual cases the want of a commentary is pressingly felt.

The story which Padmagupta relates in his *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* with the peculiar breadth of the Mahākāvya, has, without doubt, a historical background. Not only the hero of the poem, king Sindhurāja, did really exist; the other people too, who appear in the poem as Nāgas, Vidyādhara, Asuras, &c., have played a part as comrades or enemies of the king. Meanwhile it will be difficult to fix the true names and positions of the historical characters which appear in Padmagupta and must be left to others (conf. below, p. 171).

The following analysis of the poem is given in brief. It will merely be a sketch. The endless speeches and long-winded descriptions, which fill up a great part of the poem, without essentially affecting the narrative, will not, as a rule, be taken account of.

First is an index of the characters (speaking or acting) which appear in the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* :—

Sindhurāja *alias* **Navasāhasāṅka**, king of Mālava.

Yasobhata *alias* **Ramāṅgada**, his minister.

Saṅkha-pāla, a king of the Nāgas.

Sasiprabhā, his daughter.

Anaṅgavati,

Kalāvati,

Mālyavati,

Pātālā,

} Friends of Sasiprabhā.

Narmadā (Revā), the goddess of the river of the same name.

Vaṅku, a Muni (Maharshi).

Ratnachūḍa, a young snake-demon.

Sasikaṇḍa, a king of the Vidyādhara.

Mālatī, his wife.

Vajrāṅkusa, a king of the Asuras.

Viśvāṅkusa, his son.

V. — Analysis of the Poem.

The first sarga bears the title *nagarīnarendravaraṇam*. The town, that is, Ujjayinī, is described, vv. 16—55. The rest of the sarga is dedicated to the *narendravaraṇam*. The king is called **Sindhurāja**. Other names of the king are, **Navasāhasāṅka** and **Kumāranārāyaṇa**. Of these

¹⁸ Without doubt these names of Śloka-connections are referred to in the *Trikāṇḍaśeṣa* III, 2, 23, under *kalāpakaviśeṣakam*, &c., which, like so many other statements in this Lexicon, has been misunderstood (see Zachariae in Bezzenberger's *Beiträge*, X. 122 ff.). In the Petersburg Dictionary under *Kalāpaka* we meet with the meaning "sect marks on the forehead."

¹⁹ Yet the younger Vāghbata teaches in his *Alaṅkāratilaka*: *ekena cchandasā muktakam* | *dvābhyām yugmaṁ samānītakam cha* | *tribhir viśeṣakam* | *chaturbhiḥ kalāpakam* | *dvādaśāntair kulakam*. India Office MSS. No. 2543.

²⁰ *Tilaka*, really "brow ornament, cast mark," is like the word of the same meaning *viśeṣaka* according to the *Mañbhakosa*, s.v. *trīśloki* (*trīślokyām kṛṣṇaḥlavane tilakam* *klomni chāstriyam*). Conf. Zachariae, *Beiträge zur indischen Lexicographie*, p. 72.

names Padmagupta uses the first pretty often (also Navinasāhasāṅka, 6, 11, 11, 102) ; the second never. The usual designations of Sindhurāja are, besides, **Avantisvara** (1, 15) **Paramāramahibhrit** (2, 51) **Mālavārāja** (3, 19). The minister and constant companion of the king is called **Yasobhaṭa**, or *apareṇa nāmnā*, **Ramāṅgada**. At the close of the Sarga Dhārā is mentioned as "the other town" (*aparā purī*) of the king, as the "capital of his race."²¹

The real narrative begins with the second sarga (*chitramṛigāvalokanam*). The king is engaged in hunting on the Vindhya mountains (vv. 1—32). Here he catches sight of a spotted antelope, which bears a golden chain round its neck, and excites the king's highest curiosity. It withdraws into the thicket, but is wounded by an arrow shot by the pursuing king. The arrow, which the king has shot, is inscribed with his name (*svandmadheyachihna*, as the arrow of Āyus in the *Vikramorvaśīya*). The king is dissuaded from the further pursuit of the fleeing antelope by the advice of his minister. King and minister spend the night at a lotus-pond, and start next morning to seek for the wounded antelope.

Third sarga (hārāḍbha): the king vainly endeavours to find the spotted antelope. On the other hand he discovers a swan (*sitachchhada*), which bears a string of pearls (*tārāhāra*) in its beak. The king is successful in obtaining possession of this string of pearls, as the swan alights at a lotus-pond and lets fall the heavy pearls. The king in this way receives the first news of his future wife. Characters (*akṣharāṇḍm tatih*), found on the pearls, disclose to him the name of the owner; it is the ornament of **Saśiprabhā**, which has fallen into his hands. The king is seized by a longing for the unknown.

In the fourth sarga (*Pātālāvalokanam*) a new vision is granted to the king. He observes a young maiden, who wanders in the wood, apparently trying to find something which is lost.

We find out who this maiden is in the fifth sarga,²² in which she gives a detailed account of herself and also of Saśiprabhā in a long speech (vv. 2—57). The speaker is a snake-maiden called **Pātālā**, a daughter of the snake-demon **Hema**. She belongs to Saśiprabhā's retinue and holds the office of fan-holder (*sitachamaradhāraṇe niyuktā*). — **Saśiprabhā**, who, on account of her adroitness at the game of ball, also bears the name of **Āsugā**, is a daughter of the demon-prince **Saṅkhaṇāla**. She loves to wander around on the mountains — on the **Haraśaila** (**Kailāsa**), on the **Malaya** mountains, on the **Himāchala**. One day as she was wandering on a spur of the Vindhya, named **Kusumāvachūla**, her pet animal, her *kelimṛiga* (antelope, kept for her amusement), ran away. This is the "spotted antelope," which the king, while hunting on the Vindhyas, pursued and wounded with an arrow. While the king spends the night at the lotus-pond, **Saśiprabhā** rests on a sand-bank of the river **Sasāṅkasūtī** (i. e., the **Narmadā**, or **Revā**). The wounded antelope, which she and her friends seek for in vain, is seen by the snake-king's daughter next morning standing beside her couch. On the arrow, which is sticking in the wound, she reads the name of the marksman, "**Navasāhasāṅka**." Immediately the love-god enters her heart. Meanwhile a swan — the same, whose acquaintance we have just made in the third sarga — steals the string of pearls, which has slipped from the conch of Saśiprabhā. He takes the pearls for a lotus-root (*mṛiṇḍalaśaṅkī*). The snake-maidens in the retinue of Saśiprabhā, among whom is Pātālā herself, are sent out to seek for the robber of the ornament.

How the king has come into possession of this ornament and thus discovered the name of Saśiprabhā is now told.

In a second speech (vv. 69—78) Pātālā advises the king to go himself to the river **Revā** and there to meet Saśiprabhā. So the king sets out led by the snake-maiden Pātālā.

²¹ *kularāgadhānt*; Dhārā is also thus expressed, 18, 59.

²² Possibly the name of the fifth sarga is: *Pātālāsambhāṣaṇam*. The title is wanting in the colophon of the manuscript.

In the sixth sarga (*narendradarśanam*) we are introduced to the love-sick Śaśiprabhā surrounded by her friends. She is deep in contemplation of the royal arrow, which bears the inscription:

Navinasāhasāṅkasya kāmadevākṛiter-ayam |
Mālavaikamṛigāṅkasya Sindhurājasya sāyakah ||

Śaśiprabhā asks her friends, who this Sindhurāja may be, who is designated in such a manner as a (new or second) Sāhasāṅka. She is answered by Mālyavati, the daughter of a Siddha, whom the king had once seen at Ujjayinī at the feast of Mahākāla (*Mahākāladaparvanī*). She gives information about the king, and sketches a picture of him on a stone. This likeness is not such as to lessen the love-sickness of Śaśiprabhā.²³ The words also of Anaṅgavati, another friend, are prompted too much by timidity and hesitation, for the snake-king's daughter to hope for a union with her beloved. On the other hand, Kalāvati, the daughter of a king of the Kinnaras, gives her encouragement. King Sindhurāja is certainly somewhere in the neighbourhood. The friends, who have been sent into the wood to seek the swan, would meet the king. Kalāvati closes (v. 94):

sthīrā bhava nṛpeṇa tvam-iha saṁyogam-āpsyasi |
yathā kaṇvāsrame pūrvam duḥshyantena śakuntalā ||

Scarcely has Kalāvati finished, when Pātālā appears, and with her king Sindhurāja.

The seventh sarga (*phaṇirāgasutāsambhāṣaṇam*) describes the meeting of the king with the snake-king's daughter. Besides the king, his minister Ramāṅgada and Mālyavati are represented also as speaking. Śaśiprabhā, who sits silent while the king is speaking, betrays, by a sign, her partiality for him.

Eighth sarga (*nāgalokāvātāra*). Śaśiprabhā disappears, together with her friends. She is carried away by invisible snakes to the snake-town Bhogavati in the underworld. The way, which Śaśiprabhā has taken, is pointed out to the king, by Revā, by the mouth of the Śārasa bird. In accordance with this direction, the king flings himself into the stream of the river, with the intention of following Śaśiprabhā. He says nothing of his intention to his minister, as he is afraid he might hinder him from his rash deed (*esha vighnam iva śdhasotsave kalpayishyati mama*). The minister, however, follows, when he sees what danger his master is about to put himself into. The king passes over the river, in spite of all hindrances which meet him. On the other side he reaches a golden palace. In the court-yard of this palace he is about to lay himself down on a golden Mādhavīranke to rest, when a beautifully attired woman steps out of the palace. A parrot calls to the astonished king: the Narmadā is actually standing before him and wishes to extend hospitality to him.

The ninth sarga²⁴ contains the *Narmadāsambhāṣaṇam*, the conversation between the king and the Narmadā. The river the goddess gives the king news about Śaśiprabhā, completing what Pātālā has told him, and discloses to him under what conditions he may gain possession of his beloved (v. 35—65): When Śaśiprabhā was born, the house gods declared that the daughter of the snake-king, who has been given signs of good omen, will at one time become the wife of a ruler of the middle world, and accomplish the death of Asura Vajrāṅkusa, a mighty enemy of the snakes (*upaguteyam nidhānāgradātī Vajrāṅkusasya*). Whereupon there was great joy in the snake-world. After Śaśiprabhā was grown up, her father, pressed by the gods Siddhas and Mahoragas, fixed at a gathering the conditions (the price, *śulkaśaṁsthā* 16, 88) under which he would give the hand of his daughter to a suitor; "In the pond, beside the well-watched pleasure-house of Vajrāṅkusa grows a lotus with golden flowers. He who makes these golden flowers into ear ornaments for my daughter,

²³ In this connection, Padmagupta's verse quoted by Dhanika appears. *Daśarūpa* II. 87, on the king (Sindhurāja) represented in the picture.

²⁴ The first seven verses of this sarga, beginning on page 82, are, according to the remarks above, on page 149, only partially preserved.

she shall be his wife. Up till now no one had fulfilled this condition. Narmadâ affirms, however, that king Sindhurâja has been set apart by fate to kill the Asura, to obtain the golden lotus flowers and thus to win the hand of Śaśiprabhâ. Narmadâ further narrates that at a distance of 50 *gavyûti* lies the town Ratnâvatî built by the skilled Mayâ. This is the chief town of the Asura prince Vajrânkuśa. There the king is to go. Finally Narmadâ prophesies to him that the Muni Vañku will appear to him on the way to Ratnâvatî. After this announcement the river goddess placed her own bracelet on the king's arm, spoke a blessing and disappeared.

The tenth sarga (*Ratnachûdasanipreshanam*) begins with a conversation between the king and minister, who is of no further importance in the narrative.²⁵ The minister wishes to undertake the expedition against Asura Vajrânkuśa alone; the king, however, will not consent to this. Then the parrot, which we have already met with at the end of the eighth sarga, appears again and relates: he is a snake-youth (*nâgadhûraka*) called Ratnachûda from the race of the Saikachûda. A disciple of the Muni Kanṭha had cursed him once and changed him into a parrot. Softened by his petitions, the Muni had declared to him, that he should resume his form again if king Navasâhasânka should entrust him with a message to Śaśiprabhâ. — The king acceded willingly to the desire of Ratnachûda and sent him with a love message to the snake-town (Bhogavati).

Eleventh sarga (*Vaṅkumaharshûdarśanam*), the king and minister proceed on the way pointed out by Narmadâ. In this way they reach the grove of the Muni Vañku. He greets them, treats them hospitably and asks the race and name of the king (that one such stood before him he had recognised at once), and the object of the journey into the nether world. Upon this Ramâṅgada takes up the conversation (vv. 49—112) and gives Vañku the desired information. In this he goes far back; he relates the origin of the Paramâra dynasty — beginning with a description of the holy mountain Arbuda (vv. 49—63) and gives the line of kings from Paramâra to Sindhurâja. The Muni declares himself satisfied and prophesies a successful ending to the undertaking of the king. Upon the request of the Muni to stay a little in the ascetic grove the king takes his place on a seat ornamented with precious stones.

Twelfth sarga (*phanîrâjasutâsvapnasamâgama*). The king, overcome by sleep, sees Śaśiprabhâ in a dream as she wanders in his pleasure grove at his side wearing the golden lotus flowers. The poet puts into the king's mouth a long address to Śaśiprabhâ (vv. 16—65).

In the thirteenth sarga (*Vidyâdharâdhipasamâgama*) the story is continued. After the king awakes he converses with the Muni Vañku about the affairs of the upper and under world. Just as he is about to break off and take farewell of the Muni, he sees a monkey standing before him, who is carrying a pomegranate, of a pale red colour like the cheek of an intoxicated Kerala woman.²⁶ The monkey offers the fruit to the king; the king is about to take it, but lets it fall to the ground, out of it falls a multitude of sparkling gems. The king, as much astonished as rejoiced, makes the monkey a present of the bracelet, which he himself had received from the river goddess Revâ. Immediately the monkey takes the form of a man and bows before the Muni, the king, and his minister, and to the question of the Muni, who he was? and how he became a monkey? relates the following: I am called Śasikhanda: my father is Sikhandaketu, a prince of the Vidyâdharas. My dwelling is in the mountain Śasikanta. Once a rumour was spread, that a representation of Vishnu made of sapphire had risen out of the sea. The curious women of the town streamed out to see the wonder. My wife also, called Mâlâtî, overcome by curiosity, persuaded me to accompany her. So I leapt up with her into the air. Immediately the sea presented itself to our gaze. While I hovered over the sea on the blue cloudway my wife lost her head-parting jewel (*śimantamani*).

²⁵ Verses 14—20 enumerate the princes and peoples, who (ostensibly) were conquered by Sindhurâja. The following are mentioned: the Prince of the Hûnas and Kosalas: the inhabitants of Vâgaḍa and Lâṭa: the Muralas.

²⁶ *madhumattakeralâkapolavat*; cf. *Kâdambarî*, ed. Peterson (1st ed.), p. 195; *Mâlâtîmadhava*, ed. Bhâṇḍarkar, p. 115, 3.

The jewel fell into the sea; I endeavoured to get it up, and the sea shut me off by a great wave (*tarāṅgahastanakarīra*) from return to the air and drew me with a great roaring into the depths of the nether world. As I wandered about in astonishment here, I saw a maiden, who carried the jewel in her hand, and was about to enter an ascetic grove. As the maiden, in spite of my repeated entreaties, would not give up my wife's diadem, I wrenched from her neck "little jewel ornaments" in the form of foot-prints of the love-god upon which the Makara was carved." At the maiden's cries a Muni appeared, cursed me, and, as a punishment for my monkey-like trick, changed me into a monkey. Later the Muni was softened and decreed that I should again receive my former shape on the day when the son of Sūjaka (*i. e.*, Sindhurāja) should lay the bracelet of Narmadā in my hand before the eyes of the Muni Vaṅku. — Thus to-day, in thy grove, after I have spent a thousand years as a monkey in the nether world, the curse has fallen from me by the king's act.

The grateful Vidyādhara prince Śaśikaṇḍa caused his troops to appear in order that they might help the king in his progress against the Asura Vajrāṅkuśa.

Fourteenth sarga (*Pātālagāṅḍavagāhanam*). The king departs from Vaṅku's grove with his comrade's army. The king's war chariot is lifted into the air by Śaśikaṇḍa's magic. In a long speech addressed to the king (vv. 7—76) the minister Ramāṅgada describes the progress of the army. First a wood²⁹ is reached, then the Trimārgagā (the Gaṅgā). On the shore of the Gaṅgā Śaśikaṇḍa causes a halt to be made and camp pitched, and the king enters a pleasure-house, which had been built for him of crystal.

In the **fifteenth sarga**²⁹ love plays — especially the *jalakriḍā* — are described as in the eighth sarga of the *Sisūpālavadhā*.

Sixteenth sarga (*kanakādravindaprārthanam*). Pātālā appears and hands to the king (who enquires after the health of Śaśiprabhā and her friends) a love letter (*anaṅgalekha*) from Śaśiprabhā, written by Mālyavatī. After Ramāṅgada has read out this letter, the king sends Pātālā into the snake-town with the message that he will soon come himself and hand over the lotus flowers. The king proceeds now with the army of the Vidyādharas. On the way he meets the snake army under the leadership of Ratnachūḍa, who in the meanwhile after he had delivered the message to Śaśiprabhā, had taken his own form again. Both armies make a halt in a wood before Ratnavatī. The minister Ramāṅgada is now sent to Asura Vajrāṅkuśa in order to effect the delivery of the golden lotus flower in an amicable manner (*sāmud*). Ramāṅgada has to return without having effected his object. The allied armies surround the town Ratnavatī.

The **seventeenth sarga**³⁰ contains the description of the battle between the Asuras, who break out of Ratnavatī, the Nāgas and Vidyādharas. The allied armies win the battle. Viśvāṅkuśa, son of Vajrāṅkuśa, kills the minister Ramāṅgada; king Sindhurāja himself kills Vajrāṅkuśa. The town Ratnavatī is overcome; the snake-youth Ratnachūḍa is made governor over the kingdom of the Asura princes. The king takes possession of the golden lotus flower and proceeds toward Bhogavatī.

Eighteenth sarga (*Śaśiprabhādhā*) Saṅkhaṇḍa comes to meet the king and hands him a gift of honour. Sindhurāja makes his entry into Bhogavatī amid expressions of astonishment and joy on the part of the inhabitants. His glance first falls upon a holy place (*tuṅgaṁ maṇimandiram*) of Siva³¹ under the name of Śrī-Haṭakeśvara. He enters, offers gifts of flowers, and gives

²⁷ *makarāṅkite manmatharatnapāduke*. The translation is according to a proposal of Bühler's.

²⁸ The entertainments in the wood are described, vv. 27—76. Conf. *Māghakāvya*, Sarga VII.

²⁹ The title of this sarga is in the manuscript: *Pātālagāṅḍavagāhanam*, as also that of the 14th. The true title might be *jalakriḍāvṛṇanam*.

³⁰ The title — something like *yuddhavarṇanam* — is wanting in the manuscript.

³¹ The devo Haṭakeśvarakhyāḥ is also mentioned in the description of the snake-town Bhogavatī, sarga 5, v. 12 ff.

praise to Siva. In the same place, is also the spotted antelope, which the king has once seen in the Vindhya mountain. Brought by Ratnachūḍa, at the command of her father, Śaśiprabhā appears, in wedding dress, accompanied by Pāṭalā and her other friends. The king, at Mālyavatī's request, hands the golden lotus-flower to Śaśiprabhā. He has hardly done this when the spotted antelope is changed into a man, who bears a golden staff in his hand (*sahemaveitrah*). The king asks, who he is, and why he has been changed into an animal? The staff-bearer relates the following: I, the doorkeeper of your father Śit-Harshadeva (*i. e.*, Śiyaka) was once cursed by the Muni Mrigaṇḍa because I refused admittance to him at the door. On the day on which king Navasāhasāṅka should give the golden lotus-flower to the daughter of the snake-prince I should regain my former shape.

The marriage of Sindhurāja and Śaśiprabhā takes place in the orthodox manner. Sankhapāla makes the king a present of a crystal Sivaliṅga made by Trashtṛi. This linga — so Sankhapāla relates — Vyāsa once received from the *puṛāṇamuni* (*i. e.*, Siva); then it came into the possession of Ādikavi;³² Ādikavi presented it to the exalted Maharshi Kapila; and Kapila finally gave it to the snake-prince.

At the end of the marriage festivities king Sindhurāja, accompanied by Śaśikaṇḍa and Ratnachūḍa, proceeds first to Ujjayinī, then to Dhārā, "the chief town of his race." He entertained his guests according to rank, and dismissed them to their homes; Śaśikaṇḍa returned to the mountain Śaśikānta, Ratnachūḍa went to Ratnavatī, the chief town of his newly-won kingdom.

VI. — The Historical Events from the Navasāhasāṅkacharita.

For no period of Mālva's history are there so many different sources, as for that of the Paramāra kings of the tenth or eleventh century. Besides a not unimportant number of inscriptions, which fix the succession of the kings completely and determine approximately the length of the reigns of most of them, many isolated chronological notes are found in the works of Brahman and Jaina authors, as well as detailed biographical descriptions of individual governors, especially Muñja's and Bhoja's. The fifteenth and last extract of the first Prakāśa in Merutunga's *Prabandhachintāmaṇi* (completed on full-moon day of the month Vaiśākha, Vikrama-saṃvat 1362, or in April 1306) is dedicated to the former. The life of the latter follows immediately and fills the greater part of the second Prakāśa. The same prince has been described in two later works, the *Bhojaprabandha* and the *Bhojacharita*, which have been long known and quoted in Europe, as well as edited in India. Under these circumstances, it might well be believed, that Padmagupta-Parimala's *Navasāhasāṅkacharita* cannot add much that is new or important to the history of the Paramāras. In spite of this the contrary is the case. Padmagupta's narrative completes and extends the information about the inscriptions, and shows more plainly than these, that the historian cannot trust to the *Prabandhas* and *Charitas*, and can only make use of them with great caution. The *Prabandhas* are founded exclusively on the traditions of the bards and the Jaina monasteries, in which Muñja and also his nephew very soon became mythical personalities. Whoever seeks to combine the statements of the inscriptions, with the narratives of the *Prabandhas* will find a mixture of truth and fiction, in which the contradictions are apparent.

The extract of the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, which is of the greatest importance to the history of the Paramāras, is to be found in sarga XI., 64—102, and, according to a photograph³³ of sheet 106a—109a of the London manuscript, is transliterated thus: —

Atisvādhīnanivāraphalamūlasamitkuṣam |

munis-tapovanam chakre tatrekshvākupurohitaḥ || 64 ||

³² *tasmāt kṛtādikavipāṇitalaṁ jagāma* MS.; Ādikavi (= Vālmīki) is a supposition of Bühler's.

³³ Communicated by Zachariae along with an imperfect inscription found by himself. It was known to him for several years, but circumstances delayed the publication.

hṛitvā tasyaikadā dhenuḥ kāmasūrgādhisūnūnā |
 Kārtavīryārjuneneva Jamadagner-anīyata || 65 ||
 sthūlāsṛudhārāsamtānasnapitastanavalkalā |
 amarshapāvākasyābhūd-bhartuḥ samidarundhatī || 66 ||
 athātharvavidām ādyaḥ samantrām āhutīm dadau |
 vikasadvikaṭajvālājāṭile jātavedasi || 67 ||
 tataḥ kṣhapāt-sakodaṇḍaḥ kirīṭī kāñchanāṅgadaḥ |
 ujjagāmāgnitaḥ kopi sa-hemakavachaḥ pumān || 68 ||
 dūram saṁtamaseneva viśvāmitreṇa sā hṛitā |
 tenānīnye muner-dhenur-dinaśrīṛiva bhānūnā || 69 ||
 tatas-tāpasakanyābhirānandāśrulavāṅkitaḥ |
 kapolaḥ pāṇiparyāṅkāt-sādhupūjyād-apāsyata || 70 ||
 Paramāra iti prāpat-sa muner-nāma chārthavat |
 militānyanṛipachchhatram-ādhipatyam cha bhūtale || 71 ||
 pravartitātivistīrṇasaptatantuparamparaḥ |
 purāṇakūrmasheṣam yaś-chakārāmbhonidheḥ payalḥ || 72 ||
 sthāpitair-manipīṭhesu muktā-prālambanālibhiḥ |
 bhūr-iyam yajvanā yena hemayūpair-apūryata || 73 ||
 prasāntachittā saṁtāne chireṇa na-śuchitviśhi |
 amōchyatāstadaityena yenershyākalaham Sachī || 74 ||
 vaṁśaḥ pravavṛite tasmād-ādirājān-manōrīva |
 nitaḥ suvṛittair-gurutām nṛipair-muktāphalair-iva || 75 ||
 tasminprithupratāpopi nirvāpita[karāna]laḥ |
 Upendra iti saṁjajñe rājā sūryendusaṁnibhaḥ || 76 ||
 sadā-gatipravṛittena Sītōchchhvasītahetunā |
 Hanūmateva yaśasā yasyālāṅghyata sūgarah || 77 ||
 śaṅkitendreṇa dadhātā pūtām-avabhṛithais-tanum |
 akāri yajvanā yena hemayūpāṅkatā mahī || 78 ||
 atyachchhadāsanōdgachchhadamśulekhātaramgibhiḥ |
 dīrghair-yasyārinarīṇām niḥśvāsaiś-chamarāyitam || 79 ||
 tasmin-gate narendreshu tadanyeshu gateshu cha |
 tatra Vākpatirājākhyāḥ pāṛthivendur-ajāyata || 80 ||
 dīrdheṇa chakshushā lakshmīm bheje kuvalayasya yaḥ |
 nārīṇām diśātānandaṁ doṣhṇā satārakeṇa cha || 81 ||
 śīthilikṛitajīvāsā yasmin-koponnamadbhuvi |
 ninyuḥ śīrāṁsi stabdhāni na dhanūṁshi natīm nṛipāḥ || 82 ||
 Vairisimha iti prāpaj-janma tasmāj-janādhipaḥ |
 kīrtibhir-yasya kundenduvisadābhiḥ saḥāyitam || 83 ||

Verse 65 — *“yārjuneneva”* — MS.

„ 66 — *“sthūlāsṛudhār”* — MS.

„ 70 — *“anandāsṛudhār”* — MS. The syllables *“nīparyāṅkāt-sādhupūjyād-apāsyata”* are added on the margin in Śāradā characters; *dhū* and *ja* are indistinct: the correction given above is not certain.

„ 74 — *“nasuchitviśhi”* — MS.

„ 75 — *“vaṁśa,”* and *“gurunā”* — MS.

„ 76 — The syllables in brackets are wanting in the MS. and are conjectural.

„ 78 — The last syllable of *“śaṅkitendreṇa”* is indistinct.

„ 80 — *“rājākhyā”* — MS.

„ 81 — *“diśātānanda”* — MS.

„ 82 — *“dhanūṁshi natīm”* — MS.

„ 83 — *“visadābhiḥ”* — MS.

paulomīramāṇasyeva yasya chāpe vilōkite |
 chakitaiḥ sarasīva kshmā rājahamsair-amuchyata || 84 ||
 Sri-Siyaka iti kshetrām yaśasīm-udabhūt-tataḥ |
 Dilīpapratimāḥ prithvīśuktimuktāphalām nṛipaḥ || 85 ||
 Lakshmīr-Adhokshayasyeva śāsīmanler-ivāmbikā |
 Vāḍajetyabhavaddevī kalatram yasya bhūr-iva || 86 ||
 akhaṇḍamamsalenāpya prajāpuṇyān-mahodayam |
 kalisāntamasam yena vyanīyata nṛipendunā || 87 ||
 vaśīkṛtākshamālō yaḥ kshamāmatyāyatām dadhat |
 rājāsramam-alamchakre rājarshikuśachivarāḥ || 88 ||
 smitajyōtsnādaridreṇa vāshpāḍhyena mukhendunā |
 śāsāmsur-vijayam yasya Raḍūpātīpatistriyaḥ || 89 ||
 akhaṇḍamakeyūramanūpuramamekhalam |
 Hūnāvarōdham vaidhavyadikshādhānam vyadhata yaḥ || 90 ||
 ayam netrōtsavas-tasmā-jajñe devapitṛipriyaḥ |
 jagattamōpahō netrād-atreriva nīśakaraḥ || 91 ||
 Śrīmadutpalarājōbhūd-agrajōsyāgrāṇīḥ satām |
 Sagarāpatyadattābdhiparikḥyāḥ patir-bhuvāḥ || 92 ||
 atīte Vikramāditye gateṣām Sātavāhane |
 kavimitre viśāsrāma yasmin-devī Sarasvatī || 93 ||
 chakrire vedhasā nūnam nirvyājaudāryāśālivaḥ |
 te chintāmanayō yasya nirmāṇe paramānavaḥ || 94 ||
 yaśobhir-induśuchibhir-yasyāchchataravārijaiḥ |
 apūryateyaḥ brahmāṇḍaśuktir-muktāphalair iva || 95 ||
 śriyam nilābjakāntyaḥ yaḥ prapayibhyō dadau drīṣā |
 arātibhyaś-cha sahasā jahre nistrīmśalekhayā || 96 ||
 aṁsaḥ savalkalagranthiḥ sajaṭāpallavam śiraḥ |
 chakre yen-ābitastrīṇām-akshaśūtrāṅkitaḥ karaḥ || 97 ||
 puram kālakramāt-tena prasthitenāmbikāpateḥ |
 maurvikīṇāṅkavatyasya prithvī dōshni nivesitā || 98 ||
 praśāsti paritō. viśvam-Ujjayinyām purī sthitaḥ |
 ayam Yayāti-Māndhātṛi-Duḥshyanta-Bharatopamaḥ || 99 ||
 anenāstaḥ kapōleshu pāṇḍimā ripuyōshitām |
 samāhṛityaiva tadbhartṛiyaśasō bāhuśālīnā || 100 ||
 sadā samakarasyāsyā Lakshmīkulagṛihasya cha |
 Sindhurāja iti vyaktam nāma dugdhōdadher-iva || 101 ||
 anena vihitānyatra yatsāhasasatānyataḥ |
 Navīnasāhasāṅkōyam viragoshṭhishu gīyate || 102 ||

Verse 84 — *chaki.ai* — MS.

- „ 88 — *dadhan* — MS. The manuscript has *prima manu*, — *rājābhramalanichakre*. A Śārādā śrā stands over the deleted *bhra*, and a Śārādā *ma* under *lan*.
 „ 90 — The first syllable of *dhānām* is uncertain, before it stands plainly *dikshya*.
 „ 92 — *ṭpalabhāvō*; *grajesyāgrāṇī* — MS. The correction (as Zachariae proposes) is proved to be correct by Kshemendra's and Dinika's accounts. See below, pp. 163-169, *parikhāḍyā* — MS.
 „ 94 — *nirmāṇā* — MS.
 „ 96 — *ya prapayitō* — MS.
 „ 98 — *pūthi* or *pūchchī chōshṭi nivesitā* — MS.
 „ 99 — *muḥjjayanyām* — MS. *Ujjayanti* is perhaps the correct form of the name.
 „ 100 — The MS. seems to require *samāhṛityevetā*; *yaśasō* — MS.
 „ 101 — *samāhṛityasya* — MS. The *ya* of the second *ya* is written below in Śārādā character.
 „ 102 — Behind this verse stands a sign which looks exactly like the numeral 80 of the Aksharapalli, and is probably meant to indicate that the portion on the Paramāra kings is concluded.

Translation.

64. There (on Mount Arbuda) the wise house-priest of the Ikshvāku made a sage's grove rich in wild rice, fruits, roots, firewood and Kuśa-grass.³⁴
65. His wish-granting cow was once stolen and carried away by the son of Gādhi, as was that of Jamadagni, Arjuna,³⁵ of Kṛitavīrya's offspring.
66. Arundhatī, upon whose bosom the silk garment was bathed with streams of tears, became a log, on account of her husband's wrath.
67. Thereupon the first of the judges of the Âtharvana songs,³⁶ with holy sayings, threw an offering into the fire, which, kindling up with broad flames, seemed to bear an ascetic's hair braid.
68. Quickly a man sprang out of the fire, with bow and crown and golden armour.³⁷
69. By him, the cow of the wise man, led away by Viśvāmītra, is brought back, as the sun brings back the light of day, which has been led away by the thick darkness.
70. Then the grove-maidens took the cheek, wet with tears of joy, from the supporting hand which is worshipped by the devout.
71. He received from the prophet the fitting name of Paramāra — killer of the enemy — and a ruler's power over the globe, before whom all the parasols of all other kings were shut.
72. (From him), who, bringing a multitude of great offerings, only left the ancient tortoise,³⁸ —
73. (From him) the sacrificer, by whom this earth was filled with golden altar staves, which, resting on foundations of precious stones, were ornamented with wreaths of pearl-strings,³⁹ —
74. (From him), by whom, when he conquered the Daityas, Śachī was freed at last, with a heart at rest from jealous wrangling with the race of impure splendour,⁴⁰ —
75. From him, who resembled the ancient King Manu, sprang a race, who obtained high esteem by virtuous kings, like beautifully rounded pearls.⁴¹

³⁴ A temple of Vasishṭha, which, through local tradition, is closely connected with the holy mountain, is still found on the southside of Âbū or Arbuda. The inscriptions in its vicinity prove that it was kept up by the princes of Chandrāvātī. To the right of the temple stands the statue of a warrior, which, according to a tradition, represents the mythical Paramāra. See J. Tod, *Travels in Western India*, p. 116 ff.

³⁵ The story of the theft of the Kāmadhenu and its recovery differs widely here and in the narratives of the bards of Rājputānā and Gujārāt, from the classical, and is, of course, merely a local representation.

³⁶ Vasishṭha is naturally a better judge of the *Âtharvaveda*, the great collection of charms and incantations than the Purohita.

³⁷ On the origin of the Paramāras, who, according to the various modern bardic traditions in the Agnikūṇḍa, sprang from Mount Âbū, and belonged to the Agnikūlas. See also J. Tod, *Annals of Rājasthān*, Vol. I. p. 88 ff., and specially p. 86 (Madras ed.). The account in the Nāgpur Prasasti, verse 13 (*Zeitsch f. d. Kunde des Morgenlandes*, Bd. VII, 194) and that in Someśvara's Prasasti, verse 32 (*Kirtikāumudī*, App. I., p. 4) agrees exactly with Padmagupta's.

³⁸ I. e., he killed all other inhabitants of the ocean by his horse sacrifices and other Sattras, which required an incredible amount of slaughter. Only the tortoise upon which the earth rests, was left.

³⁹ On the golden, i. e., gold-plated stakes for the sacrifice, see J. Tod, *Annals of Rājasthān*, Vol. I. pp. 71-72, and specially note 1 on the latter page.

⁴⁰ Probably this merely means that the Paramāra exterminated the Daityas, "the race of impure lustre," and so pacified Śachī, troubled about Indra's lordship.

⁴¹ The poet, as often happens in other works, plays on the word *survritā*, "virtuous" and "beautifully rounded." Possibly a second play of words is intended with *vaiśā* race and "bamboo rod." Thus the end of the verse might be translated: a race . . . (and that, therefore) resembles a bamboo rod, which is made valuable by beautifully rounded pearls. Referring to the Indian belief, that pearls grow in the bamboo rod.

76. Into this race a king was born named Upendra, who, although of great power, still lightened the burden of taxes and therefore was like the sun and the moon, of which the former is endowed with great heat and the latter cools the fire of his beams.⁴²
77. His fame, which always spread further, and which was the subject of the song of Sītā, reached over the ocean and (therefore) resembled the (monkey) Hanuman, who always moves about restlessly, who sprang over the ocean in order to comfort Sītā.⁴³
78. This sacrificer, before whom Indra was afraid,⁴⁴ whose body was made holy by sacrificial baths, decked the earth with golden altar staves.
79. The sighs of his enemies' wives, the rays of light from whose glistening teeth broke into waves, cooled him like fans.⁴⁵
80. When he and other rulers of men besides him were departed, there was born into this race a moon among the princes called Vākpatirāja.
81. His almond-shaped eyes shared with the water-lily her beauty, and his ornamented arm, which afforded ecstasy to women, caressed the Fortuna of the globe.⁴⁶
82. When the earth trembled before his anger, the princes, whose hope of life sank, bowed their proud heads, they drew not their stiff bows.
83. From him sprang a king, Vairisimha by name, a lion to his enemies; his fame, bright as jasmine and like the moon, was as a mane to him.

⁴² The frequent play of words with *pratāpa*, 'heat' and 'power,' also with *kara*, 'ray' and 'tax,' naturally do not escape Padmagupta.

⁴³ The words *sañgatipravṛtta* and *sītochchvasitahetu* have double meanings. The first has no difficulty. A really fitting explanation for the second as an adjective to *yaśas*, is found, it seems, only when, on the other hand, Sītā is regarded as a proper name and *uchchvasita* as synonym of *uṭṭāna*, "a song of the pouring out of the heart." *Uchchvas*, literally "to breathe out," appears elsewhere also in this interchangeable meaning. A poetess Sītā, or Sītā appears in the Bhoja legend. For traces of her, and especially the words ascribed to her in the *Bhojaprabandha*, see Fischel, "the poetess Sītā," in the *Festgruss an Böhrlingh*, p. 92, 94. In the *Prabandha-chintāmaṇi*, completed in 1806 A. D., is mentioned a *Sītāpanditāprabandha*, the contents of which are shortly as follows: "In the time of Bhoja there lived in his capital the mistress of a cookshop (*randhanī*) Sītā by name. A pilgrim, for whom she cooked, died from taking Kaṅguṇī oil. She determined to kill herself by drinking the same. Instead of dying, however, she became very clever. She then studied the sciences a little and went with her young and beautiful daughter Vijayā to court. Sītā greeted the king with the verse:—

śauryaṁ śatrukulakṣayāvadhi yaśo brahmāṇḍabhāṇḍāvadhi
tyāgastarkukavāñchhitāvadhir-iti kṣhōṇī samudrāvadhiḥ !
śradhdhā parvatāputrikā-patipadādvandvāprapamāvadhi
śrīmanbhōjamahābhīpate niravadhiḥ śeṣho guṇānām gaṇaḥ ||

The merry (*vinodapriya*) king then challenged the beautiful Vijayā to the *kuchavarnana*. She answered with a corresponding couplet to the above:—

Unnāśāschibukāvadhirbhujalatāmūlāvadhiḥ sambhavo
vistāro hṛdayāvadhiḥ kamalinisūtrāvadhiḥ sañhatih !
varṇaḥ svarṇakathāvadhiḥ kaṭīnatā vajrākarakṣmāvadhi-
stanvaṅgyūḥ kuchamaṇḍale yadi param lāvanyamastāvadi ||

Then the king gave Vijayā an *ardhakavitā* on *śuratāya*, &c., upon which, without hesitation, she composed the second half *anushaṅgi*, &c. The king was then ashamed of himself (as he had cause to be). Merutuṅga adds: *atra bahū vaktavyaṁ paramparayā jñeyam* || Neither the *Bhojaprabandha*, nor the *Prabandhachintāmaṇi*, nor the verses attributed to Sītā can be quoted as a proof that the poetess lived at Bhoja's court. The *Prabandhachintāmaṇi* is also purely legendary in this part. On the other hand, it may certainly be expected, that there was a poetess Sītā as all the characters appearing in Merutuṅga are historical.

⁴⁴ Indra feared the king, because he offered so many sacrifices and on the 100th would have driven him from the throne.

⁴⁵ According to Indian custom (see, for example, *Gaṇḍavaka*, 698-697) the wives of the conquered princes must render slave service to the conqueror and fan him with Yak's tails. While such prisoners stood behind Upendra they performed their task not with the Chauris, but with their deep sighs. Meanwhile they opened and shut their lips continually and thus caused waves in the beams, which emanated from their flashing teeth.

⁴⁶ *Kuvalaya* is used twice, and is to be translated the first time by "waterlily," the second by "globe" (*ku-bhū*) (*Zachariae*). The star on the king's arm is on the bangle.

84. When the kingly swans saw the bow of this prince, who was like Paulomî's husband, they forsook the land, as the regal swans forsook the pond, when they saw Indra's rainbow !⁴⁷
85. From him sprang a king, **Sri-Siyaka** by name, a field of fame, a pearl from the mussel of earth, who was like Dilîpa.
86. As Adhokshaya's Lakshmî, as the moon crowned god's Ambikâ, so was the queen. **Vaḍajā** — this ruler's wife — like the earth.⁴⁸
87. This strong man, a moon among the princes, who, on account of the piety of his subjects, attained to perfect happiness, banished the thick darkness of the Kali age.⁴⁹
88. This king set up a retreat, subdued his thoughts, practising great patience, was clothed in the grass robe of a royal sage.
89. With countenance like the moon, covered with tears, from which the sparkle of laughter is missing, the wives of the Lord of **Raḍṛpâti** proclaimed his victory.
90. He made the harem of the Hîna princes, from whom the bracelet, the sprangle, the foot-ring, and the girdle were taken, into the dwelling-place for the consecration of widowhood.
91. As the moon from the eye of Atri, so sprang from him this delight of the eyes, a favourite of the gods and his parents, who banished darkness from the world.⁵⁰
92. His elder brother was the illustrious **Utpalarāja**, a leader of the band of nobles, the lord of the earth, who surrounded Sagara's sons with the ocean as with a grave.⁵¹
93. After **Vikramāditya** was departed, after **Sātavāhana** had gone home, the goddess **Sarasvatî** reposed beside this poet-friend.⁵²
94. In the creation of this truly generous (prince) the creator actually used desire-granting jewels as particles.
95. The shell of the universe was filled with his fame, which, of splendour pure as the moon, sprang from his flashing sword (and therefore) resembled pearls, which, pure as the moon, spring from the clearest water.⁵³
96. With the glance (of his eye) which sparkled like the blue water-lily, he gave his friends happiness and suddenly he robbed his enemies with the flash of his sword, which glanced like the water-lily.⁵⁴
97. He fastened the knots of the grass robe upon the shoulder of his enemies' wives, wound ascetic plaits round the head, and wreathed the hand with roses.⁵⁵

⁴⁷ When the rainy season comes the Rājahansas go north.

⁴⁸ The first two comparisons are compliments to the king and his wife, who are compared with Vishnu and Siya, as also with Lakshmî and Pârvatî. When it is also said, that **Vaḍajā** "is like the earth," Siyaka's wife, it is to be remembered that, according to the Indian style of expression, the earth is invariably the first wife of each king.

⁴⁹ **Āpya** is divided into **ā** + **āpya** (!)

⁵⁰ This "delight of the eyes," is the ruling prince **Sindhurāja** (**Zachariae**).

⁵¹ On **Utpalarāja**. See below, p. 168.

⁵² By **Vikramāditya** is meant the author of the era of 57-56 B. C., who is also mentioned as ruler of Ujjain (**Zachariae**). The **Sātavāhana**, who is meant here, is **Hāla**, the compiler of the *Gāthākośa*.

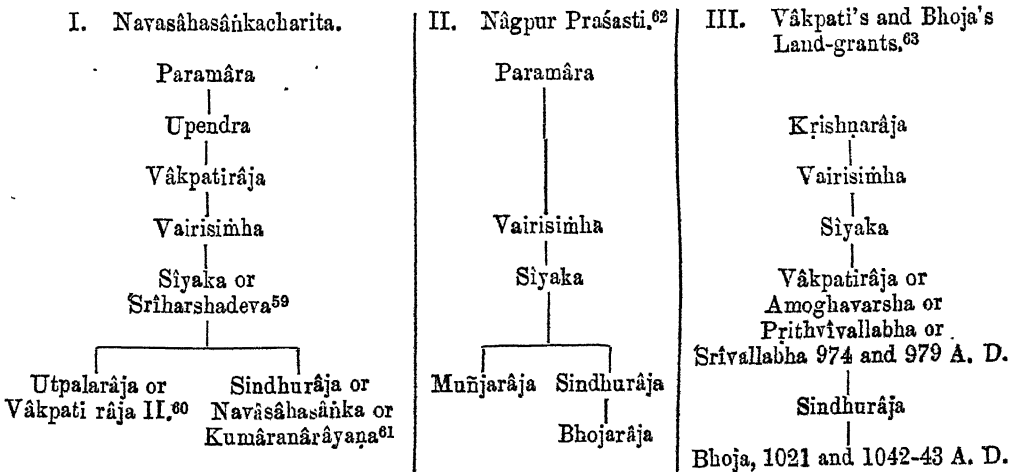
⁵³ The composite, *achchhataravārījaiḥ*, is to be divided the first time into *achchha-tara-vārī-jaiḥ*, i. e., *sphurat-khāḍgena janitāiḥ*; the second time into *achchhataravārījaiḥ*, i. e., *atyantasuddhajalena janitāiḥ*. According to the Indian legend, the pearl mussels come to the surface of the sea and open on the day of the **Mānik-Tihārī**. If it is raining, then each raindrop becomes a pearl.

⁵⁴ *Nijābjakāntya* belongs to *drīśā* as well as to *nistriṃśalekhayā* and must therefore be twice translated.

⁵⁵ The meaning is that the king pursued his enemies into the wood and forced them to live as hermits. **Pallava** has here the meaning given in the *Kośas* (*viṣṭara*).

98. Through him, who, in course of time, departed to the town of the husband of Ambikā, was the earth laid in the arm of this (our present lord) who is represented by the striped bow.⁵⁶
99. Residing in the town of Ujjayinī, he rules all around, he who was descended from (the ancient rulers) Yayāti, Māndhātṛi, Duṣshyanta and Bharata.
100. Through this (hero) was the white colour laid with a strong arm upon the cheeks of the wives of his enemies after he robbed their husbands of their fame.⁵⁷
101. It is easy to be understood (that) the name of this (prince) who always possesses Makaras, and is the ancestral dwelling of Lakshmi, is like that of the milk-ocean **Sindhurāja**— 'sea king.'⁵⁸
102. Because here (on earth) he accomplished hundreds of brave deeds, he will therefore be sung at the festivals of heroes as the new Sūhasānka.

The preceding extract and the previous single notices quoted from other parts of the *Navasāhasānka-charita* result in the following genealogical tree of the Paramāra kings of Dhārā and Ujjain, who might at once, on account of the notices contained in the published inscriptions, be compared :—



⁵⁶ I. e., after Utpalarāja died, the now ruling king Sindhurāja became his successor.

⁵⁷ According to Indian expression fame is "white." The king takes his enemies' fame and so wins a white colour, which he puts on the cheeks of the wives of his enemies which become white with sorrow and anxiety.

⁵⁸ The king possesses always Makaras, i. e., armies formed in the Makara Order (*Manu*, VII. 187; *Kāmandaki Nitisāra*) just as the ocean is full of sea-monsters called Makara, i. e., sharks. Fortune is always on his side as was the case with his fathers; he is thus the heir of Lakshmi. As the goddess of fortune, Lakshmi, rose out of the Milk-ocean at the stirring of the Nectar, this is therefore also his inheritance.

⁵⁹ See above, p. 159.

⁶⁰ See above, p. 164.

⁶¹ See above, p. 154.

⁶² The inscription was at first badly published, with a very imperfect facsimile by Bāl Gaṅgādhara Śāstrī in the *Jour. Bombay B. R. As. Soc.* I. p. 259. The second publication of it by Lassen in the *Zeitsch. f. d. Kunde des Morgenl.* VII. p. 194 ff., is much better; it is made from a transcript of the copy found in Sātārā on a copperplate. This is now no longer sufficient for present requirements and a new copy is much to be desired. Lassen calls Siyaka's younger son Sindhadeva and he remarks (*loc. cit.* p. 311 [211], note 23) that this is distinctly the reading in his copy, while that of the facsimile in the *Bombay Journal* can no longer be read with any certainty. It is quite correct that the letters in the latter are defaced. The name looks like (p. 274, No. 15) *grītidararāja*. Mr. J. F. Fleet, who possesses a paper impression of the inscription, kindly informs me that the original has *śrī-Sindhurāja*. The form Sindhurāja is no doubt owing to the copyists of Lassen's transcription having made an unlucky conjecture as *paṇḍits* often do.

⁶³ The oldest Śāsana of king Vākpatirāja is published by Dr. F. E. Hall, *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.*, XXX. p. 195 ff., and with a facsimile by N. J. Kirtane in *Ind. Ant.* VI. p. 48 ff. The later of the same king by Dr. Rājendralāl Mitra in *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.* XIX. p. 475 ff., and by Dr. Kielhorn, *Ind. Ant.* XIV. 159 ff. Bhoja's gift is published by Kirtane, *loc. cit.* p. 53, with a facsimile.

The origin of the **Paramāras**, placed by the tradition of the bards, which reflects the above-quoted verses xi. 64, 72, in the holy mountain **Ābū-Arbuda**, the most southern arm of the **Ārāvali** chain, which rises on the boundary of **Rājputānā** and **Gujarāt** and in the grey far-off time when the great feud between the head **Brāhman** **Vasishṭha** and the **Kshatriya** intruder **Viśvāmitra** was fought out. The bards also relate much of the early developed power of the **Paramāras**, of their manifold ramifications, and their great kingdom in Western and Southern India.⁶⁴ There is, however, no sure trace of them in Indian history,⁶⁵ before the appearance of the dynasty of **Mālvā**. The **Paramāras** first come into power in the town of **Dhārā**, which lies in the western part of the province, and from there they conquered the east of **Mālvā** with the capital **Ujjain**. This proves with more certainty than the tradition of the bards that **Padmagupta** repeatedly (p. 159, above) calls **Dhārā** the family residence of the **Paramāras**. The period of the first development of their power cannot be fixed with certainty. It must, however, have been about 800 A. D. as will be shown further on.

As the **Paramāras** of **Mālvā** believe in the legend of the birth of their eponymous hero on **Ābū**, this may lead to the supposition that they came from the north-west. The old Fort of **Achalgaḍh** on **Ābū**, and the town of **Chandrāvati** south of **Ābū**, have been for centuries in the possession of a **Paramāra** family, who rendered homage to the **Chaulukyas** of **Aṇhilvād** from the eleventh century. **Someśvara's** **Prasasti** of **Vikrama Samvat 1287**, recounts an older line, **Dhūmarāja**, **Dhandhuka**, **Druvabhāṭa**, and others, also a later and entirely historical one which consists of **Rāmadeva**, **Yaśodhavalā**, **Dhārāvarṣa**, **Prahlādana**, **Somasimha** and **Kṛishṇarāja**. The last six kings may be recognised from other works and ruled between 1150 and 1231 A. D. This connection between the **Paramāras** and Mount **Ābū** makes clear that it and nothing else had been the foundation of the legend of the rise of **Paramāra** from the **Agnikuṇḍa** there. Now, as the **Paramāras** of **Dhārā** possess the same legend, it is easy to suppose that they are a branch of the ruling race of **Achalgaḍh** and **Chandrāvati**,

Upendra.

The first king **Upendra** sung by **Padmagupta** was not the immediate predecessor of the next named **Vākpatirāja I**. Between them reigned other princes. The plural shows that there must have been three. On no consideration may the reign of **Upendra** be placed later than about the year 800 A. D. As the first king, for whose reign we possess several fixed dates, **Vākpatirāja II**, died, as will be shown further on, between 994 and 997, the date of his first land-grant is the year 974. As his brother **Sindhurāja** reigned sometime after him, then the beginning of his own

⁶⁴ J. Tod, *Annals of Rājasthān*, Vol. I. pp. 83-84.

⁶⁵ Lassen, *Ind. Alterthumsk.* III. p. 822, thinks that **Ptolemæus** mentions the **Paramāras** under the name **Porvaroi** and adds: "Their name in this form comes nearer to the oldest (**Pramāra**) than to that of the present time **Punwar** or **Powar** of which we get the second in **Powargarh**, i. e., **Powargaḍa**, Fort of **Powar**; the name of **Champānīr**, the old capital of a district in north **Gujarāt**." The identification of **Porvarai** with **Paramāra** is, however, doubtful, as the first word means a people, the second a **Kshatriya** family, which, so far as is known, has given its name to no district in India. Thus it is to be remarked that the present **Powars** or **Puars** certainly give themselves out as **Paramāras**, since a member of their family rules **Dhārā**, the modern **Dhār**. They are, however, **Marāṭhas** and not **Rājputs**. Their genealogical claims are certainly officially recognised, but native scholars in **Mālvā** never speak of the story of the relationship of His Highness the **Mahārāja** **Ānandrāo** with the **Mahārāja** **Bhoja** without a meaning smile and do not believe in it. The grounds against the derivation are — 1st, that **Powar** or **Puar** do not agree well in sound with **Paramāra**; 2nd, that in **Rājputānā** and **Mālvā** the real successors of the **Paramāras** call themselves **Parmārs**, not **Puars**. The **Puars** settled in **Mālvā** and **Bundelkhaṇḍ** might all be successors or relations of the **Marāṭha** **Jesvant Rāo Puar**, who received the title of king of **Dhār** in 1749 (conf. **Malleson**, *Native States of India*, p. 207). Finally, as regards the name of **Powargarh**, this is a result of the **Gilchrist** method of transcription. The mountain fort which is not, as **Lassen** thinks, identical with **Champānīr**, and lies, not in northern, but in middle **Gujarāt**, is called in **Gujarātī**, **Pāvagaḍh**, and in **Sanskrit**, according to an inscription of **Samvat 1525** (*Ind. Ant.*, Vol. VI. p. 1 ff.) **Pāvakadurga**, the Fort of the **Pāvaka**, perhaps "the fire." The name has nothing to do with the **Paramāras**, who have never, so far as is known, possessed **Pāvagaḍh**.

⁶⁶ *Kirtikaumudī*, App. pp. 4-6, 14-15, and **K. Forbes**, *Rās Māldā*, pp. 210-211.

reign must have fallen about the year 970. Between Vākpatirāja II. and Vākpatirāja I. are two generations, and between the latter and Upendra at least three reigns. If one reckons 25 years to a generation, then there are 150 years between the beginning of the reign of Vākpatirāja II. and the end of Upendra's. Of course it is not to be supposed that there is any degree of certainty in this statement, as the number of the kings omitted may be much greater. But it is the latest that is possible. Padmagupta's verses concerning Upendra assert merely that he diligently attended to the Śrauta sacrifices and was a great warrior. If the translation of verse 77 is correct, a poetess Sitā, who perhaps lived at his court, sang of him (see note 43, p. 163).

Dr. F. E. Hall⁶⁷ and Sir A. Cunningham⁶⁸ identify Upendra with Kṛṣṇarāja, the first king in the inscriptions of Vākpatirāja II. The supposition is natural, as Kṛṣṇa and Upendra are synonymous. It may also be correct, though Kṛṣṇarāja stands immediately before Vairisīmha, the third king in Padmagupta's list. The text of the inscription merely says that each of the kings mentioned "thought respectfully of the feet" (of the before-mentioned). Usually this phrase is used in connection with an immediate predecessor. There are, however, cases in which it is used in connection with a king further removed.⁶⁹ Those who reject Hall's identification must agree that the next king in Padmagupta's list likewise bore the name of Kṛṣṇarāja, which also is not impossible.

Vākpatirāja I.

Padmagupta's description of this king is purely conventional. According to what has been already said, the beginning of his reign falls about 895 A. D. His name seems also to appear in an Udayapur inscription. Dr. F. E. Hall does not recognise the existence of two Vākpatirājas. He says, however, *loc. cit.*: "Vākpati had issue in Vairisīmha, and Vairisīmha had a son Harsha." This only applies to Vākpatirāja I.

Vairisīmha.

Of this king we only hear that he was his predecessor's son. His reign may have begun about 920.

Siyaka.

Matters improve somewhat with Vairisīmha's son, who, according to *Navas*, XI. 85 and the inscriptions, also called Siyaka, according to *Navas*, XVIII. 40 (p. 155) Śrī Harshadeva. As regards the first name till now unmentioned, it may be remarked that Siyaka stands for Sīmha. In the tertiary Prākritis of Western India, in place of the Sanskrit *sīmha* in a proper name, either *siṅgh* or *sī* is used. Thus, for Amarasīmha both Amarsingh and Amarsī are found; for Padmasīmha, Padamasingh or more often Padamsī; for Narasīmha, very often Narsī. In the present case, this explanation is proved by the fact that Merutūṅga in the *Muñjaprabandha* calls the father of Muñja and Sindhala, Sīmhabhaṭa.⁷⁰ This was doubtless the original Sanskrit name of the king. Siyaka is a half Prākrit pet-name. The second name Harsha or Harshadeva appears in the unedited Udayapur Inscription and also in other Sanskrit works.⁷¹

⁶⁷ *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.* Vol. XXXI. p. 114, note. Dr. Hall seems to have found the names in the inscriptions from Udayapur mentioned there. He incorrectly calls him "the grandfather of Bhoja's grandfather."

⁶⁸ *Archæol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 84, note 1.

⁶⁹ See *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. pp. 184 and 194, where it says, that Durlabha of Aphilvād thought of the feet of Chāmūṇḍa, while his immediate predecessor was his brother Vallabha.

⁷⁰ See also K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, 2nd ed. p. 64.

⁷¹ Conf. below, p. 168. What is said here about the identity of Siyaka and Harshadeva, as also that of Utpalarāja and Vākpatirāja, rests chiefly on Zachariae's communications. He has made these discoveries and gathered the notices belonging to them.

Padmagupta describes **Siyaka-Harshadeva** first as a royal philosopher doing homage to quietism and asceticism and then as a warlike ruler. It will be necessary to reverse the order, and take for granted that **Siyaka**, like so many Indian kings, after an active life, turned his attention to the achievement of *Moksha*, without, at the same time, perhaps, retiring from his position as ruler. His warlike achievements were the conquering of the "Lord of **Raḍūpāṭi**,"⁷² and the killing of a **Hūna** prince. Who these kings or chiefs were, and where they ruled, has not as yet been ascertained. As to the **Hūna**, who is mentioned very often in the inscriptions, it may be remarked that the earlier favourite identification of them with the white Huns is not tenable. It is quite correct, as Dr. F. E. Hall remarks,⁷³ that the **Hūnas**, or more usually **Hūnas**, mentioned in the inscriptions of the middle period were an Indian Kshatriya family. In bardic lists they are counted among the **Rājput** races, and the accounts of their alliance with the **Kulachuris** show that they are counted as such. These facts naturally do not preclude the possibility that the **Hūna** Kshatriyas sprang originally from Huns. As the Kshatriyas have adopted foreign elements in a remarkable manner. **Siyaka's** wife was called **Vaḍajā**.

Vākpatirāja II.

Like many other Indian princes,⁷⁴ **Siyaka's** eldest son⁷⁵ bore many names and was called **Vākpatirāja**, **Utpalarāja**, **Muñja**, **Amoghavarsha**, **Prithvivallabha** and **Srivallabha**. The first two names are found in Padmagupta (p. 150, above), and, according to the suggested alteration in XI. 92, they are also to be found in **Kshemendra** and **Vallabha**. The former quotes the well-known verse, *ahau vā hāre*, in his *Auchityavichāracharchā*, and ascribes it to the esteemed **Utpalarāja** (*śrīmadutpalarājasya*), while the *Subhāshitāvalī* of the latter names **Vākpatirāja**, son of the esteemed **Harshadeva**, as author.⁷⁶ Padmagupta's account leaves no doubt that **Vākpatirāja** is the son of the esteemed **Harshadeva**, **Vākpatirāja II.** of **Mālvā**, nor that **Kshemendra** means the same prince. Because the person mentioned by **Kshemendra** bears the title *śrīmat* and *deva*, only a king can be meant, and, as according to the *Navasāhasāṅkacarita*, XI. 92, **Vākpatirāja**, the son of **Harshadeva-Siyaka**, had another beginning with **Utpala**, thus, in view of **Vallabha's** remark, the above conclusion is unavoidable. Another case in which **Vākpatirāja II.** is called **Utpalarāja** is mentioned further on. That **Vākpatirāja II.** is identical with **Muñja**, Dr. F. E. Hall recognised and repeatedly expressed⁷⁷ in the *Bengal Journal A. Soc.*, XXX. p. 114, note, and *Daśarūpa*, p. 2, note. The proofs for it are: (1) the genealogical tree given above, where **Muñja** appears in the place of **Vākpatirāja**; (2) the fact that **Dhanika**, in the commentary to the *Daśarūpa*, p. 184 and 186 (ed. Hall), ascribes one and the same verse "to the esteemed King **Vākpatirāja**" and "to the esteemed **Muñja**." However strange such a method of quotation may seem to us, it is quite usual among the Indians, who thought nothing of mentioning a many-titled man under two or more of his names. Finally, the identity of **Vākpatirāja-Amoghavarsha** of the land-grants with Padmagupta's **Vākpatirāja II.** is made quite clear by the list of reigns.

All that Padmagupta says of **Vākpatirāja II.**, apart from conventional phrases, is, that he had a liking for poetry and poets, was extraordinarily generous and warlike. Twice, I. 7 (p. 150, above) and XI. 93-94, he calls him emphatically a friend of poets, and says, I. 6, that he was led by him to

⁷² This may be a town or a country (conf. *Anahilapātaka* and *Medapāṭa* or *Mevād*).

⁷³ *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.* XXX. p. 117, note 11, and *Jour. Am. Or. Soc.* VI. p. 523.

⁷⁴ See, for example, the genealogical tree of the *Rāshtrakūtas* of *Mānyakhēṭa*, *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. p. 72, and the table in *Fleet's Dynasties of the Kanarese District*, pp. 92-93.

⁷⁵ The statement of the legends in *Merutuṅga* and others that he was a founding seems to me untenable.

⁷⁶ *Peterson, Jour. Bomb. B. R. As. Soc.* XVI. p. 189. Peterson's views there expressed are probably more correct than those in the *Subhāshitāvalī*, p. 115, according to which only the one verse, No. 3414, should belong to **Vākpatirāja**.

⁷⁷ This view was accepted without hesitation by A. Cunningham, *Archæol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 84, note 1.

tread the poets' path. From accounts gathered from other sources we may complete his statements. Vākpatirāja II helped other writers besides Padmagupta. Among these are the two sons of Vishnu, Dhanamjaya and Dhanika, the first of whom composed the *Daśarūpa*, while the latter commented upon it. Dr. F. E. Hall does well to express himself carefully and say : "it may be suggested, that Dhanika — one of his (Dhanamjaya's) commentators and possibly his own brother — was living about the middle of the tenth century."⁷⁸ Now, however, since it is clear that Vākpatirāja, Muñja, and Utpalarāja are names for one and the same person, all doubt as to the age of the two authors disappears, the one of whom, according to his own words, was famous for his wit at the court of king Muñja, and the other describes himself as *mahāsūdhya* of the great and esteemed king Utpalarāja.⁷⁹ In the time of Vākpatirāja II, also falls the activity of the lexicographer and poet Dhanapāla, whom the Prabandhas erroneously make a contemporary and favourite of Bhoja.⁸⁰ The date of his Prākṛit *Kośa*, Vikrama Samvat 1029, i. e., 972-3 A. D., makes this very apparent. Likewise Halāyudha, the commentator of Piṅgala, according to his own statement (*Sūbhāṣitāvalī*, p. 115), lived under the rule of this prince. Vākpatirāja's own activity in poetry is shown, not only by the numerous verses ascribed to him in the *Prabandhas* but more certainly by the quotations in the anthologies, among which the one mentioned above in Kshemendra deserves special consideration, as Kshemendra writes about 50 years after his time.

If Padmagupta speaks merely in ordinary terms of the warlike undertakings of his first patron, doubtless the reason is that the sad death of Vākpatirāja made it seem unfitting to describe the latter in detail. His words,⁸¹ "The seal which Vākpatirāja put upon my song as he mounted to heaven, is now broken by Sindhurāja, the younger brother of that friend of poets," shewed distinctly that the fate of his first master had affected him deeply. It is therefore not to be wondered at that he does not allow himself to go into details. From the inscriptions and the *Prabandhas* one gathers that Vākpatirāja was at war with his eastern and southern neighbours. The unedited inscription mentioned by Dr. F. E. Hall tells of a successful war against one Yuvarāja of Chedi, the father of Kokalla II, during which he is supposed to have taken the capital of the Haihayas, Tripura.⁸² Dhanapāla's account probably refers to him, that he wrote his work when the king of Dhārā had plundered Mānyakheta. As in the introduction to the edition of the Pāyalachchhī is shewn the capital of the Rāthors of Mānekir or Mālkhed must be Mānyakheta, and the conquered enemy was the last prince of that race, Karka III, called Kakkala or Amoghavarsha. Vākpatirāja II doubtless helped to accomplish the fall of the Southern Rāthor kingdom. He remained also the enemy of the real destroyer of it, Chālukya Tailapa II of Kalyāna, who entered upon the possession of the inheritance of the Rāthors. Sixteen times, says Merutunga,⁸³ did Muñja conquer Tailapa before he undertook his final march against him, and therefore scorned him. Although the number may be an exaggeration, and the Paramāra's fortune in war not always favourable, still so much is certain that Vākpatirāja Muñja waged war with Tailapa II for a considerable time. At last he was unsuccessful, suffered a decided defeat, and lost his life in the south. The *Prabandhas* give Muñja Vākpatirāja's last march in detail. They assert that he undertook it against the advice of his minister Budrāditya, was taken prisoner by

⁷⁸ *Daśarūpa*, p. 2.

⁷⁹ *Daśarūpa*, End, and H. H. Wilson, *Hindu Theatre*, p. xx. (ed. Rost). That given by H. H. Wilson, and in a notice appearing in one of Dr. Hall's MSS. is wanting in the publication; notwithstanding its at first apparently inexplicable character, it is, however, entirely credible. Such historical notices are often left out in the MSS. The extract from the *Bṛīhatkathāmāñjarī* of Kshemendra, inserted at the end of the first Prakāśa, is, of course, an interpolation. It does not appear in all manuscripts.

⁸⁰ See above, p. 150, note 6.

⁸¹ See above, p. 150.

⁸² *Jour. Beng. As. Soc.* Vol. XXX. p. 114, note, and Cunningham, *Archæol. Rep.* Vol. X. p. 85.

⁸³ *Sapathānāpūrvakam nishidhya tam purā shoḍhā nirjitamityavajñatayā pāyannatirekavāsātām saritam uttīrya śāndhāvuram niveśayāmāsa* || (from the *Muñjaprabandha*).

Tailapa, and sometime afterwards, when he made an attempt to escape, was first treated shamefully, and at length hanged on a tree.⁸⁴ The narrative is adorned with so many touching scenes, and so many verses, which the imprisoned king is said to have composed, under different circumstances, that its legendary character is unmistakable. The details are therefore not to be depended on. But that Tailapa II killed Vākpatirāja-Muñja is correct, as two Chālukya inscriptions mention this famous deed.⁸⁵ Also Rudrāditya was, as Lassen has remarked, really Vākpatirāja's minister, as he is mentioned in his Śāsana of 979 A. D. The fact that Vākpatirāja was killed by Tailapa II makes it possible, with the assistance of a note in a Jaina work, to fix the time at which his march took place and his reign concluded, within a limited period. Amitagati completed his *Subhāshitaratnasandoha*, Vikrama Samvat 1050 or 998-94 A. D., during the reign of king Muñja, and Tailapa II died shortly before or in the Saka year 919, i. e., 997-98 A. D., which is the first year of his successor. Muñja's death, therefore, occurred in one of the three years 994 to 996.⁸⁶ The beginning of his reign lies before Vikrama Samvat 1031 or 974 A. D.: the date of his oldest land-grant must not, as has been remarked, be far removed from the same.

Sindhurāja.

According to the accounts of the *Prabandhas*, bitter enmity existed between Vākpatirāja-Muñja and his brother Sindhurāja, to whom they apply the pet-name Sindhula or Sindhala. Sindhurāja had to flee from Mālvā, and lived long as a fugitive "in the town of Kāsahrada" in Gujarāt. Later he returned to his home, and was at first received kindly by his brother, but was afterwards blinded by him and confined in a wooden cage. During his imprisonment his son Bhoja was born to him, whom Muñja, alarmed by the prophecy that he would be his successor, endeavoured to kill. Bhoja, however, was enabled to obtain a reprieve from his executioner and, by a letter, so to change the king's opinion that he chose him as his successor to the throne. After Muñja's decease, Bhoja was anointed as king.⁸⁷ Padmagupta's poem completely discredits this narrative, which excludes Sindhurāja from the throne and proves what must also be concluded from Bhoja's land-grant of 1021-22 A. D. that he ruled over Mālvā for sometime. The only grain of truth which the *Prabandhas* may contain is perhaps that for a time the brothers quarrelled. The condition of things cannot have been serious. As otherwise, Padmagupta, who had served under Vākpatirāja, would not have been a favourite of Sindhurāja's. In support of this there is the poet's utterance in verse 98, that Vākpatirāja "when he departed to the town of the Lord of the Ambikā, laid the earth on Sindhurāja's arm." Taken literally this means, that Vākpatirāja on his death-bed appointed his brother as his successor. It may perhaps be accepted, therefore, that Sindhurāja, whether immediately before Vākpatirāja's fateful expedition or still earlier, had attained to the dignity of *yuvardja*.

⁸⁴ See K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, pp. 65-66, and Lassen, *Ind. Alterthumsk.* III. p. 840. The above accounts are found in Merutuṅga. Respecting his death it says:—

*Tadānu Muñjena prishṭāni kayā mūraṇaviḍambanayā mān mūrayishyatha | vrikshasākhāvalambanūt . . .
talanu tañ Muñjan nihatya tachehhiro rājāṅgaṇe śulikāprotam kṛtvā dadhiviliplam kārāyan-nijam-amar shan
puposa ||*

⁸⁵ J. Fleet, *Dynasties of the Kanarese Districts*, p. 40.

⁸⁶ Dr. R. G. Bhāṇḍārkar, *Report on the Search for Sanskrit MSS.*, 1882-3, p. 45, has accepted this chronology. He places the beginning of the Vikrama era, however, in the year 56 B. C., which does not suit for Mālvā, as is clearly shown from the dates in Vākpatirāja's second land-grant. There, it is said, the gift was made V. S. 1036. Kārttika-pūrpimā, at the time of an eclipse of the moon, which took place on Nov. 6, 979 A.D., while the Śāsana was composed, V. S. 1036, Chaitra badi 9. The Vikrama year in Mālvā began, according to this, not in Kārttika sudi I., but in Chaitra sudi I., and the calculation went by the northern *Purnimānta* system; see also *Ind. Ant.*, Vol. XIV. p. 159, and especially note 2.

⁸⁷ See also K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, p. 64. Forbes identifies Kāsahrada with Kāsindra-Pālaḍī at Ahmedābād.

According to the poem, *Sindhurāja* bore the surnames of *Kumāranārāyana*⁸⁹ and *Navasahasāṅka*, "because he undertook hundreds of hazardous enterprises (*sāhasa*)."⁹⁰ Several of these bold deeds are enumerated. A number of princes and peoples, whom *Sindhurāja* is said to have conquered, are presented in X. 14—20.⁹¹ Among the names mentioned are found a prince of the *Hūnas* of the same race as he, with whom *Siyaka* waged war, and a prince of the *Kosalas*. Further is mentioned the subjection of the inhabitants of *Vāgada*, of the eastern part of the province of *Kachchh*,⁹² of *Lāṭa*, middle and southern *Gujarāt*, and the *Muralas*, of a people in Southern India, that is perhaps identical with the *Keralas*, the inhabitants of *Malabār*. The word of an Indian court-poet, when he speaks of his lord's victories, must not be put in gold scales. Every Indian hero must have made his *digvijayāttrā*, "his march to the conquest of the world," and must have been successful. When the actual facts did not give material enough, poetic fancy was ready to fill up the gaps: though expeditions against the *Hūna*, against *Vāgaḍ*, which belonged to the kingdom of the *Chaulukya* of *Aphirvāḍ*, and against *Lāṭa* where ruled the dynasty of *Bārāpa*, also conquered by the *Chaulukyas*, were not at all unlikely. So far as the relation between the *Chaulukyas* and the *Paramāras* is concerned, it was always bad. The *Jaina Prabandhas* relate that the cause of the strife was an insult offered to the second *Chaulukya* King *Chāmūṇḍa*. When the latter had retired from the throne in favour of his son, 1010-11 A. D., he made a pilgrimage to Benares. On his entrance into the country of *Mālvā*, the king caused his parasol and the other signs of his rank to be taken away. He was forced to let the insult pass: on his return, however, he commanded his son to take revenge. Thus began the enmity between *Mālvā* and *Gujarāt*, which lasted till the destruction of both kingdoms by the *Muhammadans*.⁹³ This narrative sounds rather incredible. Still the long feud between the two states, which brought first one and then the other to the brink of destruction, is an indisputable fact. Its ground probably lay not in a chance occurrence, but in the old race-hatred between the *Paramāras* and the *Chaulukyas* or *Chālukyas* and the necessity of expansion of both neighbouring kingdoms. Thus *Padmagupta*'s report of a certain temporary conquest of *Vāgaḍ* is quite credible. Also it is quite possible that *Sindhurāja* waged a successful war against his neighbour in the south-west, the king of *Lāṭa*. *Bārāpa* and his family also belonged to the *Chaulukyas* and in nearer relationship to *Taillapa II*. On the other hand, it is difficult to understand how *Sindhurāja* could overcome the *Muralas*, if by these the *Keralas* are to be understood. If it may be understood, however, that *Padmagupta* — as often occurs with *Sanskrit* poets — uses the expression inexactly and means some inhabitants of *Dravidian India*, nothing can be said against his statement. For, from the *Vikramāṅkadēvacharita* it is certain that the struggle of the *Paramāras* of *Mālvā* with the *Chālukyas* of *Kalyāna* continued after *Muñja*'s death.⁹⁴ It is therefore not at all improbable that *Sindhurāja* undertook an expedition to the south. Of the war with *Kosala* nothing trustworthy can be said. It may only be remarked that the kingdom of *Kosala* spoken of embraced parts of the *Central Provinces* of to-day and *Berar*.⁹⁵

The story from the personal history of *Sindhurāja*, which represents the true object of *Padmagupta*'s work, is unfortunately surrounded with so thick a mythological covering that it is impossible, without the help of accounts containing only sober facts, to give particular details with certainty. Those who are familiar with the court poet's method of description and the Indian inclination to change historical events of the most recent past, for purely poetical reasons, into myths will not doubt for a moment that *Padmagupta*'s seemingly fanciful legend rests throughout upon a historical basis. Analogies in other poems are not rare. Take, for example, *Bilhana*'s

⁸⁹ See above, p. 155.

⁹⁰ See above, p. 157, note 25.

⁹¹ Conf. *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. 9, 184.

⁹² K. Forbes, *Rās Mālā*, p. 52. *Merutuṅga* asserts that the king of *Mālvā* referred to was *Muñja*. *Hemachandra* is not guilty of this anachronism in the *Dryāśrayakośha*; he gives, however, no names.

⁹³ *Vikramāṅkadēvacharita*, p. 27.

⁹⁴ See Sir A. Cunningham, *Anc. Geog.* p. 519 ff.

Vikramāṅkadevacharita, the god Śiva appears regularly when the poet's hero and patron **Vikramāditya-Tribhuvanamalla** comes into combat with the moral law. The latter's birth also is a gift promised by Śiva personally and it is celebrated by showers of blossoms and sound of trumpets. Finally, in the description of **Vikramāditya's** courtship, his chosen **Chandaladevi** is never mentioned by her true family name as a **Śilahāra** princess, but always called **Vidyādhari**⁹⁴ in conformity with the mythological tradition. Very similar mythological representations are to be found in the parts of the **Dvyāśrayakosha**, which **Hemachandra** dedicates to his lord and patron **Jayasimha Siddharāja**,⁹⁵ as also in **Somesvara's** report of the events which caused his *yajamana*, **Viradhavala** of **Pholkā**, to found an independent kingdom.⁹⁶ To these examples from works of the 11th, 12th and 13th centuries, we may add one from an inscription which belongs at latest to the second century of our era. The **Andhra king, Puṣumāyi**, asserts in perfect earnest in his great deed of gift, in Nasik cave-inscription No. 15, that his father, **Gotamiputa Sātakaṁni I.**, won a battle in which "the wind-god, the bird-man **Garuḍa**, the **Siddhas**, **Yakshas**, **Rākshasas**, **Vidyādharas**, **Bhūtas** and **Gandharvas**, as also sun, moon, and stars, took part."⁹⁷ Besides these analogies, we may add to the above-expressed opinion that here and there perfectly prosaic details appear in **Padmagupta's** poems. For example, when one hears that the town of the demon-prince **Vajrāṅkuśa** lay 50 *gavyūtis*, i. e., about 100 *kos* or 150—200 English miles distant from the **Narmadā**, one gets the impression that the poet speaks of an actually known town, not of an imaginary picture of one. As regards the explanation of the story, only one point can be held as certain, namely, that the **Nāga-princess Śasiprabha** was not a snake-goddess but the daughter of a king or chief from the far-spread race of the **Nāga-Kshatriyas**. The existence of **Nāga-kings** in **Rājputānā** and Central India is accredited by inscriptions,⁹⁸ and their successors must certainly have remained long in these regions. To venture further on this point is not advisable, while we have no assistance from inscriptions. It may, however, still be mentioned that the Maharshi **Vaṅku** appearing in the narrative corresponds with the geographical name **Vaṅku** in the **Nāgpur-Praśasti**, verse 54. Lassen erroneously reads **Vaṅkshu**, and believes that the river **Oxus** is meant. The minister **Yasobhata-Ramāṅgada** is also of course a historical personality.

Although so much in **Padmagupta's** accounts of the history of **Sindhurāja** is dark and indistinct, still it gives us the fact that the latter reigned for some time. Years must have passed after he mounted the throne, before the **Navasahasāṅkacharita** was written, and the composition of it cannot be placed earlier than the first decade of the 11th century. Hence it is necessary to place the beginning of **Bhoja's** reign further down than is usually done. Various synchronisms demand this, and lead to the supposition that **Bhoja** was not a grown man in the lifetime of **Muṇja**,⁹⁹ as he only mounted the throne towards the end of the second decade of the eleventh century. Unfortunately we have only two dates of the time of his reign, that of his land-grant, **Vikrama Samvat 1078, Chaitra sudi 14**, which probably corresponds to 30th March 1021, and that of his *Karaṇa* of the **Rājanrigāṅka**, **Saka Samvat 964 or 1042-43**.¹⁰⁰ At any rate, the legends of the wicked uncle **Muṇja**, which disfigure **Forbes' and Lassen's** work, and which, until quite recently, always reappeared, may now be considered as abolished.

Of the earlier history of **Mālvā**, **Padmagupta** merely mentions that the friend of poets, **Vikramāditya** of **Ujjayinī**, formerly ruled there. This notice shows at least that the **Vikrama** legend was developed in **Mālvā** in the same way as it was narrated in the **Jaina Prabandhas** of the 13th and 14th centuries.

⁹⁴ See *Vikramāṅkadevacharita*, pp. 28-29, 37-39, note 1.

⁹⁵ *Ind. Ant.* Vol. IV. 235, 265.

⁹⁶ *Kirtikaumudī*, II. 76-107, and *Ind. Ant.* Vol. VI. p. 139.

⁹⁷ Burgess, *Archæol. Rep. West. India*, Vol. IV. pp. 109-110. **Siri Pulumāyi** is mentioned by **Ptolemæus** under the name of **Siri-Pula**.

⁹⁸ See *Ind. Ant.* Vol. XIV. p. 75, and Sir A. Cunningham, *Arch. Rep.* II. 310.

⁹⁹ It is indeed improbable that **Bhoja**, at the time when **Padmagupta** wrote, had reached manhood. Had he been a **Yuvārāja** there would not have been wanting a compliment for him.

¹⁰⁰ The date in a copy of the **Jesalmir MS.** is: *Sako vedartunando* 11.

THE TRAVELS OF RICHARD BELL (AND JOHN CAMPBELL)
IN THE EAST INDIES, PERSIA, AND PALESTINE.

1654—1670.

BY SIR E. C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 134.)

Appendix to John Campbell's Narrative.

*Additional Note on Thomas Pratt.*⁶⁵

THOMAS PRATT was not actually in the Company's service, but was employed by the Agent at Hugli as a representative of the English at Dacca. In the Hugli Consultation Book,⁶⁶ under date 9th November, 1663, there is the following entry with regard to Pratt and the expenses he incurred at Dacca :—

A Noate of w^t demanded by Thomas Pratt Pr. Month for his expences in servants wages diett & his owne salary.

For 10 peones P ^r M ^o	...	...	...	...	21
For 20 pikes [<i>paik</i>] & a mangle [<i>māñi</i>]	...	...	...	...	34. 15.
For 4 pikes more	...	...	...	...	6
A Cooke Buttler flagman	...	...	...	...	10. 20. 1.
To my diett	...	...	...	...	30
To a writer	...	...	...	...	5
To 6 Caharrs [<i>kahār</i>]	...	...	...	...	12. 15.
a washerman mussallye (<i>masālchī</i>)	...	...	...	...	4
Hollencore [<i>hālākhōr</i>]	...	...	...	...	2
To my owne M ^o salary	...	...	...	...	40
For extraordinary expences at y ^e Durbar...	...	...	...	...	10

This is y^e Calculation w^{ch} I present to y^r vewe, how you will accept of it knowe not, but this much I desire you would take notice of, y^t I will freely give any man 50 Rup^s p^r m^o more to beare my monthly expences. In w^t nature y^e Dutch live here is not unknown to some Englishmen theare, yet theire businesse hath not gone better forward in y^e Durbarr nor they betur respected hitherto, although theire expences hath beene 4 times as much; and likewise pray Consider when any great more [Moor], y^e Dutch, or any P^{son} of quallity come, whether it is a small expence to give them entertaynement, for I have here no investmmts y^t I can eace an Acco: by Charging it upon another but every expence must appeare in its owne shape. Y^r servant, Thomas Pratt.

Early in 1664, Pratt became embroiled in a quarrel at Dacca. The account of the occurrence was evidently written to Surat, but the reply only is extant, dated 19 May 1664⁶⁷:—"Wee are Sorry to read y^e Vnhappy accident y^t befell Thomas Prat, hee did very rashly to give the occasion, but when hee was besett round wee know not w^t a man may bee provokt to doe, especially wⁿ his life is eugag^d, wee are pswad^d to thinke y^e Nabob may bee reconciled when hee shall take into Consideration the Cruell attempt made upon him by fyreing the house about his Eares." In July of the same year Pratt was still in disgrace, for, in a Consultation at Hugli on the 11th of the Month, we read⁶⁸ that the determination of the 9th. June to stop Thomas Pratt's wages of 180 rs. a month was confirmed "until he shall give satisfaction for w^t laid to his charge or that we find thereby that we may lose the Nabobs favour by w^{ch} our Masters business may receive a greater prejudice."

⁶⁵ See page 133.

⁶⁷ *Factory Records, Surat, No. 104.*

⁶⁶ *Factory Records, Hugli, No. 1.*

⁶⁸ *Factory Records, Hugli, No. 1.*

A year later, Pratt was still at Dacca. In July, he wrote to the Agent, Mr Blake, at Hugli,⁶⁹ with regard to the mental state of Mr Marsh, the Company's servant at Dacca. Pratt declared himself unable to restrain Marsh and desired that someone might be sent to look after him. In September of the same year, the Council at Hugli wrote to the Directors in England,⁷⁰ "Thomas Pratt remains at Dacca to prefer our complaints and to endeavour redresses."

The later career and end of Thomas Pratt is given by Manucci and the details have been supplied me by Mr. Irvine. Pratt had been employed by Mir Jumla to build and equip boats for him, but he was suspected by Dāūd Khān Qureshi, the Governor of Dacca, who sent to seize him. Pratt fired on his would-be captors, and then escaped by his back door to his ship in the river and embarked for Arakan.

Here he intrigued with the King of Arakan and planned an attack on Bengal. Dāūd Khān sent a letter to Pratt, couched in friendly terms, and arranged that it should fall into the hands of the Arakan King. Suspecting treachery, the King removed Pratt's goods from his ship, bound his crew, and then sent him and his ship to the bottom.

[II. — Narrative of Richard Bell.]

An accot of y^e Voyage & Travells of Rich^d Bell from Lisbon to Jerusalem & other places in año 1669.

May 23th 1669. I tooke boate from Lixā [Lisbon] to goe aboard y^e Ship *Mary* and *Martha*, Capt Dyer Bates⁷¹ Commander, his strenth 30 Guns, 50 Saylers, then Rideing in the bay Wagers [Oeiros?] agst Passe Darkas [Paço d'Arcos].⁷²

We Weighed ankor of Tewesday at 4 Clock after none, y^e winde faire & a fresh gaille, soe as we arrived at Tangeere⁷³ y^e 31 day, & caime to anker before y^e towne at 4 Clock in the morninge.

In Tangere⁷⁴ litle remarkable saue y^e Mould [Mole], w^{ch} is not in litle tyme like to be finished for what wth some years laber & great Cost was built, is a great part washt downe, & more like [to be] every day,⁷⁵ wthout better artists be employed. Many good howses are wthin y^e walls. It lies on y^e side of a hill; wthout y^e walls theires a howse and Garden built and planted by Coll Alsup,⁷⁶ who then had a teūn [tenant] in it, who sold beere, wyne & Sallets. It [is] Cald White Hall in Affrica. We drank y^e King of Englands helth in it, & at 4 Clock in y^e afternoone went aboard, & y^e winde faire, we weighed, Capt, Cod of Yarmoth and a ship of Bristoll in o^r Company both bound for Genoa.

In o^r way to Messina, y^t being y^e first port we weere to touch at, we past y^e Islelands of Maj & Minyorke [Majorca and Minorca], & by y^e Isleland Sardna [Sardinia], of w^{ch} lay becalmd 47 saile french Men warr & vittellers bound for the releife of Candia. In Sardenia is

⁶⁹ O. C. 3060.

⁷⁰ O. C. 3069.

⁷¹ Capt. Dyer Bates is mentioned in the *Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series*, 1 Sept. 1670, as commander of the *Mary* and *Martha*. Covell, *Early Voyages in the Levant*, p. 101, calls him Capt. Dier Roles."

⁷² Paço d'Arcos, a town on the north bank of the Tagus, near the mouth, 9½ miles from Lisbon. Mr. Ferguson suggests that "bay Wagers" may represent the Bay of Oeiros, this town being 1½ miles beyond Paço d'Arcos.

⁷³ Then a British possession.

⁷⁴ In 1682, Tangier was made part of the dowry of Catherine of Braganza, wife of Charles II. A fine mole was constructed, at a vast expense, to improve the harbour. The works were destroyed in 1684 and the place was abandoned to the Moors.

⁷⁵ Compare *Pepys Diary*, Wheatley's ed., Vol. VIII., p. 235, "Sir H. Cholmley talking . . . of Tangier matters . . . troubled from some reports . . . of some decay to the Mole, and a breach made therein by the sea to a great value."

⁷⁶ A Mr. "Alsopp, the King's brewer" and contractor "for victualling of Tangier" died 27 July 1664. See *Pepys Diary*, Wheatley's ed., Vol IV., pp. 174, 176, 178, 188, 195, 198. Perhaps the "Coll Alsup" mentioned by Bell was a son of "the King's brewer."

y^e herbe w^{ch} if a man eate he dies laffinge.⁷⁷ On y^e day June, we weere becalmd amonge y^e burninge [Lipari] Islelands for 2 dayes. They are called, 1 Strumbelo [Stromboli] 2 Vulcan [Vulcano], 3rd Vulcanello. We, y^e 3rd day, had a fresh ga'le, w^{ch} past vs betwixt y^e poynts of Silla and Charibd[is], the one On y^e Isleland of Scicillia, thother On y^e Callabria, y^e Popes Contrey. And, in two howers after, Moored o^r ships before Messina, & had prattick⁷⁸ in 2 howers after.

This Messina is y^e 2^d City in y^e greate Isleland of Scicillia. At y^e tyme of o^r being there, came 16 Gallies of y^e popes & Maltezes, & 8 days after came 14 Gallys of y^e ffrench; all weighed, & weere for the releife of Candia.⁷⁹

Messena hath y^e farest mould [Mole] of anie place in Xpiandome, and its most of it naturall. The Key, cald y^e Marreene [Marina], is a very faire one, & On it, for neare a mile, stately howses, all vniforme, facing y^e Sea, w^{ch} it bounds, soe as y^u may step of y^e Key into a ship of 300 Tuns, theire being water to make hir swim wth hir full Ladeing. Seuerall faire Castles, Convents, Monasteries & Churches are in it, As also faire Conduits & beautifull streets.

The Manufactur is silke, y^e greatest quantity made wthin 4 or 5 Miles about y^e Towne w^{ch} I se drawne from y^e Cod [Cocoon] into skeynes, w^{ch} is an art verry Curious to vnderstand y^e well doeing of it.

From Messina wth Mr John Morgan, Mr James Stannier & Capt. Bates, we embarked in a ffeluke⁸⁰ w^{ch} we hyred to Carrie vs to y^e City of Cattania [Catania], 25 Leagues by Sea from Messina.

In o^r way we see Reg'um [Reggio, in Italy] y^e plat St^t Paull preched at, on y^e Callabr[i]a side, & St^t Paulls pillar erected in memory of him. We past 3 leagues further on y^e Callabra coast, w^{ch} is y^e popes Contrey, well peopled, & good buildings & fruitfull, tho verry Mountainous. We after boarded to y^e Scicillian coast, on w^{ch} are seuerall small Castles fronting y^e Sea, & soe are theire on y^e Callabria, all to p^{re}vent y^e landing of y^e Turke, w^{ch} vex often those p^{er}ts & steale away y^e xpians. Tho Hilly, yet verry fruitfull for Ollives & corne.

In y^e morninge & Evenings we see troopes of Weomen, Girls & boyes decend the hills, w^{ch} are verry steepe, to fetch water, w^{ch} they beare on theire heads in earthen pitchers from y^e springs at y^e foote of y^e steepe hills; theire habbit verry meane.

Arriveinge at Cattania, y^e 3^d Cheife City of Scicillia, we vewed the towne, left almost empty of inhabitants by reason of y^e Eruption of Mount Etna als Mongebell [*alias* Monte Bella],⁸¹ w^{ch} Sharrie or Mettall [Scoria or lava] w^{ch} it vommitts as a streame from a river in many Channells, hath run downe y^e wall of y^e City in Seuerall places, & run downe about 30 dwelling howses in y^e City, 4 or 5 churches, 2 or 3 Monasteries and Nunaries; & surrounded the City on 3 parts & a large Castle wth out y^e walls, raiseinge it selfe in some places aboue y^e Surface of y^e earth 10, 20 and 30 yds hight; y^e breadth in some places 7 Eng^l miles at Cattania (w^{ch} lies on y^e Sea 2 Miles), & its Channells when I [was] theire led into y^e sea 2 Miles

⁷⁷ The author is apparently referring to the *Cannabis sativa*, hemp plant, which Campbell would know in India as Bhang.

⁷⁸ Pratique — Permission granted to a ship to enter a port.

⁷⁹ Candia was besieged by the Turks in 1667, and, after a most heroic defence by the Venetians, who lost 30,000 killed and wounded, was forced to surrender in 1699.

⁸⁰ *Felucca*, a small vessel, used chiefly in the Mediterranean for coasting voyages.

⁸¹ Compare Lithgow, *Painefull Peregrinations*, p. 300, "Etna, called now Monte Bello or Gibello, signifying a faire Mountayne." The eruption of Etna in 1639 is the most violent on record. Twenty-thousand persons are said to have perished.

breadth & then had fild vp y^e chā [channel] in 6 & 7 fathom water, & raised it selfe in some places 5 & 6 fathom aboue y^e surface y^e water; Makinge y^e Sea soe hott in y^e depth as I could not suffer my hand in it.

We hyred horsse & 6 soldiers to gard vs, for its a dangerous Contrey for anie to travell in, to Conduct vs to y^e foote of Mongebell, where this eruption was, it being 14 Miles from Cattania, and we went all the way alonge the Mettle [lava] it had throwne out. Att y^e foote of this Hill, a litle aboue y^e vent, is 2 hills a quarter of a Mile in hight, all Ashes throwne vp by Mongebell since y^e Erruption. It was soe terrable to looke in at y^e vent or hole w^{ch} first this mettle past out at, as I trembled to see it & durst not stay. Its 20 yds longe and 10 yds brod, all of such a flaime as cannot be greater Imagined. Its 10 or 15 yds lower then y^e surface of y^e earth formerly it had run over.

In o^r way to it we rid over topps howses & trees & townes & ways not formerly passable, but now levelled wth y^e abundance of Ashes w^{ch} Mongebell vommitts Out; for 15 & 20 Miles it hath don this.

The people, in seuerall townes w^{ch} weere Coverd, weere getinge out theire howshold stuff, & in seūall vineyds bareing theire vines, w^{ch} they told vs woud y^e next yeare beare y^e better for it, for it inriches theire land much & makes y^e barren ground fruitfull.

In Cattania & seuerall other towns weere written Over theire Doores Santa Agothia [Agatha] et Santa Marea [Maria] ffogo [fuoco] noli me tangere;⁸² y^e people had left theire howses. The Mettle it runs is of 2 sorts, both w^{ch} I haue, & alsoe a paper full of the Ashes.

After 3 days we imbarqued for Messina, in w^{ch} Citty I lodged at the howse of Mr. Parker Marchant & by him Mr. Wilkinson, Mr. Morgan & Mr. Hill, Mr Stannier & Mr. Meade (all Englⁱ), was kindly treated.

The Day of June we weighed Anchor for Scanderroone⁸³ in Turkey, y^e winde faire, and sailed by y^e west end of Candia, vnder w^{ch} land lay 10 saile of Turks men warr belonging to Argier [Algiers], w^{ch} had beene in y^e Service of y^e grand Senior ag Candia, And gaue vs chace from 10 in y^e Morninge till 7 at night, at w^{ch} hower we could not avoid speakeing wth them. They Commanded vs hoyce out o^r boate. O^r Capt possatively told them he woud not. We weere all in redinesse, o^r yards slunge, and everyman to his quarters, resolved to die or sinke by them. They Chased vs wth french Cullers [colours], but when they haled vs, put out theire Swalloe taitles.

When they see we woud not hoyce out o^r boate, theire Admirall hoyced out his & sent his Leavetennant aboard to Comd o^r Capt [command our captain] aboard him, but Capt^t Bates woud not, nor anie other in y^e ship. At last we iudged it fit to send [some one] & all refusing, I⁸⁴ went. Many questions he asket by y^e runnagado English,⁸⁵ but I answered as I thought good. At last it hapned soe well that instede of beinge in y^e bottom of y^e sea, or Carring water in Argeer,⁸⁶ the one of w^{ch} we se noe way to avoyd, all y^e 10 sayle being Come vp, we got Cleere, & arrived saife at Silena⁸⁷ in Cyprisse.

⁸² The author has mixed up Latin and Italian in his quotation.

⁸³ Scanderoon, or Alexandretta, the port of Aleppo.

⁸⁴ Apparently, Richard Bell.

⁸⁵ The writer evidently means that the Turkish ships had on board renegade Englishmen in their service.

⁸⁶ i. e., made to work as slaves in Algiers.

⁸⁷ Silena, on the east of Cyprus. — cf. Dr. Pococke's *Travels in the East* in Pinkerton's *Voyages*, Vol. X. p. 560.

Being becalmed, lay there a day, in w^{ch} tyme came v^r to vs Capt Morris: Command^r of y^e *Providence* from Scanderroone bound for St John De Acra, wth 3 passengers One M^r ffrā: [Francis] Hemsworth, One M^r Blunt, M^r Sa: Golsenall, all 3 intending for Jerusalem. I then left Capt. Dates and imbarqued in Capt. Morrisse, it beinge ye 26 day of June 1669.

We arrived at St Jn^o de Acra y^e 29 June, & weere received at the Chamber of Seno^r Antonia De Antonia Consull of y^e place in y^e Cane [*Khān, Sa^rī*]. & mett there M^r Hunt & Senior ffrancisco Consull, formerly at Trippiloe [Tripoli] a Jennerous [generous] p^{er}son. There was alsoe Captain Middleton Comd^r. of y^e *Margerett*, who had a banderetta^{ss} given him by y^e Padre Guardian of Jerusalem, who entertained vs respectfully aboard.

30th of June, wee hyred horsses & a Jannasary & 2 Arrabbs to gide vs for Nazereth. We got to it that night at 12 Clock And weere received at y^e Convent, w^{ch} Consists of 5 ffranciskians, 1 The padre guardia, 2 Joseph, 3 Petro, 4 Nicolo, 5 Marteene.^{ss} Padre Nicolo accompanied vs in all or Journey to tyberious [Tiberias] & Mount Taber wth y^e Janaserry & 3 Arrabbs.

At Nazareth, we se y^e howse of y^e Virgin Mary on w^{ch} seems to haue beene built a spatious Church, s^t by Quene Hellena y^e Mother of Constantine y^e Emperro^r.^o 2d the place wheere y^e Angell appeared to hir at prayer; in the same place now is a Chappell vnder ground,⁹¹ 3, the fountaine of St Peeter; 4, the Senagog of y^e Jewes; 5 the stone on w^{ch} o^r Savior and his Appostles vsed to eate; 6 y^e howse of Joseph.⁹² Noe thinge elce in Nazereth observable, Sane they make in it about Two pounds and a halfe of Silk in it in Twelve months.

Betwixt Cana & The Blessed mount is a vall-y about 5 Engl^l miles in lenth & 2 in bredth, in w^{ch} valley it was y^e desiples pluckt the ears of Corne. Its verry rich earth, but for want [of] tilling only thistles grow, w^{ch} are as hight as a man On horssback.

July 1st 1669. Wee parted from Nazereth for the sea of Tyberious. On the way, about 3 Miles from Nazereth, stands y^e ruins of y^e Metropolis of Gallile, formerly cald Cana, Wheere we drinke out of y^e same fountaine out of w^{ch} Caime y^a water was made wyne at y^e Wedding by o^r Savior. Alsoe y^e ruins of y^e howse was showne vs in w^{ch} the Merrackle was don.⁹³

Seaven Miles from Cana is y^e Mount of blessings, On y^e top of w^{ch} seemes to haue beene a chappell built in Remembrance of o^r Savior^s sermon⁹³ & y^e Merrackle of y^e 5 loaves & 2 fishes, w^{ch} fed y^e Multitude at y^e bottom of y^e hill 2 miles from y^e top. 3 miles further is the sea of Gallile, & in y^e way my horss fell & brused my knee. This sea beares 3 seuerall naimes from the 3 seuerall Contreys border on it, viz: 1, y^e Sea of Gallile; 2, y^e Lake of Genazareth; 3, y^e Sea of Tyberious. The Sea of Gallile, for y^e it borders on it; the Lake of Genazareth, for y^e Genazareth borders On y^e east of it, downe w^{ch} hill ran y^e hard of Swine; The Sea of Tyberious, from the Citty Tyberious, w^{ch} stands on y^e west side of it. On y^e east is y^e Desert of Arrabia.

^{ss} i. e., a Banneretto, a small silk banner.

⁹⁰ Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem at Easter*, 1697, ed. 1610, p. 151, "Nazareth At this place are as it were immured, seven or eight Latin fathers, who live a life truly mortified, being perpetually in fear of the Arabs, who are absolute lords of the country." Compare also Chiswell, *Journey to Jerusalem*, in 1397, Add. MS. 10623, "18th April . . . Nazareth . . . The Convent here is a small and very mean Building, and the Poor Fathers who are six or seven in Number, lead a Life truly mortified being frequently Molested and Constantly in fear of the Arabs who take from them what they please, and abuse them besides — also their Lodgings were so nasty and full of Virmin, their Victualls so Ordinary, and Wine sower, that Our stay here was Very uneasy."

⁹¹ See Maundrell, *Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 151.

⁹² See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 455.

⁹³ See Maundrell, *Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 152.

⁹⁴ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 457 f.

The City Saphat [Saphet]⁹⁴ is seene from Tyberious, it being On a hill shewes it selfe verry plā [plain] the 20 Miles of the Hill vnder wch is Damaskus is also plainly seene from thence, tho it be esteemed 50 Engl miles or 2 days iurney.

In y^e City Tyberious, wch is 3 parts incompost [encompassed] wth a wall sleight but shows new,⁹⁵ y^e 4th wth y^e sea, in all its compass about an Engl Mile And hath Only One litle gate in wch y^u enter. In this City is a Church cald y^e Church of St Peeter, some part standing as of Old⁹⁶, But vsed Only for Caele to shelter themselues from y^e Sunn in the heate of the day. In this City is of all Ages & Sexes about y^e number of 50 psons but not a howse wthin y^e walls of ye City, Only ruins⁹⁵ in y^e walls of wch they live & dwell. The people speak Arrabb, theire habbit wild & poore like y^e Contrey about them, wch affords noething worth mentioninge, not y^t the soyle is not good, but the people Idle. We had for o^r food while we staid a night & a day, Milk, Cake & Honney.

In former tyme, 25 years since, was a boate on y^e Sea of Tyberious, wch belonged to some Jewes wth previlidge to fish, paying 50 Dollers yearly to y^e Bashaw of Safhett, wch boate tooke fish & furnished all y^e Contrey round about; but the Bashaw raised it to 200 Doll^{rs}, soe y^e boate was taken away & it never fished in since to this day. We see abundance of fish play neare y^e shore, for some part of y^e ruins of a great howse runs into y^e water 20 yds.

A quarter of a Mile wthout y^e now wall of Tyberious is a natural hot bath, soe hot I could not goe into it till modderated wth Cold water; ⁹⁵ its wth in a stoness cast of y^e Sea of Tyberious, vnder a great hill, & It seemes as if the Old City wall had Compast it, by y^e ruins of many buildings & an old wall runs beyond it.

2^d July 1669. Wee parted from the City Tyberious to Nazereth. In y^e way wee vewed two Caines [Khāns] or Castles, places in that rude contrey for Marchts, to lodge themselves, Goods & Cammells in safe from Robbers. The farer is cald Inooth Nu tow Jar [*Al-lukandatu't-tujjar*],⁹⁶ this is wthin a days Journey of the place wheere Josephs Bretheren sold him to y^e Ishmalites.⁹⁷ This Caine hath its naime from a fountaine was wheere it stands.

A mile beyond this, at y^e foote of Mount Taber, we kild a yong boar, & rosted it and & eat it On y^e top of Mount Taber. On y^e verry top of this Mount is y^e ruins of 3 Churches, in One of wch are seene y^e 3 tabernackles Queene Hellen built in memory of o^r savior^s transfiguration.⁹⁸ Ffrom the top of this Mount wch is two miles high, in o^r assent we se, 1st Ender, wheere K. Saull went to y^e witch; 2nd, the plaines of Jezraell; 3rd, Mount hermon; 4, the place wheere y^e widdowes son was carried to buriall [Nain] & raised to life; 5th Mount Gilboa; 6, the sea of Jordan; 7, the sea of Gallile; And at y^e bottom of this hill is y^e plaine wheere Cissera was discomfeted [the plain of Esdraelon] & y^e place wheere y^e blood of y^e slaine ran into y^e sea of Gallile; 9, y^e Middeterranian sea. Att y^e west end of this Mountaine is y^e village of Debora,⁹⁸ And a Church, in wch y^e 9 Appostles rested when o^r savior^s went vp the mount wth ye other 3.⁹⁸

3^d July. Wee departed from Nazereth at 11 Clock at night, & y^e 4 July we, at 5 in y^e morninge arrived at St Jn^o de Acra. The Charge of this Journey Cost each man 13 Lyon Dollers⁹⁹ besides his gifts.

⁹⁴ See Maundrell, *Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 155.

⁹⁵ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 459.

⁹⁶ The inn of the merchants: the Commercial Inn.

⁹⁷ See Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 156.

⁹⁸ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 458.

⁹⁹ A Dutch coin bearing the figure of a lion.

5th July 1669. Att 7 Clock at night we imbarqued in a feluke we hyred for Joppa, where we arrived the 6 day at 3 Clock in y^e afternoone. In y^e way we see Cesaria Phillippi, but durst not goe ashore for y^e Arrabbs w^{ch} are there & take Copher¹⁰⁰ 3 Dollers p^r man.

In Joppa is a ruined castle & Symon the tanners howse,¹ now a place where wyne is sold. Theires a great trade there, it beinge the port for Jerusalem. Much Cake sope, flalladoes² & Cotten Lynnen w^{te} & blew is sold there Cheap.³

7th July 1669. We departed from Joppa to Ramah in y^e Phillistines Contrey, w^{ch} is 10 Miles from Joppa, & all y^e way throw a greate plaine & fertile Contrey. In y^e way was 100 tents of Arrabbs together wth theire fammilies, Cattle & Cammells. When they haue eaten that part bare, they remoue further ~~th~~ to fresh pasture.

We arrived at Ramah at 9 in y^e morninge, & at 10 Clock at night we mounted horss for Jerusalem. In Ramah is much tobacco planted, & its a great towne, & hath faire Moskeys in it. Theirs a Convent w^{ch} does receive all franks w^{ch} belongs to Jerusalem, where we arrived the 8th July 1669 at 7 Clock in the Morninge, spending that day in the Ceremoneys of the Convent, Cald Lyon Convent, The Padrey Guardian washinge o^r feete,⁴ & after wth Candles in o^r hands, went in p^{re}session [procession] about y^e howse and church in it, where we ended y^t day wth devotion.⁵ Our entrance was at y^e gate cald y^e gate of Damaskus. We were reced by y^e Druggaman [Dragoman] & y^e Caddies [cadi, qādī] officar; the former conducted vs to y^e Convent,⁵ w^{ch} is where was y^e howse of St John y^e Evangelist.⁵

9th Beinge fryday, in the morninge we were accompaned out Towne wth fratre Thomas⁶ throw y^e gate of Bethlem. On y^e west side wth y^e towne is a small castle built by y^e Pesans⁷ in w^{ch} is a garde of Turks soldiers. Passing southward, neare y^e Citty wall, is y^e Valley of Goehennon, & in y^e Midle there of, there seemes to haue bene a pooll, w^{ch} is s^d to be that where Barsheba [Bathsheba] was seene by David bathing hir selfe, & dwelt by it, beinge vnder & neare Mount Zion, where was y^e pallas of king David & Over looks y^e Pooll.⁸ A little further is the potters feild bought wth y^e 30 p^s silver Judas returned.⁹ On w^{ch} small peece ground is a building levells it wth adioyning rock. At y^e top of w^{ch} rock are 3 holes, throw w^{ch} are let downe the bodies of y^e deade into a valt about 20 yds deepe, w^{ch} earth is of such nature, it consumes the flesh in 24 howers after put in.⁹

(To be continued.)

¹⁰⁰ *Khajarah*, a premium for defence, a tax for safe passage. Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 4, "Caphars are certain duties which travellers are obliged to pay at several passes upon the road, to officers who attend in their appointed stations to receive them."

¹ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 407.

² Mr. Ferguson suggests that this word may be the Spanish *fallados*, an ancient kind of trousers, very baggy, and that possibly the kind worn by Arabs is intended. On the other hand, "Falladoes," may be the Turkish *ferûje*, a cloak worn out of doors by women.

³ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 407.

⁴ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 415.

⁵ See Pococke, *Travels in the East*, pp. 411, 413, 415.

⁶ Compare Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 414, "it is the office of one of the lay-brothers to take care of them [European pilgrims] . . . the lay-brother . . . goes always out with them."

⁷ Compare Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 412, "The castle, which is now called the tower of David . . . is said to have been built by the Pisans in the time of the holy war." See also Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 35.

⁸ See Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 136.

⁹ Compare Maundrell, *A Journey from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, p. 136, "One moiety of it [the Potters Field] is taken up by a square fabric twelve yards high, built for a charnel house. The corpses are let down into it from the top, there being five holes left open for that purpose. Looking down through these holes, we could see many bodies under several degrees of decay; from which it may be conjectured, that this grave does not make that quick dispatch with the corpses committed to it which is commonly reported. See also Pococke, *Travels in the East*, p. 424.

BOOK-NOTICE.

DEUTSCHES RAGAWAN, DER KÖNIGSGESCHICHTE. DIE GESCHICHTE DER MON-KÖNIG IN HINTERINDIEN NACH EINEM PALMBLATT-MANUSKRIFT AUS DEM MON ÜBERSETZT, MIT EINER EINFÜHRUNG UND NOTEN VERSEHEN, VON P. W. SCHMIDT, S.V.D. Vienna, 1903. (Reprinted from the *Sitzungsberichte der Kais. Akademie der Wissenschaften*.)

PATER W. SCHMIDT's researches into the Mon-Khmer dialects are well known. In 1904 appeared his *Grundzüge einer Lautlehre der Khmer-Sprache*, and in the following year his *Grundzüge einer Lautlehre der Mon-Khmer Sprachen*. In these works he so carried on the enquiries begun by Logan and Forbes and placed on a scientific footing by Kuhn, that we have now a definite knowledge as to the mutual relationship of the various members of the group.

It will be observed that the works to which reference has just been made deal only with one aspect of the subject, — the *Lautlehre*, Phonetics. Pater Schmidt was quite aware that even more important from a philological point of view would be a comparative study of the laws of the word-formation, in its widest sense, of these languages. But for this purpose trustworthy texts of two or three of the principal forms of speech were an absolute necessity, and while such were forthcoming for Khmer, for the other leading tongue Mon, nothing was available beyond three short fables in the Haswell-Stevens Grammar and a few translations from English of doubtful value. Pater Schmidt was therefore compelled to refrain from carrying his researches further till, through the kindness of that accomplished authority on Malacca languages, Mr. C. O. Blagden, he came into possession of the manuscript of the work, the name of which heads this notice. It is partly a life of the Buddha and partly a history of the Mon Kingdom from the middle of the 12th to the middle of the 18th century, A.D., mostly written in the Mon language. He lost no time in editing it, both in the native and in the Roman character, and has supplied in addition a valuable Introduction, Translation, and notes. In Appendixes, he gives lists of words which do not appear in any Mon vocabularies hitherto published. These words amount to a considerable number, and as he has succeeded in ascertaining the meanings of most of them, the Appendixes form a substantial addition to Mon lexicography.

In the Introduction, besides the necessary particulars concerning the manuscript, Pater Schmidt gives an abstract of its contents and a summary of the information available about other Mon MSS. at present known to exist. Forchhammer in 1880 made a list of 53 Mon MSS, which are said to be now in the Bernard Free Library in Rangoon, and besides these there are a few catalogued in European collections. Owing to the Mon character being practically the same as the Burmese, these last have usually been classed as belonging to that language, — scholars in Mon being so rare in the West, that apparently no one has yet been found capable of reading them. Now that attention has been drawn to the fact, it is possible that other works in the same language may be found in European libraries, similarly hidden under a Burmese classification.

While we can most heartily congratulate Pater Schmidt on being privileged to introduce Mon literature so successfully to British students, it is not easy to repress a feeling of patriotic envy that the first serious attempt at dealing with an important Oriental language, spoken by nearly 175,000 British subjects, should have appeared in Vienna, and not in London or Rangoon. One resource there is, and I hope it will be soon adopted. This is to translate Pater Schmidt's excellent work as quickly as possible so that it may become accessible to scholars in India who are not acquainted with the German language.

GEORGE A. GRIERSON.

READERS of the *Indian Antiquary*, who interest themselves in Iranian studies, will be glad to learn that Professor Bartholomae has issued a supplement to his monumental *Altiranisches Wörterbuch* which appeared in 1904. It appears under the title of *Zum altiranischen Wörterbuch Nacharbeiten und Vorarbeiten*, and is published at Strasburg by Karl J. Trübner.

The book, which contains about three hundred pages, includes not only additions and corrections to the main work, but also replies to criticisms and a special *excursus* of 68 pages devoted to a consideration of the vowels and vowel signs in the Iranian manuscripts lately discovered in Turfan.

It is hardly necessary to say that the importance of the subjects dealt with, and the eminence of the writer, render the book indispensable to all students of Old Iranian literature.

G. A. G.

A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

Preface.

SOME years ago, I published *ante*, Vol. XXVIII. (1900), pp. 197 ff., 225 ff., a **Theory of Universal Grammar** as applied to a Group of Savage Languages, and in Vol. XXXI. (1902), pp. 165 ff., this theory was **successfully applied** by Mr. Sidney Ray for the elucidation of a short statement in sixteen unrelated and morphologically distinct languages. While compiling Vol. III. of the *Report on the Census of India, 1901, Andaman and Nicobar Islands*, I had an opportunity of **applying it in detail** to the languages of the inhabitants of those islands. In 1904 I had another opportunity of **revising the Theory** in a lecture to the British Association at Cambridge. I now publish the Theory as revised on that occasion, and **its application to systematic grammars of the languages of the Andamanese and the Nicobarese**. In this matter I have had the advantage of the assistance of **Mr. E. H. Man**, the greatest expert on the subject.

The following **abstract** of the ideas elaborated in the succeeding pages may be of use to the reader.

During the last 30 years the careful record of "savage" languages has been frequently undertaken, and a serious difficulty has arisen, owing to the accepted European system of grammar, which is based on a system originally evolved for the explanation of highly inflected languages only, whereas in many, if not in most, "savage" languages, inflexion is absent or present only in a rudimentary form. The European system has therefore been found to be unsuited for that purpose. During attempts to provide a suitable system a **Theory of Universal Grammar** was evolved.

The **root idea** is that, as speech is a convention devised by the human brain for inter-communication between human beings, there must be fundamental natural laws by which it is governed, however various the phenomena of those laws may be.

The Theory starts with a consideration of the **sentence, i. e.**, the expression of a complete meaning, as the **unit of all speech**, and then seeks to discover the natural laws of speech by a consideration of the internal and external development of the sentence.

In explaining **internal development**, the sentence is ultimately divided into words, considered as components of its natural main divisions, in the light of their respective functions. This leads logically to a clear definition of grammatical terms.

From the consideration of the functions of **words** the Theory passes to that of the methods by which they are made to **fulfil their functions**. It shows how words can be divided into classes according to function and explains their transfer from class to class. This leads to an explanation of connected words and shows how the forms of words grow out of their functions. **The growth of the forms** is next considered, involving an explanation of roots, stems, and radical and functional affixes. This explanation shows that the affixes determine the forms of words. This is followed by a consideration of the methods by which the **affixes affect the forms**.

The sentence, *i. e.*, the unit of speech, is then considered as being itself a component of something greater, *i. e.*, of a language. This consideration of its **external development** leads to the

explanation of syntactical and formative languages, the two great divisions into which all languages naturally fall, *i. e.*, those which depend on the position of the words, and those which depend on the forms of the words in a sentence, to express complete meaning.

Syntactical languages are then shown to divide themselves into analytical, or those which depend for comprehension mainly on the position of the words, and into tonic, or those which combine tone with position for the same purpose. So also **formative languages** are shown to divide themselves into agglutinative and synthetic, according as the affixes are attached without or with alteration. Formative languages are further divided into premutative, intromutative or postmutative, according to the position of the affixes.

The Theory further explains that, owing to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language can have ever been left to develop itself alone, and how this leads to the phenomenon of **connected languages** and thus to groups and families of languages. It also explains how, again according to a Law of Nature, no language has ever developed in one direction only or without subjection to outside influences, leading to the natural explanations of the **genius**, or peculiar constitution, that each language possesses.

It is believed that every language must conform to some part or other of the Theory and it can be shown that children and untutored adults in learning a language act on the instinctive assumption of the existence of such a Theory. Assuming the Theory to exist and to be correctly stated, it is of great practical importance as leading to the quick, accurate and thorough, because natural, acquirement of a new language.

In brief, the Theory is based on the one phenomenon which must of necessity be **constant in every variety of speech**, *viz.*, the expression of a complete meaning or technically the sentence. Words are then described as components of the sentence, firstly as to the functions performed by them and next as to the means whereby they fulfil their functions. Lastly, languages are considered according to their methods of composing sentences and words.

Phonology and orthography, *i. e.*, pronunciation, spelling, and alphabets, are not considered, as these belong to other branches of the development of the human mind.

I.

The Theory of Universal Grammar.

(a) The Theory.

The existing European system of Grammar is an old growth based on ancient Greek and Latin Grammars, which embodied the results of a system originally evolved for recording the observed laws of highly synthetic or inflected languages. It is naturally engrained in all European scholars. The objection to it for general use and to my mind the overwhelming objection, is that it is in essentials unsuited to a very large number of languages, which are not synthetic or inflected, or at any rate have synthesis or inflection present only in a rudimentary form. It is entirely unsuited, for instance, for recording English, and in order to use it for that purpose, terms suitable for describing Greek and Latin have to be forced to new and unsuitable uses.

As regards the civilised and deeply studied languages, scholars and students have naturally become so imbued with the ancient system, that it is hardly to be expected that they can be induced to adopt any new or radically different system, and it is not now proposed to appeal to them to change that which is so well established. It is rather sought to find a way of recording on a uniform system the languages of savages nowadays so frequently reported, and, owing to the lack of a suitable and settled method, much too often on a haphazard plan, to the detriment of their successful handling.

Thirty years ago this subject was forcibly brought to the present author's notice when trying to represent, with Mr. E. H. Man, the purely "savage" language of the Andaman Islanders, in which work the active and very competent assistance of the late Mr. A. J. Ellis, F. R. S., President of the Philological Society, was secured. Some years later Mr. Ellis, finding the accepted grammatical terms so little suited to the adequate representation of savage speech for scientific readers, stated in his Annual Presidential Address to that Society for 1882, that : — "we require new terms and an entirely new set of grammatical conceptions, which shall not bend an agglutinative language to our inflexional translation." In 1883 he started the author on the present enquiry, and asked if it were not possible "to throw over the inflexional treatment of an uninflected language." Ever since then, as opportunity offered, the enquiry has been taken up and has resulted in the evolution of a **Theory of Universal Grammar**, which is of necessity a plan for the uniform scientific record of all languages, though, for the reason already stated, it is now sought to limit its application to "savage" languages only.

The Theory was applied in part in Portman's *Comparative Grammar of the South Andaman Languages* in 1898 and again in an article on the same languages by the present author in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for 1899, and elaborately and fully in his *Census Report of the Andaman and Nicobar Islands* for 1901, in which the languages of both groups of islands were discussed and explained in full Grammars. **The Andamanese Languages** are agglutinative and represent the speech of savages of very limited mental development : **the Nicobarese Languages** are a highly developed analytical form of speech, like English. In both, inflection is only present in a secondary and rudimentary form, as in English. The Theory was also applied in outline by Mr. Sydney Ray in the *Indian Antiquary* for 1902 to sixteen selected languages of every type — synthetic, agglutinative, analytical, syntactical (monosyllabic) — from the most highly civilised and developed to those of the most primitive savages. In the opinion of these writers, the theory succeeds in describing on a uniform plan every language to which it has been applied, as indeed it must succeed in doing, if it be a correct theory.

The very great importance to anthropologists and observers of savage tribes and peoples unknown to Europeans of a uniform scientific system in this matter is so obvious, that no excuse is made for bringing it once more before the readers of this *Journal*.

The root idea of the Theory is, that as speech is a convention devised by the human brain for intercommunication between human beings, there must be some fundamental natural laws by which it is governed, however various the phenomena of those laws may be. The business of the Grammarian is to discover and report the laws. These considerations form the basis of the Theory of Universal Grammar, the practical application of which at the present day must, on account of long formed habits, be limited to a **Plan for Uniformly Recording the Languages of Savages**.

In building up a Theory of Universal Grammar, it is necessary, in order to work out the argument logically, to commence where the accepted Grammars end, *viz.*, at the sentence, defining the sentence as the expression of a complete meaning, and making that the unit of language. This is the fundamental argument. Nothing is an intelligible communication, unless it is complete enough to be understood. It is by observation of the internal and external development of the sentence or complete meaning that the natural laws of speech will be discovered.

A sentence may, clearly, consist of one or more expressions of a meaning or "words," defined as single expressions of a meaning. The difference between a word and a sentence may be shown thus : — "go" is a sentence, as it says all that is necessary ; but "cow" is merely a word, because something must be said about the cow before the communication is complete.

A sentence can also consist of two separate parts — the subject, *i. e.*, the matter to be discussed or communicated, and the predicate, *i. e.*, the discussion or communication. Thus,

“the badly hurt cow” would be the subject and “*died* suddenly yesterday” would be the predicate of a sentence.

And when the subject or predicate consists of many words, it must contain principal and additional words. In the sentence already quoted, the words “cow” and “died” are the principal words, and the rest are additional.

This leads to the argument that the **components of a sentence are words**, placed either in the subjective or predicative parts of it, having a relation to each other in that part of **principal and subordinate**. Therefore, because of such relation, **words fulfil functions**. The functions then of the principal words must be to indicate the subject or predicate, and of the subordinate words in the predicative part of the sentence to illustrate the predicate, and in the subjective part to explain the subject or to illustrate that explanation. Thus, in the sentence already discussed, the functions of each word are quite clear. “Cow” indicates the subject and “died” the predicate. “The” and “hurt” explain the sort and condition of the cow, *i. e.*, of the subject. “Badly” illustrates the explanation of the subject by stating how much the cow was hurt. “Suddenly” and “yesterday” illustrate the predicate by stating how and when the cow died.

Again, as the predicate is the discussion or communication on the subject, it is capable of extension or completion by **complementary words**, which form that part of a sentence recognised in the Grammars as “the object.” Thus, in “the policeman found the dead man,” the communication made in the predicate “found” is completed by the complementary words “the dead man,” which form the **complement or object**.

These observations complete the first stage of the argument leading to a direct and simple definition of grammatical terms. But speech obviously does not stop here, because mankind speaks with a **purpose**, and the **function of his sentences** is to indicate that purpose, which must be one of the five following in any specified sentence: — (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, (5) information. Now, **purpose can only be indicated in a sentence** by the position, as in English, or by the tones, as in Chinese, of its components; or by variation of their forms, as in Latin; or by the addition of special introductory words, as in most languages. Also it is obvious that when purposes are connected, they can be indicated by **connected sentences**, and that these sentences must be in the relation of **principal and subordinate**. This relation can only be **expressed** by the position of the sentences themselves, as in English; by variation of the forms of their components, as in Tamil, Turkish, and many other languages, or by the addition of special words of reference. In English, subordinate sentences usually follow the principal. When they do not, this rule is recognised by saying that the statement is inverted. The use of special words of reference is shown in such a statement as “I am certain John died on Sunday, because Mary told me so,” where “because” is specially added to the subordinate sentence to connect it with the principal sentence.

A word of reference must act in one of two ways, either by merely **joining sentences**, or by **substituting itself** in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers. In “I caught the man who ran away,” the word of reference “who” connects the subordinate with the principal sentence. “John ran away. He had killed his mother.” Here are two connected sentences, the subordinate following the principal and connected with it by the words “he” and “his” substituted for “John” in the principal sentence to which they refer.

Further, as there is a necessary **interrelation between the words in a sentence**, this can only be expressed by the addition of special connecting words, or by variation or correlated variation of form. In “the story about John was told me yesterday,” the intimate relation between “story” and “John” is expressed by the connecting word “about.” In “descensus Averni,” inflexion of one of two intimately related words is used for the same purpose, just as in English the special

connecting word "into" would be used in such a corresponding expression as "descent into Hell." Agreement or concord between adjective and noun, or verb and noun, in the inflected languages has exactly the same object. In the Persian "ism-i-sharif" (noble name), the relation between noun and adjective is expressed by the connecting word "i."

These considerations complete what may be called the second stage of the argument leading to clear definitions of grammatical terms. The argument thereafter becomes more complicated, taking us into the explanation of elliptical, *i. e.*, incompletely expressed, **forms of speech**, and into those expansions of sentences known as phrases, clauses and periods. But, to keep our minds fixed only on that part of it which leads to plain grammatical definitions, it may be stated now that **functionally a word must be**, inventing new terms for the purpose, one of the following:—

- (1) **An integer**, or a sentence in itself (imperatives, interjections, pronouns, numerals).
- (2) **An indicator**, or indicative of the subject or complement (object) of a sentence (nouns).
- (3) **An explicator**, or explanatory of its subject or complement (adjective).
- (4) **A predicator**, or indicative of its predicate (verbs).
- (5) **An illustrator**, or illustrative of its predicate or complement, or of the explanation of its subject or complement (adverb, adjective).
- (6) **A connector**, or explanatory of the interrelation of its components (or words, conjunctions, prepositions).
- (7) **An introducer**, or explanatory of its purpose (conjunctions, adverbs).
- (8) **A referent conjunct**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them (pronouns, conjunctions).
- (9) **A referent substitute**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers (relative pronouns, conjunctions).

These then are the terms it is proposed to use in the explanation of the functions of words, and the arguments out of which they grow. Of course, grammarians will know that all this is **syntax**, and it must now be explained why the Theory makes it necessary to consider it far more important to study function than form or tone, as essential to the correct apprehension of the nature of words, and that **accidence arises properly out of syntax** and not the other way round, as so many of us have been taught.

It is obvious that any given word may fulfil one or more or all the functions of words, and that therefore words may be collected into as many classes as there are functions, any individual word being transferable from one class to another and belonging to as many classes as there are functions which it can fulfil. This is to say, that **words are divisible into classes according to function** as just explained, and that the same word can belong to more than one class, as it does constantly in English. Thus, "the tiger returns to his kill," "Shall we kill the horse?," "Shall we cross at the bridge higher up, or shall we bridge the river here at once?" And so on *ad infinitum*. In the above examples the same word has been transferred from the indicator (noun) class to the predicator (verb) class. And the same words in English and many other tongues are constantly nouns, adjectives, verbs or adverbs, simply according to the function they happen to perform for the time being.

The function a word fulfils in any particular sentence can be indicated by its position therein, without and with variation of form, as in English and Latin respectively; or by its

tone, as in Chinese. And because of this, the form or tone which a word can be made to assume is capable of indicating the class to which it belongs for the nonce. In Chinese the same word can become a noun or verb and so on merely by the tone used in uttering it: tone being to Chinese what inflexion is to Latin. So the Latin stem *domin* by changing its form does all sorts of things and belongs to all sorts of classes. As *domin-us* it is an indicator (noun): as *domin-or* it is a predicator (verb): as *domin-ans* it is an explicator (adjective): as *domin-i* it may be a subordinate noun showing its intimate relation to some other word or it may be simply a noun according to context: as *domin-o* it is, again according to context, an illustrator (adverb) of a verb or a complementary indicator, i. e., a noun governed by a verb, as we have all been taught to say: as *domin-um* it is always a complementary indicator: and so on.

It is further obvious that words transferable from class to class belong primarily to a certain class and secondarily to the others, that a transfer involves the fulfilment of a new function, and that a word in its transferred condition becomes a new word connected with the form fulfilling the primary function, the relation between the forms or tones, i. e., the words so connected, being that of parent and offshoot. Form and tone therefore can indicate the class to which a parent word and its offshoots respectively belong. In English it is not usually difficult to detect primary and secondary function, or parent and offshoot words. Thus, in the case of "bridge" the noun and "bridge" the verb: of "kill" the verb and "kill" the noun, or in the case of "kill" and "killer." In the inflected languages it is never easy, as all the observable forms are probably connected secondary forms of some older lost word. It is not easy to say offhand what should be affixed to *domin* as the form of its primary function. But the principle of the application of every existing inflected form is precisely that above explained.

It is by the above induction that one is led to the argument that form grows out of function, or, to put it in a familiar way, accident grows out of syntax, because when connected words differ in form they must consist of a principal part or stem, and an additional part or functional affix. The function of the stem is to indicate the meaning of the word, and the function of the functional affix to modify that meaning with reference to the function of the word. This modification can be expressed by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or by indicating its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence. All this is illustrated in the words just quoted. The meaning of those connected words lies in the stem *domin*, and this meaning is modified, and the function in the sentence and relation to its other words of each individual is determined, by affixing *us*, *or*, *ans*, *i*, *o*, *um* and so on.

But the stem itself may consist of an original meaning and thus be a simple stem, or it may contain a modification of an original meaning and so be a compound stem. A compound stem must consist of a principal part or root and additional parts or radical affixes, the function of the root being to indicate the original meaning of the stem, and of the radical affixes to indicate the modifications by which the meaning of the root has been changed into the meaning of the stem. As simple examples may be instanced, the modern English words "form" and "information," of which the former is a simple stem and the latter a compound stem, built up of the root "form" and the radical affixes "in" and "at" and the functional affix "ion." So too the stem *domin* already mentioned is a compound stem with root *dom*, having the sense of "(to be) set," modified into the sense of "mastery" by a radical affix, which has there the form of *in*.

Further, since words fulfil functions and belong to classes, they must possess inherent qualities, which can be indicated by qualitative affixes and by tones. There are many English words, whose modern forms are however chiefly old decayed inflexional forms, which can illustrate

this point. Thus, "bury" is always a verb: so too are "believe," "give," and so on. So also by form *dominari* would always be a verb, and *dominus* a noun.

Thus it is that **affixes** determine the forms of words, bringing into existence what is usually called **etymology or derivation**. They are attachable, separably or inseparably, to roots and stems and words by the well-recognised methods of prefixing, infixing and suffixing, either in their full or in a varied form. It is the method of attaching them by variation of form that brings about **inflexion** in all its variety of kind. This is an important point. Affixes are additions to roots or stems. Those to roots are both prefixed and suffixed in most languages and are sometimes fixed into the roots, dividing them into parts, as in Arabic with much inflexion, and more plainly in Nicobarese: *e. g.*, in the latter case *pa-hoa*, to fear; *pa-ma-hoa*, a coward; *d-āk*, to come; *d-am-āk*, a guest. Prefixed affixes to show function are the rule in the South African Languages, infixed affixes in Arabic, suffixed affixes in the European inflected languages.

Such is the line inductive argument naturally takes in order to work out the grammar of any given language or group of languages logically, starting from the base argument that speech is a mode of communication between man and man through the ear by talking, through the eyes by signs, or through the skin by touch, and taking a language to be a variety or special mode of speech. The **grammar**, *i. e.*, the exposition of the laws, of any single language stops at this point and to carry the argument further, as one of course must, is to enter the region of **Comparative Grammar**. In doing so one must start at the same point as before, *viz.*, the sentence, but progress on a different line, because hitherto the effort has been to resolve the unit of language into its components, and now it has to be considered as being itself a component of something greater, *i. e.*, of a language.

To continue the argument. Since a sentence is composed of words placed in a particular order without or with variation of form, its meaning is clearly rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position and tones or form or both. Also, since sentences are the units of languages, and words are the components of sentences and languages are varieties of speech, **languages can vary** in the forms and tones of their words, or in the position in which their words are placed in the sentence, or in both. And thus are created **classes of languages**. Again, since the meaning of a sentence may be rendered complete either by the position of its words or by their tones and forms, languages are primarily divisible into **syntactical languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the position of their words; and into **formative languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the forms of their words. These are the **two great divisions into which all languages fall**. The order of the words and the forms of the words in the sentence determine the particular natural laws to which a language chiefly conforms.

Now, since syntactical languages depend on position, or on position combined with tone, to express complete meaning, they are divisible into **analytical and tonic languages**. Of such English and Chinese are respectively typical examples.

Further, since words are varied in form by the addition of affixes, and since affixes may be attached to words in an altered or unaltered form, formative languages are divisible into **agglutinative languages**, or those that add affixes without alteration, of which Turkish is a good example; and into **synthetic languages**, or those that add affixes with alteration, of which any inflected language serves as an example. And lastly, since affixes may be prefixes, infixes or suffixes, agglutinative and synthetic languages are each divisible into (1) **premutative**, or those that prefix their affixes, like the South African Languages; (2) **intromutative**, or those that infix them, like Arabic; and (3) **postmutative**, or those that suffix them, like Latin, Greek, or Sanskrit.

Thus inductive argument can be carried onwards to a clear and definite apprehension of the birth and growth of the phenomena presented by the varieties of human speech, *i. e.*, by languages.

But, as is the case with every other natural growth, in obedience to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language can ever have been left to develop itself alone, and thus do we get the phenomenon of **connected languages**, which may be defined as those that differ from each other by varying the respective tones, forms and position, but not the meanings, of their words. And since variation of form is affected by the addition of altered or unaltered affixes, connected languages can vary the forms of the affixes without materially varying those of the roots and stems of their words. In this way they become divisible into groups, or those whose stems are common, and into families, or those whose roots are common. On this definition it is possible to gather French, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese and the "Latin" Languages into a Group. Hindi, Hindostani, Bengali, Uriya, Bihari, Panjabi, Marathi and the "Prakritic" Languages could be formed into a Group. Latin, Greek, Persian, Zend, Sanskrit, Pāli, and the Prakrits would belong to a Family.

It is also against natural conditions for any language to develop only in one direction, or without subjection to outside influences, and so it is that we find languages developing on more than one line and belonging strictly to more than one class, but in every such case the language has what is commonly called its **genius or peculiar constitution**, *i. e.*, it belongs primarily to one class and secondarily to the others. This point cannot be too strongly insisted on. No language has ever developed entirely on one line of development, hence the "irregularities" that vex the souls of learners. English is fundamentally analytical, but there are many highly inflected forms and functional inflexion occurs in many instances. There is also intromutation present in such forms as "man, men," "broad, breadth," "know, knew." Such highly inflected languages, too, as Greek and Latin have points in common with analytical languages.

I have long thought and I believe it can be proved that every language must conform to some part or other of the Theory just outlined, and in that case the Theory would be truly, as I have ventured to call it, a Theory of Universal Grammar. That the facts for such a Theory exist in Nature and only await unearthing I have no doubt whatever. Mankind, when untrammelled by teaching, acts on an instinctive assumption of their existence, for children and adults alike always learn a language in the same way, if left to themselves. They copy the enunciation of complete sentences from experts in it to start with, learning to divide up and vary the sentences so acquired afterwards, and this is not only the surest but also the quickest way of mastering a foreign tongue correctly. Its natural laws, *i. e.*, its grammar, as stated in books about it, are mastered later on, and in every case where they only are studied there comes about that book-knowledge of the language which is everywhere by instinct acknowledged to be a matter apart from, and in one sense inferior to, the practical or true knowledge. I use the term "true" here, because, unless this is possessed, whatever knowledge may be acquired fails to fulfil its object of finding a new mode of communicating with one's fellow man.

Book-knowledge of a language is only useful for 'scientific and educational purposes, but if the laws laid down in the set Grammars were to follow closely on the laws instinctively obeyed by untutored man, and to do no violence to what instinct teaches him to be the logical sequence of ideas, the divorce between practical and linguistic knowledge — between knowledge by the ear and knowledge by the eye — would not be so complete as it is nowadays. And not only that, if the laws could be stated in the manner above suggested, they could be more readily grasped and better retained in the memory, and languages could consequently be more quickly, more thoroughly and more easily learned by both children and adults than is now practicable to the ordinary learner. Looked at thus, the matter becomes of the greatest practical importance.

This is what the Theory attempts to achieve : but assuming it to be fundamentally right and correctly worked out, it should explain the workings of the untutored mind of the savage as exhibited in his speech, although it reverses the accepted order of teaching, alters many long accepted definitions, and while admitting much that is usually taught, it both adds and omits many details, and taken all round is a wide departure from orthodox teaching. How wide the following observations will show. The familiar terminology has been changed in this wise. The old noun, adjective, verb, adverb, preposition and conjunction have become indicator, explicator, predicator, illustrator, connector and referent conjunct, while interjections and pronouns have become integers and referent substitutes. Certain classes also of the adverbs have become introducers. Gender, number, person, tense, conjunction and declension all disappear in the general description of kinds of inflexion :—the object becomes the complement of the predicate and concord becomes correlated variation.

The Theory is based on the one phenomenon, which must of necessity be constant in every variety of speech, *viz.*, the expression of a complete meaning or technically the sentence. Words are then described as components of the sentence, firstly as to the functions performed by them and next as to the means whereby they can fulfil their functions. Lastly, languages are considered according to their methods of composing sentences and words. Assuming this course of reasoning to be logically correct, it must, when properly worked out, explain every phenomenon of speech ; and when its dry bones have been clothed with the necessary flesh for every possible language by the process of the direct natural development of every detail, a clear and fair explanation of all the phenomena of speech must be logically deducible from the general principles enunciated therein.

The Theory takes no count of two subjects introduced into all formal Grammars for obvious reasons of convenience — phonology and orthography. It has no concern with pronunciation, spelling, and alphabets. These are subjects which do not affect it and belong to other branches of the development of the human mind.

(b) The Course of Grammatical Development.

The Sentence is the Unit of all Speech.

I. — The Sentence and its Components.

- (a) A Sentence is composed of words.
- (b) A Word is the expression of a meaning.
- (c) A Sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.
- (d) Words required to express the meaning of a sentence are (1) integers, (2) indicators, (3) predicators, (4) explicators, (5) illustrators.

II. — The Interrelation and Intimate Relation of the Components.

- (a) Interrelation of components can be expressed by variation in form.
- (b) Intimate relation of components can be expressed by correlated variation in form (agreement).
- (c) Words required to express the interrelation of components are (6) connectors.

III. — The Sentence and its Function.

- (a) The function of a sentence is to express its purpose.
- (b) Words required to express the function of a sentence are (7) introducers.
- (c) The function of a sentence can be expressed by variation of the tones of its components.
- (d) A Tone is a point on a conventional scale of the voice in speaking.

IV.—Expansion of the Sentence into the Period by the substitution of Phrases, Clauses and Connected Sentences for Words.

- (a) A Phrase is the substitute for a Word by the collective expression of a meaning by two or more words.
- (b) A Clause is the substitute for a Word by the collective expression of a complete meaning by two or more words.
- (c) A Period is a Sentence expanded by Clauses or Words.

V.—Interrelation of the Components of the Expanded Sentence or Period.

- (a) Connected Sentences express connected purposes.
- (b) Words required to express the interrelation of connected sentences are (8) referent conjunctors, (9) referent substitutes.

VI.—The Functions of the Components of the Sentence.

- (a) The Essential Components of the Sentence are (1) indicators, (2) explicators, (3) predicators, (4) illustrators, (5) complements.
- (b) Complements are indicators or explicators.
- (c) The Optional Components of a Sentence are (1) introducers, (2) referents, (3) connectors.
- (d) Referents are referent conjunctors or referent substitutes.
- (e) An Integer is a sentence in itself.
- (f) An Indicator indicates the subject or complement of the sentence.
- (g) An Explicator explains the subject or complement.
- (h) A Predicator indicates the predicate.
- (i) An Illustrator illustrates the predicate or complement or the explanation of the subject or complement.
- (j) A Connector explains the interrelation of the components.
- (k) An Introducer explains the purpose of the sentence.
- (l) A Referent Conjunctor explains the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them.
- (m) A Referent Substitute explains the interrelation of connected sentences by the substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers.
- (n) The Subject of the sentence is the matter communicated.
- (o) The Predicate of the sentence is the communication made about the subject.
- (p) The Complement of the sentence is the completion of the predicate.

VII.—The Classes of the Components of the Sentence.

- (a) Class indicates the nature of a word.
- (b) Form, tone and position can indicate the class of a word.

VIII.—The Interrelation of the Classes of the Components.

- (a) Connected words indicate their transfer from one class to another.

IX. — The Interrelation of the Functions of the Components.

- (a) The Root indicates the original meaning of a word.
- (b) Affixes comprise prefixes, infixes and suffixes.
- (c) Affixes modify the meaning of a word.
- (d) A Radical Affix modifies the meaning of a root.
- (e) A Simple Stem is the principal part of a word indicating its meaning.
- (f) A Functional Affix modifies the meaning of a stem in relation to its function.
- (g) A Compound Stem comprises a root and its radical affix.
- (h) A Qualifying Affix modifies a word by indicating its nature (inherent qualities) in relation to function or class.
- (i) Connected Words comprise stems and their affixes.
- (j) Inflection is caused by alteration of the form of inseparable affixes.
- (k) Inflected words conform to particular kinds of inflection.
- (l) Tone is a substitute for inflection.

X. — The Position, Form and Tone of the Components.

- (a) The meanings of the components combined with their positions or with their forms or combined with the positions and the forms or tones complete the meaning of the sentence.

XI. — General Development of Languages from the Sentence.

- (a) No Language has ever developed along one line of development only.
- (b) The sentence by the forms or positions of its components or by their forms or tones combined with their positions causes the development of all languages.

XII. — Development of Languages from the Sentence into Classes.

- (a) The positions of the components of the sentence cause the development of Syntactical Languages.
- (b) In Analytical Languages position governs the class.
- (c) In Tonic Languages position combined with tone governs the class.
- (d) The forms of the components of the sentence causes the development of Formative Languages.
- (e) In Agglutinative Languages the affixes developing the forms are attached unaltered.
- (f) In Synthetic Languages the affixes developing the forms are attached altered by inflection.
- (g) In Premutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are prefixed.
- (h) In Intromutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are infixed.
- (i) In Postmutative Languages the affixes developing the forms are suffixed.

XIII. — Development of the Interrelated Classes of Languages from the Sentence.

- (a) Affixes to stems develop Groups of Languages.
- (b) Affixes to roots develop Families of Languages.
- (c) Variation of tone, form or position in Families develops Connected Languages.

(c) Skeleton of the Theory.

Speech is a mode of communication between man and man by expression. Speech may be communicated orally through the ear by talking, optically through the eye by signs, tangibly through the skin by the touch. Languages are varieties of speech.

The units of languages are sentences. A sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.

A sentence may consist of a single expression of a meaning. A single expression of a meaning is a word. A sentence may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, it has two parts. These parts are the subject and the predicate. The subject of a sentence is the matter communicated or discussed in the sentence. The predicate of a sentence is the communication or discussion of that matter in the sentence.

The subject may consist of one word. It may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, there is a principal word and additional words. The predicate may consist of one word. It may also consist of many words. When it consists of more than one word, there is a principal word and additional words. Therefore the components of a sentence are words placed either in the subjective or predicative part of it, having a relation to each other in that part. This relation is that of principal and subordinate.

Since the words composing the parts of a sentence are placed in a position of relation to each other, they fulfil functions. The function of the principal word of the subject is to indicate the matter communicated or discussed by expressing it. The function of the subordinate words of the subject may be to explain that indication, or to illustrate the explanation of it. The function of the principal word of the predicate is to indicate the communication or discussion of the subject by expressing it. The function of the subordinate words of the predicate may be to illustrate that indication, or to complete it. The predicate may be completed by a word explanatory of the subject, or indicative of the complement. Therefore, primarily, the words composing a sentence are either —

- (1) Indicators, or indicative of the subject.
- (2) Explicators, or explanatory of the subject.
- (3) Predicators, or indicative of the predicate.
- (4) Illustrators, or illustrative of the predicate, or of the explanation of the subject.
- (5) Complements, or complementary of the predicator.

And complements are either indicators or explicators. Therefore also complementary indicators may be explained by explicators, and this explanation may be illustrated by illustrators. And complementary explicators may be illustrated by illustrators.

But, since speech is a mode of communication between man and man, mankind speaks with a purpose. The function of sentences is to indicate the purpose of speech. The purpose of speech is either (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, or (5) information. Purpose may be indicated in a sentence by the position of its components, by the tones of its components, by variation of the forms of its components, and by the addition of introductory words to express it or introducers.

Also, since the function of sentences is to indicate the purpose of speech, connected purposes may be indicated by connected sentences. The relation of connected sentences to each other is that of principal and subordinate. This relation may be expressed by the position of the connected sentences, by variation of the tones or forms of their components, or by the addition of referent words expressing it or referents. A referent word may express the interrelation of connected sentences by conjoining them, or by substituting itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers. Referents are therefore conjunctors or substitutes.

Also, since the words composing the parts of a sentence are placed in a position of relation to each other, this relation may be expressed in the sentence by the addition of connecting words expressing it or **connectors**, or by variation of the forms of the words themselves.

Also, since predicators are specially connected with indicators, explicators with indicators, illustrators and complements with predicators, and referent substitutes with their principals, there is an **intimate relation** between predicator and indicator, indicator and explicator, illustrator and predicator, predicator and complement, referent substitute and principal. This intimate relation may be expressed by the addition of connecting words to express it, or by **correlated variation** in the forms of the specially connected words or by their relative position or by their relative tones.

Since speech is a mode of communication between man and man by expression, that communication may be made complete without complete expression. Speech may, therefore, be partly expressed, or be partly left unexpressed. And since speech may be partly left unexpressed, referent words may refer to the unexpressed portions, and words may be related to unexpressed words or correlated to them. Referent substitutes may, therefore, indicate the subject of a sentence.

Again, many words may be used collectively to express the meaning of one word. The collective expression of a single meaning by two or more words is a **phrase**. The relation of a phrase to the word it represents is that of original and substitute. A phrase, therefore, fulfils the function of its original.

Since a phrase is composed of words used collectively to represent a single expression of a meaning, that meaning may be complete in itself. Therefore a phrase may be a sentence. A sentence substituted for a word is a **clause**. A clause, therefore, fulfils the function of its original.

Since clauses represent words, a sentence may be composed of clauses, or partly of clauses and partly of words. A sentence composed of clauses, or partly of clauses and partly of words, is a **period**.

Therefore a word is functionally either —

- (1) A sentence in itself or an **integer**,
- (2) An **essential component** of a sentence, or
- (3) An **optional component** of a sentence.

The essential components of a sentence are (1) indicators, (2) explicators, (3) predicators, (4) illustrators, (5) complements. And complements are either indicators or explicators.

The optional components of a sentence are (1) introducers, (2) referents, (3) connectors. And referents are either referent conjunctors or referent substitutes.

To recapitulate: Functionally a word is either —

- (1) An **integer**, or a sentence in itself.
- (2) An **indicator**, or indicative of the subject or complement of a sentence.
- (3) An **explicator**, or explanatory of its subject or complement.
- (4) A **predicator**, or indicative of its predicate.
- (5) An **illustrator**, or illustrative of its predicate or complement, or of the explanation of its subject or complement.
- (6) A **connector**, or explanatory of the interrelation of its components.
- (7) An **introducer**, or explanatory of its purpose.
- (8) A **referent conjuncter**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by joining them.
- (9) A **referent substitute**, or explanatory of the interrelation of connected sentences by substitution of itself in the subordinate sentence for the word in the principal sentence to which it refers.

An individual word may fulfil all the functions of words, or it may fulfil only one function, or it may fulfil many functions. When a word can fulfil more than one function, the function it fulfils in a particular sentence is indicated by its **position** in the sentence, either without variation of form, or with variation of form or by its **tone**. There are, therefore, **classes of words**.

Since a word may fulfil only one function, there are as many classes as there are functions. Also since a word may fulfil more than one function, it may belong to as many classes as there are functions which it can fulfil. A word may, therefore, be transferable from one class to another; and this transfer may be effected by its **position** in the sentence without variation of form, or with variation of form or by its **tone**. The class to which a word belongs may, therefore, be indicated by its **form** or **tone**.

When a word is transferable from one class to another, it belongs primarily to a certain class and secondarily to other classes. But, since by transfer to another class from the class to which it primarily belongs (with or without variation of form) the word fulfils a **new function**, it becomes a **new word** connected with the original word. The relation between **connected words** is that of parent and offshoot. Since the form of a word may indicate its class, both parent and offshoot may assume the forms of the classes to which they respectively belong.

When connected words differ in form, they consist of a principal part or **stem**, and an additional part or **functional affix**. The function of the stem is to indicate the meaning of the word. The function of the functional affix is to modify that meaning with reference to the function of the word. This **modification** may be effected by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or by indicating its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence.

A stem may be an original meaning or **simple stem**, or it may be a modification of an original meaning or **compound stem**. A compound stem consists of a principal part or root, and additional parts or **radical affixes**. The function of the root is to indicate the original meaning of the stem. The function of the radical affixes is to indicate the **modification** by which the meaning of the root had been changed into the meaning of the stem.

Since words fulfil functions and belong to classes, they possess **inherent qualities**. The inherent qualities of words may be indicated by **qualitative affixes** or by **tones**.

Affixes are, therefore, **functional**, or indicative of the function of the word to which they are affixed, or of its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence; **radical**, or indicative of the modifications of meaning which its root has undergone; **qualitative**, or indicative of its inherent qualities.

Affixes may be —

- (1) **Prefixes**, or prefixed to the root, stem, or word;
- (2) **Infixes**, or fixed into the root, stem, or word;
- (3) **Suffixes**, or suffixed to the root, stem, or word.

Affixes may be attached to roots, stems, or words in their **full form**, or in a **varied form**. When there is variation of form, there is **inflexion** or inseparability of the affix from the root, stem, or word. All the functions of affixes can, therefore, be fulfilled by inflexion; and **inflected words** may conform to particular **kinds of inflexion**.

Since a sentence is composed of words placed in a particular order, with or without variation of form, the meaning of a sentence is rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position, with their tones, or with their forms, or partly with their position and partly with their forms or tones.

Since sentences are the units of languages, and words are the components of sentences, and since languages are varieties of speech, languages may vary in the forms of their words, in the tones of their words, in the position in which their words are placed in the sentence, or partly in the forms and tones and partly in the position of their words. There are, therefore, classes of languages.

Since the meaning of a sentence may be rendered complete by the position of its words, by their tones, or by their form, languages are primarily divisible into **syntactical languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the position and tones of their words; and into **formative languages**, or those that express complete meaning by the position and forms of their words.

Since syntactical languages use either position or position and tone, they are divisible into **analytical languages** and **tonic languages**.

Since words are varied in form by the addition of affixes, and since affixes may be attached to words in an unaltered or altered form, formative languages are divisible into **agglutinative languages**, or those that add affixes without alteration; and into **synthetic languages**, or those that add affixes with alteration.

Since affixes may be prefixes, infixes, or suffixes, agglutinative and synthetic languages are each divisible into (1) **premutative languages**, or those that prefix their affixes; (2) **intrmutative languages**, or those that infix their affixes; (3) **postmutative languages**, or those that suffix their affixes.

Languages are, therefore, by class either syntactical or formative. And syntactical languages are either analytical or tonic, and formative languages are either agglutinative or synthetic. And agglutinative and synthetic languages are either premutative, intrmutative, or postmutative.

A language may belong entirely to one class, or it may belong to more than one class. When a language belongs to more than one class, it belongs primarily to a particular class, and secondarily to other classes.

Since the meaning of a sentence is rendered complete by the meaning of its words in combination with their forms or position, languages may be **connected languages**, or those that vary the forms, the tones, or the position, without varying the meanings, of their words.

Since variation of form is effected by the addition of affixes in an unaltered form, connected languages may vary the affixes without variation of the roots or stems of their words. Connected languages whose stems are common belong to a **group**. Connected languages whose roots are common belong to a **family**; and, therefore, all connected languages belonging to a group belong to the same family.

(d) A Brief Exposition of the Theory.

All speech expresses a communication between man and man by talking or by signs. Languages are varieties of speech. The unit of every language is the expression of a complete communication, *i. e.*, the sentence. All sentences are divided into incomplete expressions of communication, *i. e.*, words, and are as naturally multiplied into languages. Thus there is a development both ways from the sentence.

The necessary primary division of every sentence made up of words is into the matter communicated (subject) and the communication made about it (predicate). The words in each of these divisions are of necessity in the relation of principal and subordinate, which involves the fulfilment of a function by every word.

The function of the principal word of the subject is obviously to indicate the matter communicated and of the subordinate words to explain the indication and illustrate that explanation. Similarly, the principal word of the predicate indicates the communication made and the subordinate words illustrate the indication or complete it.

Therefore, in every language the essential words in a sentence are : —

- (1) indicator, indicating the subject or the complement.
- (2) explicator, explaining that indication.
- (3) predicator, indicating the predicate.
- (4) illustrators, illustrating the predicator or the explicator.

As all speech expresses a communication, it has a purpose, and the functions of the sentences is to express one of the five following purposes : — (1) affirmation, (2) denial, (3) interrogation, (4) exhortation, (5) information. The methods adopted for indicating the purpose of a sentence are (1) placing the components in a particular order, or (2) varying their forms or the tones in which they are spoken, or (3) adding special introductory words. When the purposes of speech are by their nature connected together, this connection is naturally indicated by connected sentences in the relation of principal and subordinate, which is expressed by methods similar to those above noted, *etc.*, placing them in a particular order, or varying the forms or tones of their components, or adding special referent words of two kinds, (1) simple conjoining words, (2) words substituting themselves in the subordinate sentence for the words in the principal sentence to which they refer.

The relation of the words composing the parts of a sentence is also expressed by the similar methods of adding special connecting words, or of varying the forms or tones of the words ; and so, too, the intimate relation between indicator and predicator, indicator and explicator, illustrator and predicator, predicator and complement, referent substitute and principal, is similarly expressed by special connecting words, by correlated variation of the words in intimate relation, by their relative position, or by the tones used in severally expressing them.

Complete communication can be, and is habitually, in every language, made without a complete expression of it in speech, and so referent words are made to refer to words unexpressed and to be related or correlated to them, and referent substitutes are made to indicate the unexpressed subject or complement of a sentence.

The function of the sentence and the interrelation of the words composing it are therefore in all speech expressed by three methods : position, variation, or addition of special words. Every language adopts one or more or all of these methods.

Therefore, in every language the optional words in a sentence are : —

- (5) connector, explaining the interrelation of the components,
- (6) introducer, explaining its purpose,
- (7) referent conjunctive, joining connected sentences,
- (8) referent substitutes, indicating the interrelation of connected sentences or unexpressed communications.

To the essential and optional components of the sentence must be added (9) the integer, or word that of necessity in every language expresses in itself a complete communication, *i. e.*, is a sentence.

Thus is explainable the natural resolution of the sentence into its component words, but any one word can be, and habitually is, extended to many words, used collectively to express its meaning. Words thus used collectively form a phrase, which is substituted for its original. When a phrase contains in itself a complete meaning, and thus is a sentence substituted for a word, it becomes a clause. Therefore, clauses and phrases are merely expanded words, fulfilling the functions and bearing the relations of the words for which they are substituted in an expanded sentence or period. Therefore also, the period is a true sentence in the sense of being the expression of a complete meaning, and so the unit of every language adopting it.

In all speech, words are made to indicate the functions they fulfil in a sentence by their position in it, with or without using tones, and with or without variation in form, and this habit gives rise of necessity to clauses of words according to function. And as any given word can naturally fulfil more than one function, it becomes as naturally transferable from its own class to another, the transfer

being indicated by position in the sentence with or without variation in form or tone. The class of a word thus indicates its function; and its position, alone or combined with its form or tone, indicates its class.

So when a word is transferred from its original class, it necessarily fulfils a new function and becomes a new word, connected with the original word in the relation of parent and offshoot, each equally of necessity assuming the form or tone of its own class.

The functions of words in a sentence, and consequently their classes, are therefore in all speech expressed by two methods: position or position combined with variation or tone. Every language adopts one or other or both.

When in any language connected words differ in form, they are made to consist of a principal part or stem and an additional part or functional affix. The stem is used for indicating the meaning of the word, and the functional affix for modifying that meaning according to function, by indicating the class to which the word belongs, or its relation or correlation to the other words in the sentence.

A simple stem necessarily indicates an original meaning, but a stem can be, and habitually is, used for indicating a modification of an original meaning. It then naturally becomes a compound stem, *i. e.*, made up, by the same method as that above noted, of a principal part or root and of additional parts or radical affixes, each with its own function, the root to indicate the original meaning, and the affix its modification into meaning of the stem.

As all words differing in form or tone of necessity fulfil functions and belong to classes, they must possess a nature, *i. e.*, qualities inherent in themselves, and these, in all languages using such words, are indicated by the addition of qualitative affixes or by the tones in which they are spoken.

Every affix is of necessity fixed in the midst of, or prefixed or suffixed to, a root, stem, or word, the affixing being naturally effected in full or in a varied form. Whenever there is variation of form amounting to material change, there is necessarily inflexion, or inseparability of the affixes. Inflexion can therefore be made to fulfil all the functions of affixes, and inflected words to conform to particular kinds of inflexion, in order to indicate function and class: and as tone can be equally made to indicate the functions and classes of words, it takes the place of inflexion.

Words are therefore made to fulfil their functions merely by the tone in which they are spoken or by an external development effected by affixes, and to express modifications of their original meaning by a similar use of tones or of internal development. In the case of both internal and external development the affixes are prefixes, infixes, or suffixes affixed in full or varied form or by inflexion. All languages, using variation of form for causing the components of sentences, *i. e.*, words, to fulfil their functions, adopt one or other, or all the above methods of effecting the variation.

Therefore in all speech, communication expressed in a sentence is rendered complete by the combination of the meaning of its components with their position, tones or forms, or with position combined with form or tone.

The methods adopted in developing the sentence, *i. e.*, the unit of speech itself, are found to entirely govern those adopted in its further development into a language or variety of speech.

Languages differ naturally in the position of their words in the sentence, or in their forms or tones, or in the combination of position with form or tone. Thus are set up naturally two primary classes of languages:—Syntactical Languages, which express complete communication by the position, and Formative Languages, which express it by the forms of their words.

As position alone or combined with tone can fulfil all the functions of speech, the Syntactical Languages employ one or both of those methods, and thus are created respectively Analytical Languages and Tonic Languages.

Again, in all speech, variety of form is secured by affixes attached to words in an unaltered or an altered form. Formative Languages necessarily therefore divide themselves

into Agglutinative Languages, attaching affixes in an unaltered form, and Synthetic Languages, attaching them in an altered form. These two classes are both further naturally divisible into (1) Premutative, (2) Intrmutative, (3) Postmutative Languages, according as they attach affixes as prefixes, infixes or suffixes.

In obedience to a fundamental Law of Nature, no language has ever developed along a single line, and therefore every language belongs of necessity primarily to one of the above classes, and secondarily to others, by partial adoption of their methods.

Languages, varying the form, tones or position, without varying the meanings, of their words, form naturally Connected Languages in the relation of parent and offshoot. Connected Languages, whose stems, *i.e.*, the meanings of whose words, are common to all, form a natural Group of Languages, and those Connected Languages, whose roots, *i.e.*, the original meanings of whose words, are common to all, form a natural Family of Languages. Therefore also of necessity all Connected Languages belonging to a Group belong to the same Family.

As the above method of expounding the Theory involves the use of unfamiliar terms, it is as well to state that the new and the old terms of Grammar roughly, though not exactly, correspond as follows; it being remembered that the old terms are themselves the outcome of another tacit Theory, based upon other observations of natural laws or phenomena.

Table of Comparative Grammatical Terms.

<i>Old.</i>	<i>New.</i>
Noun.	Indicator.
Adjective.	Explicator.
Verb.	Predicator.
Adverbs of different classes.	{ Illustrator. { Introducer.
Preposition. }	Connector.
Postposition. }	
Conjunction. }	
Interjection.	Integer.
Pronoun. }	Referent Substitute.
Relative Adverb. }	
Relative Particle. }	
Gender, Number, Case. }	Inflection of different kinds.
Declension. }	
Person, Mood, Tense. }	
Conjugation. }	
Concord, Agreement. }	{ Correlated Variation. { Intimate Relation.
Government. }	

DIAGRAM I.

Explaining the Lines upon which the Theory is Worked out.

Principle of the Development of the Sentence out of its Components.

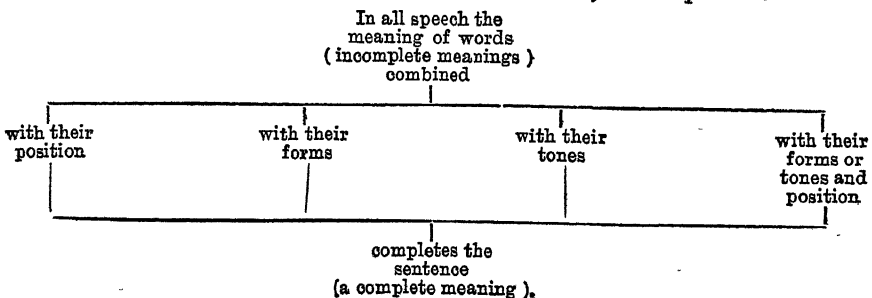
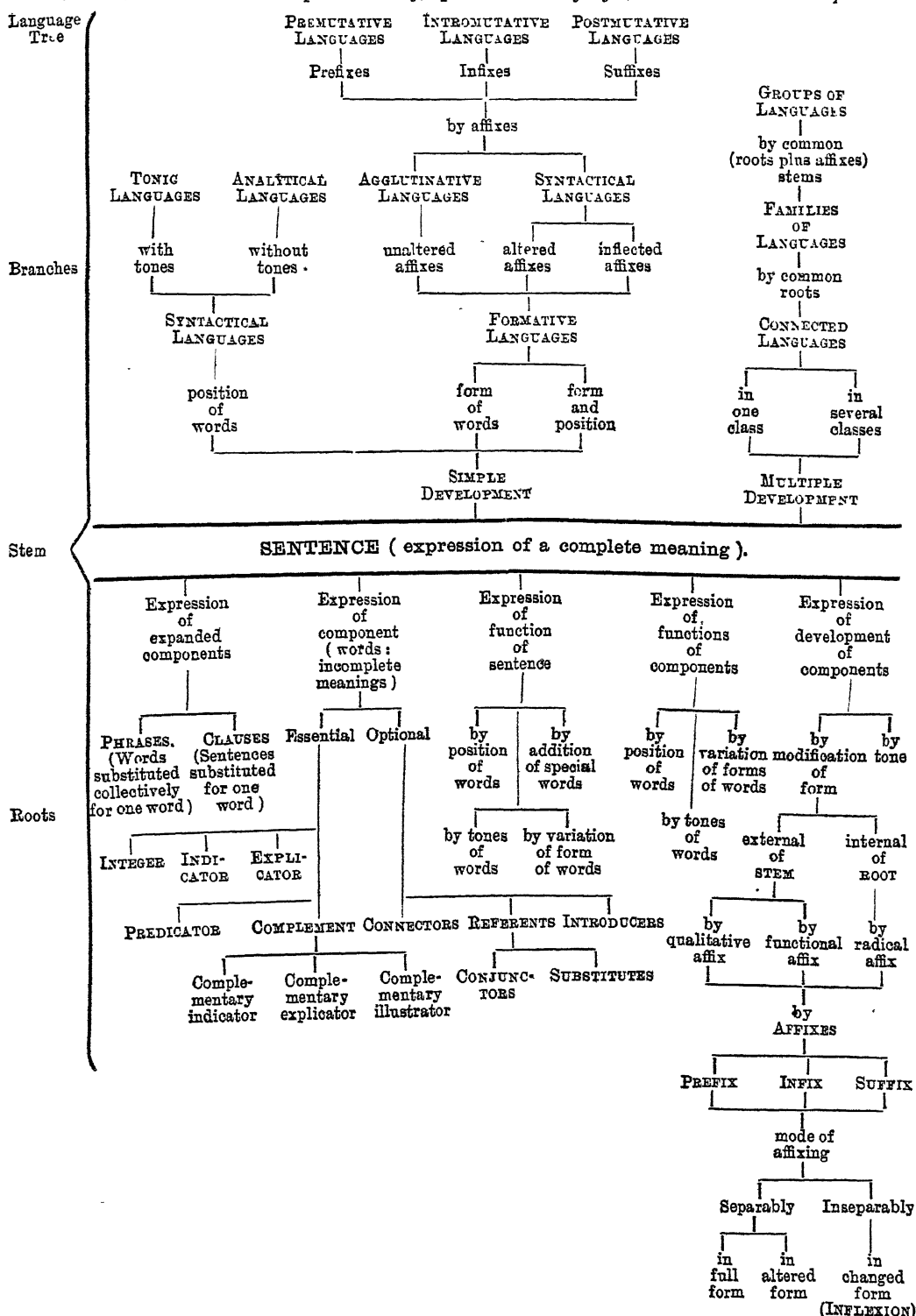


DIAGRAM II.

Development of the Sentence or complete meaning, upwards into languages, downwards into its components.



(e) **Methods of Analysing the Sentence**
according to the Theory of Universal Grammar.

I. — By its Components.

Definitions and Notes.

1. A sentence is composed of Words.
2. A Word is the expression of a meaning.
3. A Sentence is the expression of a complete meaning.
4. Words required to express the meaning of a sentence are (1) integers, (2) indicators, (3) predicators, (4) explicators, (5) illustrators.

Analyses.

1. An Integer completes the Sentence.
2. The Subject and the Predicate make up the Sentence.
3. An Indicator completes the Subject.
4. The principal word (Indicator) and subordinate words make up the Sentence.
5. Illustrators and Explicators make up the subordinate words.
6. The Predicator completes the Predicate.
7. The principal word (Predicator) and subordinate words make up the Predicate.
8. Illustrators and the Complement (Object) make up the Predicate.
9. An Indicator or an Explicator completes the Complement.
10. The principal word (Indicator or Explicator) and subordinate words make up the Complement.
11. Illustrators and Explicators make up the subordinate words.

II. — By the Interrelation and Intimate Relation of its Components.

Definitions and Notes.

1. Interrelation of component words is expressed by variation in form.
2. Intimate relation of component words is expressed by correlated variation in form (agreement and government).
3. Words required to express the interrelation of component words are (6) connector.

Analyses.

1. Connected Words complete the Sentence.
2. Component words with variation in form and connectors make up the Sentence.
3. Indicator and Predicator, Indicator and Explicator, Illustrators and Predicator, Predicator and Complement form the Component Words.
4. Correlated Variation in form expresses the intimate relation between Indicator and Predicator, Indicator and Explicator, Illustrators and Predicator, Predicator and Complement.

III. — By its Function,

Definitions and Notes.

1. The function of a sentence is to express its purpose.
2. Words required to express the function of a sentence are (7) Introducers.

Analyses.

1. Affirmation, Denial, Interrogation, Exhortation, or Information, completes the Sentence.
2. The function of the Sentence is either Affirmation, Denial, Interrogation, Exhortation, Information.
3. Words varied in tone or form indicate the function.
4. The position of the words indicates the function.
5. An Introducer indicates the function.

IV. — By its Expanded Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The Components are expanded by the substitution of Phrases, Clauses and Sentences for Words.
2. A Phrase is the substitute for a word by the collective expression of a meaning by two or more words.
3. A Clause is the substitute for a word by the collective expression of a complete meaning by two or more words.
4. A Period is a sentence expanded by Clauses or Words.

Analyses.

1. Clauses substituted for Words complete the Expanded Sentence or Period.
2. Phrases or Clauses substituted for Words and Words make up the Expanded Sentence or Period.

V. — By the Interrelation of its Expanded Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. Connected Sentences express connected purposes.
2. Words required to express the interrelation of Connected Sentences are (8) Referent Conjunctors, (9) Referent Substitutes.
3. A Tone is a point on a conventional scale of the voice in speaking.

Analyses.

1. Connected Sentences complete the Expanded Sentences or Period.
2. The Principal Sentence and Subordinate Sentences make up the Connected Sentences.
3. Referent Conjunctors indicate the Principal Sentence.
4. Variation of the tone, form and position of the words indicates the Principal Sentence.
5. Variation of the tone, form and position of the words indicates a Subordinate Sentence.
6. In Subordinate Sentences the Subjective part is indicated by referent substitutes with correlated variation in form, with or without variation in form, and with or without tone.
7. In Subordinate Sentences unexpressed communication is indicated by referent conjunctors with correlated variation in form, with or without variation in form, and with or without tone.

VI. — By the Functions of its Components.*Analyses.*

1. Essential and Optional Components make up the Sentence.
2. An Integer completes the Sentence.
3. Indicator, Explicators, Predicator, Illustrators and Complement form the Essential Components.
4. Indicator and Explicators complete the Complement.
5. Indicator, Explicators and Illustrators make up the Complement.
6. Connectors, Introducer, Referent Conjunctors, and Referent Substitutes form the Optional Components.

VII. — By the Classes of its Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The Class indicates the Nature of a Word.
2. The Form indicates the Class of a Word.

Analyses.

1. Fulfilment of function by component words combined with position completes the Sentence.

2. Fulfilment of one, many, or all functions produces the transfer of component words from class to class.

3. Fulfilment of one, many, or all functions indicates the class of a component word.

4. A Component Word, without and with variation of form and with and without tone, by position fulfil one, many, or all functions.

VIII. — By the Interrelation of the Classes of its Components.*Note.*

1. Connected Words indicate their transfer from one class to another.

Analyses.

1. Connected Words in the form of their Primary Class or of their Secondary Classes together with other Component Words make up the Sentence.

2. The Parent Word and Offshoot Words form the Connected Words.

3. Classes of words consist of the Primary Class which forms the Parent Word and of Secondary Classes which form the Offshoot Words.

4. Secondary Classes by fulfilling new functions and by transfer from the Primary Class, with or without variation of form and without or with tone, form the Offshoot Words.

IX. — By the Interrelation of the Functions of its Components.*Definitions and Notes.*

1. The root indicates the original meaning of a word.

2. Affixes comprise prefixes, infixes, suffixes.

3. Affixes modify the meaning of a word.

4. A radical affix modifies the meaning of a root.

5. A simple stem is the principal part of a Word indicating its meaning.

6. A functional affix modifies the meaning of a stem in relation to its function.

7. A compound stem comprises a root and its radical affix.

8. A qualitative affix modifies a word by indicating its nature (inherent qualities) in relation to function or class.

9. Connected words comprise stems and their functional affixes.

10. Inflection is caused by an alteration in the form of inseparable affixes.

11. Inflected words conform to particular kinds of inflection.

12. Tone is a substitute for inflection.

Analyses.

1. Connected words and other component words make up the Sentence.

2. Qualitative Affixes indicate the inherent qualities of classes of connected words.

3. Simple stems and compound stems make up connected words.

4. Functional Affixes, by indicating class, interrelation and correlation, modify simple stems and compound stems.

5. Radical Affixes modify roots into compound stems.

6. Prefixes, Infixes and Suffixes attached separably in full or varied form to root, stem or word form Affixes.

7. Prefixes, Infixes and Suffixes attached inseparably by inflection (altered form) of one or many kinds to root, stem or word form Affixes.

X. — By the Position, Tone and Form of its Components.*Analyses.*

1. The meaning of the components with position or form completes the Sentence.
2. The meaning of the components with position and form or tone completes the Sentence.

XI. — By General Development into Languages.*Note.*

1. No Language has ever developed along one line of development only.

Analyses.

1. The Sentence by the forms or position of its components creates all Languages.
2. The Sentence by the forms or tones combined with the position of its components creates all Languages.

XII. — By Development into Classes of Languages.*Analyses.*

1. The Sentence by variation of the forms or position of its components creates Classes of Languages.
2. The Sentence by combining variation of the forms and position or of the tones and position of its components creates Classes of Languages.
3. The Classes of Languages comprise the Syntactical and Formative Languages.
4. The position of the components of the sentences create the Syntactical Languages.
5. The forms of the components of the sentences create the Formative Languages.
6. The Syntactical Languages without tones form the Analytical Languages.
7. The Syntactical Languages with tones form the Tonic Languages.
8. Formative Languages by varying the forms of the components of the sentences by means of unaltered affixes form the Agglutinative Languages.
9. Formative Languages by varying the forms of the components of the sentences by means of altered affixes (inflexion) form the Synthetic Languages.
10. Agglutinative and Synthetic Languages by means of prefixed, infix and suffixed affixes form respectively the Premutative, Intromutative and Postmutative Languages.
11. Syntactical and Formative Languages which are by nature of one Primary Class are Parent Languages.
12. Syntactical and Formative Languages which partially adopt the nature of Secondary Classes are Offshoot Languages.
13. Parent and Offshoot Languages comprise all Languages.

XIII. — By Development with Interrelated Classes of Languages.*Analyses.*

1. The Sentence with or without varied affixes to the stems of its components creates Groups of Languages.
2. The Sentence with or without varied affixes to the roots of the stems creates Families of Languages.
3. The Sentence by variation of the tones, forms or position of its components in Families of Languages but without variation in the meaning of the components creates Connected Languages.
4. Connected Languages by conforming to one Primary Classes or by conforming partially to Secondary Classes comprise all Languages.

(To be continued.)

NOTES ON THE CHINS OF BURMA.

BY THE REV. G. WHITEHEAD.

(Formerly Missionary to the Chins, S. P. G.)

Religion.

THE religion of all the Turanian races has been **Animism or Shamanism**. The general lines of the religion of all the hill-tribes of Burma may be given in brief in the words in which Prof. A. H. Sayce in the *Encyclopædia Britannica*¹ describes the religion of the Sumerians of Babylonia of three thousand years B. C. "According to the Sumerian idea every object and force in nature had its *zi* or 'spirit,' which manifested itself in life and motion. The *zi* was sometimes beneficent, sometimes malignant, but it could be controlled by the incantations and spells which were known to the sorcerer-priests."

The chief objects of worship among the Chins may be divided into three groups : — (i) **the Great Parent** of all; (ii) **the spirits** who live in earth and sky, who send rain or withhold it, who watch over the village, the rice-fields, the jungle, or some one tree or mountain, &c. ; and (iii) **the penates**, *i. e.*, deceased forefathers, whom they fear rather than love, for while they dread their anger they expect little in the way of blessing from them. The Chins do not worship any images; nor do they make any carved representations of any of these objects of worship.

The Great Parent of all is regarded as a female, Mother 'Li, and they do not think that she has or had any male counterpart. Perhaps one may rather say that they believe that sex does not enter into 'Li's essence. Mother 'Li reigns "on her throne in the heavens," "never growing old and never dying." She created, of her spittle, the earth and the sea and the sky, and brought forth by her power all life, animal and vegetable. She created man and imparted to him all the material and mental and spiritual blessings that he enjoys. All mankind are her children, and she loves them all. She has given to each nation its bounds and language and letters. She is wholly good.

Reasoning, as I imagine, from the analogy of daily life, the teachers or priests have told the Chins that Mother 'Li herself has not existed from all times, but had, as parents and ancestors, Yin, Aw, 'Keu and 'Kyën, who are now dead, and, like other departed spirits, much more apt to trouble the living than to assist them; — so much so that the names Yin-Aw are sometimes used to denote in brief all the spirits (Mother 'Li alone excepted), and that in a very unfavourable sense. It was too much, however, for the Chin mind to go back one step further, and to ask whence Yin and Aw came. They have never really faced the question of the First Cause.

The genesis of the human race in general, and of the Chins in particular, is thus told by the Chin teachers. In the beginning, after Mother 'Li had made the world, she laid a hundred eggs, which she hatched in cotton-wool, and from which sprang a hundred pairs of human beings, the progenitors of the different races of mankind. She laid yet another egg, a little one, which was most beautiful to see, and which she specially cared for. In her affection she did not put this one in cotton-wool, but kept it in an earthen pot, and so it did not hatch. After a while, thinking that the egg was addled, she threw it on to the roof of the house. It fell from the roof into some rubbish under the eaves, and was not broken. Afterwards when the rains came, it was borne down by the water with the rubbish into a stream, and finally lodged in a *yang-lai* (or *gyin-yè*) bush. Here the ashun, or king-crow, spied the egg, and carrying it off, hatched it; and from this egg came a boy and a girl, the progenitors of the Chin race. It was only a small hamlet of nine or ten houses where the Chin race was hatched; but as to the race of the people who lived in

¹ Tenth Edition, Vol. XXVI, p. 46.

that hamlet, tradition naturally says nothing. To this day, out of gratitude to the benefactor of their ancestors, the Chins will not kill or eat the king-crow (or the long-tailed edolius) which they will still speak of as their father and mother.

"After the boy and girl were born they were separated. When the boy grew up, as he had no mate, he made a bitch his wife. The Chin girl also grew up by herself, and was carried off by a bear, who placed her in a tree and kept her there. From this captivity she was delivered by a bee, which came to her and directed her to tie a piece of cotton to his tail, by means of which he guided her to where the male Chin was living in the valley of the river called by the Burmese, the Chiadwin. In commemoration of this, when children are born a piece of cotton is tied to their hands. The man wished to make this woman his wife, but the woman objected, because the bee had told her that they were brother and sister. To settle this dispute they went to their Mother 'Li. Her order was that as the man had married a bitch, the bitch should be sacrificed, and the man should then marry the woman; that their sons and daughters should also intermarry, but after that the brother's daughters should marry the sister's sons. Hence arose the Chin customs of offering up a dog to the household spirits and of giving the daughters of brothers in marriage to those brothers' sisters' sons.

"Mother 'Li loved her youngest born son, but before she found him she had already partitioned off the world among her other children, and there was nothing but inhospitable mountain ranges left for the Chin. These she assigned to him, and she gave him also elephants and horses and cattle, and directed his Burman brother to look after his education. This Burman brother, however, turned out to be a very wicked and unscrupulous guardian. He pretended to educate the 'ignorant wild Chin,' but he showed him nothing but the blank side of his slate; so that he never learned a single letter. Before he put him on an elephant, he rubbed the elephant's back with cowhage, which so tickled the poor Chin's bare skin that he refused to have anything to do with such animals in future, and gave them all to his elder brother the Burman. The buffalo, too, the Burman managed to deprive him of. When the Chin tried to ride it, the Burman's wife put herself in the way and got knocked down. The Burman complained to Mother 'Li, who decided that the buffalo should be given over to the Burman in compensation for the injury done. Ultimately of all the animals which had been given to him, goats and fowls and pigs were the only ones which remained in his possession.

"The grasping Burman did not even permit his brother to remain in undisturbed possession of his mountain home. When the boundaries of the different countries were marked out, the Burman took care to mark his with permanent objects, but the Chin set up no marks save some twisted knots of grass. These were burnt up by the jungle fires, and then as the Chin had no marks to show, he was ordered to live wherever the Burman allowed him. Thus his race has never had a country of its own, and wanders still over the mountain ranges of Burma.

"The origin of every Chin law and custom is religiously assigned by the Chins to the orders of Mother 'Li, the great mother of the human race, who is said to have laid down a complete code of laws for the guidance of her Chin progeny."²

As Mother 'Li gave letters to other nations, so she did to the Chins also. The Burman paid not very much attention to the gift, but wrote the letters on leaves and stones; the Chin in his veneration towards the Giver wrote his language on parchment (deer's skin); but when no one was in the house, the dog came along and ate the skin. The Chin submitted as patiently as he could to the loss, but he still hopes, when he eats the flesh of his young dogs, as he

² Col. Horace Browne, *Gazetteer of Thayetmyo* (1874), pp. 48, 49.

frequently does, to imbibe some of the wisdom which that progenitor of the race of dogs then swallowed.³

Like the other hill-tribes, the Chins are much addicted to drinking 'kaung, or rice-beer, and this gift is also attributed to Mother 'Li, and the Chins say that when it is prepared in the orthodox fashion it has the same consistency as Mother 'Li's milk. It was given them, they say, to maintain their strength after the lake of milk with which Mother 'Li had first endowed them was dried up. 'Kaung, however, is not offered to Mother 'Li, though it is always offered to the spirits (*penates*, or otherwise), and forms an essential part of every Chin marriage or funeral. Among the wild Chins, I believe, at the end of a big wedding, often not a single man, woman, or child is sober; and charges made before the village elders of adultery committed on such occasions have been summarily put aside on the ground that there was no person present at the time who was sober enough to know and to remember what took place. The Burmans, as Buddhists, are all, at any rate in theory, total abstainers from alcoholic liquors; and the Southern Chins, who have come very much in contact with them, have, at least, learnt to believe that it is not meritorious to get drunk, and many of them are free from the vice of intemperance. It should be added that it is not the Chin custom to drink 'kaung regularly, but they are addicted to very heavy drinking on the occasion of a feast or of making sacrifices (to the spirits).

Tribal System.

The Chins are divided into forty or more of clans, called a'so, each clan having its common ancestry, called 'kun. The 'kuns are often spoken of as male. There is also the (n)zö-yai ancestry worshipped only by the women, with an offering of dog's flesh; but of this, and of another tribal distinction called 'kó, little information can be got. The (n)zö-yai does not seem to be a female ancestry, but it is reckoned to be in the female line of natural birth. One may be adopted into a different 'kun, for the name is used of the clan, as well as of the original ancestor and of his deceased descendants, male and female; but one's (n)zö-yai can never be changed.

The Chin clans are all exogamous, i. e., a man may not marry a woman of his own clan; but, as we shall see later on, after the marriage ceremonies are over, the wife is initiated into her husband's clan, and has her wrists wrapped round with cotton-yarn as a witness to all evil spirits that she is under the guardianship of the 'kun of her husband. So, too, all children, four or five days after birth, are admitted in like manner into the 'kun; and at the same time children have their ears bored. As to the origin of this last custom, the Chins have a strangely childish tradition. They say that if Póí 'Kleuk, the Lord of the Underworld, spies a man who has not his ears bored, he will think that this is not a man but a rabbit, and will give chase. So to avoid this mistake, and the disaster that might attend it, all Chin infants have their ears bored.

If a Chin dies leaving a widow with young children, some months after his death she will return to her parents or elder brother, and she will be readmitted, with the children also, into her ancestral 'kun. Afterwards when the children are grown up, they may be readmitted into their father's 'kun. The widow, too, may marry again; and in that case will, of course, be

³ Of recent years the American Baptist Missionaries have, with somewhat modified success, adapted, for the Chin language, the Pwo-Karen alphabet, which is again a modification of the Burmese one. They have also published in that form a Chin spelling-book, an elementary catechism, a hymn-book, and a translation of St. John, i-vi. They are, however, I understand, doubtful as to the advisability of continuing to use these characters. In 1892, Mr. Bernard Houghton, I.C.S., issued his "Essay on the Language of the Southern Chins" (with grammar, vocabularies, and sentences), in which he used the Roman characters, and this has been found far more suitable for the purpose, although as there is as yet no reading public very little has been produced in that form.

admitted into the *'kun* of her second husband. If the string were not tied round their wrists on their admission into the *'kun*, they would probably soon come to an untimely end, and on their death they would not be permitted to arrive at the land of Póí 'Klenk.

When two Chins who are strangers meet and enter into conversation, the first question is ordinarily, "What is your clan?" All of the same clan are regarded as brothers.* Like all the hill-tribes and the people of the plains, too, of Burma, the Chins are hospitable according to their means, — and more especially so towards their brethren of the same clan.

The explanation which the Chins themselves give of their origin of the clans is that long, long ago each tribe, or clan, lived by itself on one mountain side, *e. g.*, that the Mendet tribe originally lived in Mendet village. Nowadays even a small village may have members of an indefinite number of tribes.

Some of the clans, as the Mendet and Talau, are to be held in more honour than others; but as their daughters must marry into other clans than their own, and their own wives also must have come from other clans, there is a complete absence of caste feeling.

Certain sacrifices to the guardian *nat* (the Burmese name for "spirit") are performed by the Mendet and Talau clans alone. When they make these sacrifices, one person from each house, partaking in the sacrifice, brings a small measure (*salè*) of uncooked rice with a little cotton-yarn on the top of it. A pig is sacrificed, and the rice is cooked. A stand for the offering to the *nat* is erected before the house where the worshippers assemble, and all the persons taking part in the sacrifice have their wrists wrapped round with the yarn. Then, after the *pa'san* *'sayá* (their teacher or priest) has uttered the incantations, and the *nat* is satisfied and gives permission, they all fall to and feast.

Every year each clan will have a special sacrifice to their deceased forefathers, and will offer them pork and rice and *'kaung*. The *pa'san* *'sayá* invites the spirits to the feast, calling over their names, and if there have been any comparatively recent deaths (say within two or three years) in the clan, the spirits of these their relatives are enrolled in the *'kun*.

Propitiatory Ceremonies.

The Chins have a custom of offering first-fruits to Mother Ceres, whom they call Pók Klai. They say that if she gives them but one look they will have plenty of rice, and they tell a somewhat gruesome story to explain the origin of the custom of offering first-fruits. "Once upon a time a woman had a daughter. Before her death, as she lay adying, she said to her daughter, 'After I am dead and cremated, I shall return, wearing my intestines as a necklace. You must remain on the stairs. I shall come up by the back stairs and verandah. When I come you must throw some of the *kadu*-water (with which the corpse had been washed) over me. If you throw it I shall become a human being again.' Now when her mother came wearing her intestines as a necklace, the daughter was afraid, and durst not throw the *kadu*-water upon her mother; so, because she dared not, this woman could not become a human being again. Yet afterwards, her mother showed her where the cucumber seeds and the sweet cucumber and pumpkin seeds were,⁵ and, giving her a command, said: 'My daughter, eat the first-fruit of the corn in its season.' So to this day the Chins eat the first-fruits of their corn, as a religious function. Before the men eat they make offerings in their *yas* (corn, or vegetable patches) for their deceased ancestry to eat."

* Perhaps "cousins" would be the better rendering; for the Chins, like the Burmese, call their cousins of the first, and even of the second or third remove, by the same words as are used for "brother" or "sister."

⁵ *i. e.*, taught her how to grow the vegetables required for their curry.

The Chins also propitiate the rain fairy, Plaung 'Saw, with offerings of cattle, pigs, and chickens, and, of course, with rice and 'kaung too. When this sacrifice is being held all the women must remain standing from 9 a.m. to 3 p.m.

When the Chins have sown their corn, they gather together in their fields and pray the Earth to lend herself (*i. e.*, her increase) to them once again. If they do not thus petition the Earth to lend herself to them, but thanklessly and gracelessly clutch at what they can get without even so much as 'By your leave,' they may expect poor crops, and their children too will fall sick of fever through possession by the spirit. So they make an offering of a pig, a fowl, and a pot of 'kaung, and also of three large and one small wicker-basketfuls of rice. They also wrap cotton-yarn on a piece of bamboo about three-quarters of a yard long, and pour some water from the bamboo on the baskets of offerings and on the worshippers. Again, as has been already stated, after the harvest is reaped, they assemble in the fields to make to the ancestor and others an offering of the first-fruits, and then they can eat the new corn.

In their houses, too, some Chins will, before they take a meal, call upon their ancestral 'kun, or some other spirit, and then throw away a little ball of rice for the summoned spirit to eat; but of late the custom has not been performed with much devotion, even where it is still kept up.

Chins will also offer on sundry occasions to their ancestors the flower of the *thabyé* or *eugenia*, stones, cooked glutinous rice, and cotton.

The Chins have no images of Mother 'Li, of their *penates*, or of the other spirits whom they fear; and the figures of the king-crow and of the elephant, which are often carved on the top of the memorial posts placed in their ancestral cemetery, are not worshipped by them. Neither have they any chapels, temples, or other set places for assembly and for worship. Possession by an evil spirit does not connote with them either madness or moral turpitude, but merely sickness or some untoward accident.

Sickness or other trouble is supposed to be due to the animosity of some spirit-being, who has been provoked by something some one has done, probably unintentionally and in ignorance; but the consequence is the same, the spirit holds the man in his grip. The spirits are considered as capricious rather than wicked; though the people do not shrink from saying that they worship them because they (the spirits) are bad and therefore dangerous to them.

If a man strikes his naked toe against the ground, for they wear no boots or shoes, and his foot grows more and more painful after two or three days, he must propitiate the spirit of the ground, (n)Dek'san'put, by an offering of cooked rice, which is placed in a small bamboo basket, and buried at the place where the man hurt his foot. So, it is hoped, the spirit may be appeased by the food given him.

Immediately after the birth of a child, *nats* have to be appeased by the offering of two chickens made underneath the house; otherwise they would cause the child to be for ever crying, and to be in bad health.

The Spirits.

The names and number of these spirits is legion, and the duty of the teacher is to show the people how to perform the sacrifices duly, and to utter the right incantations; otherwise the offerings would be ineffective. The common name for the teacher is *yai-shên*, (called by the Burmans *pa'san 'sayá*), or *ok-mi* if skilled and respected. All these teachers recite rhythmically the customs relating to Mother 'Li, which they have received orally from their own teachers, and all of them are much given to the drinking of 'kaung. The *lai-lö*, who holds forth at marriages, is a less esteemed teacher, and is especially fond of liquor. The office of teacher is not hereditary; neither are they intent on keeping the knowledge of their sacred

lore to themselves. They are, at least among the Southern Chins, agriculturists like their neighbours, and a villager who is not skilled enough in the traditions to be a *yai-shên* may yet be a *mong 'tên* (i. e., of "skilled lip") and able occasionally to make certain offerings in the absence of one more skilled than himself.

Some spirits may be satisfied if a chicken is offered in sacrifice, and a little of the flesh and some cooked rice thrown on the ground for them to eat; but generally a miniature house has to be constructed for the spirit (or *nat*, as the Burmese would call him), and offerings made of dogs, or pigs, or bullocks, or buffaloes. Sometimes whatever offerings may be made, the mind of the *nat* cannot be appeased; and in such cases, of course, the man dies. The *pa'san* 'sayá would not find the people so ready to listen to him, I imagine, were it not that the occasion of a sacrifice is almost the only time that the Chins eat any other than vegetable curry with their rice.

Cosmology.

The Chins conceive of the world as a flat surface, which is supported by two giants (n)Sóng and (n)Hól. Sometimes to ease their shoulders they change the position of the load somewhat, and this is the cause of the earthquakes. The weight of the earth has caused awful sores on their shoulders, and as, after the manner of Chins, they do not wash the sores freely, much less use antiseptics, maggots have bred on their wounds, and these maggots are as big as elephants, so I have heard them say.

Forked lightning is considered to be the work of a spirit called (n)Glet; and meteorites sometimes found are called (n)Glet's teeth. Of the sheet lightning, so common in mild evenings, sundry accounts are given; but there seems to be common to these varying traditions the attributing of the lightning to two spirits (one or both female), the one placed in the east and the other in the west, who wink at one another out of mutual affection.

The rainbow is called the yawning of the dragon, and when they speak of an eclipse of the sun or moon they say that "the dog bites" or "catches" them; but I have not heard from any Chins the explanation of these sayings.

Witches.

The Chins are afraid of witches; but, as has been the case with other peoples, they find great difficulty in learning for certain whether a given woman is a witch or not. If they knew it they would certainly drive the woman out of the village, and perhaps resort to further violence. Like the Burmese, they believe that witches have the power by their incantations to introduce foreign matter into the bodies of those whom they hate, and so to cause them to sicken and die. It is the custom of the Chins to cremate the dead, and they think that when a witch is cremated, her bowels, which they conceive to be anything but human in their formation, will explode with a loud noise; and so the relatives of one who is suspected of being a witch will, when she is cremated, take care to put some big bamboos on the pyre, along with the cutch wood which is always used on such occasions, so that when the explosion takes place they may be able to affirm confidently that it was not her body that exploded, but the bamboos.

Law.

In the former days the Chin elders would decide all manner of questions and disputes that might crop up in a village, in accordance with Chin customary law; and the expenses of litigation were but pots of *kaung*, and sometimes also a pig for sacrifice and consumption. Nowadays, the powers of the elders are limited to their religious customs, including, of course, questions of marriage and divorce. Other matters come before the Government representative, the *thugyi* (i. e., head man), to whom they must give "the cost of a quid of betel" (commuted in these jungle villages at one rupee), on referring any matter for his decision. The Chin

national custom of taking an oath was to hold a sprig of the *Eugenia (thabys)* in his hand whilst giving his evidence. It may be noted that the Burmese when victorious in war would crown themselves with chaplets made of the leaves of the same tree. Disputes are not frequent in Chin villages, and even under the British rule, which in practice unfortunately seems to foster litigation, it is very rare that the Chins ever appear in any case in the courts.

Manner of Life.

The Chin manner of life is of the simplest, and before the days of the British occupation they were very chary of leaving their homes. The Chin requires very little, excepting salt and a *dd* (or chopper), which he cannot get for himself; though he frequently nowadays has all kinds of luxuries unknown to his forefathers, *e. g.*, *ngapi* (*i. e.*, pickled fish, generally more or less putrid), earthenware jars, matches and lamps. The bamboo alone gives him material for the walls, floor, and roof of his house, for his mats, cups, and waterjugs, for handles to his tools, for his weaving implements, for his baskets of all sizes, and for his substitute for twine. By rubbing two little pieces of bamboo together he can at once make a fire; and he can also make musical instruments of sorts from the bamboo. He grows his own corn (rice), and threshes and pounds it himself. In his *ya* he also grows all the vegetables he requires for his curry, beyond what can be found growing wild in the jungle, and cotton too, which his wife spins into yarn and weaves into garments and blankets. The dyes which he requires, and he has a considerable number of them, including indigo, he manufactures himself mainly from plants, either wild or cultivated. He grows his own tobacco, though, like the Burman, he spoils it in the drying, and he manufactures his pipe from a little bamboo. Formerly the Chins were only able to take up the laborious and wasteful *taung-ya* method of cultivation, whereby fresh patches of jungle must be cleared each year for that year's crop, as they had no paddy-fields (*la*) and often neither bullocks nor buffaloes; but of recent years they have slowly been improving their condition. In all his work, excepting the cutting of the jungle for *ya*, or the cutting down of bamboos and timber generally, and in ploughing, in the few cases where he has paddy-fields, the wife and daughter of the Chin take their full share.

The Chins are a very simple-minded people, and have not that facility in lying which most Orientals seem to possess; that is to say, the Chins may lie freely, but they cannot ordinarily lie boldly and consistently. I have been told by a magistrate who had lived among the Northern Chins, a savage people whose greatest delight, until the British occupied the country a few years ago, was to go head-hunting along the neighbouring mountains, that a bold liar was considered a great acquisition in any of these villages, and that whenever a Government enquiry was to be made on any point "the liar" was brought forward to answer all questions. The Chins have been, and are, perpetually being defrauded by their more wily Burmese neighbours, who keep up the character ascribed to their ancestor in Chin folklore. The Chins have a saying that "the Burman language is the most simple and straightforward of languages, but the Burmese man is the most crooked and deceitful of men."

Tattooing.

Until a few years ago every girl on reaching the age of puberty had her face tattooed. In the Northern Chin Hills this tattooing is done chiefly in rings and dotted lines; but among the Southern Chins, who were hemmed in by the Burmans, the whole face from the roots of the hair on the forehead, round by the ear to the neck, including even the eye-lids, was tattooed, and that so thickly and darkly that at a distance the whole face looked indigo, and only a close inspection would disclose the patterns worked on the face. It is not the Chin hereditary custom for boys or men to be tattooed; but now they mostly have their body and thighs tattooed as the Burmese do, whose manner of dress they also generally follow. The reason generally given by the Chins themselves, and by others, of this strange custom of tattooing their women's faces is that they wished to make them ugly, so that there would be less danger of their

being forcibly carried off by the Burmese; though some Chins attribute this custom also to Mother 'Li's injunctions. I should imagine that the custom of tattooing the faces of the women goes back far beyond the time when the Burmans grew strong enough to harass the Chins.

Burmese Influence.

In the days before the British occupation of Lower Burma, the Southern Chins who had been driven down southwards along the mountains by pressure from their fellow countrymen in the north, had found for their abode a land naturally more fertile than their old home; but they were perpetually harassed by the Burmans. Whenever a Burman was seen near a Chin village, the whole population would flee, if there was opportunity; for the Burmese, and more especially the officials, seem to have regarded the Chins as their legitimate prey. In those days the Chins were desperately poor: sometimes a man would be sold into slavery, or would sell his children, on account of a debt amounting to no more than a shilling, and few Chins had any cattle. Occasionally a band of Burmans, villagers who lived perhaps a day's march away, would surround a Chin village and carry off forcibly as slaves all the youths and maidens; on such occasions they would sometimes give Rs. 5 or Rs. 10 to the parents, as a proof, I suppose, should the matter ever possibly come to the ears of the Government, that these were slaves lawfully purchased. Sometimes the women were set free after a number of years when they had ceased to be attractive to their captors or purchasers, and when they could no longer get through as much work as when they were young. At other times the Chins fared still worse. The village would be surrounded by armed men, generally headed by a Government official, and the men who were not able to make good their escape into the surrounding woods were slaughtered. The Chin women, too, were first ravished and then slaughtered; and sometimes even the babes would be thrown up in the air and caught on the points of spears. The village, and all that could not be carried away, was burnt or destroyed; and many even of those who had escaped into the woods died of starvation and exposure. As the Chin who told me said, "those were terrible times."

Latterly, the Chins have largely copied the language and dress of the Burmans, and to some extent their religion and other customs, — though without throwing over their own hereditary practices altogether. "If you do not know the fashion in dressing your hair, follow the mode in your village," says a Burmese proverb; and certainly, if we may judge from their acts, the Chins seem largely to approve of that motto. In some few villages not only have the Chins given up most of their national customs, but the children do not even know the Chin language. In the Census Reports, decade by decade, a larger percentage of the Chins and other hill-tribes is returned as Buddhist; thus in the Prome District in 1872 there were 15,200 persons returned as animists, in 1901 the number was 8,632. "Nor is Buddhism yet a moribund faith, for it is still attracting to it Shamanist or *nat*-worshipping Karens that have not yet fallen within the influence of the Christian missionaries The fact that no attempt at proselytising is attempted by the Buddhist clergy is probably an inducement to the uncultured to join them. The savage looks upon the missionary with suspicion. He cannot readily understand that the missionary's motives are disinterested, whereas he sees the advantage of joining such a religion as Buddhism, as it raises him in the social scale.⁶ Moreover, he need not abandon his tutelary gods. It is this easy tolerance that has facilitated the spread of Buddhism. It may be taken as an axiom that the more thorough the conversion from one religion to another is, the more difficult it becomes to obtain converts. But this easy tolerance of Buddhism has led to its becoming adulterated in the process of absorption of the wilder creeds.⁷ As a matter of fact, however, the Chins are at present between two stools and there is much room for Christianity as a means of raising them. As a rule they will more or less

⁶ He thereby 'practically becomes a Burman, much as the Turcoman becomes a Russian by joining the Orthodox faith.

⁷ *Census Report* (Burma), 1891, pp. 59-60.

frequently kneel before the Buddha's image and join with the Burmese in their festivals, and yet they follow the customs of their forefathers. They dread the evil spirits and revere the name of the Great Parent of all good, but hardly worship that power. Their worship is mainly a propitiation; and what need, think they, is there to propitiate their Parent who loves them dearly, and ever does them good? Very few Chins have any real affection for Buddhism, though they can see the beauty of the moral law laid down as binding on the Buddhist 'householders' or laity. Since the British occupation the Chins have been less attentive, as I have been informed by the people themselves, to the religious ordinances incumbent on Buddhists than they were before; for now they do not need the material protection which the profession of Buddhism used to give them, by raising them from the state of 'savages,' the lawful prey of any one, to that of civilized men.

Marriage Customs.

When a little girl is born she is placed under the guardianship of an elder brother, or cousin or uncle, on her father's side, and when she grows up she may not marry without his consent, — though this is rarely denied when there is persistence on the part of the sweet-hearts. Of course, the parties to a Chin marriage must be of different clans, and the ancient customs must be followed. Pre-nuptial chastity does not seem to be very highly esteemed among the Chins, and the parties often, if not generally, live together openly before marriage. Infidelity after marriage is not very common in the remote villages. Girls are generally married at fifteen years of age onwards; boys when two or three years older. If a girl reaches twenty or twenty-five years of age and is yet unmarried, she is counted an old maid and avoided by the young men; indeed, it is not considered creditable, and hardly reputable. A marriage should take place only in the hot weather, on or just before the full moon of the months of *Tabodwè* and *Ka'sóng*. If the parties elope together, the youth may then, or afterwards, be fined Rs. 60; but this is rather a following of Burmese customary law.

Some time previous to the marriage the youth will have gone with some comrades to the house of his prospective brother-in-law, taking some '*kaung*' with him. This time nothing is said about marriage; but, I suppose, if the '*kaung*' is tacitly accepted it implies consent on the part of the guardians of the girl. After that the parents of the youth will go with him to her brother or parents, and formally ask for her in marriage for their son. The girl's parents or brother will then settle what kind of wedding feast the youth's parents must provide, that is to say, what pigs have to be sacrificed for the feast. On the day fixed for the wedding the friends and relatives of the bridegroom will assemble very early at the bride's house, the men bringing the pigs required, and the girls carrying '*kaung*' in gourds. Sometimes there will be as many as twenty or thirty girls thus carrying '*kaung*'. These will all sit on or by the steps of the house where the bride lives, and none of the bridegroom's party may go in without contributing a pot of '*kaung*'. The friends and relatives of the bride also bring '*kaung*' in pots, and in addition chickens and rice for the feast. The '*kaung*' is put into a huge jar into which two bamboo tubes are inserted, and through these they all suck the beer.

In the meanwhile a little porker has been killed, and the village elders examine its liver. If certain marks are seen on the liver, it is declared to be inauspicious, and a second porker is killed. When the bridegroom is in real earnest, if this second liver, too, is pronounced to be inauspicious, a third little pig is offered; but if now, too, the fates declare against it, the marriage may not take place. The brother or parents of the girl would not allow the marriage, for there would be no children born of it, or, if there should be, they would die early, or some other dread misfortune would befall them. So the wedding is stopped, and they give the youth a present on account of the expense and inconvenience he has been put to, and this present is called a "wiper away of tears." But if, as is ordinarily the case, the fates have been more propitious, the *tanzö* pig, of medium size, which has been presented by the youth to his father-in-law, is slaughtered and cooked to serve as food for the bride's company,

the "superior" company as it is generally called. The bridegroom's or "inferior" company on the other hand eat of the chickens provided and cooked for them by the "superior" company. This rule about eating is strictly kept, or at least any breach of the rule brings about a fine of a pot of '*kaung*'. The two companies sit and eat separately, but drink from the same jar, though through different tubes.

The two pigs mentioned above are always killed at a Chin wedding, and sometimes the bride's brother or parents insist also on the offering of a huge tusker, and occasionally even of a fourth pig as a special offering to the spirits. Under certain special circumstances yet other pigs may have to be offered, over and above what may be demanded to satisfy the appetites of the guests. The "inferior" company cook the pigs which they have brought, and wait on the bride's relatives and friends at the wedding breakfast; then these in their turn serve those with the chickens and rice they have brought. After that, all young and old men and women drink freely. The marriage is considered as settled and confirmed when the bride's brother eats of the pork which the groom's party have prepared.

After that one of the bride's party, or some other of their friends who may be skilled in the precepts of Mother 'Li, will recite these to the bridegroom. Presents are also interchanged, and her parents give the bride her share of their property. Before and during the marriage the bridegroom has to pay very great deference to his elder brother-in-law. The bridegroom is also exhorted to treat his wife kindly and with due respect. "Do not beat our sister," say they, "so as to make blood flow, or to raise a festering sore. If she is stupid and will not obey you, correct her by word of mouth, or at least with moderation. If you beat her so as to break a bamboo over her, or to break her bones, she will run away back to her brother." After this the drunken *lai-lö* "teacher" also recites rhythmically the precepts of Mother 'Li amidst his liberal potations of '*kaung*'. Soon after mid-day the function is over, and the bridegroom's friends are summarily dismissed; the "superior" party will pour water over them, or beat them with the tubes through which the '*kaung*' has been drunk. The bride is then conducted to her father-in-law's house, where she is admitted into her husband's clan, the bridegroom's mother and sisters wrapping cotton-yarn round her wrists. She afterwards gives them a chicken or a pig, yarn or money for this service. After a woman has been married, and the young people have been established in a new home, she has by Chin law no more inheritance in her parents' house.

Should the young husband be violent in his treatment of his wife, she can demand to be separated from him, receiving a full share of their united property and also in addition a bullock as compensation. More frequently, however, matters are settled peaceably by apologies and offerings of pigs and of '*kaung*' for a feast. Husband and wife may mutually agree to part, and then, as is the Burmese custom, they divide equally their acquired property between them. If the husband alone wishes to separate, he must give his wife Rs. 60 over and above her half of the property; and very few Chins have so much money. If the wife wishes to leave her husband without any offence on his part, she must leave behind everything she possesses. Still there are among the Chins but few cases of separation, *i. e.*, of divorce, and the husband and wife generally get on fairly well together. In these days it is more customary for the young people to continue to live, until perhaps a second child may be born, with the parents of one of them; and if with the bride's parents, they would only receive the dowry when they set up house for themselves. A few days' labour, or a few weeks' labour, would make all the difference between a mean house and one above the average, — and this built at no other cost than their own labour at a time when they might otherwise have been doing nothing.

Sometimes, on account of the expense, a man is unable to marry the woman with whom he lives, and who may have borne him two or three children. Should she die without ever having been lawfully married, the husband is bound to go through the marriage ceremony with the corpse; and the wife at last will be admitted into the '*kun*' of her husband.

Burial Customs.

All sickness or accident is, as has been already stated, supposed to be directly due to the action of some supernatural being, and when this spirit refuses to be appeased by the offerings made to him, the man must die. The body is then washed with water, in which the leaves of the *kailu* plant have been steeped, and the hair is combed. A small chicken is killed, and tied by a string to the big toe of the deceased. This chicken will accompany the deceased to the other world, and will peck at the caterpillars lying in the way, which might otherwise incommode the traveller to that far-off land. Other chickens are sacrificed, and pigs also; and if the man was fairly well-to-do, buffaloes and bullocks too, — for the welfare of the deceased and to provide a feast for the visitors. Whenever bullocks or buffaloes are sacrificed, the blood is mixed with rice or “bread” and then put into the large intestines and roasted. A portion of this, too, is thrown away for the spirits to eat, and the rest is eaten by the guests.

Rice-beer (*'kaung*) is prepared before a man dies, for it takes four or five days to brew; and were all left to the last, there might not be found time to make it before the body would have to be disposed of. Should this happen, or should there be no *yai-shên* present to utter the incantations, the corpse is buried; and then after a year it is unearthed, and the burial customs are duly performed. Chicken and rice and *'kaung* are from time to time given to the corpse to eat; and the *yai-shên*, sitting between the liquor and the corpse, chants the customs of Mother 'Li. All the village, and many visitors from a distance, flock to a big funeral; but if the body is to be buried there will only be a very few present. Often the women, and formerly the men too, would dance in front of the dead man's house.

A piece of wood, nearly four feet in length, is carved with a figure of the bird (the king-crow) or an elephant on the top of it; or in the case of a poor man a piece of bamboo is cut, and the end of it is made into a fringe. This is called the (*n*)*'klo-seung*, and is put into the dead man's hand. The *yai-shên* utters his charms, and the spirit of the deceased is bidden to take up his abode in this stick. Before the corpse is removed from the house, the (*n*)*'klo-seung* is taken away and set up in the ground somewhere outside the village.

Frequently, too, a wooden spear and a wooden gun were put into the hands of the dead man; or in the case of a woman the lath of her loom. There is also put into the dead man's hand money to pay as ferry-charge over the stream of death. Sometimes a pice or two, or two annas it may be, or sometimes as much as Rs. 10, or even more, is given. This money, as well as the little chicken tied to the big toe of the deceased, and the *pawn-zêng* thread is burnt at the cremation of the body. Five small pieces of bamboo, wound round with thread (red, white, black, green, and yellow) called *pawn-zêng*, are also put into the hands of the deceased for him to take with him to the land “over there.” The neighbours make an offering of a pig for sacrifice, also called *pawn-zêng*; and the master of the house gives a big pig (called *lawn-gá*) for the guests to eat. A wake is kept up the whole night before a funeral; “There can be no sleeping.” The whole village attend the corpse to the burning-ground, which is not far away; but all, excepting a few men, return before the cremation actually takes place. The funeral pyre is of no great height, and is made of cutch-wood, as this is found to be the best for burning. The few who remain by the fire imbibe still more *'kaung*, and keep the fire up until the body is consumed. Then they gather the charred bones and put them in a new earthen pot of the ordinary kind, such as are in daily use. The pot is for a time, at least in the rains, or when the people are otherwise busy, placed on a small stand made for it under a tree outside the village fence. Afterwards, at a convenient season, the bones are conveyed away

to the ancestral burial-place, which is generally situated in some remote jungle. It is usual for a person to be cremated about three days after his death. A burial would normally take place within twenty-four hours of the death.

The spirit of the dead man should take up its abode in the (n)^hlo-'seung; but the living are much afraid that it may not do so. They do not believe that the life "over there" is a very joyous one; being rather of the view of Achilles, whose shade told Ulysses that it was better to be a slave on earth than a prince in Hades. The dead man is told that he may not linger more than seven days in his old house; for they believe that the spirits of the dead look with envy on the living, and that they will harm them. The night before they take away the charred bones to the cemetery (*ayódaung*) they interrogate the pot of bones. They ask him what disease he died of, and will say "Let it be that he died of fever if the pot feels light; of some other disease if it feels heavy"; and then they test it. Again they ask him if he is still lingering about here, or does he now inhabit "that country," and the answer is given in the same way as before.

Next morning they start off early, and if the deceased was a person of any means at all, they will carry with them an elaborately carved memorial post of cutch-wood to erect in the cemetery. On the top of the post will be carved the figure of an elephant or of a bird; and beneath that six-parallel circles will be cut round the post in the case of a male, and five in the case of a female. In the case of an unmarried girl all her private belongings are taken and deposited by the pot of bones, and in every case rice, chicken, *ngapi*, chillies, betel, and tobacco will be left for the soul of the departed to enjoy.

I do not find it possible to reconcile all the traditions and ideas held by the same individual Chin; and perhaps it would be too much to expect that they should admit of being harmonized, — and more especially so with regard to matters concerning the future life. Certainly the Chins generally do not seem to believe in the doctrine of the transmigration of souls; yet my chief informant gave me the following information in Chin writing: — "We, Chin people, must die when the rice given to our spirits on their departure from their former existence is finished. We can only remain in this existence as long as that rice lasts. The people who had much given them [*lit.* "brought much with them"] live long. This rice is put in small baskets outside the village fence before the corpse is removed from the house for cremation." The writer went on to add, what is indeed more in accord with the general traditions, but scarcely consonant with the above. "When a woman dies her husband will cry out by the corpse, 'when you come to Póí 'Kleuk tell him that I am left behind here; and ask him to call me before long.' Now when [he adds] people with some little property die, bullocks and buffaloes are offered in sacrifice that they may find favour when they present themselves before Póí 'Kleuk; but if the people are poor they make offerings of pigs and fowls."

But to return to the funeral. When the people convey the pot of bones to the cemetery, they take with them some cotton-yarn, and whenever they come to any stream or other water, they stretch a thread across, whereby the spirit of the deceased, who accompanies them, may get across it, too. When they have duly deposited the bones and food for the spirit in the cemetery they return home, after bidding the spirit to remain there, and not to follow them back to the village. At the same time they block the way by which they return by putting a bamboo across the path.

The spirit, however, has not finished his travels yet. It must go on until it comes to the stream of white water, on the other side of which dwells the Lord of Hades, Póí 'Kleuk. He will cry out to Póí 'Kleuk, and after he appears will let the breeze waft, streamer-like

across the water, the thread which is let loose from the *pawn-zèng* bamboos that were burnt along with the corpse at the cremation; for the shades of the little chicken and of this thread have accompanied the deceased on his journey to his comfort and assistance. Then, after the thread has been duly fastened, the spirit goes across to receive his judgment for the deeds done in the body. Sometimes a spirit is terrified on account of his past misdeeds, and will endeavour to escape. But though the spirit may run, there is no remedy; for Póí 'Kleuk has a dog, who will bite the runaways, and they dare not face him. In his terror the spirit will climb the tree of hell; but the mighty Póí 'Kleuk will shake the branches, and the poor wretch will fall into the cauldron of hell, which is full of boiling water. Or, if he climb to the top of the tree, the dreadful vulture, *hak-kyí*, will devour his vitals. There is no escape. He must come down and receive his just punishment. There is no need to utter the sentence of condemnation. Póí 'Kleuk merely points to them with his fourth, called "the nameless," finger, and they go away to be roasted in hell.

The Chins have some belief in a happier land, but their ideas on this subject are not very tangible; and it is difficult to know how far the hope, which they sometimes express, that they may be enabled to go by the straight and narrow way into the presence of the Great Parent of all good, and there for ever abide, is derived, directly or indirectly, from Christian teaching.

BOOK-NOTICE.

DIE MON-KHMER-VÖLKER EIN BINDEGLIED ZWISCHEN VÖLKERN ZENTRALASIENS UND AUSTRONESIENS. VON P. W. SCHMIDT, S.V.D. Brunswick, 1903. (Reprinted from the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, Neue Folge, Band v, Heft 1 u. 2.)

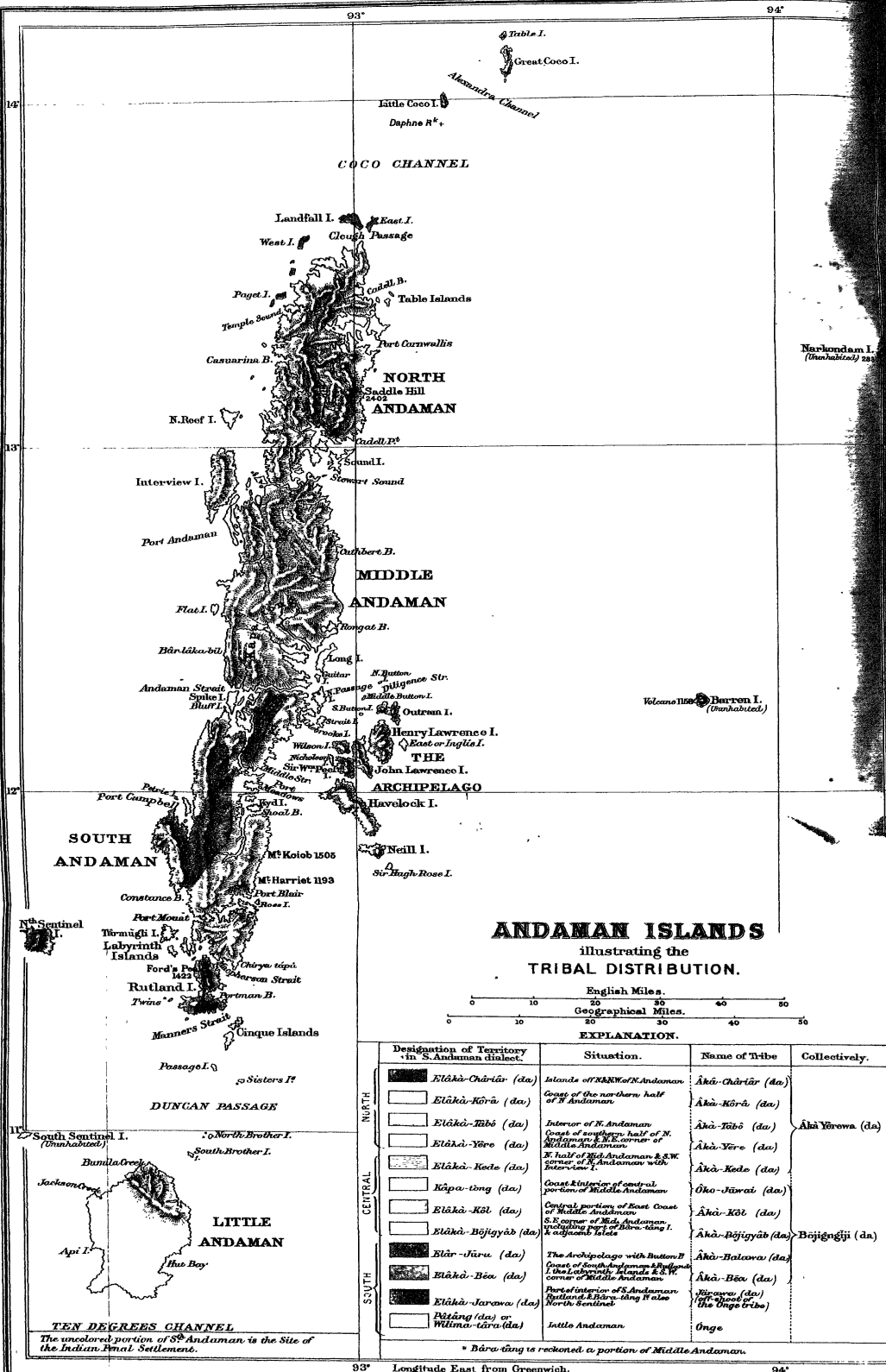
THIS work, also from the pen of Pater Schmidt, appeared originally in the *Archiv für Anthropologie*, and has been reprinted in another form at Brunswick in the same year. In it, we have the summing up of the author's researches into the Mon-Khmer languages and his final conclusions as to their relationship, whether mutual or to other forms of speech. A detailed account of its contents would occupy too much space, and moreover can be found in the pages of the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* for January 1907 by those who are interested in the subject. I confine myself here to stating the results to which his enquiries have led Pater Schmidt, and which, in my opinion, he has conclusively proved. Briefly, they are these:—

(a) There is a group of languages called Mon-Khmer, which is closely connected not only with several tongues spoken on the Burma-Chinese frontier, such as Palaung, Wa, and others, but also with the speeches of certain aboriginal tribes of Malacca, with Nicobarese, with the Khâsi of Central Assam, and with the Mundâ languages of Central India. It is further to be remembered that under the last head must be included a number of extinct sub-Himalayan dialects, reaching as far west as Kanâwar, traces of which still plainly survive in the Tibeto-Burman languages spoken by the descendants of

those who employed them. To this group of Mon-Khmer-Malacca-Mundâ-Nicobar-Khâsi languages Pater Schmidt has given the name of "Austroasiatic," and he shows that not only are all the different forms of speech mutually related, but that their speakers have the same physical type.

(b) In former works the learned author showed the existence of another group of languages, the "Austronesic," which included three related sub-groups, the "Indonesic," the "Melanesic," and the "Polynesian," covering the areas indicated by their respective names. In a second part of the work under notice, he undertakes the task of comparing, by rigorously scientific methods, the Austroasiatic and the Austronesic languages, and of proving that these two groups of speeches are ultimately related to each other, and form together one great united whole which he calls the "Austrie" family. This speech-family is the most widely spread of those whose existence has been established since the birth of comparative philology. The tract over which it extends reaches from the Panjâb in the West to Easter Island, off the coast of South America, in the East; and from the Himâlaya in the North to New Zealand in the South. Such a result,—and I do not think that any one can seriously impugn the arguments on which it is founded,—amply justify us in maintaining that Pater Schmidt's work is one of the most important contributions to comparative philology which has issued from the press in recent years.

GEORGE A. GRIERSON.



A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 203.)

II.¹

The Theory of Universal Grammar applied to the Andamanese Languages.

Prefatory Remarks.

I.

The Andamanese are divided into **twelve Tribes** belonging to three Groups or Divisions, as under, from North to South (*vide* Map attached): —

1. The Yērewa or Northern Division, consisting of the Chāriār, Kōrā, Tābō, Yēre and Kede Tribes.
2. The Bojigngiji or Southern Division, consisting of the Jūwai, Kōl, Bojigyāb, Balawa and Bēa Tribes.
3. The Ūnge-Jārawa or Outer Division, consisting of the Ūnge and Jārawa Tribes.

Port Blair is situated in the Bēa Territory, and that Tribe and its language are consequently by far the best known and the Bojigngiji is the best known Group or Division.

Every Tribe has its own set of names for itself and all the others, and these names have constant conventional prefixes and suffixes attached to them, making the names long and unwieldy. In this *Grammar* the Bēa set of names has been adopted, and for convenience of presentation they have been stripped of the habitual prefixes and suffixes attached to them (*vide* Appendix C).

Also, except where otherwise specially stated, all examples and all vernacular words quoted are taken from the Bēa (āka-Bēa-da) speech. Diacritical marks are not used except where unavoidable.

◦ Lastly, it is necessary to note that Colebrooke's *Jārawa Vocabulary* made in the XVIIIth Century was gathered from one individual of the Tribe and not from several persons, as has been hitherto supposed.

I. — GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

a. — Philological Value.

The Andaman Languages are extremely interesting from the philological standpoint, on account alone of their isolated development, due to the very recent contact with the outer world on the part of the speakers. Of the speech of the only peoples, who may be looked upon as the physical congeners of the Andamanese, — the Samangs of the Malay Peninsula and the Aetas of the Philippine Archipelago, — no *Vocabulary* or *Grammar* is available to me of the latter, and the only specimens of the Samang tongue I have seen bear no resemblance or roots common to any Andamanese Language.

The Andamanese Languages exhibit the expression only of the most direct and simplest thought, show few signs of syntactical, though every indication of a very long etymological, growth, are purely colloquial and wanting in the modifications always necessary for communication by writing. The Andamanese show, however, by the very frequent use of ellipsis and of clipped and curtailed words, a long familiarity with their speech.

¹ Largely reprinted with additions and many corrections from Chapter IV. of Part I. of the *Census Report, India, 1901, Vol. III.* Since this article was written, Skeat and Blagden's *Pagan Races of the Malay Peninsula* has appeared, but I have not been able to collate it for the present purpose.

The sense of even Proper Names is usually immediately apparent and the speakers invariably exhibit difficulty in getting out of the region of concrete into that of abstract ideas, though none in expanding or in mentally differentiating or classifying ideas, or in connecting several closely together. Generic terms are usually wanting, and specific terms are numerous and extremely detailed. Narration almost always concerns themselves and the chase. Only the absolutely necessary is usually employed and the speech is jerky, incomplete, elliptical and disjointed. Introductory words are not much used and no forward references are made. Back references by means of words for that purpose are not common, nor are conjunctions, adjectives, adverbs and even pronouns. An Andamanese will manage to convey his meaning without employing any of the subsidiary and connecting parts of speech. He ekes out with a clever mimicry a great deal by manner, tone and action; and this habit he abundantly exhibits in the form of his speech. His narration is, nevertheless, clear, in proper consecutive order and not confused, showing that he possesses powers of co-ordination.

b. — Savage Nature.

The general indications that the Languages give of representing the speech of undeveloped savages are confirmed by the intense anthropomorphism exhibited therein. As will be seen later on, the Andamanese regard not only all objects, but also every idea associated with them, as connected with themselves and their necessities, or with the parts of their bodies and their attributes. They have no means of expressing the majority of objects and ideas without such reference; *e. g.*, they cannot say "head" or "heads," but must say "my, your, his, or ———'s, this one's, or that one's head" or "our, your, their, or ———'s, or these ones', those ones' heads."

But though they are "savage" languages, limited in range to the requirements of a people capable of but few mental processes, the Andamanese Languages are far from being "primitive." In the evolution of a system of pre-flexion in order to intimately connect words together, to build up compounds and to indicate back references, and in a limited exhibition of the idea of concord by means of post-inflexion of pronouns, they indicate a development as complete and complicated as that of an advanced tongue, representing the speech of a highly intellectual people. These lowest of savages show themselves to be, indeed, human beings immeasurably superior in mental capacity to the highest of the brute beasts.

c. — Agglutinative Form.

The Andamanese Languages all belong to one Family, divided into three Groups, plainly closely connected generally to the eye on paper, but mutually unintelligible to the ear. They are agglutinative in nature, synthesis-being present in rudiments only. They follow the general grammar of agglutinative languages. All the affixes to roots are readily separable, and all analysis of words shows a very simple mental mechanism and a low limit in range and richness of thought and in the development of ideas. Suffixes and prefixes are largely used, and infixes also to build up compound words. As with every other language, foreign words have lately been fitted into the grammar with such changes of form as are necessary for absorption into the general structure of Andamanese speech.

d. — Samples of Minuteness in Detailed Terms.

The following are examples of the extent to which the use of specific terms to describe details of importance to the Andamanese is carried by them.

Stages in the growth of fruit: — *Ojēreka*, small: *chimiti*, sour: *pūtungaij*, unripe:² *chēba*, hard: *telebich*, seed not formed: *gad*, seed forming: *gama*, seed formed: *tela*, half-ripe: *munukel*, ripe: *vōicha*, fully ripe: *otyōb*, soft: *chōrore*, rotten.

Stages of the day: — *Waingala*, first dawn: *elawainga*, before sunrise: *bōdola dōatinga*, sunrise: *wainga*, early morning: *bōdola kdgalinga*, morning: *bōdola kdgnga*, full morning:³ *bōdo*

² *Lit.*, black skin.

³ *Litti*, early to-morrow morning: *dilma*, *liti*, early morning that is past: *dilmaya*, *dilmalen*, *liya*, *liinga*, this morning: *wainga dilu-rēatak*, early every morning.

chānag, forenoon : *bōdo chāu*, noon : *bōdola lōringa*, afternoon : *bōdo l'ardiyanga*, full afternoon : *elardiyanga*, evening : *dīlā*, before sunset : *bōdola lōtinga*, sunset : *elākīdāya*, twilight : *elartīnga*, dark : *gārug chāu*, midnight.

e. — Specimen of Andamanese Method of Speech.

The following account of a story, abstracted with corrections from Portman, of an imaginary pig-hunt as told by a Bēa *ēremtāga* (forest-man) for the amusement of his friends, will go far to explain the Andamanese mode of speech, and the form that its Grammar takes.

The narrator sits on the ground, facing a half circle of lounging Andamanese. After a short silence, he leans forward with his head bent down. Suddenly he sits erect with brightening eyes and speaks in a quick, excited way, acting as if carrying on a conversation with another person. "In how many days will you return?" And then answering as if for himself: "I will come back early in the morning, I am off pig-hunting now." A pause. "I am going." Very suddenly. "You stay here in my place." Moving as if going away. "I am going away." Squeaking like a young pig with pantomime of shooting it. "It is only a little pig. I will bring it to the hut." Moving his shoulders as if carrying. "They can roast it here." Wave of the hands signifying that the pig was of no account. Pause. "I will start early to-morrow morning after a big one, — a big pig." Motions of hands to show length and breadth of pig. To an imaginary friend. "I will sharpen pig arrows to take with me. Come after me and we will hunt together." Imitation with the hands of a pig running, shooting arrows, slap on the left breast, squeals of several wounded pigs, and so on. A pause. "You bring them in readiness to cook for me." Directions by pantomime to other persons as to the pigs. "They were cooking them for me in the hut, cooking them well." Brightens up and begins again. "I will bring several more." Pretends to listen. "We have got them here. The dogs have barked." And so on for hours.

The actual expressions for such a story are:—

Kichikun—tūn? *āla—l'—ēdte ngo òn .* *Wāinga—len do òn .* *Ōd do reg*
How —many? day—past you come. Morning—in I come. Then I pig
dele . *Kam wai dol.* *Kam wai do òn .* *D'—ārōg—len*
hunt. Here indeed I . Here indeed I come (go). Me—place—in
kā . *Wai do jāla —ke.* *Reg—bā .* *Kam wai do ik òn .*
here. Indeed. I go-away—do. Pig—little. Here indeed I take come.
Wai kā . eda otjōi . *Do.* *liti* *dōga—lat.* *Reg*
Indeed here they roast. I (in—the)—early—morning⁴ big —(pig)—for. Pig
dōga. *Do ēla* *l'igjīt —ke.* *D'—ōkanumu—kam.⁵* *Kaich d'—ārōlo.*
big . I pig-arrow sharpen—do. I —go —do . Come me—after.
Do—ng'—igdele. *D'—ōkotēlima ik òn .* *Wai d'—at otjōi —ka*
I —you—hunt . Me—before take come. Indeed me—sake cooking —were
būd—len. *Tūn rōdicha—lēringa—ke.* *Ōd do ikpāgi —ke.* *Ik —re ka .*
hut—in . More ripe —good—do. Then I several—do. Get—did here.
Wai eda ikkānawa—re .
Indeed they bark —did.

Nothing could show more clearly how "savage" the speech is in reality, how purely colloquial, how entirely it depends on concurrent action for comprehension. When the party, who were out with Mr. Vaux when he was killed by the Jārawas in February, 1902, returned, they explained the occurrence to their friends at the Andamanese Home in Port Blair by much action and pantomime and few words. The manner of his death was explained by the narrator lying down and following his movements on the ground.

⁴ i. e., of to-morrow.

⁵ This is not a Bēa form ; probably borrowed from Bojigyb.

f. — Bibliography.⁶

a. — Books.

1877. Man and Temple. *Lord's Prayer in the Bojigngijida (South Andaman) Language*: Calcutta.
1883. Man. *Aboriginal Inhabitants of the Andaman Islands*: London. (Many references to older writers.)
1887. Portman. *Andamanese Manual*.
1898. Portman. *Notes on the Languages of the South Andaman Group of Tribes*: Calcutta (Government). (Many references to older writers.)

b. — Journals.

1794. Colebrooke, in *Asiatic Researches*.
1882. A. J. Ellis, in *Journal*, Philological Society.
- J. R. A. S.*, Temple, Man, Portman.

c. — Pamphlets.

1899. Temple. *Theory of Universal Grammar, as applied to the South Andaman Language*: London.

II. — GRAMMAR.

a. — History of the Study.

I have taken so large a share in the development of the knowledge of the Andamanese tongue that a brief personal explanation is here necessary to make clear the mode of presenting it that now follows.

The first person to seriously study the Andamanese Languages and reduce them to writing was **Mr. E. H. Man**, and in this work I joined him for a time soon after it was commenced, and in 1877 we jointly produced a small book with an account of the speech of the Bojigngijida Group, or more strictly, of the Bēa Tribe. We then worked together on it, making such comparisons with the speech of the other Andaman Tribes as were then possible and compiling voluminous notes for a Grammar and Vocabulary, which are still in manuscript. In 1882 the late **Mr. A. J. Ellis** used these notes for an account of the Bēa Language in his Presidential Address to the Philological Society.

In compiling our manuscript, Mr. Man and myself had used the accepted grammatical terms, and these Mr. Ellis found to be so little suited for the adequate representation for scientific readers of such a form of speech as the Andamanese, that he stated in his Address that: — “We require new terms and an entirely new set of grammatical conceptions, which shall not bend an agglutinative language to our inflectional translation.” And in 1883 he asked me, in a letter, if it were not possible “to throw over the inflectional treatment of an uninflected language.”

b. — History of the Theory of Universal Grammar.

Pondering, for the purpose of an adequate presentation of Andamanese, on what was then a novel, though not an unknown, idea, never put into practice, I gradually framed a Theory of Universal Grammar, privately printed and circulated in that year. This Theory remained unused, until **Mr. M. V. Portman** compiled his notes for a *Comparative Grammar of the Bojigngijida (South Andaman) Languages* in 1898, based avowedly, but not fully, on my theory. These notes I examined in a second article on the Theory of Universal Grammar in the *Journal*

⁶ In addition to the article mentioned in the Preface to this article.

of the Royal Asiatic Society in 1899, which again was subjected to the favourable criticism of Mr. Sidney Ray, who has since successfully applied it in outline to sixteen languages,⁷ selected because unrelated and morphologically distinct, *viz.*, —

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. English. | 10. Nufor, Dutch New Guinea. |
| 2. Hungarian. | 11. Motu, British New Guinea. |
| 3. Latin. | 12. Mortlock Ids, Caroline Group, Micronesia. |
| 4. Khasi, Hills of N.-E. Bengal. | 13. Mota, Banks' Islands, Melanesia. |
| 5. Anam, French Cochin China. | 14. Samoan, Polynesia. |
| 6. Ashanti, West Africa. | 15. Awabakal, Lake Macquarie, Australia. |
| 7. Kafir, South Africa. | 16. Dakota, North America. |
| 8. Malagasy, Madagascar. | |
| 9. Olo Ngadju or Dayak, South East Borneo. | |

c. — Position of the Andamanese Languages in the General Scheme of the Theory.

The next point for consideration is: — Where do the Andamanese Languages come into the general scheme? This will be shown in the following general account of them, and as the grammatical terms used will be novel to the reader, the corresponding familiar terms will be inserted beside them in brackets, wherever necessary to make the statements clear in a familiar manner. Diacritical marks will only be used when necessary to the elucidation of the text.

d. — Examples of Sentences of One Word.

The Andamanese Languages are rich in integer words, which are sentences in themselves, because they express a complete meaning. The following examples are culled from Portman's lists:—⁸

TABLE OF INTEGER WORDS.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.
Hurrah	Wē	Yui	Yui	Yui
I don't know	Uchin	Maka	Konkete	Koien
Very well : go (with a lift of the chin)	Uchik	Kobale	Kōi	Kōi
Humbug	Ākanōiyadake	Akanoiyadake	Omkotichwake	{ Okamkoti- chwachin.
Oh : I say (ironical)	{ Pētek	Ya	{ Kalaiītata } { Kalat }	Yokokene
It's broken	Turashno ⁹	Turuit	Turush	T'ruish
Back me up	{ Jegô	Jegô	Jeklungi	Atokwe
Say 'yes'				
Not exactly	Kak	Kak	Kaka	Alō
Nonsense	Cho	Ya	Aikut	Kene
Yes (ironical)	Wai (drawled)	Wai (drawled)	Kōle	K'le
What a stink	Chuṅgē	Chunye	Chunyenō	Chunye
How sweet (smell, with a puffing out of the lips)	{ Pue	Pue	Pue	Pue

⁷ See *ante*, Vol. XXVIII. pp. 197 ff., 225 ff. : Vol. XXXI. p. 165 ff.

⁸ Portman is so frequently inaccurate that it must be understood that throughout this article, wherever he is quoted it is with corrections.

⁹ This is doubtful.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAL.
It hurts	Iyī	Yi	Yi (drawled)	Eyô (indignantly)
Oh (shock)	Yite (with a gasp)	Yite	Yite	Jite
Don't worry	Ijiyomaingata	Idiyomaingata	Iramyolano	Remjolokne
What? Where?	Tān?	Tau?	Ilekot?	Alech?
Is it so?	Au wai?	An yatya?	En kôle?	An k'le?
Lor	Kākātek	Kakate	Keleba	Alôbai

e. — Elliptical Speech.

Portman's *Vocabulary* shows that the habit of speaking by integers, *i. e.*, single words, or by extremely elliptical phrases, is carried very far in Andamanese, and the *Fire Legends*¹⁰ themselves give the clearest instances of it, in so far as these legends have been recorded by Portman.

The BĒa version winds up with the enigmatic single word "Tômolola," which has to be translated by "they, the ancestors, were the Tômolola." In the Kôl version occurs the single-word sentence "Kôlotatke," *lit.* "Kôlotat-be," which has to be translated: — "Now there was one Kôlotat." In the first instance, one word in the indicator (noun) form completes the whole sense; in the second, one word in the predicator (verb) form does so. Such elliptical expressions as the above and as the term of abuse, "*Ngabgôrob*" (*ng + ab + gôrob*, you + special—radical—prefix + spine), would be accompanied by tone, manner, or gesture to explain its meaning to the listener. Thus, the latter would be made to convey "You humpback," or "Break your spine," by the accompanying manner.

f. — Portman's Fire Legend in the BĒa Version dissected to illustrate Grammar.

The Andamanese sentence, when it gets beyond an exclamation or one word, is capable of clear division into subject and predicate, as can be seen by an analysis of the sentences in a genuine specimen of the speech, Portman's "Fire Legend" in the five languages of the South Andaman (Bojigngĭji) Group. In the BĒa Language it runs thus: —

BĒA VERSION OF THE FIRE LEGEND.

Tôl-l'oko-tima-len *Pûluga-la* *māmi —ka* . *Lûratût-la*¹¹ *châpa* *tâp —nga* *ômo —re* .
 (a Place)—in God asleep—was. (a Bird) firewood steal-ing bring-did.
châpa-la *Pûluga-la* *pûgat —ka* . *Pûluga-la* *bôï —ka* . *Pûluga-la* *châpa*
 firewood God burning—was. God awake—was. God firewood
eni —ka . *a* *ik* *châpa —lik* *Lûratût* *l'ot-pûguri—re* ¹² *jek* *Lûratût-la*
 seizing—was. he taking firewood—by (Bird) throw-at —did. at-onte (Bird)
eni —ka . *a* *Târcheker*¹³ *l'ot-pûguri—re* . *Wôta-Ēmi-baraij—len* *Châuga-tâbanga*
 taking—was. he (a Bird) throw-at —did. Wôta-Ēmi-village-in The —ancestors
oko —dal-re.¹⁴ *Tômolola* .
 made-fires . Tomolola.

g. — Portman's Rendering (amended).

God was sleeping at Tôl-l'okotima. Lûratût came, stealing firewood. The firewood burnt God. God woke up. God seized the firewood; took the firewood and threw it at Lûratût. Then Lûratût took (the firewood); he threw it at Târcheker in Wôta-Ēmi village, (where then) the Ancestors lit fires. (The Ancestors referred to were) the Tômolola.

¹⁰ Cf. Man's *Andaman Islanders*, p. 99.

¹¹ One of the (?) six kinds of the Andamanese Kingfisher.

¹² This expression means "threw a burning brand at," a common practice among the Andamanese. It has been extended to meet modern requirements to denote "shooting with a gun," the flash from which is likened to that from a burning brand when thrown.

¹³ Probably an error for Châltekak, the generic term for the kingfishers.

¹⁴ This expression is elliptical. *Châpa*, firewood: *châpa-l'idai*, the eye of the firewood, a fire: *châpa-l'okodal-ke*, firewood-eye-do (make), make a fire.

h. — Subject and Predicate.

Taking this Legend sentence by sentence, the subject and predicate come out clearly thus: — (P. = predicate: S. = subject).

- (1) Tollokotimalen (P.) Pulugala (S.) mamika (P.).
- (2) Luratutla (S.) chapatapnga (S.) omore (P.).
- (3) Chapala (S.) Pulugala (P.) pugatka (P.).
- (4) Pulugala (S.) boika (P.).
- (5) Pulugala (S.) chapa (P.) enika (P.).
- (6) A (S.) ik (S.) chapalik (P.) Luratut (P.) lotpugurire (P.).
- (7) Jek (P.) Luratutla (S.) enika (P.).
- (8) A (S.) Tarcheker (P.) lotpugurire (P.).
- (9) Wota-Emi-baraijlen (P.) Changa-tabnga (S.) okodalre (P.).
- (10) Tomolola (S.) (P. unexpressed).

i. — Principal and Subordinate Words.

That the words in the above sentences are in the relation of principal and subordinate is equally clear thus: —

- (1) In the Predicate, *Tollokotimalen* is subordinate to the principal *mamika*.
- (2) In the Subject, *Luratutla* is the principal with its subordinate *chapatapnga*.
- (5) In the Predicate, *chapa* is subordinate to the principal *enika*.

And so on, without presentation of any difficulties.

j. — Functions of Words.

The next stage in analysis is to examine the functions of the words used in the above sentences, and for this purpose the following abbreviations will be used: —

Abbreviations used.

int.	...	integer.	intd.	...	introducer.
in.	...	indicator.	r. c.	...	referent conjunctive.
e.	...	explicator.	r. s.	...	referent substitute.
p.	...	predicator.	c. in.	...	complementary indicator.
ill.	...	illustrator.	c. e.	...	complementary explicator.
c.	...	connector.	c. ill.	...	complementary illustrator.

In this view the sentences can be analysed thus: —

- (1) Toll'okotimalen (ill. of P.) Pulugala (in.) mamika (p.).
- (2) Luratutla (in.) chapa- (c. in.)-tapnga (p., the whole an e. phrase) omore (p.).
- (3) Chapala (in.) Pulugala (c. in.) pugatka (p.).
- (4) Pulugala (in.) boika (p.).
- (5) Pulugala (in.) chapa (c. in.) enika (p.).
- (6) A (r. s., in.) ik (e.) chapalik (ill.) Luratut (c. in.) lotpugurire (p.).
- (7) Jek (r. c.) Luratutla (in.) enika (p.).
- (8) A (r. s., in.) Tarcheke (c. in.) lotpugurire (p.).
- (9) Wota-Emi-baraijlen (ill. phrase of P.) chaugatabanga (in. phrase) okodalre (p.).
- (10) Tomolola (in. P. unexpressed).

k. — Order of Sentence.

By this analysis we arrive at the following facts. The purposes of all the sentences is information, and the Andamanese indicate that purpose, which is perhaps the commonest of speech, by the order of the words in the sentence thus : —

- (1) Subject before Predicate :
Pulugala (S.) boika (P.).
- (2) Subject, Complement (object), Predicate :
Pulugala (S.) chapa (c. in.) enika (P.).
- (3) Indicator (noun) before explicator (adjective) :
Luratutla (in.) chapa-tapnga (e. phrase) omore (p.).
- (4) Illustrator of Predicate (adverb) before Subject :
Toll'okotimalen (ill. of P.) Pulugala (in.) mamika (p.).
But illustrators can be placed elsewhere,¹⁵ thus :
A (r. s. used as in.) ik. (p. of elliptic e. phrase, c. in. unexpressed)
chapa lik (ill.) Luratut (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).
- (5) Referent conjunctive (conjunction) commences sentence :
Jek (r. c.) Luratutla (in.) enika (p.).
- (6) Referent substitutes (pronouns) follow position of the originals :
A (r. s. in.) Tarcheke (c. in.) l'otpugurire (p.).

From these examples, which cover the whole of the kinds of words used in the sentence, except the introducers and connectors, the absence of which is remarkable, we get the following as the order of Andamanese speech : —

- A. (1) Subject, (2) Predicate.
- B. (1) Subject, (2) Complement (object), (3) Predicate.
- C. (1) Indicator (noun) before its explicator (adjective).
- D. Illustrator (adverb) where convenient.
- E. Referent conjunctives (conjunctions) before everything in connected sentences.

We have also a fine example of an extremely elliptical form of speech in the wind up of the story by the one word "Tomolola" as its last sentence, in the sense "(the ancestors who did this were the) Tomolola." *Jek Luratutla enika* is also elliptic, as the complement is unexpressed.

l. — Order of Connected Sentences.

Connected sentences are used in the order of principal and then subordinate :

Pulugala chapa enika (principal sentence) and then *a ik chapalik Luratut l'otpugurire* (subordinate sentence), after which *jek Luratutla enika* (connected sentence joined by "*jek*, at once"), and then a *Tarcheker l'otpugurire* (subordinate to the previous sentence).

The sentences quoted show that the Andamanese mind works in its speech steadily from point to point in a natural order of precedence in the development of an information (story, tale), and not in an inverted order, as does that of the speakers of many languages.

m. — Interrogative Sentences.

It may also be noted here, though no interrogative phrases occur in the Fire Legend, that the Andamanese convey interrogation by introducers (adverbs) always placed at the commencement of a sentence or connected sentences.

¹⁵ We have this in English : — "suddenly John died ; John suddenly died ; John died suddenly."

The introducers of interrogation in Bēa are *Ba* ? and *An* ? And so, too, "Is _____? or _____?" are introduced by "*An* _____? *an* _____?" Either these introducers are used, or an interrogative sentence begins with a special introducer, like "*Tēn* ? Where *Michiba* ? What ? *Mijola* (honorific form), or *Miju* ? Who ?" and so on.

n. — The Mode of expressing the Functions and the Interrelation of Words.

But the Andamanese do not rely entirely on position to express the function of the sentence and the functions and interrelation of its words. By varying the ends of their words, they express the functions of such sentences as convey information, and at the same time the functions of the words composing them.

Thus, the final form of *Pulugila*, *Luratutla*, *chapala*, *Tomolola* proclaim them to be indicators (nouns) : of *manika*, *boika*, *puḡatka*, *omore*, *okodalre*, *l'otpugurire*, to be predicators (verbs) : of *chapa-lapnga* (phrase) to be an explicator (adjective) : of *Toll'okotimalen* (phrase), *chapalik*, *Wota-Emi-baraijen* (phrase) to be illustrators (adverbs).

o. — Expression of Intimate Relation.

The intimate relation between words is expressed by change of form at the commencement of the latter of them.

Thus in *Luratut* (c. in.) *l'otpugurire* (p.), where *Luratut* is the complement (object) and *l'otpugurire* is the predicator (verb), the intimate relation between them is expressed by the *l'* of *l'otpugurire*. So again in *Tarcheker l'otpugurire*.

In phrases, or words that are fundamentally phrases, the same method of intimately joining them is adopted.

Thus *Tol-l'oko-tima-len* means in practice "in Tōll'okotima," a place so named, but fundamentally

Tol _____ l' _____ okotima-len

Tol (tree) — (its) — corner—in

means "in (the encampment at, unexpressed) the corner of the Tol (trees, unexpressed)." Here the intimate relation between *tol* and *okotima* is expressed by the intervening *l'*.

The actual use of the phrases is precisely that of the words they represent. Thus,

Wota—Emi—baraij—len

Wota—Emi—village—in

Here a phrase, consisting of three indicators (nouns) placed in juxtaposition, is used as one illustrator word (adverb).

p. — Use of the Affixes, Prefixes, Infixes, Suffixes.

It follows from what has been above said that the Andamanese partly make words fulfil their functions by varying their forms by means of affixes.

Thus they use suffixes to indicate the class of a word. E. g., *ka*, *re*, to indicate predicators (verbs) : *la*, *da*, for indicators (nouns) : *nga* for explicators (adj.) : *len*, *lik* for illustrators (adverbs). They use prefixes, e. g., *l'*, to indicate intimate relation, and infixes for joining up phrases into compound words, based on the prefix *l'*.

It also follows that their functional affixes are prefixes, infixes, and suffixes.

It is further clear that they effect the transfer of a word from class to class by means of suffixes.

Thus, the compound indicator (noun) *Toll'okotima* is transferred to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *len* : indicator (noun) *chapa* to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *lik* : indicator (noun) phrase *Wota-Emi-baraij* to illustrator (adverb) by suffixing *len* : predicator (verb) *tap* (-*ke*, -*ka*, -*re*) to explicator (adj.) by suffixing *nga*.

A very strong instance of the power of a suffix to transfer a word from one class to another occurs in the Kôl version of the Fire Legend, where *Kôlotat-ke* occurs. *Kôlotat*, being a man's name and therefore an indicator (noun), is transferred to the predicator (verb) class by merely affixing the suffix of that class. The word *Kôlotatke* in the Kôl version of the Fire Legend occurs as a sentence by itself in the sense of "now, there was one *Kôlotat*."

q. — Differentiation of the Meanings of Connected Words by Radical Prefixes.

Fortunately in the sentences under examination, two words occur, which exhibit the next point of analysis for elucidation. These are:—

chapala	Pulugala	pugat—ka
firewood	God	burning—was

and then

a	Tarcheker	l'otpuguri-re	
he	(a Bird)	throw-at—did	
a	ik	chapa—lik	Luratut l'otpuguri-re
he	taking	firewood-by (Bird)	throw-at—did

Here is an instance of connected words, one of which is differentiated in meaning from the other by the affix *ot*, prefixed to that part which denotes the original meaning or root (*pugat*, *puguri*) of both. Therefore in Andamanese the use of radical prefixes (prefixes to root) is to differentiate connected words.

The simple stem in the above instances is *pugat* and the connected compound stem *otpuguri*. Similarly *okotima*, *okodalre*, occurring in the Fire Legend, are compound stems, where the roots are *tima* and *dal*.

r. — Indication of the Classes of Words — Qualitative Suffixes.

The last point in this analysis is that the words are made to indicate their class, i. e., their nature (original idea conveyed by a word) by the Andamanese by affixing qualitative suffixes, thus:—

ka, *re* to indicate the predicator class (verbs): *nga*, to indicate the explicator (adj.) class: *la*, *da* to indicate the indicator (noun) class: *lik*, *len* to indicate the illustrator (adverb) class.

s. — Composition of the Words.

The words in the sentences under consideration can thus be broken up into their constituents as follows:—

Using the abbreviations R. = Root: S. = Stem: P. F. = Prefix, functional: P. R. = Prefix, radical: I. = Infix: S. F. = Suffix, functional: S. Q. = Suffix, qualitative.

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>(1) Mami (S.) —ka (S. Q.).
Sleeping—was.
So also pugat-ka, boi-ka, eni-ka.</p> <p>(2) Chapa (S.).
firewood.</p> <p>(3) Tap (S.)—nga (S. Q.).
steal — ing</p> <p>(4) Omo (S.) — re (S. Q.).
bring — did.</p> <p>(5) Chapa (S.) — la (S. Q.).
firewood— (honorific suff.).</p> <p>(6) A (S.).
He.</p> | <p>(7) Ik (S.).
tak — (ing).</p> <p>(8) Chapa (S.) — lik (S. F.).
firewood— by.</p> <p>(9) I' (P. F.)—ot (P. R.)—puguri (R.) —re (S. Q.).
(referent prefixes)—throw-at — did</p> <p>(10) Jek (S.).
At-once.</p> <p>(11) Baraij (S.) — len (S. F.).
village — in.</p> <p>(12) Oko (P. R.) — dal (R.) —re (S. Q.).
— eye-make—did (lighted).</p> |
|--|--|

t. — The Agglutinative Principle.

Words are therefore made to fulfil their functions in the Andamanese Languages by an external development effected by affixes and to express modifications of their original meanings by a similar internal development. Also, the meaning of the sentences is rendered complete by a combination of the meanings of their component words with their position and form.

The sentences analysed further show that the Languages express a complete communication chiefly by the forms of their words, and so these languages are Formative Languages; and because their affixes, as will have been seen above, are attached to roots, stems and words mainly in an unaltered form, the languages are Agglutinative Languages. It will be seen later on, too, as a matter of great philological interest, that the Languages possess premutation (principle of affixing prefixes) and postmutation (principle of affixing suffixes) in almost equal development: intromutation (principle of affixing infixes) being merely rudimentary.

u. — Identity of the Five Languages of the Southern Group of Tribes.

The above observations, being the outcome of the examination of the ten sentences under analysis, are based only on the Bēa speech, but a similar analysis of the sentences conveying the Fire Legend in the five South Andaman Languages (Bojigngiji Group), as given in Appendix A, would fully bear out all that has been above said. With the aid of this Appendix is here attached a series of Tables, showing roughly how these languages agree and differ in the essentials of word-building, premising that they all agree in Syntax, or sentence-building, exactly. An examination of the Tables goes far to show that the Andamanese Languages must belong to one family.

Comparative Tables of Roots and Stems of the same meaning occurring in the Fire Legend.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGNYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŌL.
Indicators (nouns).					
camp	haraij	haroij	...	...	pôroich
fire	chapa	choapa	at	at	at
Predicators (verbs).					
seize	eni	ena	di, li	...	...
take	ik	ik	ik	...	...
light-a-fire	dal	dal	kadak	kôdak	kôdak
sleep	mami	...	pat	ema	pat
steal	tap	...	...	top	...
bring	omo	omo	lechi	...	...
burn	pugat, puguri	puguru	...	...	...
wake	boi	...	konyi	...	...

Referent Substitutes (pronouns).

he	a	i, ong	ong	a	...
(they)	...	ongot	n'ong	...	n' a

Comparative Table of Affixes occurring in the Fire Legend.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGNYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŌL.
Prefixes, functional, of intimate relation.					
(hi-, it-)-s	l'-	l'-	l'-	l'-, t'-	l'-
(hi-, it-)-s	...	...	k'-	...	k-
(their-)-s	...	...	n'-	...	n'-

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BĀLAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAL.	KŌL.
Prefixes, radical.					
...	ot-	oto-	oto-	...	otam-, oto-
...	...	atak-	...	atak-	...
...	oko-	oko-	oko-	ôkô-, ôko-	oko
...	...	...	o-	...	a-
...	...	ar-	...	...	ir-, iram-
...	i-	i-	...	...	...
...	...	ong-	...	on-	...
Suffixes, functional.					
by	-lik	-te	-ke	...	-lak
in	-len	-a	-in, -an, -en	-in	-en
to	...	...	-len	-lin	-kete
Suffixes, qualitative.					
was	-ka	-kate, -ia	...	-chike	-ke
-ing	-nga	-nga	-nga	...	...
did	-re	-t, -te	-ye, -an	-t	-an, -chine
(hon. of in.)	-la, -ola	-le	-la	...	-la

Many further proofs of the existence of the Andamanese Languages as a Family, sub-divided into three main Groups, will be found later on when considering that great difficulty of the Languages, the use of the prefixes, and it will be sufficient here to further illustrate the differences and agreements between those of the South Andaman Group by a comparison of the roots of the words for the parts of the human body, a set of words which looms preponderatingly before the Andamanese mental vision.

Comparative Table of Roots and Stems denoting Parts of the Human Body.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BĀLAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAL.	KŌL.
head	chēta	chekta	ta	tô	toi
brains	mūn	mun	mine	mine	mine
neck	lōngota	longato	longe	longe	longe
heart	kūktābana	kuktabana	kapōne	poktô	poktoi
hand	kôro	kôro	kôre	korô	kôre
wrist, shoulder	tôgo	tôgo	to	to	to
knuckle	kūtur	godla	kutar	kutar	kutar
nail	bôdoh	bôdo	pute	pute	pute
foot	pâg	pog	ta	tok	tok
ankle	tôgur	tôgar	togar	togar	togar
mouth	bang	boang	pong	pong	pong
chin	âdal	koada	teri	t'reye	t'reye
tongue	êtel	atal	tatal	tatal	tâtal
jaw	êkib	toa	ta	tô	teip
lip	pai	pa	pai	paka	pake
shoulder-blade	pôdikma	pôdiatoa	bea	bea	bein
thigh	paicha	poaicho	baichato	boichatōkan	baichatōkan
knee	lô	lo	lu	lu	lu
shin	châlta	chalanta	chalta	choltô	chaltô
belly	jôdo	jôdo	chute	chute	chute
navel	êr	akar	tar	takar	takar

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŪL.
armpit	âwa	ôkar	kôrteng	kôrteng	kôrteng
eye	dal	dal	kôdak	kôdag	kôdak
eyebrow	punyūr	punu	bein	beakaiñ	beakiñ
forehead	mūgu	mugu	mike	mike	mike
ear	pūku	puku	bo	bôkô	bokô
nose	chôronga	chôronga	kôte	kôte	kôte
cheek	âb	koab	kap	kap	kap
arm	gūd	gud	kit	kit	kit
breast	kām	koam	kôme	kôme	kôme
spine	gōrob	kategōrob	kinab	kurup	kurup
leg	châg	chag	chok	chok	chok
buttocks	dama	doamo	tome	tome	tome
anus	tōmur	bang	tomur	kôlang	kôlang

Pulled to pieces, Andamanese words of any Group of the Languages seem to be practically the same, but this fact is not apparent in actual speech, when they are given in full with their appropriate affixes, thus :—

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŪL.
head	otchētada	ôtchekta	otetada	ôtotôlekile	ôtetoiche
knee	ablōda	ablo	abluda	alulekile	oluche
forehead	igmūguda	idmugu	irmikeda	remikelekile	ermikeche

Any one who has had practice in listening to a foreign and partially understood tongue knows how a small difference in pronunciation, or even in accentuation, will render unintelligible words philologically immediately recognisable on paper.

III. — ETYMOLOGY.

a. — The Use of the Roots.

As the Andamanese usually build up the full words of their sentences by the simple agglutination of affixes on to roots and stems, the word construction of their language would present no difficulties, were it not for one peculiarity, most interesting in itself and easy of general explanation, though difficult in the extreme to discover: *experto crede*.

The Andamanese suffixes perform the ordinary functions of their kind in all agglutinative languages, and the peculiarity of the infixed *ʔ* occurring in compound words depends on the prefixes. It is the prefixes and their use that demand an extended examination.

b. — Anthropomorphism colours the whole Linguistic System.

To Andamanese instinct or feeling, words as original meanings, *i.e.*, roots, divide themselves roughly into Five Groups, denoting—

- (1) mankind and parts of his body (nouns) :
- (2) other natural objects (nouns) :
- (3) ideas relating to objects (adjectives, verbs) :
- (4) reference to objects (pronouns) :
- (5) ideas relating to the ideas about objects (adverbs, connecting words, Proper Names).

The instinct of the Andamanese next exhibits an intense anthropomorphism, as it leads them to differentiate the words in the First Group, *i.e.*, those relating directly to themselves, from all others, by adding special prefixes through mere agglutination to their roots.

c. — The Use of the Prefixes to the Roots.

These special radical prefixes, by some process of reasoning forgotten by the people and now obscure, but not at all in every case irrecoverable, divide the parts of the human body into Seven Classes ; thus, without giving a full list of the words in each class—

Radical Prefixes in Words denoting Parts of the Human Body by Classes.

CLASS.	ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŌL.
I.	{ Head Brains Neck Heart }	ot-	ôt-	ote-	ôto-	ôto-
II.	{ Hand Wrist Knuckle Nail Foot Ankle }	ong-	ong-	ong-	ôn-	ôn-
III.	{ Mouth Chin Tongue Jawbone Lip }	ākà-	aka-	o-	ôkô-	o-
IV.	{ Shoulder Thigh Knee Shin Belly Navel Armpit }	ab-	ab-	ab-	a-	o-
V.	{ Eye Eyebrow Forehead Ear Nose Cheek Arm Breast }	i-, ig- ig-, ik	id-	ir-	re-	er-
VI.	{ Spine Leg Buttock Hip }	ar-	ar-	ar-	ra-	a-
VII.	Waist	ôto-				

d. — Prefixes to Words referring to the Human Body.

Next, in obedience to their strong anthropomorphic instinct, the Andamanese extend their prefixes to all words in the other Groups, when in relation to the human body, its parts, attributes and necessities, and thus in practice, refer all words, capable of such reference, to themselves by means of prefixes added to their roots. In an Andamanese Language one cannot, as a matter of fact, say "head," "hand," "heart," one can only say—

my	} head, hand, heart.
your	
his	
(so & so) — 's	
(that one) — 's	
(this one) — 's	

e. — The Prefixes of Intimate Relation.

It is thus that the otherwise extremely difficult secondary functional prefix (always prefixed to the radical prefix, which is usually in Bojigngiji *le-* or *la-* (but practically always used in its curtailed form *l'-*, or *k'-*, *n'-*, *t'-* in certain circumstances) is clearly explainable. It is used to denote intimate relation between two words; and when between two indicators (nouns) it corresponds to the English connector (of), the Persian *izāfat* (-i-), and so on, and to the suffix denoting the "genitive case" in the inflected languages. The Andamanese also use it to indicate intimate relation between predicator (verb) and complement (object), when it corresponds to the suffix of the "accusative case" in the inflected languages, and indeed to "cases" generally.

f. — The Prefix System.

Starting with these general principles, the Andamanese have developed a complicated system of prefixes, making their language an intricate and difficult one for a foreigner to clearly apprehend when spoken to, or to speak so as to be readily understood.

As examples of this, let us take the stem *bēri-nga* good : then *ā-bēri-nga*, good (human being) ; *un-bēri-nga* (good hand, *ong* pref. of hand), clever ; *ig-bēri-nga* (good eye, *ig* pref. of eye) sharp-sighted ; *ākā-bēri-nga* (good mouth or tongue, *ākā* pref. of month and tongue), clever at (other Andamanese) languages ; *ot-bēri-nga* (good head and heart, *ot* pref. of both head and heart), virtuous ; *un-t'ig-bēri-nga* (good hand and eye, *ong* pref. of hand, *ig* pref. of eye, joined by *t'* pref. of intimate relation), good all round.

So, too, with *jābag*, bad : *ā-jābag*, bad (human being) ; *un-jābag*, clumsy ; *ig-jābag*, dull-sighted ; *ākā-jābag*, stupid at (other Andamanese) languages, also nasty, unpalatable ; *ot-jābag*, vicious ; *un-t'ig-jābag*, a duffer.

So again with *lāma*, failing : *un-lāma* (failing hand or foot), missing to strike ; *ig-lāma* (failing eye), failing to find ; *ot-lāma* (failing head), wanting in sense ; *ākā-lāma* (failing tongue).

Lastly, in the elliptic speech of the Andamanese, the root, when evident, can be left unexpressed, if the prefix is sufficient to express the sense, thus :—

i-bēri-nga-da ! may mean, "his-(face, pref. *i-*)-good-(is)." That is, "he is good-looking !" *ā-ākā-chām-ke* ! may mean "my-(mouth, pref. *ākā*)-sore-is." That is, "my mouth is sore !"

g. — Prefixes to Words relating to Objects.

The system of using radical prefixes to express the relation of ideas to mankind and its body is extended to express the relation of ideas to objects in general. Thus :—

ad-bēringa, well (of the body) : *ad-jābag*, ill (of the body) : *ōko-lāma* (applied to a weapon), failing to penetrate the object struck through the fault of the striker. So *ig-bēringa* means pretty (of things) : *ākā-bēringa*, nice (to taste) : all in addition to the senses above given.

This is carried, with more or less obvious reference to origin, throughout the language. Thus :—

In Bēa : *yōb*, pliable, soft. Then a cushion, wax or sponge is *ot-yōb*, soft : a cane is *ōto-yōb*, pliable : a stick or pencil is *ākā-yōb*, or *ōko-yōb*, pointed : the human body is *ab-yōb*, soft ; Class II. of its parts (hand, wrist, &c.) are *ong-yōb*, soft ; fallen trees are *ar-yōb*, rotten ; an adze is *ig-yōb*, blunt.

So again, in Bēa : *chōroṅga*, tying up (whence also that which is usually tied up in a bundle, viz., a bundle of plantains, faggots). Then *ōt-chōroṅga* is tying up a pig's carcass : *ākā-chōroṅga*, tying up jack-fruit : *ar-chōroṅga*, tying up birds : *ong-chōroṅga*, tying up the feet of sucking pigs.

h. — General Sense of Prefixes to Roots.

Possibly the feeling or instinct, which prompts the use of the prefixes correctly, could be caught up by a foreigner, just as the Andamanese roots might be traced by a sufficiently patient etymologist, but it would be very difficult and would require deep study. The Andamanese themselves, however,

unerringly apply them without hesitation, even in the case of such novel objects to them as cushions, sponges and pencils; using *ot* in the two former cases, because they are round and globular, and *âkâ* in the latter, because they are rounded off to an end. In both these cases one can detect an echo of the application of the prefixes to the body: *ot* of head, neck, heart, &c.; *âkâ* of tongue chin, &c.

Portman gives somewhat doubtfully the following as the concrete modifying references of such prefixes to the names of things :—

ot-	...	...	...	round things
ôto-	...	...	...	long, thin, pointed, or wooden things
âkâ-, ôko-	...	...	...	hard things
ar-	...	...	...	upright things
ig-	...	...	...	weapons, utensils, things manufactured
ad-	...	...	...	speech (noises) of animals

With this habit may be compared the use of numeral coefficients in Burmese and many other languages.

From Portman also may be abstracted, doubtfully again, the following modifying abstract references of some of the radical prefixes :—

ot-, oto-, ôto-	...	...	special relation
ig-, ik-, i-	...	...	reference in singular to another person
iji-	...	...	reference in plural to another person
eb-, ep-	...	...	reference to ideas
âkan-	...	...	reference to self
ar-, ara-	...	...	plural reference to persons generally
ar-, ara-	...	...	(also) agency
ad-	...	...	action of self
ab-	...	...	action or condition transferred to another in singular
oiyo-	...	...	action transferred to others in plural

The following preliminary statement of the function of the radical prefixes can, therefore, be made out: *viz.*, to modify the meanings of roots by denoting —

- (1) the phenomena of man and parts of his body:
- (2) the phenomena of objects:
- (3) the relation of ideas to the human body and objects:
- (4) reference to self:
- (5) reference to other persons:
- (6) ideas; *i. e.*, (a) actions of self, (b) actions transferred to others, (c) actions of others (agency):
- (7) reference to ideas.

i. — The Use of the “Personal Pronouns.”

The habit of the Andamanese of referring everything directly to themselves makes the use of the referent substitutes for their own names (personal pronouns) a prominent feature in their speech. These are in full in the Bojigngij Group as follow :—

The “Personal Pronouns.”

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGŃĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŌL.
I	d'ol-la	d'ol	t'u-le	t'u-le	la-t'u-le
Thou	ng'ol-la	ng'ol	ng'u-le	ng'a-kile	la-ng'u-le
He, she, it	ol-la	ol	u-le	a-kile	laka-u-le
We	m'òlòl-chik	m'òlòl-chit	m-u-le	m'e-kile	la-m'u-le
You	ng'òlòl-chik	ng'òlòl-chit	ng'uwe'l	ng'e'l-kile	la-ng'uwe'l
They	òlòl-chik	olòl-chit	n'u-le	n'e-kile	kuchla-n'u-le

j. — Limited Pre-inflexion.

In combination with and before the radical prefixes the "personal pronouns" are abbreviated thus in all the languages of the Bojigngiji Group :—

Abbreviated "Pronominal" Forms.

I, my ...	...	...	...	{ d'- in Bēa, Balawa t'- in Bojigyāb, Jūwai, Kōl
thou, thy	...	...	...	ng'- in all the Group
he, his, &c.	...	...	...	not expressed in the Group
we, our...	...	...	...	m'- in all the Group
you, your	...	...	...	{ ng'- in Bēa, Balawa, Bojigyāb ng'_____l in Jūwai, Kōl
they, their	...	...	...	{ not expressed in Bēa, Balawa n'- in Bojigyāb, Jūwai, Kōl
this, that one	...	...	...	{ k'- in Bēa, Balawa, Kōl not expressed in Bojigyāb, Jūwai
that one	...	...	...	t'- in all the Group

In this way it can be shown that there are no real "singular possessives" in Andamanese, as the so-called "possessive pronouns" are merely the abbreviated forms of the "personal pronouns" plus *ia* (-*da*), &c. = belonging to, (property) : thus—

"Possessive Pronouns."

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KŌL.
my, mine	d'ia-da	d'ega	t'iya-da	t'iea-kile	t'ie-che
thy, thine	ng'ia-da	ng'ega	ng'iya-da	ng'iea-kile	ng'ie-dele
his, her, its	ia-da	ega	iya-da	iea-kile	ie-dele

The "plural possessives" have been brought into line with the expression of plurality by radical prefixes, as will be seen later on.

Now, it is easy enough to express on paper the true nature of the above abbreviations by the use of the apostrophe, but in speech there is no distinction made. Thus, one can write "*d'un-lāma-re*, I missed (my) blow," but one must say "*dunlāmāre*." So one can write *ng'ot-jābag-da*, "you (are a) vicious (brute)," but one must say *ngotjābagda*. So also one can write:

<i>ār-lām</i>	<i>d'un-t'ig-jābag</i>	<i>l'edā-re</i>
formerly	I-hand-eye-bad	exist-did
<i>dchituk</i>	<i>d'un-t'ig-bēr-nga</i>	
now	I-hand-eye-good	

(once I was a duffer, now I am good all round).

But one must say "*ārām duntigjābag ledāre, dchitik duntigbēringa*." It would, therefore, be correct to assert that, though Andamanese is an agglutinative tongue, it possesses a very limited pre-inflexion, i. e., inflexion at the commencement of its words.

Limited Correlated Variation (Concord).

The Andamanese also express the intimate relation of the "personal pronouns" with their predicators (verbs) by a rudimentary correlated variation (post-inflexion in the form of concord) of forms thus :—

māmi-ke	māmik-ka	māmai-re	māmi-nga
sleeping-is	sleeping-was	sleep-did	sleep-ing

Then,

do mâmi-ke ..	...	...	I am sleeping
da mâmi-ka...	...	...	I was sleeping
da mâmire ...	...	...	I slept
dona mâminga	...	...	I (me) sleeping

This peculiarity is shown in all the Bojigngijj Group, except Kôl; thus: —

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYÂB.	JŪWAI.
----------	------	---------	-----------	--------

“ In the Present Tense ” (ke).

I	do	do	tuk	te
Thou	ngo	ngo	nguk	nge
He, she, it	a, o	ong	uk	a
We	môicho	môt	môt	me
You	ngôicho	ngôngot	nuk	ngel
They	eda	ôngot	net	a

“ In the Past Tense ” (ka and re).

I	da	do	tong	te
Thou	nga	ngo	ngong	nge
He, she, it	a	ong	ong	a
We	meda	mongot	môt	me
You	ngeda	ngongot	ngonget	ngel
They	eda	ongot	net	ne

“ In the Present Participle ” (nga).

I	dona	...	tong	tôn
Thou	ngona	...	ngong	ngôn
He, she, it	oda	...	ong	ôn
We	moda	...	môt	mon
You	ngoda	...	ngowel	ngôwel
They	oda	...	nong	ne

1. — Expression of Plurality by Radical Prefixes.

The examination of the “pronouns” shows that the Andamanese can express things taken together (plural) as well as things taken by themselves (singular). This in their language generally is expressed by changing the forms of the radical prefixes, in Bêa and Balawa habitually and in Kôl and Jūwai occasionally. Thus: —

SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.
In Bêa.					
ot-	otot-	ong-, on-	oiot-	ig-, ik-, i-	itig-
ab-	at-	ar-, ara-	arat-	aka-	akat-
ôto-	ôtot-	eb-	ebet-	iji-	ijit-, ijet-
ôko-	ôkot-	ad-	ad-	akan-	akan-
en-	et-				

In Balawa.

ôt-	ôtot-	ông-	ôngot-	id-	idit-
ap-	at-	ar-, ara-	arat-	aka-	akat-
ôto-	ôtot-	eb-	ebet-	idi-	idit-
ôko-	ôkot-	ad-	ad-	akan-	akan-
en-	et-				

SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.	SING.	PLU.
In Jūwai.					
ir-	ir-	ab-	at-	iche-	iche-
iram-	iram-	in-	in-	...	...
In Kôl.					
re-	ri-	a-	o-	echē-	iche-
rem-	rim-	en-	in-	...	...

As has been already noted, the plural of the "personal pronouns" in the "possessive" form has been made to fall into line with the plan of expressing plurality by means of the radical prefixes. Thus :—

Table of Singular and Plural "Possessives."

	ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KÔL.
Sing.	my	dīada	dege	tiyeda	tiyeakile	tiyiche
Plu.	our	mētāt	matāt	miyeda	miye	miyedele
Sing.	thy	ngiāda	ngege	ngiyeda	ngiyeakile	ngiyedele
Plu.	your	ētāt	ngatāt	ngiyida	ngiyel	ngiyil
Sing.	his	iāda	ege	iyeda	eyeakile	iyedele
Plu.	their	ōntāt	atat	niyeda	niye	niyiche

m. — Qualitative Suffixes.

The suffixes of Andamanese are (radical) qualitative (expressing the class of a word) or functional (expressing its function in the sentence). The radical qualitative suffixes usually employed are :—

For Indicators (Nouns).

BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KÔL.
-da	-da, -nga, -ke	da	-lekile, -kile	-che, la
-la, -ola	-le	-le	...	-le
-la, -lo	-o, -ô	-o	-ô	-o
-ba				

The first of these is usually dropped in Balawa, and in all the languages also unless the word is used as an integer, or sentence in itself. The second is an honorific, and is always added in full. The third is "vocative" and is suffixed to the name called out. The fourth is a negative: thus, *ablīga-da*, a child; *ablīga-ba*, not a child, a boy or girl.

For Explicators (Adjectives).

-da	...
-la	...
-re	-et, -ot, -t

The second is honorific: the third applies to attributes, &c., of human beings. Generally these affixes follow the rule for those of the indicators (nouns).

For Predicators (Verbs).

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYĀB.	JŪWAI.	KÔL.
(kill)s	-ke, -kan	-ke, -ken	-ke, -kan	-che, -chine	-ye
was (kill)ing	-ka	-ka, -te, -kate	-ya, -ye	-chike	-ye, -k
(kill)ed	-re	-t, -et	-nga, -nen	-chikan	-an, -wan, -nen
may-not (kill) ¹⁶	-kok	-ton	-k	-chik	-k
(kill)ing	-nga	-t, -et, -ñā	-nga	...	-in
(kill)s not	-ba	-ba	-na	...	...
was (kill)ing not	-ta	...	...	...	...
will (kill)	-bo	...	...	...	...

¹⁶ Precative.

The last three suffixes are added to the suffix — *nga* in *Bēa*, thus :—

do	mâmi-nga-ba	
I	sleep-ing-not (I am not asleep)	
dora	mâmi-nga-bo	
I	sleep-ing-will (I shall sleep)	
kârama	dol-la	kôp-nga-ta
bow	me-by	cutt-ing-(was)-not (I was not making a bow)

n. — The Functional Suffixes.

The usual functional suffixes in Andamanese are :—

Table of Suffixes.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BALAWA.	BOJIGYÂB.	JŪWAI.	KÔL.
In, to, at	-len	-len, -kan, -a	-an	-an	-an
From	-tek	-te, -le	-e, -te, -le	-e, -lak	-e, -lake, -kate
To, towards	-lat	-lat	-lat	-late	-late
Of	-liā	-lege	-liye	-leye	-liye
For	-leb	-leb	-leb	-lebe	-lebe
After	-lik	-le	-le	-le	-le

o. — The Functional Suffixes are Lost Roots.

Attempt at Recovery.

It may be taken as certain that the functional suffixes are roots, now lost to Andamanese recognition, agglutinated to the ends of words by the usual means in their languages, as exhibited in the prefixes; *viz.*, by prefixing to them *l'*, *t'*, *k'* in the manner already explained. The roots of some of the suffixes can be fairly made out thus, from the *Vocabularies* :—

- (1) *Len, kan, a, an*, “in, to, at,” seem to be clearly *l'*, *k'* + the root *en, e, ik*, “take, hold, carry, seize.”
- (2) *Tek, te, le, e, lak, lake, kate*, “from” seem to be *l'*, *t'*, *k'* + the root *ik, i, eak*, “take away.”
- (3) *Lat, late*, “to, towards,” seem to be *l'* + the root *at, ate*, “approach.”
- (4) *Lia, lege, liye, leye*, “of” seem to be *l'* + the root *ia, ege, ii, eye*, “belonging to.”
- (5) *Leb, lebe*, “for” seem to be *l'* + a root not traced.
- (6) *Lik, le*, “with, after” seem to be *l'* + the root *ik, e, ak*, “to go with, follow on.”

IV. — PHONOLOGY.

a. — The Voice of the Andamanese.

The voice of the Andamanese, though occasionally deep and hoarse, is usually pleasant and musical. The mode of speech is gentle and slow, and among the women a shrill voice is used in speaking; but though the tendency is towards a drawled pronunciation, they can express their meaning quickly enough on occasion, too quickly, indeed, for a foreigner to clearly follow the minutiae of pronunciation without very close attention. The general tone of the voice in speaking is low.

On an examination of the prevalent vowels and vowel interchanges and tendencies in the languages of the South Andaman (Bojigngīji) Group of Tribes, as described by Portman, it may be said that they relatively speak thus from a close to an open mouth :—

Jūwai	...	...	with closed lips
Bojigyb and Kôl	...	...	with flattened lips
Balawa	...	...	with open lips
Bēa	...	...	with lips tending to open wide.

It is interesting to note that the above results carry one straight from North to South.

b. — History of the Reduction of the Language to Writing.

The Andamanese speech, as it is now studied, was first committed to writing on a system devised by myself, which was an adaptation of the system, invented by Sir William Jones in 1794 for the Indian Languages, and afterwards adopted, with some practical modifications introduced by Sir W. W. Hunter, by the Government of India as the "Hunterian System." My method of writing Andamanese was subsequently modified for scientific purposes by Mr. A. J. Ellis in 1882, and having so highly trained and competent a guide, one cannot do better than use here a modification of his system, adapted to the needs of a general publication. Pertman, unfortunately, has, in his publications, gone his own way to the great puzzle of students.

In this view, there is no necessity to say anything of the consonants used, and as to the vowels, the following table will sufficiently exhibit them in the Bēa Language:—

The Vowels in Bēa.			
	ENGLISH.	BĒA.	
a	... idea, cut	alaba	o ... indolent
ā	.. cur	bā, yāba	ō ... pole
à	... casa	elākà	ö ¹⁷ ... könig (Ger.)
â	... father	dâke	ò ... pot
ä	... fathom	jārawa	ô ... awful
e	... bed	ēmej	u ... influence
ē	... fade	ākābēada	ū ... pool
è	... pair	èr	ai ... bite
i	... lid	igbadigre	au ... house
ī	... police	yādī	äu ... haus (Ger.)
...	...	...	òi ... boil
			bōigoli

c. — Peculiarities of Speech.

Stress in Andamanese is placed on every long vowel, or on the first syllable of the root or stem. Peculiarities of pronunciation in the South Andaman Languages are as follow:—

Bēa.

Sibilants tend to become palatals, *s* to *ch*: *ō* and *ô* are interchangeable: final open *d* and *ē* tend to *a* and *e*: *t* is an indistinct palato-dental.

Balawa.

t is palato-dental and lisped, cf. Irish pronunciation of English *t* and *d*. The *a* vowels tend to be drawn out: *a* to become *o*, and *d* to become *od*. There is also an incipient *sandhi* in words ending in gutturals: e. g., *rāk*, pig; *rāg-dōamo*, pig's flesh.

Bojigyāb

ch is palato-dental and tends to *t*, and the *ch* of Bēa tends in Bojigyāb to become *s*; *i*, *e*, palatals tend to become sibilants.

Jūwai.

Short vowels are not clearly marked: *e* and *a* are interchangeable: final *e* and *ē* tend to *i*. Vanishing short vowels are common and are shown thus, *j'ōngap*: *o* is often drawled to *ô*: penultimate *e* is lengthened to *ē*, and stressed *ē* is drawled to *ēa*. There is *sandhi* of final and initial vowels in connected consecutive words. Dental, palatal and cerebral *t* all exist: palatals tend to dentals, *ch* to *t*: *p* tends to soften to *ph* and almost to *f*.

Kōl.

a interchanges with *ô*: *d* tends to *ed*, cf. old English pronunciation *gyarden* for *garden*: *e* tends to *ē*: final open vowels are uncertain.

¹⁷ Found in Ōnge only.

V. — THE NORTHERN AND OUTER GROUPS.

a. — Proofs of the identity of the Northern and Southern Groups of Languages.

Of the Five Languages of the Northern (Yërewa) Group, two, Kôrà and Tâbô, are still quite unstudied, the knowledge of the existence of the Tribes speaking them being of less than two years' standing, and the Language of the Yëre Tribe is very little known. Portman has, however, preserved long lists, unfortunately to be treated with much caution, of Kede and Châriâr words, together with many sentences, and it will be sufficient here to give a series of roots and stems, showing where the Northern and Southern Languages meet and how closely related they are by roots: premising that the syntax and word-structure of the Northern Group is identical with that of the Southern Group, and that affixes, notably the radical prefixes, are used precisely in the same way in both Groups. It is in the names for common objects and things that languages show their relationship, and the Bojigngîji and Yërewa Groups form no exception to this rule.

Table of some Bojigngîji and Yërewa Roots, showing a common origin.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BOJIGYÂB.	KEDE.	CHÂRIÂB.
pig	reg	re	ra	ra
turtle (hawkbill)	tân	tare	tôrô	tôrô
clam	chôwai	chowai	chowai	choa
grub	bûtu	peti	pata	pata
fish	yât	taiye	tajeu	tajeu
bow (N.)	chôkio	chokio	chokie	chokwi
bow (S.)	karama	ko	ku	ku
wooden arrow	tirlech	tolô	tirleich	tirleit
wooden pig a.	pâligma	paligma	paligma	paligma
wooden a. head	châm	cham	chôm	chom
harpoon string	betma	kôri	betmô	luremô
bamboo bucket	gûb	bire	kup	kup
shell-dish	chidii	kar	kar	kar
shell-cup (nautilus)	ôdo	kor	kur	kor
adze	wôlo	wole	wo	olo
baby-sling	chîp	chepe	chipa	chiba
cord-ornament	râ	ra	ro	iku
leaf-wrapper	kâpa	kaba	kôbo	kôbu
red-ochre	kôioh	keyep	keip	keip
stone hammer	tailibana	me	mio	meô
stone anvil	rârap	rarap	rârop	rôrop
canoe	rôko	ro	ro	rua
c. outrigger	chârigma	charikma	chorok	chorok

The same community of roots is to be seen in the names of the trees on the islands, establishing beyond doubt the close common origin of the Andaman Tribes of the Yërewa and Bojigngîji Groups, though it will, of course, be understood that in full form, with prefixes and suffixes, very nearly related words are in practice unintelligible to the ear. There are, equally of course, a great number of words, the roots of which, while common to each other in the Yërewa Group, differ entirely from those common to the Bojigngîji Group: thus—

Table of varying Bojigngîji and Yërewa Roots.

ENGLISH.	BĒA.	BOJIGYÂB.	KEDE.	CHÂRIÂB.
ornamental net	râb	rap	chirebale	chirbale
jungle-cat	baian	beyen	chau	chau
belt, round	bôd	bel	tôtô	tôtô
b. flat, broad	rôgun	rogan	kuto	kudu

ENGLISH.	BEA.	BOJIGYAB.	KEDE.	CHÂRIÂB.
iron fish-arrow	tôlbod	pôt	rautul	rautul
larvæ in comb	tô	to	jotu	joto
honey	âja	koi	tumel	tumel
black honey	tôbul	tîpal	maro	maro
cockles	ôla	tale	bun	bun

It is to be observed that in the above list, the compound stem in BĒa for iron fish-arrow, *tôlbod*, is made up apparently of the roots *pôt* and *tul* in the other languages quoted: while *rautul* seems to have become transferred from the pig, *ra*, to the fish, *tajeu*. A similar transfer has taken place between *tumel*, *timel*, the "black honey" of the North, and *tôbul*, *tîpal*, the "honey" of the South. All the above observations tend to confirm the close connection between the Tribes and the Languages of both Groups.

b. —The Outer Group (Önge-Jārawa) examined.

In turning to the Önge-Jārawa Group, one finds that the hostility of the Jārawas, and the only recent friendliness of the Önges, combined with the inaccessibility of the island they inhabit, has caused the knowledge of their language to be but slight. However, we have the careful *Vocabulary* of Colebrooke made in 1790, and those made by Portman and M. Bonig¹⁸ just a century later. An examination of these affords sufficient results for the present purpose: *viz.*, proof of the fundamental identity of the language of these people with that of the rest of the Andaman Tribes, and what is, perhaps, quite as interesting, proof that Colebrooke's informant really was a Jārawa.

c. — The limited knowledge of it.

A comparison of such of Portman's words as can be compared with Colebrooke's, when shown with roots and affixes separated, and reduced to one system of transcription, produces the following results; noting that in their actual lists, both enquirers fell into the natural error of taking the prefixed inflected "personal pronouns" to be essential parts of the words to which they were attached:—

A List of Önge-Jārawa Words.¹⁹

ENGLISH.	COLEBROOKE'S JĀRAWA.	PORTMAN'S ÖNGES.	BONIG'S ÖNGES.
arm	<i>pî-li</i>	<i>öni-bi-le</i>	<i>öni-bi-lé</i>
arrow	<i>batoi</i>	<i>batoi</i>	<i>bato</i>
bamboo	<i>o-ta-li</i>	<i>o-da-le</i>	<i>o-da-le</i>
basket	<i>tere-nge</i>	<i>tô-le</i>	<i>tô-le</i>
bead	<i>tahi</i>	<i>taiyi</i> (stone)	<i>kwoi</i>
beat	<i>ingo-taiya</i> (b. a person)	<i>yôkwö-be</i>	<i>on-yôkwö-be</i>
belt	<i>oto-go-le</i>	<i>are-kwa-ge</i>	...
bite	<i>m-o-paka-be</i> (b. me)	<i>öni-baga-be</i> (b. a person)	<i>öni-baga-be</i>
black	<i>chigi-u-go</i>	<i>be</i>	<i>i-kiu</i>
blood	<i>ko-che-nge</i>	<i>ga-che-nge</i>	<i>che-nge</i>
bone	<i>ng-i-to-nge</i> (your b.)	<i>öni-da-ge</i>	...
bow	<i>ta-nge</i> (? wood); <i>ta-hi</i> (as shown in <i>ng-i-tahi</i> ; (your bow).	<i>aai</i>	<i>ae</i>
breast	<i>ka</i>	<i>ga-ka-ge</i>	<i>ga-ga-ge</i>
canoe	<i>lâk-ke</i>	<i>du-nge</i>	<i>da-nge</i>
chin	<i>pi-to-nge</i> (c. bone)	<i>ibi-ta-nge</i> (c. bone)	...
cold	<i>chōma</i>	<i>ön-gitē-be</i> (to be c.)	...
cough	<i>ingo-ta-lie</i> (?ta-be) (to c.)	<i>udu-be</i>	<i>udu-be</i>
drink	<i>m-inggo-be</i> (I. d.)	<i>injo-be</i>	...
ear	<i>kwa-ge</i>	<i>ik-kwa-ge</i>	...
earth	<i>totanga-ge</i>	<i>tutano-nge</i>	...

¹⁸ See Appendix G.

¹⁹ Roots shown in italics.

ENGLISH.	COLEBROOKE'S JĀRAWA.	PORTMAN'S ÖNGES.	BONIG'S ÖNGES.
eat	ingo-lo-lia (? imp. lo-ba)	öni-lokwale-be	öni-kwarwo-be
elbow	m-ahā-lajebe (my e.)	aha-lagebòì	...
eye	jēbe	öni-jēbòì	öni-jēbòì
finger	m-ome (my f.)	ome	öno-boda-nge
fire	m-ona (my f.)	tu-ke	tu-ke
fish	ga-bohi	cho-nge	chau-nge
hair	otti	ode	ode
hand	ng-oni (your h.)	ome	ön-ome
	m-oni (my h.)	...	...
head	tebe	öni-tolagibòì (man's head)	ön-ota-be
honey	lo-ke	tanjai	tanja ²⁰
house	bede	bedai	...
iron (adze-head)	dahi	dòìi	dau
jump	i-to-le (a j.)	akwa-tokwa-be (to j.)	...
knee	ingo-le.ke (man's k.)	o-la-ge	...
laugh	onke-me-be	önge-ma-be	...
nail	m-o-bēgeda-nga (my n.)	m-o-bēdu-nge (my n.)	...
neck	tohi	öni-ngito	...
net	bato-li	chi-kwe	chi-kwe
nose	m-e-li (my n.)	öni-nyai-boi	...
paddle	m-ekal (my p.)	taai	tae
path	echo-li	iche-le	...
pig	stwi	kwi	...
pinch	ingi—gini—cha body—pinch—don't (don't pinch me).	öni-gini-be	gi-gine-be
plantain-tree	chole-li	yolò-le	chago-la, yaulo-la
pot	buchuhi	buchu	buchu
pull	toto-be (+ tigikwa)	tötö-be (go)	...
rain	oye	gujō-nge	beja
run	ng-aha-bēla-be (you r.)	aha-bēla-be	...
scratch	ing-bea-be	a-kwea-be	...
sing	goko-be	gögaba-be	...
sit	ng-ongtahi (s. you)	on-antokö-be	namtokö-be
sleep	ng-omoka (s. you)	omoka-be	...
sky	madamo	be-nge-nge (flattened out)	...
sneeze	o-che-ke (a s.)	e-chi-be (to s.)	...
spitting	inga-hwa-nge	öna-kwa-nge	...
star	chilo-be (? shines)	chilome-be (moon: ? shines)	hōia-hōia
stone	wu-le	taiyi	kwòì
sun	ehe	eke	eke
swim	kwa-be	kwane-be	...
take up	ng-a-toha (you t. u.)	gence-be	i-do-be (t. away)
teeth	m-ahoi (my t.)	m-alwe (my t.)	...
tongue	ta-li	alan-da-nge	...
walk	bunijwa-be	bujjō-be	bujō-be
water	m-igwe (my w.)	i-nge	i-nge
weep	wana-be	wana-be	wana-be
wind	tomjame	toiôte	toiôte
wood (tree)	ta-nge	da-nge	tada-nge

²⁰ Bonig has *lai* for honeycomb.

In addition to this list of words offering comparisons, the following from Colebrooke can more or less clearly be made out on the same lines:—

Colebrooke's Jārawa Words.

ENGLISH.	JĀRAWA.	ENGLISH.	JĀRAWA.
(white) ant	do-nge	friend	padu
bat	witwi-le	leg	chi-ge
belly	ng-a-poi (your b.)	man	ng-amo-lan (you are a man?)
bind	to-be, toto-be	mouth	m-ona (my m.)
bird	lohe	seed	kita-nge
bracelet	a-le	smoke	bali-ngi
charcoal	wahi	swallow	bi-be
crow	nahe	thigh	poi
flesh	wuhi	wash (self)	igna-doha-be

Portman is unfortunately always difficult to follow in his linguistic statements, as they are so uncertain. His vocabularies are apt to differ frequently from the statements in his lists of sentences, and where his vocabularies can be compared they are inconstant: but at p. 731, Vol. II., of his *History of our Relations with the Andamanese*, he gives a comparative list of Jārawa and Ōnge words from his own observations:—

Portman's Ōnge-Jārawa Words.

ENGLISH.	JĀRAWA.	ŌNGE.
arrow	bartoi	bartoi
axe	doi	doi
bamboo	otale	ôdale
bow	aai	aai
bucket	uhu	ukui
crab	kagai	kagaia
drink	injowa	injobe
eye	injamma	unijeboi
fire	tuhawe	tuke
foot	monge	muge
hair	enoide	môde
hand	mome	mome
iron	tanhi	doi (iron adze)
leaf	bebe	bebe
nautilus	gai	gai
navel	inkwa	onikwale
net	bortai	chikwe
nose	inama	uningaiboi
road	ischele	ichele
run	ahabelabe	akwebelabe
sea	etale	detale (Passage Id, an islet in the sea)
sit down	atôn	unantokobe
sky	baingala	bengonge
sleep	omohan	omokabe
string	etai	ebe
stone	nli	taiyi
tooth	anwai	makwe
water	enule	inge

In some of the above words, where Colebrooke differs from Portman, it will be found that Colebrooke's forms, when reduced to a common transcription, are nearest the Önge.

d. — Recovery of Colebrooke's Järawa Vocabulary of 1790.

By pulling the words in the first list to pieces, the identity in race of Colebrooke's native (Järawa) with Portman's natives (Önges) will be at once evident. Many roots and affixes are common, and the words are clearly built up precisely as are all other Andamanese words by radical prefixes to roots relating fundamentally to the body and its parts and by qualitative suffixes. In addition to this, the prefixes are joined to the "personal pronouns" by pre-inflexion in the manner peculiar to the Andamanese languages. And although we have nothing more on record of the Järawa tongue than Colebrooke's list, supplemented by Portman's, of any value, we have thus enough to establish the relation of Järawa and Önge as languages of the same Group, and the relation of both as languages of the same Family as the other Andamanese tongues.

In Järawa the *k* of Önge tends to interchange with *h*, and by inference the Järawas appear to use *ngg* for the Önge *ng* and to say *i-nggo* in place of *önge*.

Leaving the roots to explain themselves, the inflected forms of the "pronouns" show themselves, thus:—

Önge-Järawa "Pronouns."

ENGLISH.	JÄRAWA.	ÖNGE.
I, my	m' -	m' -
You, your	ng'-	ng'-

The qualitative suffixes appear to be as follow:—

Önge-Järawa Qualitative Suffixes.

for "nouns"	-li, -le	-le
for "verbal nouns"	-nge, -nga, -ge, -ke	-nge, -ng, -ge, ke
for "verbs"	-be	-be, me

The radical prefixes are given in a great variety of forms, which will probably disappear on closer knowledge of the languages.

Önge-Järawa Radical Prefixes.

JÄRAWA.	ÖNGE.
ingo-, ingi-, inga-, onke-, öng-, ö-	{ öni-, öna-, önu-, öno-, önan-, ina-, ine-, eng- eni-, önge.
uni	u-
o-, i-, ôt-	ô-, ö-, a-, e-
i-	eje-, ichin-, e-
pi-	ibi-, ebe-
i-	akwa-, akwe-, ako-, ik-, ig-, i-
aha-, a-	aha-, a-
omo-	omo-
oto-	are-
	alan-

Of these, as prefixes relating to mankind and its body, the following occur:—

öni-, a general prefix of the body, and then,

Class I.	... öni-	head, lip, neck, nose, navel, hip, testicles, stomach
Class II.	... ik-, ig-, i-	cheek, ear
Class III.	... ibi-	chin
Class IV.	... o-	fist, knee, nail, throat
Class V.	... alan	teeth

That the relation between concrete words for the parts of the body and those for ideas belonging to them is shown by the prefixes, comes out neatly in *ik-kwa-ge*, ear : *ik-ai-bene*, deaf. So, too, the words *ichin-da-nge* and *i-to-nge* given for "bone" probably refer to a bone of Class II.

e. — Grammar of Önge.

Mr. Bonig made a slight attempt at this by providing a few sentences and phrases. It is only an attempt, but it shows that the principles of the Ōnge are those of Andamanese generally. Thus we have :—

ode, hair.
 ön-ode, animal hair.
 miga m'ode, thy hair.
 ngi m'ode, your hair.
 otangka g'ode, { his } hair.
 { your }
 jelöto g'ode, our hair.
 götalöto g'ode, the hair of all of us.
 yetadakwe g'ode, some one's²¹ hair.
 otiedaka g'ode, their hair.

oduleda, sick.

 miga-m'oduleda, I am sick.
 ngi m'oduleda, you are sick.
 otangka g'oduleda, { he is } sick.
 { you are }
 jelöto g'oduleda, we are sick.
 götalöta g'oduleda, we are all sick.
 yetadakwe²¹ g'oduleda, some one is sick.
 otiedaka g'oduleda, they are sick.

This would seem to give m' as to the prefix of 'my' and 'your,' g as the prefix of all persons not the 'self.'

The few sentences are very obscure.

ön-ibiti dode, what have you?

ön-ibiti dali ilekwale-be, what are you saying?

g'ati bāma, what do you call this?

wanawe ötang, where is he?

ön-akuchöbe ötang, call him.

ötangka akuchwa, you are called.

g'oangkinkō-be, you go away.

le chune, there it is.

m'injaiche nene, I don't understand.

f. — Proof of the Identity of Önge-Järawa with the other Groups.

Among an untutored people, so long isolated even from the other Andamanese, one would hardly look for many roots now in common with them, but the following, which occur in such short lists as those available, sufficiently establish a common origin for the Family:—

Some Roots common to the Andaman Languages.

ENGLISH.	ÖNGE-JÄRAWA.	REMAINING LANGUAGES.
bat	witwi	wôt, wat, wot
cold	choma	chauki (Bêa)

21 The sense is that the person referred is absent.

ENGLISH.	ÖNGE-JÄRAWA.	REMAINING LANGUAGES.
red ochre	gyalap	bilap, upla
net	chi	chi
sneeze	che, chi	chiba (Bēa, Balawa)
"God"	Uluga : (<i>öluge</i> , thunder)	Puluga, Bilak (Bēa, <i>wul-nga</i> , storm)
turtle	chöbe	chokbe (Kede, Châriâr)
water	i, ig	ina (Bēa, Balawa)
bone	to	ta, toa (Bēa, Balawa)
wood	ta, da	ta, toa, to

Colebrooke showed all sorts of impossible things to his Järawa to name, and one interesting result is the following :—

ENGLISH.	JÄRAWA.	ÖNGE.
cotton-cloth }	pa — nge — be	be — nge — be
paper }	flat — become — is	flat — become — is

Of course, no Järawa had ever seen before anything approaching to either object, and this man's one expression for both means "it is (has been) flattened," which is what the savage meant to convey, when asked anything so impossible as to name them.

In Appendix B will be found a further list of Önge words to aid in the study of this interesting language.

g. — Derivation of Mincopie.

We are now in a position to solve a great puzzle of ethnographers for a century and more : why were the Andamanese called Mincopie by Europeans ? What word does this transcription represent ? It can now be split up thus :—

M-ö—nge—be
I—man—kind—am
(I am an Önge)

Or, as the Järawas perhaps pronounce the expression, "M-inggo-be," or even "M-injo-be," I am an Inggo (Injo). The name given by the Önges to themselves is a "verbal noun," *önge*, man-being. So that when questioned as to himself by Colebrooke, his Järawa replied "M'inggobe," or something like it, which compound expression by mistranscription and misapprehension has become the well-known Mincopie of the general ethnological books in many languages for an Andamanese. The Önges call their own home, the Little Andaman, Gwabe-l'Önge. Järawa is a modern Bēa term, possibly radically identical with Yērewa, the Bēa name for the Northern Group of Tribes.

It is just possible that Colebrooke's Järawa misunderstood what was wanted altogether and simply said, "I am (will be, would be) drinking : *m-inggo-be*, I-drink-do."

I have now to record a great disappointment. The proof that the method herein adopted for recovering the Järawa Language was correct lay in the fact that the word *i-nge* for "water" was ascertained from a little Järawa boy captured during an expedition in February, 1902, and the identical word was quite independently unearthed from Colebrooke's and Portman's Vocabularies as Önge-Järawa for "water." The only other word clearly ascertained from the boy, *walu-ng* for "pig," has not been gathered independently as yet. This little boy was the last of the prisoners left, who were captured on that occasion, as the women and small children and girls were all returned and only two boys kept back for a while, in order to get their language, &c., from them. Of these, the elder died of fever, and on the very day that their language was fairly recovered, and we were in a position to set to work to learn quickly from him, the younger died very suddenly of pneumonia, without any warning illness.

APPENDIX A.

The Fire Legend in the Bojigngiji Group.

(The Bēa Version has been already given.)

Balawa Version.

Dim-Dôra — *le rita* *Keri-l'ong-tôwer* — *te Puluga* *l'i toago* *choapa l' — omo*
(a Man) long-ago (a Place) — by God his platform fire bringing
— *kate* | *ong ik* *akat-pôra* *puguru — t l' — a — re* | *Bolub* *ka Tarkôr.*
— was | he taking all—men burn — t di — d | (a Man) and (a Man)
ka Bilichau *ongot oto — jurugmu* — *t — ia* | *ongot* *at — yôkat* *mo*
and (a Man) they in-the-sea-wen — t — did | they fish becom—
— *nga* | *ongot oaro — tichal-ena — te* *Rokwa-l'ar-tonga-baroiij — a* *oko — dal*
— ing | they carry-taking— by (a Place) -village— in fire-mak—
— *nga l' — a — re*
— ing di — d

Portman's Rendering. — *Dim-Dôra*, a very long time ago, at *Keri-l'ong-tôwer*, was bringing fire from God's platform. He, taking the fire, burnt everybody with it. *Bolub* and *Tarkôr* and *Bilichau* fell into the sea and became fish. They took the fire to *Rokwa-l'ar-tonga* village and made fires there.

Bojigyâb Version.

Tôl-l'oko-tim — *an Bilik l'ong — pat — ye* | *Luratut* | *l'ong at* *ab — lechi — nga* |
(a Place) — in God sleep— did | (a Bird) | he fire bring— ing |
Luratut l'ong — di — ye | *kota ong Bilik l'ab — biki — ye* | *kota Bilik* *l'ong — konyi*
(a Bird) seiz — ed | then he God burn — t | then God awaken
— *ye* | *Bilik* | *l'ong at li — ye* | *ong e* *Luratut l'oto* — *toi-chu — nga* |
— ed | God | he fire seiz — ed | he then (a Bird) (with) fire hitt — ing |
kota kol ong e Tarchal l'ote — toi-chu — ye | *Chalter* *l'ong — di — ye* |
then again he then (a Man) (with) fire-hit — did | (a Bird) seiz — ed |
ong Lau-Cham — len da — nga | *Wôta-Emi — en ota Lau-Cham* | *n'ong o — kadak — nga.*
he ancestors — to giv — ing | *Wôta-Emi* — in then ancestors | they fire-mak-ing.

Portman's Rendering. — God was sleeping in *Tôl-l'oko-tima*. *Luratut* went to bring fire. *Luratut* caught hold of the fire, then he burnt God. Then God woke up. God seized the fire. He hit *Luratut* with the fire. Then again he hit *Tarchal* with the fire. *Chalter* caught hold of it. He gave it to the ancestors. Then the ancestors made fire at *Wôta-Emi*.

Jūwai Version.

Kuro-t'on-mik — a Mom Mirit — la | *Bilik l'ôkô — ema — t* | *peakar at — lo top* |
(a Place) — in Mr. Pigeon | God slep — t | wood fire — with stealing |

— *chike* at *laiche* *Lech* — *lin* a | *kotak* a *ôko* — *kodak* — *chine* at — *lo*
 — was fire the-late (a Man) — to he | then he fire-make — did fire — with
Karat-tatak — *emi* — in
 (a Place) — at

Portman's Rendering.—Mr. Pigeon stole a firebrand at Kuro-t'on-mika, while God was sleeping. He gave the brand to the late Lech, who then made fires at Karat-tatak-emi.

Kôl Version.

Tôl-l'oko-tim — *en* *Bilêk* — *la* *pat* — *ke* | *Luratut* — *la* *Oko-Emi* — *t* at *kek* — *an* |
 (a Place) — in God asleep — was | (a Bird) (a Place) — in fire too — *k* |
Kôlotat — *ke* | *lin* *l'* — *a* — *chol* — *an* *Min-tong-ta* — *kete* | *Min-tong-ta* — *kete* — *lak*
 (a Man) — was | by (he) — wen — *t* (a Place) — to | (a Place) — to — by
l' — *ir* — *bil* — *an* | *Kôlotat* *l'ir* — *pin* *l'ir* — *dôk* — *an* | *k'irim* — *kôdak* — *an* |
 (it) — out-wen — *t* | (a Man) charcoal break — did | fire-make-did |
n'a *n'otam* — *tepur* — *an* | at — *ke* *n'ote* — *tepur* — *an* | *Min-tong tôk-pôroich* —
 they alive — became | fire — by (they) — alive — became | (a Place) village —
in *Jangil* | *n'a* *l'oko* — *kôdak* — *an* |
 in ancestors | they fire-make — did |

Portman's Rendering. — God was sleeping at Tôl-l'oko-tima. Luratut took away fire to Oko-Emi. Kôlotat went to Min-tong-ta, (taking fire with him from Oko-Emi). At Min-tong-ta the fire went out. Kôlotat broke up the charred firewood and made fire again, (by blowing up the embers). They (the people there) became alive. Owing to the fire they became alive. The ancestors thus got fire in Min-tong-tôk village.

APPENDIX B.

Önge Vocabularies.

The "Outer Group" of the Andamanese (Önges and Jārawas) bears the closest resemblance in customs, &c., *i. e.*, assuming them to bear any at all, to the Semangs and Aetas, of all the Andamanese Tribes, and hence there is much interest exhibited in their languages. In this Appendix, therefore, is gathered together as much of the Önge Vocabulary as can be with any degree of safety extracted from Portman's *Andamanese Manual*, the information in which is not, however, unfortunately as clear as is desirable.

Subsequently to the compilation of this article, Mr. M. Bonig, Assistant Harbour Master at Port Blair, made, at the present writer's request, several trips, in January 1903, to the Little Andaman, the home of the Önges. He brought back with him three Önges from Kwätinyābōi Creek on the East Coast of that island, named Tākōâte, Antiōkāne, and Antiōōkāne, with the object of learning their language. When these men were taken home again, four others, named Idabōi, Gōgamin, Agodōle and Nyābōi, of the Palankwe Sept were induced to go to Port Blair. Mr. Bonig found that they understood the words he learnt from the East Coast, but altered a good many, showing that Portman's words were collected in Ekita Bay, which belongs to the Palankwe Sept, and that differentiating dialects exist on the island.

In the first of the accompanying *Vocabularies*, wherever Portman's words have been verified by Mr. Bonig, the fact is shown in square brackets []. In the second are recorded the words as to which Mr. Bonig either entirely differed from Portman or which he collected in addition. In both the roots have been separated from the prefixes and suffixes.

I. — Portman's Vocabulary.

Bonig's variants in square brackets.

abundant	gene	cane-necklace	i-deda-le
abuse (to)	önu-kweba-be	canoe	da-nge [ditto]
ache (to)	öni-dang-wule-be (? bones a.)	cast away (to)	yöböbine-be
acid	a-nöii	cheek	giy-boi (your c.)
adze [chisel]	döii [dau] ²²	chin	ibi-da-nge
ant [small black]	chantibo-de [ran°]	clam	taga-le
apron (women's)	ga-kwinyoga-le	clap (to)	ako-bana-bekwe-be
armlet [fibre]	iibi-kwe	clay (white [yellow] for smearing [the body])	we [öj]
arrow (iron) [reed]	batoi [bato]	cloud	baije
arrow (wood)	tota-le	cocoonut	da-ge (? wood, tree)
arrow (fish)	tome	cold (to feel)	öngi-te-be
arrow (pig)	taköi	come (to)	inai-öba-be, önu-kwange- me [ön-aiya°]
arrow-shaft	takete-le	copulate (to)	gö-tölö-be
ashes	tongku-te [tong°]	cough	udu-ge [ditto]
awake (to)	löga-be	crab [large edible]	kagaia [kaga]
bag (of netting)	kumumwi, taugu-le	creek	kuai
bale out (to)	gaiye-böko-be	cyrena-shell (scraper)	totu-le
bamboo	ö-da-le [o-da-le]	dance	ön-ola-ge
banana	yölö-le	dead (to be)	bechame-me
bark	gangwi	deaf	ik-aibene
barb (arrow)	tome	dish (wooden)	da-nge-, (wood) töba-nge
basket	tö-le [tö-le]	drink (to)	injo-be
beard	ön-gu-bo-de	dugong	twowe
beat (to)	[ön-]yökwö-be [yökwö°]	ear	ik-kwa-ge
beetle [dung]	todanchu [°ran°]	earth	tutano
belt (round)	m-are-kwa-ge (my b.)	eat (to)	ön-i-lokwale-be
belt (broad, flat)	m-ino-kwe (my b.)	ebb tide	ga-de
binder	tu-kwe	embrace	ku-ge
bite (to)	ön-i-baga-be [ditto]	eye	ön-i-jebai [ditto]
black	be	fall (to)	i-teka-be [gi-°]
blood	ga-che-nge [che-nge]	fastening (a)	gwi-kwe
blow (to) [out fire]	a-kwöbö-be [ta-kuwö°]	feather	gö-de
boil (to)	tamboi-(be)	fern (sp.)	tomojai, lakakai
bone	ichin-da-nge	fever (to have)	ungi-te-be
bone (human)	ön-i-da-nge	fight (to)	ön-ukwe-be
bow	a-ai [a-ē]	finger	ome
break (to)	gi-kwa-be [gi-kwa°]	fire	tuke [ditto]
breast	ga-ka-ge [ga-ge]	fish	cho-ge [chau°]
breathe (to)	kwaiö-be	fist	o-beke [ön-°]
broom	da-ge	flip (to)	ön-i-tötöge-be
bucket (wood)	ukwi [uku]	flood tide	kobakwe-le
bucket (bamboo)	kubuda-nge	fly (a)	ngonoi [ngöno]
butterfly	bebe-le [ditto]		
call (to)	ön-gyö-be, ön-ai-waba-be		
cane	tati [ditto]		

²² This reads like a corruption of the Indian and Burman *dä*, a universal instrument used as a knife, axe, adze, sword, &c., as the result of recent intercourse with strangers.

food (to take)	gi-da-be	murder (to)	ôlôlaji-be
foot	m-u-ge (my f.) [ôn-u-°]	nail	m-obeda-nga (my n.)
forbid (to)	go-bokwe-be	nautilus-shell (cup)	gaai
glad (to be)	a-kiokô-be	navel	ôn-i-kwa-le [ôn-o-°]
go (to)	ôn-i-tôto-be (come)	neck	ôn-a-ngito
God	Ulu-ge	necklace	m-a-ngitoke (my n.)
good	i-wado	net	chi-kwe [ditto]
grass	tokwongöye	nose	ôn-i-nyaiboi
green	totanda-nge	orchid (sp.)	köyö
gun	ôn-ini-nye	ornament (of shav- ings)	kwibo-le
hair	m-ode (my h.) [ode]	outrigger	i-bedu-ge
hand	m-ome (my h.) [ôn-ome]	paddle	taai [tai]
head-dress (cane)	ng-i-deda-le (your h. d.)	pandanus fruit	ba-le
heavy (to be)	ga-tukwô-be	path	iche-le
hip	ôn-i-boi	peel	gangwi
hiss	ng-ik-iki (you h.)	pig	kwi
hit (with arrow)	gai-be	pinch	ôn-i-gini-be [gi-gine°]
honey	tanjai [°ja]	prick	ôn-i-takwa-be
hook (for fish)	tome	pot (cooking)	bûchu (<i>tô-le</i> , its case) [ditto]
hop (to)	ichin-kwôle-be	quick, be !	ing-kô !
hot (to be)	jonjome-be	rain	gujô-nge
how much ?	chiö ?	red ochre	alame
hum (to)	gojai	red wax	kwengane
hungry (to be)	ôn-gi-ai-me	resin	mone [ditto]
hut	bedai [ditto]	ringworm	jwichwi
I, my	mi	rope	kwôla-ge
Indian (an)	i-nene	rub (to)	eb-ele-be
iguana	giti	run (to)	[ôn] akwe-bele-be [akwa-beta°]
iron (knife)	lea	saline	ngie
jawbone (human)	ang-bo-de	saliva	ina-kwe-nge
ornament.		salt	inje
jump (to)	akwa-tokwa-be	sand	belai
kick (to)	ôn-i-tekwôme-be	scar	ôn-i-bare
kiss (to) (? smell)	nyônyô-be	scratch (to)	akwe-ô-be
knee	m-ola-ge (my k.)	sea	i-nge (water)
kneel	ôn-o-lakwôchô-be	shampoo (to)	ôn-i-ô-be
laugh (to)	ônge-ma-be	shark	kadu
leaf	be-be (to be flat)	sharp	gi-echare
lick (to)	gi-tome-be	sharpen (to)	totôkwe-be
lie down (to)	ng-ainyi-be (you l. d.)	shave	ôn-o-tale-be
lip	ôn-gume	shell	todandwi
lizard [sp.]	kô-ge [koichai]	shoot (arrow)	gai-be [ditto]
man	ôn-i-agi-le (married m.)	sing (to)	gö-gaba-ba [nyö°]
mangrove	tun-da-nge (<i>tun-tree</i>)	sit (to)	ôn-nantökô-be [nantoka°]
mangrove fruit	kwea	skin	gangwi (peel)
marry (to)	ôn-ya-be	sky	bengo-nge (what is flat)
mat (sleeping)	emai	sleep (to)	omo-ka-be
micturate	ô-chölô-be		
moon	chile-me [chilo-me]		
mouse	ala-nge		
much	liwa-nga		

small	baiai	thorn	tundankie
smoke	ön-o-taboi	throat	ö-ngito
snake	tomogwi	throw	waikwô-be
snake (sea)	tebu-le	thunder	ölu-ge ("God")
sneeze	e-chi-be	tiptoe (to be on)	ön-u-jagaiö-be
sore (a)	ön-i-bai [ditto]	tongue	alan-da-nge
spill (to)	gi-bu-be	tooth	m-a-kwe (my t.)
spine	ön-o-noda-kwoi	torch	to-kwe [ti-kwe]
spitting	ön-a-kwa-nge [ön-akwi ²]	tray (for food)	toba-ge
sprinkle (to)	ön-a-nadi-be	tumble (to)	i-teka-be
squeak (to)	gi-lako-be	turtle	nadela-nge [ditto], takwatoai
squeeze (to)	ön-eg-e-be	turtle eggs	kwagane
stand	doka-be	tusk (pig)	a-kwe
stomach	ön-a-nga-nge	umbrella (leaf)	o-modu
stone	taiyi	untie (to)	i-lebu-be
stool (to)	ön-i-yu-be	vomit (to)	ö-bulö-be
stretch (to)	on-a-kwombwoke-be	walk	bujiö-be [bujo-be]
stretch (to s. oneself)	gi-götö-be	water	i-nge [ditto]
strike (to)	kwöke-be	wax (white bees')	chileme
string (to)	e-be	weep (to)	wana-be
stroke (to)	ön-a-öe-be	whetstone	tijiö-be
sun	eke [ditto]	whisk (for flies)	tomo-ge
surf	balame	whistling	ön-i-anga-le
swallow (a)	tugede-le	white	tonkute
sweep (to)	tote-be	wife	ön-i-au-le
swim (to)	kwane-be	wind	totôte [ditto]
take away (to)	ge-akingkö-be	wound	ön-i-ba-le [i-bäi]
take hold (to)	ge-nge-be	yawn (to)	ön-a-langötö-be
tattoo (to)	ng-ulukwone-be (you t.)	yes	ön-a-laije
tear (to)	i-dokwö-be		
testicle	ön-i-kwö-ge [ditto]		

II. — Bonig's Vocabulary.

Portman's variants in square brackets.

adze (small, for canoes)	gan-kwe	burn	duleji-be
ant (large, red-tree)	lalu-lalu	burn (oneself)	ön-o-mama-me
arm	ön-ibi-le	buttock	ön-nena-böi
arise	dobinkate-be	call (to)	ön-a-kuchö-be
arrive	gi-gu-be		[ön-gyö-be : ön-ai-waba-be]
awake (to)	gi-tanji-be [löga-be]	carry	yegote-be
bad	i-bi-te	catch (to)	gi-bogulä-be
bath	ön-a-kwantamule	chew	ön-i-lokwale-be
bee	gu-ki	child	ö-chile
bird	no-kai	climb (to)	ö-twake-be
black	i-kiu [bê]	close (to be)	gai-chebene-be
blind	nebobene	cloth	kwelabö
bottle	bota-le	cohabit (to)	ga-ele-be [gö-tölö-be]
breast, to support the (women)	ön-wetaka-be	collect, heap up (to)	gi-mbu-be
bring back	ga-tiko-be : che-be	cook (to)	gi-wolai-be
brow	ejala	coral	taie
bundle (palm-leaf)	na-nge	crab (large, edible)	kaga

creep (to)	ön-a-lakachyö-be	hurt (to)	ön-ega-be
cry (to)	wana-be	iron (or any metal)	take
cut (oneself)	akite-be	knife	chule [lea]
cut (iron)	ngatike-be	knife-handle	chule-yan-kwe
cut (with a knife)	gi-ji-be	leaf	tomoji
cut (with an adze)	gü-ete-be	lift (to)	ga-ntakwa-be
dance (a)	wanda-nge	light (lamp)	mone
day	ekuje	limp (to be)	ga-ji-be
deep	öma	little	ö-kiwea
dirty	ga-bitima	liver	gide
dog (generic term)	i-kita : wöme	lizard (flycatcher)	ketekete-le
dog (female)	chinge-ge	lost (to be)	logukonji-be
dog (male)	takwado	man	gae-le [ön-agi-le, married m.]
dress (to)	töikute-be	month	ön-a-ngume
drift (to)	gi-buko-be	mosquito	kwina-nge
[dry	unkata ?]	mushroom	kwatikwa-ge
dull	ngi-kuno	night	o-tebebelan
eat (to)	ön-i-kwawo-be [ön-i-lokwale-be]	orchid (sp.)	tomotui
egg	aie	pack (a bundle, to)	gi-kwe-be
empty out (to) ²³	gi-bu-be	pain	ön-a-ngitöwe
fern (sp.)	tikwanchute-le	perspiration	ön-o-tage-le
fetch (to)	alemaj-i-be	pigeon (imperial)	uma-ge
fill	wötangle-be	pigeon (Nicobar)	tututu
few	giwe	plantain	chagola ; yaulola
fin	gi-böle	present (to)	gi-bone-be
finger	ön-o-boda-nge [ome]	rain	beja [gujö-nge]
finished ! (I have no more !)	ön-a-ngele	recover (lost article, to)	gi-tekwabeche-be
fire-brand	gi-dakwe	recovery (from illness)	gi-gangula
firewood	name	red	i-jedo
flame (to flame up of fire)	boloji-be	return (come back, to)	ön-i-katako-be
flower	totibulí	rub (to)	ön-kweta-be
forehead	ejala	run away (to)	alemake-be
forenoon	ekeome	row (paddle, to)	ö-glanji-be
fry (to)	gi-ga-be	scar	ge-ki-nge [ön-i-bare]
full (of the belly)	i-bö-dia	screwpine	mane
give (to)	eböika-be	see (to)	ga-teaba-be
go (to)	gö-angkinko-be [ön-i-töte-be]	shallow	i-kata
hammer	kaula-le	sharp	ngi-gi-lekuta [gi-echare]
head	ön-ota-be	shave (to)	kwedale-be [ön-o-tale-be]
headache	o-duleda	shell	tenje [todandwi]
hide (to)	ön-a-kwe-be	sick	o-duleda
hold (to)	ge-nge-be	silent (to be)	kwemetamöi-be
hook (large, iron)	adu	skate (fish)	dugadode
honeycomb	lai	skin	gati [gangwi, peel]
hot (to be)	o-bentelenene-be [jonjome-be]	small	mintainene : giwe [baiai]
		smear (the body, to)	ön-a-kwawe-be
		smoke (to)	nanto-be
		speak (to)	gi-lekwalinka-be
		spear	gi-takwatewe

²³ But see "collect, heap up."

star	kòiakòia	tickle (to)	òn-a-ngedegede-be
stear	gi-ngulü-be	to-morrow	ekajetu
sting (of a mosquito, to)	òn-i-bulukò-be	tongs (bamboo, to use)	wako-be
sting (of a bee, to)	òn-a-e-be	tortoise-shell	o-dati
stone	kwòì [taiyi]	turn over (to)	jule-be
stop (to)	kwalakaji-be	understand !	òn-ilokalema !
stout	òn-i-deame	wash (to)	gi-kwantai-be
sunrise (to)	(eke) ²⁴ gi-bete-be	wax (black bees')	tibii
sunset (to)	(eke) ²⁴ gi-otukitibieji-be	white	òikala
sweep (to)	gatie-be [tote-be]	whistle	gwana [òn-i-anga-le]
take away (to)	i-do-be [ge-akingkò-be]	wood	tada-nge
tall	midokwalenene	yam	kalu
throw	toko-be [waikwò-be]	yellow	gi-kita
tick	nana-ge	yes	niai [òn-a-laije]

APPENDIX C.

The Andamanese Tribal Names according to the Aka-Bēa Language.

<i>Full.</i>		<i>Abbreviated.</i>	<i>Full.</i>		<i>Abbreviated.</i>
Âkà-Châriâr-(da)	...	Chariar	Âkà-Bojigyâb-(da)	...	Bojigyab
Âkà-Kôrà-(da)	...	Kora	Âkà-Balawa-(da)	...	Balawa
Âkà-Tâbo-(da)	...	Tabo	Âkà-Bēa-(da)	...	Bea
Âkà-Yēre-(da) (also Âkà-Jāro-da)	...	Yere	Ōnge	...	Ōnge
Ôko-Jūwai-(da)	...	Juwai	Jārawa-(da)	...	Jārawa
Âkà-Kôl-(da)	...	Kol			

Below is given a table of the names given to themselves and each other by the five South Andaman Tribes or Bojigngīji Group, traditionally sprung from one tribe. It brings out the following facts:— in each language of the Group the prefixes and suffixes differ much and the roots remain practically the same throughout for the same sense. These facts strongly indicate one fundamental tongue for this group of languages.

Table of the names for themselves and each other used by the five South Andaman tribes or Bojigngīji group.

Sense.		Tribe.	Bea.	Balawa.	Bojigyab.	Juwai.	Kol.
Fresh-water	...	Bea	Âkà-Bēa-da	Akat-Bea	O-Bea-da	Oko-Beye- lekile.	O-Bea-che
Opposite-side	...	Balawa	Âkà-Bala- wa-da.	Akat-Bale	O-Pole-da	Oko-Pole- lekile.	O-Pole-che
Our language	...	Bojigyab	Âkà-Bojig- yâb-da.	Akat-Bo- jigynab- nga.	O-Puchik- war-da.	Oko-Puchik- yar- lekile.	O-Puchik- war-che.
Patterns cut on bows	...	Juwai	Âkà-Jūwai- da.	Akat-Juwai	O-Juwai-da	Oko-Juwai- lekile.	O-Juwai- che.
Bitter or salt taste	...	Kol	Âkà-Kôl-da	Akat-Kol	O-Kol-da	Oko-Kol- lekile.	O-Kol-che

So too Yēre, Jeru or Jāro for the Âkà-Yēre Tribe means a (sort of) "canoe" in all the languages and Ōnge means "a man" on its own language.

²⁴ eke means the sun.

MISCELLANEA.

SURVIVAL OF OLD ANGLO-INDIAN
COMMERCIAL TERMS.

BY SIR R. C. TEMPLE.

ANY one who has had occasion to struggle with such a book as Stevens' *New and Complete Guide to the East India Trade*, 1775, or with Anglo-Indian terms occurring in the old Company's *Factory Records* and similar documents will appreciate the value of settling precisely what is meant by Anglo-Indian commercial terms. There is a chance of doing this in certain instances by an examination of the Indian commercial newspapers of to-day, as many more of the old terms have survived in commerce than would at first appear possible to the outside public.

Here are a few taken from a Supplement to *Capital*, published in Calcutta in 1902.

Surviving Anglo-Indian Terms.

Coir. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1510.

"Coir fibre. Demand has somewhat improved."

Doll; dal. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1673.

"Dal or split peas. Demand for all kinds is slack Masuri dal and Khari Masuri Oridh or kolye dal gram dal greenpeas dal arhar dal khasri dal khasari or mutta."

Gingerly. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1726.

"Jinjeli, sesamum or tilseed oil. Prices continue very high owing to light supply."

Gunny. Oldest quotation in Yule, c. 1590.

"Australian Gunny Market, bags and bagging."

Gram. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1702.

"Gram supplies have overtaken deliveries."

Golah. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1785.

"Salt. The market continues steady and the sales during the week are as follows; ex ships ex golahs"

Madapolam (piece-goods), Oldest quotation in Yule, 1673: see Bowrey's *Countries round the Bay of Bengal* (1669—1679), p. 100, n. 1.

"Grey Madapolam."

Myrabolam. Oldest quotation in Yule, c. B. C. 340.

"Myrabollams There has been no life in the trade: for export to the Australian Colonies for some Bimlinuts."

Shellac. Oldest quotation in Yule (s. v. Lac), c. 1343.

"There is a fair enquiry for ready parcels Button lac, a small business is passing: garnet there is nothing to report There is very little movement 300 cases button arrived this week in free condition for the American market."

Tincal. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1525.

"The article is selling superior Cossipore is reaching."

Weights.

Maund. Oldest quotation in Yule, 1610.

[This very old word and its variants at the present day are well worth comparing with the old books.]

"The Indian Maund is 82½ lbs.: the Factory Maund is 74 lbs. 10 oz. 11 dwt.: the Bazar Maund is 82 lbs. 2 oz. 3 dwt.: 1 cwt., i. e. 112 lbs., equals Bazar 1 md. 14 seers 8½ chittacks."

Modern Terms.

Kerosine Oil. "Indian named brands Mango, Ram, Sumatra, Rangoon."

Rice. "Commercial terms for Bengal Rice: table, white Patna, Brushed Seeta, Seeta, gross Seeta, chunichalla, khud or B. T., cleaned gross, prime Patna, gross Patna."

Names for Boiled or Brown Rice: "Boiled Patna, ballam, nagra, moonghy, zaree, kazla, kuttuck."

Sugar. Names for Indian sugar: "Cane, Benares, Shomsara, Dummah, Vally Gour, Bobarah, Akharah, Goburdanga and Jadurhat Dollo, Akrah."

Names for refined sugar: "Cossipore, Cossipore Grossery, Madras and Arcot granulated, China granulated, Penang, Mauritius."

Tea. Names for Indian tea: "Assam, Cachar, Sylhet, Darjeeling, Doocars, Terai."

HINDUISM IN THE HIMALAYAS.

BY H. A. ROSE, I.C.S.

(Concluded from Vol. XXVI, p. 43.)

IV. — The Legend of Mahāsū Dēotā.

Mahāsū, doubtless a corruption of **Mahā-Siva**, is the god who gives his name to the Mahāsū Hill near Simla and other places in the Simla hills. In the legend that follows he appears in quadruple form as four brothers, just as Bānā Sur had four sons.³⁵

When Krishna disappeared at the end of the Dwāpar Yug, the Pāṇḍavas followed him. On their road to Badri-kāsharam they crossed the Tons, and Rājā Yudhashthir, struck with the beauty of the place, ordered Biswā Karmā to build a temple there. Here the Pāṇḍavas, with Draupadi, halted 9 days. They named the place Hanol, and thence journeyed by the Gangotri and Jannotri ravines, through Kedār, to Badri Nāth, where they disappeared, and the Kālī Yug began.

At its commencement demons wandered over the Uttarā Khaṇḍa, devouring the people and plundering towns and villages. The greatest of the demons was Kirmar, who had Beshī, Sengi, and a host of minor demons under him at Maindārth, on the Tons, whence they ravaged towns and villages, until the people sought refuge in cliffs, caves, and ravines. The demons devoured every one who came in their way. Once the seven sons of Hūnā Brāhman, who practised penance in the Deoban forest, went to bathe in the Tons river and encountered Kirmar, who devoured them all.

As they did not return for some time, their mother set out in search for them, but when she reached the river without getting any clue to her sons, she sat down on its bank and began to weep bitterly. Meanwhile, Kirmar, passing by, was struck with her beauty and asked why she wept. Kirtakā turned to him and said her seven sons had gone to bathe in the river and had not returned home. Hearing this, Kirmar said, "I am fascinated by thy beauty. If thou wilt accede to my heart's desire, I will extinguish the fire of my heart and will be grateful to thee and try to help thee in this difficulty. I am a brave man, descended from Rāwan. I have won the kingdom of these hills through the strength of my own arm."

The chaste wife was terrified at these words and they increased her grief. In her distress she began to pray, saying, "O Lord, the giver of all boons, everything rests with thee."

Dohā (couplet).

*Puttar dukh dukhīā bhāī.**Par-bal abalā āj,**Sattī ko sat jāt hai :**Rākho, Ishwar, lāj.*

I was distressed at the loss of my sons.

To-day I am a woman in another's power,

A chaste woman whose chastity is like to be lost :

O God, keep my chastity !

After this she took her way home, and by the power of God the demon's sight was affected, so that Kirtakā became invisible to him as she passed. She then told the story to her husband, saying with clasped hands that Durgā Dēvi would be pleased with her devotion and destroy the demons, for she alone was endowed with the power of averting such evil. The demons had corrupted religion, outraged chastity, and taken men's lives.

On hearing this, her husband said they would go and worship Hāṭ-koṭī Ishwari Mātā. So Hūnā went to the goddess with his wife. He first offered her flowers, and then prayed to Hāṭeshwari Durgā with the eight hands. While he prayed he unsheathed a dagger

³⁵ Temple's *Legends of the Panjab*, III., pp. 354 et seqq.

and was about to cut off his own head with it, when the goddess revealed her spirit to him, caught his hand and said, "I am greatly pleased with thy devotion. Go to the mountains of Kashmir, pray to God, and all thy desires will be fulfilled. Shiv-jî will be pleased and will fulfil thy desires. Go there cheerfully and there will be no obstacle in thy way."

Obeying the order of the goddess, Hûnâ went at once, and in a few days reached his destination. After his departure, he gave up eating grain and lived on vegetables. He also gave up clothes, using the bark of trees for his dress. He spent most of his time in worship, sometimes standing on one toe. When Shiv-jî was pleased with him, the spirit of the four-armed image addressed him, saying, "I am greatly pleased with thee: ask me any boon, which thou desirest."

On hearing these words from the god Siva, Hûnâ clasped his hands and said, "O Siva thou hast power to kill the demons. Thou hast power to repel all enemies and to remove all difficulties. I pray and worship the Ganges, the saviour of the creatures of the three worlds, which looks most beautiful as it rests on thy head. There are no words to describe thy glory. The beauty of thy face, which is so brilliant with the serpents hanging round thy neck, beggars all description. I am highly indebted to the goddess of Hât-koî, at whose feet I bow my head, and by whose favour I and my wife are so fortunate as to see thee in the Kali Yug."

Uttar Khaṇḍ meṇ rākshas basē, manukhoṇ kâ kartē dhār;

Kul muluk barbād kiya, dādī hogāi ujār.

Tum hî Rudar, tum hî Bishnû Nand Gopāl.

Dukh hūḍ sur sādhuoṇ ko; māro rākshas tat-kāl.

Sāt puttār mujh dās ke nahāne gaye jab parbhāt:

Jab ghātī gayē nadī Tōṇs ke jinko Kirmar khāyo ek sāth.

The demons who dwelt in the Northern Region are preying upon the people.

They have laid waste the country and the people have fled.

Thou only art Rudar (Siva); thou alone art Bishnû Nand Gopāl.³⁶

The sages and devotees are in distress; kill the demons at once.

Early in the morning the seven sons of me thy slave went to bathe.

When they reached the banks of the River Tons, Kirmar ate them at once,

The god Siva was pleased at these words and said, "O Rikhi, the people of the Kali Yug being devoid of religion have lost all strength. I admire thy sincere love and true faith, especially as thou didst not lose heart in worshipping me. Hence all thy desires shall be fulfilled and I have granted thee the boon asked for. Be not anxious, for all the devils will be killed in a few days."

Dohâ (couplets).

Bidd kiyo jab Bipra ko, diyē akshat, phûl, chirdg.

Śaktī rūp pahle pargaṭ gaī, Maindārath ke bāg.

Char jō Bipra āpne, rākho mujh par iēk.

Shakti rūp ke āng se, ho-gayē deb anēk.

Purgatē āng sē debtē, rōm rōm sē bīr.

Istrī sahit bidd kiyo: 'rākho man mēh dhīr.'

When (the god) bade the Brâhman farewell he gave him rice, flowers, and a lamp.

A Saktî (goddess) first appeared in the garden at Maindârath.

Go home, Brâhman, and place reliance on me.

Countless divinities arose from the body of the Saktî.

Gods appeared from her body, and heroes from her every hair.

She dismissed him with his wife saying: 'keep patience in thy heart.'

³⁶ Explained to mean 'the son of Nand, i. e., Krishna.

When the god gave Hûnâ Rikhî leave to go, he gave him rice, a vessel containing flower and a lamp, and said, "O Rîshi, go home and keep thy confidence in me. A Sakti (goddess) will first appear in the garden at Maindârath. Numerous demons will come out of her thimble, and every hair of her body will send forth a hero. Do not lose courage, but go home with thy wife. Keep the garland of flowers, the rice, and the lamp which I have given thee concealed beneath the *pîpal* tree which stands in the garden behind thy house, and perform the customary daily worship of all these. Light this lamp and offer me flowers and incense on the *amâvas* of Bhâdoñ and thereafter worship me with a sincere heart. Also perform a *jâgaran*³⁷ on that date for one day and night. By so doing, thou wilt, on the third day, observe a Shakti emerge from the ground with a fountain. Flames will then be visible all around. From her forehead and other limbs will spring gods, who will be named after the member from which they were born. The four gods, called the **Nâg Chauth** or **Mahâsu**, will appear on the 4th of the light half of Bhâdoñ. Those who appear on the following day, *i. e.*, the 5th, will be called **Kiyâlû** and **Banâr**. Moreover, many distinguished above the rest by their courage will spring from the Shakti's hair. They will kill the demons and give great happiness to the people. They will fix their capital at Hanol, which was founded by the Pânḍavas."

When this boon was granted to Hûnâ Rikhî, he walked round the god and paid him obeisance. After this he went his way homewards and the god disappeared.

After many days the Rikhî reached home with his wife, and acting on the god's directions carefully placed the lamp, flowers, and rice on the prescribed spot. On the *amâvas* of Bhâdoñ he worshipped and lighted the lamp. On the third day a fountain sprung up, wherein the Shakti appeared.

Chaupai.

Bhûmî sé upnî Mâtâ Deo Lârî.

Thân Deo Mâtâ ko Kongo-re Lârî.

Mother Deo Lârî appeared from the earth.

The temple of Deo Mata (was named) the Bârî of Kongo.³⁸

Tû hî yog, yugtî, tû hî yog mâtî.

Dê, Mâtâ, bachan dê painḍê meñ lârî.

Thou only art devotion and the law, thou art the mother of the age.

O Mother, give us thy promise to lead us on the (right) path.

Mâthê balê Mâtî rê agnî rê gethê.

Bothâ rûjî Mahâsû hoî sūraj re bhekhê.

On the Mother's head burnt a fire of faggots.

Mahâsu was born with lustre like the rays of the sun.

Chhâtî sé mâtî Chukkar châtî,

Janamâ Châldâ, Mâtâ re lâl.

Placing her hand round her breast,

The Mother brought forth her son, Châldâ.

Mâtâ Deo Lârî nê hâth kiê khayê.

Bâshuk Pabâsî dono hâth dô jharê.

Mother Deo Lârî raised both her hands.

Bâshuk³⁹ and Pabâsî sprang from her two hands.

³⁷ *Jâgaran* (from Sanskrit *jâgarana*) means keeping awake the whole night in devotion.

³⁸ By Mahâsû, because it was close to his own temple.

³⁹ Bâshuk is also called Châldâ, *i. e.*, 'the goat,' the serpent.

Chauth meñ upné Mahāsū chār.

Panchmē huñ titlā dē Deo Kyālū Bandr.

The four Mahāsūs were born on the fourth.⁴⁰

On the fifth were created the gods Kiyālū and Banār.⁴¹

Shēr Kālīā Kyālū hoe Bothē re wazār.

Romō hoē romō de nau lākh bīr.

Shēr Kālīā and Kiyālū became the ministers of Bothā.⁴²

Nine lākhs of heroes sprang from every hair.

Hāth joṛē Hunā gayd pairē pé jāi:—

‘Sab manukh liē, Malkā, rākshasē khāi.’

Hunā fell at her feet with clasped hands:—

‘All mankind has been devoured by the demons, O Mistress.’

Hāth bandē pair shīr lāyā jānā:—

‘Maindārath Tālo dā Kīrmar dāno.’

With clasped hands and feet he placed his head on her knees:—

‘Kīrmar, the demon, (dwells) in the Maindārath Lake.’

Kathlā hoī sainā Maindārath ke bāg.

Chār bhāi Mahāsū karāi re āg.

The armies were arrayed in the garden of Maindārath.

The four Mahāsū brothers were like the fire.⁴³

Hunē jaisē rikhiē ati bintī lāi:—

Isī ke kāran chār Mahāsū dī.

Hunā the Rishi made a great prayer:—

‘The four Mahāsūs for this purpose have come.’

Sabhā jabī debtē nē bintī lāi:—

‘Kyā dewē āgyā Deo Lāī Māi?’

All the gods made a prayer (saying:—)

‘What are the orders of the goddess Deo Lāī Māi?’

Jab dī āgyā Śrī Devī Māi:—

‘Kīrmar Keshī rākshas ko tum dō ghāi.’

Then Śrī Dēvī Māi gave orders:—

‘You must kill the demons Kīrmar and Kēshī.’

Chambola.

Rājā Rikh-choliyā lāyo tero nāw.

Rājān ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

Thy name is King of Rikh-cholyā.

Thy name is king of kings.

Kungā kastūri, Rājā, guglā ko dhūp,

Chār Bhāi Mahāsū Narain ko rūp.

Rājān ko rāj nāw tero nāw.

With saffron, musk and fragrant resin and incense, Raja,

The four Mahāsū brothers are Narain incarnate.

Thy name is king of kings.

⁴⁰ Of the light half of Bhādoñ.

⁴¹ That is to say, two of the four Mahāsūs were created on the 4th and two on the 5th of the light half of Bhādoñ.

⁴² Mahāsū.

⁴³ Of a cow-dung cake.

*Hāth shāṅkh chakkar gai sām̐ ke hār,
Chār bhātī Mahāsū Buddar⁴⁴ avatār;
Bhekh-dhārī rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.*

With conch and quoit in their hands and serpents round their necks,
The four brothers Mahāsū are Buddar⁴⁴ incarnate,
In spite of all disguise, thy name is king of kings.

*Hāth shāṅkh, chakkar, gajjā, tirshāl,
Nāch lāyo parī ro, bārkā hō phāl,
Bhekh-dhārī rājā lāyo tero nāw.
Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.*

Conch, quoit, mace and trident in hand,
Dance of fairies and rain of flowers,
In spite of all disguise kingly is thy name.
Thy name is king of kings.

*Utiyā ko nātī Rājā Bhimlā ko jāyo.
Kashmīre chhoṛī Rājā Maindārath dyō.
Rājan ko rāj nāw tero nāw.*

Utiyā's grandson and Rājā Bhimlā's son has been born.
The Rājā left Kāshmir and came to Maindārath.
Thy name is king of kings.

Dohā (couplet).

*Thāro aṅt koṁ nahīn jāne, līlā param apār.
Bhagat hit kārne tum kaī bāh setē ho avtār.*

None knoweth thy infinity, thy glory is infinite.
Thou dost take many shapes in order to do good.

*Eintī sun rikhī kī, parsan huē atyant.
Hukam diyē saināpatīn ko 'māro asur turant.'*

Hearing the prayer, great was the joy of the saints.

They gave the order to the leaders 'slay the demons forthwith.'

*Āgyā pātī, Mahāsū kī muṅgar līyō hāth.
Mahān rath par Chālḍā baiṭhē nau lākh sainā sāth.*

Receiving the orders, the Mahāsūs took bludgeons in their hands.
Chālḍā sat in his great war chariot at the head of nine lākhs of men.

*Pirṭham yudh huā Maindārath meṁ, sainā mārī apār.
Disē Shīb Shankar thae jo santan prān adhār.*

Battle was first joined at Maindārath and armies were slain.
It was Shiv Shankar who thus came to save his disciples.

When the whole army of the *rākshasas* had been killed, Kīmar beat a retreat and came to Majhog, the abode of Singī the demon. There they collected their scattered forces, intending to give battle afresh.

Dohā (couplet).

*Jab Majhōg meṁ derat pakūṁchē ān,
Singī māro jab dait, huā yudh ghamsān.*

When the *déotās* reached Majhog,
They killed Singī the demon and a desperate battle was fought.

On hearing of the slaying of Singī Rākshas by Sher Kulī, and that most of his men were slain, Kirmar fled to Kinārī Khaṇḍāī, a village on the river bank, but was pursued by the *deotās*. When he was about to hide in a ravine of Mount Khaṇḍā, he was overtaken by Chāldā Mahāsū, who rode on a throne of flowers borne by two soldiers.

Dôhâ (couplet in Pahārī).

*Khaṇḍāī jāne khē pāwā thā ihāo,
Dūr bhānē⁴⁵ thē Rājīē khāṇḍē ré lāo.*

He took refuge under a rock in the village of Khaṇḍāī,
Intending to smite with his sword his opponent.

When Śrī Chāldā⁴⁶ killed the demon, a large force of other gods reached him.

Dôhâ (couplet in Pahārī).

*Sāth laṛau deotē khariē⁴⁷ khāṇḍē,
Ghāī huwē⁴⁸ rākshas lāī lāī bāṇḍē.*

All the gods attacked with their swords
And cut the demons to pieces.

After killing the demon Kirmar, all the gods threw flowers over Śrī Chāldā and paid homage to him.

Dôhâ (couplet).

*Ādī Kalī Yug mēn Kirmar kiyō rāj.
Sant mahātma ko dukh diyō dait samāj.*

Kirmar ruled the world in the beginning of the Kalī Yug.

The demon brotherhood caused great trouble to the saints and the men of God.

*Sab devan kē deb hai Mahāsū kartār.
Kirmar ādī mārke, dūr kiyō mahi-bhār.*

The lord Mahāsū is the god of all gods,
Killing the great Kirmar, he has lightened the burden of the World.

*Yah charitr Mahādev kā chit dē sunē jo hoī,
Sadd rahai sulh sampad aur mukti phal hoī,*

He who listens to this story of Mahādev with a sincere heart
Will always remain happy and attain the fruit of salvation.

After killing Kirmar, all the gods encamped in a field near Khaṇḍāī, and the place came to be called Dev-kā-khāṭal. It still forms the *jāgīr* of Dev Banār. The place in Khaṇḍāī, where Kirmar met his death, still retains the marks of his sword on a rock. Travellers and passers-by worship this stone by offering flowers, and also express gratitude to Mahāsū.

Next morning at daybreak Hūnā Rikhi came to Mahāsū with clasped hands and expressed joy at Kirmar's death. He further begged that the demon, Keshī, who had made Hanol his abode and was destroying its people should be killed, adding that the place was a delightful one, as it had a fine temple, that the rippling waves of the river by which it lay added beauty to its scenery, that it was a place of sanctity and would be better under his rule than under the demon's, and that it was therefore right that the demon should be killed.

Hearing this the god marched his army in that direction, and on the march they passed Salnā Pattī, a village in Rāwīngarh, near which lived another demon in a tank, receiving its water from the Pabar. When the flower-throne of Mahāsū reached this spot he saw a demon dancing in the tank and making a noise. Śrī Naṭārī Jī said to Mahāsū:—“This is a fearsome sight.” When Mahāsū heard the Umā Shankarī's words he knew by the might of his knowledge that this was the demon spoken of by the *rikhī*. He stopped his throne and

⁴⁵ From *bhān-ṇā*, to break, in Pahārī.

⁴⁷ *Lit.*, ‘raising high.’

⁴⁶ *I. e.*, Mahāsū.

⁴⁸ *Ghāī huwē*, ‘are killing.’

destroyed the demon on the spot by muttering some charms, which had such power that even to this day the river does not make any sound as it flows. Hence the place is called Nashudi.

Dôhâ.

Bâjâ jarî-bharthâ deoté rê bâjâ.
Bot'â Râjâ Mahâsû Hanolâ khé birâjâ.
Jarî-bharthâ, the music of the gods, was played,
When Bothâ, Râjâ and Mahâsû left for Hanol.'
Mahârâj Mahâsû Châldâ Pabâsi,
Hanol dêkhîro bahutê mîno dé hâsé.
Mahârâj Mahâsû, Châldâ and Pabâsi, -
The gods laughed greatly in their hearts on seeing Hanol.
Chhotê chhotê bahutê deo;
Srî Bothâ Mahâsû deote râ deo.
There are many minor gods;
But Srî Bôthâ Mahâsû is the god of gods.

When Srî Mahâsû reached Hanol with his army, he asked Hînâ Rikhî if it was the resort of Keshî the demon. The latter humbly replied that it was, but he added that the demon sometimes haunted the Masmor mountains, and had perhaps gone in that direction and that preparations for his destruction should be made at once. Upon this all the gods held a council and sent Srî Châldâ with Sher Kaliâ, Kêlû, and others to the mountains of Masmor to kill Keshî. Under these orders Srî Châldâ seated himself on a throne studded with pearls, and with the other warrior-gods set out in search of the demon. This song of praise was sung:—

'Terî Hanolê, Râjêd, phûlôn kî bârî,
Châr bhâî Mahâsû Mâtâ Deo Lâyî.
Râjan ko râj nâw tero nâw.
Bhesh-dhârî Râjâ jî.
Rânî, Râjâ nâwê parjâ nâwê.'
'Râjâ, thou hast a garden of flowers in thy Hanol,
The abode of the four Mahâsûs and their mother.
Thy name is king of kings.
In spite of all disguise thou art Lord,
The queen, the king and his subjects bow down to thee.'

Potgi.

Khaṇḍâî dâkî nâmi chôr,
Lê chalo pâlgî merî ubhî Masmôr.
Râjan ko râj nâw tero nâw.
Kâshmîrî Râjâ dewâ kethî? Bhimlâ kî ôr.

Thieves and famed robbers of Khaṇḍâî,
 Bear ye my palanquin up to Masmor.
 Thy name is king of kings.
 Whither is the king of Kashmîr gone? He is gone towards Bhimla.

Kailâs Kashmîr chhôrô râjasthân Maindârath âyâ.
Râjan ko râj nâw terô nâw.

Thou hast left Kailâs and Kashmîr and came to Maindârath.
 Thy name is king of kings!

When Srî Châldâ's throne reached the hill with his bandsmen playing music, the demon Keshî witnessed his arrival, and thought him to be the same who had killed his lord Kirmar, and had come there for the same purpose. So he made ready for battle and said, "It is not

right to fly." Thinking thus, he took a huge mace and spear to attack the god. When about to shatter the god in pieces with his mace, the god's glory was manifested and the demon's hand hung motionless. Śrī Chālā ordered Sher Kaliyā to kill the demon at once. This order was instantly obeyed. The people of the place were exceedingly glad at this good news, and there was much throwing of flowers over Mahāsū.

Verse.

Khuskī howē ādamī pahārō rē sārē:—
'Kālē jek khaumpanī kūtō rē mērē.'

All the hill people rejoiced:—

'Accept as thy revenue the offerings made out of our (share of the) produce.'

'Kār deo khaumpanī pārē Hanolē lōē,
Sālū tārū dē bārshē deo Bharānsī lē bulāē.'

'We will work and send tribute in our turn to Hanol,

And will bring the god for worship to Bharānsī every twelve years.'

'Sadd kakhēn, Mahāsud, mulak tihārā,
Sāl deo samatō rā kūtō rā kārā.'

'O Mahāsū, we say this land is thine for ever.

And we will give thee each year every kind of grain in due season.'

'Phūt, kar, rākshas, parēt, chhal,
Kār deo khaumpanī sadd rahai parjā tumhārī.
Achhiddar dō aur karō rakshā hamārī.'

'Protect us from the evil-spirits, demons, ogres and goblins,

And we will give thee tribute and ever remain thy subjects,

Give us prosperity and grant us protection.'

After killing the demon, Śrī Chālā Mahāsū seated himself on his throne and came with his forces to Hanol in great state. He brought with him all the offerings in gold and silver, as well as a gold *kaddū* taken from the demons.

On reaching the place he recounted the death of Keshī to Bothā Mahāsū, saying:— "All the demons have been killed by thy favour, and all the troubles removed. Accept these offerings which I have brought and send them to thy treasury."

Hearing this, Bothā Mahāsū said: "O Śrī Chālā, go with all these heroes to the places which I name and divide the country among them, so that they may rule there, and guard the people against all calamities. The people of these lands will worship thee as thy subjects and be dependent on thee. Every person will offer thee silver, gold, brass or copper on the attainment of his desires. Wherever thou mayst go, the inhabitants will worship thee, performing a *jāgrā* on the Nāg-chauth and Nāg-panchami days, which fall each year in Bhādoṇ. They will be amply rewarded for these annual fairs." And he added: "Thou shalt be worshipped like myself, and be highly esteemed throughout my kingdom, but thou wilt have to pay the *malikānd* dues for each place to the other gods. When a grand *jāgrā* is performed, thou wilt be invited to present offerings to me."

Āājē tāl mardang shaikh bājē ghāntē,
Sabhī Shrī Mahāsū jī ne deṭhō ko rāj dīno bāntē.

The cymbal, the *mardang* and the conch were sounded and bells were rung.

When Śrī Mahāsū divided his kingdom among his minor gods.

Rāj sabē deṭhō kō is tarah bāntā,
Rājdhānī Pabāsī denā Deban rā dandā.

He divided his State to the gods thus,

Giving the territory of Mount Deban to Pabāsī.

*Bâshuk ko Bâwar dîno poru, Bilo bolî Sâthê,
Pabâsî Bel dîno punwâsô jô Bel Pâshê.*

To Bâshuk he gave the whole of the Bâwar territory with the part of Bilo on this side of Sâthi.
To Pabâsî he also gave the country of Shâthi which is on the bank of the Patwâl.⁴⁹

Kâlû Kotlâ hû dîno Kyâlûê Bandr.

Bojhê Châlâdê Mahâsû ro râj howâ sarab pahâr.

To Kiâlû and Banâr he gave Kâlû and Kotlâ also.

And Bôjha and Châlâdâ Mahâsû became rulers of the whole of the hill tract.

Bojhâ Châlâdâ Mahâsû sab deban re deo.

Pûjanê râ Mahâsû re jânâdê nâ asau.

Bôjha and Châlâdâ Mahâsû are the gods of all the gods.

The people do not know how to worship Mahâsû.

Sab richâ denî Hunâ Rikhi khe Vedo rî batâî.

‘Isî bidhî kâr mere debte rî pûjan karâî.’

The hymns of the Vedâs⁵⁰ were dictated to Hunâ Rikhi:

‘Perform my worship according to them.’

Sab guwê debte apne sathânô khe jâî.

Vedo rî richâ denî pûjanê lîî.

All the gods went to their own capitals.

The Vedic hymns should be used in worship.

Shrî Mahâsû ke sâth sab debte gae dî,

Is Khanâ Uttar meñ dete mântâ karâî.

All the gods who had come with Mahâsû.

. Are worshipped in this Northern Region.

Notâre Pokho chhorâ jo marêshwar Mahâdeo.

Hanol meñ Bojhâ Mahâsû jo sab deban ke deo.

Notâre⁵¹ and Pokhû remain, Mahadev the god of the burning places.

Bôjha Mahâsû is the god of gods in Hanol.

Chûrî meñ Chûrêshwar wahî Mahâsû hai deo.

Desh chhorê deshorê Dûm âdî Bhindrâ deo.

That same Mahâsû as Chûrîshwar is the god of the Chûr Peak.

Dûm, Bhindrâ and others are in charge of the other parts of the plain country.

Narain, Ruddar, Dhaulû, Ghorâû debte gaye Bashahro rî nâî.

Hâtkoî meñ Mâtâ Hâtêshwarî aur pahâr pahâr meñ Kâlî.

The gods Narâin, Ruddar, Dhaulû and Ghorâû were sent towards the valley of Bashahr.

Mother Hâtêshwarî was in Hâtkoî and on every hill was Kâlî.

Sabhân kî pûjan Bhat hui ‘jai jai’ kâr.

Kirmar âdî mâr ke ânand bhayo sansâr.

All worship the Brothers and give them [the cry of] ‘victory.’

The world became very happy at the death of Kirmar and the other demons.

Dêsh huwâ muluk, Shrî Châlâdê, tumhârâ.

Hanolo khê bhejâ kâto râ kârâ.

Srî Châlâdâ, all this country is thine.

Thy servants give thee tribute in Hanol.

Thus was a separate tract assigned to each, and they were sent each to his own territory. Hunâ Rikhi was loaded with blessings in money. After this, Mahâsû disappeared and an image of him with four arms appeared of its own accord. It is worshipped to this day.

⁴⁹ This is the meaning as explained by the descendant of Kâverî. *Lit.*, the translation appears to be—to Pabâsî he gave Bel on the day of the full moon, and so it is (now) called Bel Pâshê.

⁵⁰ That is, in regard to the worship of this god.

⁵¹ In Garhwâl.

Sab gayé debte āpné āpné asthān,
Jab Boṭhā hué Shri Mahāsū ji antar-dhyān.
 All the gods went to their own places,
 And then Boṭha Śrī Māhāsū disappeared.
Kyālū Banār dīnā urāo,
Kūī rī serī dā pākṛā ihāo.
 Kyālū and Banār flew away,
 And took possession of the fields of Kūī.⁵²

The following story is connected with these two places. The capital of the two gods is Pujārli, a village at the foot of the Burgā Hill, beyond the Pabar stream.

When all the gods had gone to their own places, all the land was regarded as the kingdom of Mahāsū, and his capital was Hanol. It is now believed that if any irregularity occurs in this territory, the gods in charge of it and the people are called upon to explain the reason. The people of this country believe Mahāsū to have such power that if a person who has lost anything worships the god with sincere heart, he will undoubtedly achieve his desire.

Dohā (couplet).

Līlā iski barnan sakke kōī kaun?
Ādī deban ke dev hai, Mahāsū kahāwē jaun.
 Who can praise him?
 He is the chief god of all gods, and is called Mahāsū.
Jo jan dīn-ho-kar unko dhyāwē,
Wah ant samay man-bānchhit phal pāwē.
 He who remembers him with humble mind,
 Shall at last have all his desires fulfilled.
Aisē bhaṣ yah Ruddar avatār,
Jin tārā salsal sansār.
 So (great) is the incarnation of Rudar,⁵³
 That all the world is delivered from transmigration.
Wahī Shīb Shaṅkar avatār,
Jinkī māyā ne bāndhā sansār.
 He is Shiv Shankar incarnate,
 And the whole world is enthralled by his illusion.
Aisē haiṅ wah Shīb Shaṅkar ānandā.
Jin-ke simran se kḍīṣ har phaṅdā.
 Such is Shiv Shankar ever pleased.
 Who remembers him passes safely through the whole maze.⁵⁴
Jis-nē is-meṅ shaṅkḍ uḥḍī,
Wah narak hī meṅ hai Shambhū nē pḍī.
 He who has doubts as to these things
 Is doomed to hell by Shambhu.
Wah Shīb Shaṅkar antarjāmī,
Jin-ko dhyāwat sur nar gyānī.
 He is Shiv Shankar, the heart-searcher,
 On whom meditate the heroes and the sages.

⁵² Kūī is a place in Rawāingarh, near the Burgā Mountains.

⁵³ Śivā.

⁵⁴ Or we may read *Har phaṅdā* and translate: 'By remembrance of him (mankind) may be delivered from the maze of Har (Shiv).'

Yah Shambhú jagat sukh dāt,
Jin-kā pār kōū nahīn pāt.

He is Shambhu and gives blessings to the world
And no one can fathom his doings.

Ekara, Sharva, Rudra, Pashu-pati, Girisha, Mhesha, mahān,
Jin ke guṇānu-vād-ko gāvai Veda Purān.

He is Bhāva, Sharva, Rudra, Pashu-pati, Girisha, Mahesha, the great one,
Whose virtue is sung in the *Vedās* and *Purāns*.

Aisē bhaē wāh Mahāsū sukh-dāyī,
Jal thal meṇ jo rahē samāyī.

Mahāsū comforts every man
And his glory pervades both sea and land.

Kōū barṇan nā sakē unki prabhutdī,
Brahmā, Viṣṇu Sāradd ant nahīn pāt.

We lack words to tell his greatness.

Brahmā, Viṣṇu, and even Sāraddā could not know his reality.

Tin lok kē nāth haiṇ ant nahīn kachhu pāt,
Brahmā, Viṣṇu, Sāraddā, hār-gayē man-māhi.

He is the king of the three worlds and is infinite.

Even the gods Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Sāraddā could not stand before him.

Hāth jo-kē Brahmā, Viṣṇu, kharī Sāradd māi :—
‘Tin lok meṇ jāte bhaē pār kīne nahīn pāt.’

Brahmā, Viṣṇu, and Mother Sāraddā stood with clasped hands before him :—
‘We have been round the three worlds, but could find no end (to his glory).’

Hār mān-kar thakat bhaē pār nahīn jab pāt,
Hāth jo-kar thādē bhaē nāth-pad shīs nāt.

When they could find no end to his glory,

They came before him with clasped hands and bowed heads.

Sis nawās ke nāth pad kē kīnē bahut pukār :—
‘Tum deban ke deb hō kild param apār.’

They bowed their heads to the god and praised him aloud :—

‘Thou art the god of all gods and wonderful is thy glory.’

‘Hai chandra-chūṛa madandksh-shūl pānī kar jaisē.
Tin lok kē harid karid deban deb Maheshd.’

‘Thy light is like that of the moon and thou art full of water like the ocean.
Thou art Mahāsū, the creator and destroyer of the three worlds.’

Jahān tahān bhaē Mahāsū antar-dhyān,
Tab se unki astutī karat Hanōla Sthān.

From the time that Mahāsū disappeared,
He began to be praised in the Hanol Temple.

Wah sathān hai Uttar Khaṇḍ māhi.
Nadī kīndrē Tōns kē māndir band tāhīn.

His place is in the Northern Region.

His temple is built on the bank of the river Tons.

When all the gods went to their own places, the other gods agreed to pay tribute to Hanol according to the directions of Mahāsū. They also agreed to pay *mālikānd* dues on the birthday of Mahānadātā to the inhabitants.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.¹*From the Native point of view.*

BY MIAN DURGA SINGH.

(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)

I. — Tribes.

1. A detailed account of the present tribes is given under paragraph 36 below. The original division was as follows : —

(1) Sub-divisions into castes according to the Hindu or Muhammadan Scriptures.

(2) Minor sub-divisions named after some great ancestor: *e. g.*, there are two principal sections of the Brāhmans, *viz.*, Shukal and Krishan. Similarly, the Rājputs are divided into the Sūraj and Chandar Bansi (Solar and Lunar) Dynasties.

The Brāhmans are divided according to their occupations, while Rājputs are divided according to their descent.

2. Formerly there were four main tribes among the Hindus, and the same number among the Muhammadans, but they have been multiplied by difference of occupation. Hindus were originally divided into Brāhmans, Kshatriyas, Vaisyas and Sūdras, and Muhammadans into Shaikhs, Sayyids, Mughals and Pathāns. Nowadays these main sections are divided into many other sub-sections.

II. — Tribal Designations.

3. The fixed designations of the tribes are known among themselves as well as to outsiders.

4. (a) Modern researches have brought to light many facts which were unknown before or were misunderstood. Not only the fact that all the tribes came from the same stock has been proved, but also that they had a common language; Central Asia and the neighbourhood of Kailās (Himālayas) being the common home of the Aryas. According to the belief of the Hindus, the Aryas were the followers of the *Vēdas*, and each and every action of theirs was guided by the *Vēdas*, as they believed them to be sacred and of divine origin. The *Purāṇas*, the *Vēdas*, and other historical books show that the Himālayan region was populated from ancient times, but the religion and race of the inhabitants of those days cannot be ascertained. However, an observation of ancient ruins proves that these people were idolaters and believers in the *Vēdas*. In support of this the following facts may be mentioned: — (1) Broken images are found in the mountain caves and old buildings. (2) The worshippers of the mountain gods follow the ritual of the *Vēdas*. They recite the Vedic hymns, and teach them to their children orally, as they have no sacred books. As the hill-language was not that of the *Vēdas*, these hymns have undergone changes, and have never been corrected by a literate man, yet on close examination they are found to be real Vedic hymns.

(b) The Brāhmans in winter go to the high peaks to worship the goddess Kālī and recite hymns from the *Atharva Vēda*. This shows that this country was populated at the time when

¹ [Evidently consisting of answers to a series of ethnological questions set as a guide. — ED.]

the *Vēdas* ruled supreme in India. The people learnt them by heart, and the same practice is continued to this day. There is also mention of these treatises in the *Rāmāyaṇa* and the *Mahābhārata*. It seems that there was not much caste distinction in those days. The only distinction among the Brāhmins, the Rājputs, and the Kanaitis was that they did not intermarry. Their food and customs were much the same. The few Kshatriyas and Brāhmins had come from the plains and settled here. The Kanaitis are said to be the aborigines of the hill-tracts, and were independent, brave, and given to marauding. They raided one another's villages. Small huts and caves served as their habitations. They slept much during the day and held agriculture in light esteem, while at night they committed dacoities. Every party in a village had its own head, known as the *movannā* (leader), who used to get his share of the plunder and a small tribute as his *haq-i-sardārī*. The whole mountainous country was divided in this way; the first quality of land being given to the gods as rulers, and the next to the *movannās*. The ruins of the houses of the *movannās* are to be found still. They are big castle-like buildings.

(c) As regards the agriculture of that time, the *kharij* and *rali* crops were cut at one time. The produce was scanty on account of excess of rain and snow. The people of the villages went armed for seed-sowing, owing to the fear of enemies. People, when going on business from one place to another, went armed in bodies of fifteen to twenty men. The women took part in agriculture and had much liberty. The Kshatriyas, who came up from the plains, were respected by the people on account of their skill in the arts of civilisation, and lands were granted to the Brāhmins, who accompanied the Kshatriyas as priests. The Kshatriyas, by their tact and skill, got the upperhand and, driving away or destroying the *movannās*, took possession of their property. Thus the Kshatriyas became the masters of the whole country.

(d) There is no reliable source of information as to the time when and the place whence the Kshatriyas first came. But the tradition is that, at the time of the wholesale massacre of the Kshatriyas by Balrāmji Balarāma, they left their country and settled in the hills. Many of them changed their caste and became Brāhmins, Baniās, etc. Some of their women were kept by the Brāhmins and their children became known as the Khatris. The men who had saved their lives by changing their caste were named Rājputs or Chhatris. This is proved by the fact that the *gēt* (sub-division of a caste) of the Chhatris of the hills is similar to that of the Brāhmins, and Brāhmins of the same brotherhood are found up to the present time and have social relations with them. In short, the Brāhmins came with the Kshatriyas as priests from various places in the south.

The Rājputs came from different localities, such as Bengal, Rājputānā, Central India, etc., etc.

The Vaiśyas, consisting of Sūds, Baniās, etc., came from the plains, and are very few in number.

The Sūdras, such as the Kanaitis, who, as above said, are considered to be the aborigines of this part of the country, are said to have obtained their name by the following legend. When the Brāhmins and Rājputs came from different parts of India and settled in the hills and took possession of the *movannās*, they saw that the rites and customs of the villagers were not in accordance with the Scriptures; that there was only one caste; that religious ceremonies were not performed; that neither marriage nor funeral ceremonies were observed; and that all the ancient Hindu customs had been forgotten. So they called the high castes among the indigenous tribes by the name of Kanait, which really represents Kunit, i.e., those who violate the law. Gradually they were acknowledged as high castes, and spread over all the hilly tracts. The castes inferior to them are considered low castes.

5. All the tribes, except the Brāhmins, the Kshatriyas, and the Vaiśyas consider themselves to be the aborigines of the hills, and call themselves *Kuñ* (ancient inhabitants).

III. — History of Migrations.

6. The following table will show when a tribe or its sub-division migrated to the hills and the history of such migration:—

Table of the Sections of the Hill Brāhmans.

No.	Original Caste.	Present Name of the Caste.	Real Home.
1	Brāhman	Gaur	Gaur (Bengal).
2	Do.	Sārsut... ..	The Deccan.
3	Do.	Bhardwāj	Do.
4	Do.	Kanôj... ..	Do.
5	Do.	Kān Kôbj	Do.
6	Do.	Balrāmī	Do.
7	Do.	Bhāt	Bengal.

The Brāhmans are generally divided into Shukal and Krishan.² The Shukal Brāhmans are considered the superior. They do not cultivate land with their own hands, and devote most of their time to worship and prayer, performing the rites of marriage or death according to the Hindu Scriptures. They take alms only when offered at marriages, but not those given at deaths. They do not take any alms given for the sake of the dead. The Krishan Brāhmans are those who accept the alms offered at the time of death, and those offered to propitiate evil stars, such as Rahu and Sani. The Shukal and Krishan Brāhmans do not intermarry, and the rest of their rites are not alike. A Krishan Brāhman can eat the food prepared by a Shukal Brāhman, but the Shukal Brāhman does not even drink water which has been touched by a Krishan Brāhman.

It is said that the Balrāmī Brāhmans were the first to come and settle in the hills. In reality the Balrāmī and Sārsut Brāhmans are one and the same. The Balrāmīs are so called, because those living near the temples founded by Balrāmījī state that they were set there by Balrāmījī himself. They also worship Balrāmījī as their god, and are quite a distinct tribe nowadays. They consider themselves to be of the highest caste. They mix with the Sārsut and the Gaur Brāhmans.

The Gaur, Bhardwājīs, the Kān Kôbjās and the Bhāts have social relations with one another. But they do not take into their brotherhood any man who has been excommunicated on religious grounds. They came to the hills in company with the Rājputīs who migrated from Bengal. It is said that a part of Bengal was called Gaur, therefore the Brāhmans of that place were known by the name of Gaur, and to-day they are to be found in every part of India. The Gaur family of the Brāhmans came after the fall of the Rajas of Bengal.

The Sārsuts lived, in the beginning, on the banks of the Indus and the Saraswatī. They migrated from there and settled in the hills. The name Sārsut is derived from the Saraswatī.

Coming to the hills the Rājputīs became the Thākurs, while the Rānas, the Rājas and Brāhmans became their priests. History tells us that Shahābu'd-dīn Ghōrī conquered Delhi and appointed his slave Kutbu'd-dīn as Viceroy there. One of his officers, named Bakhtiār Khiljī, attacked Bengal and usurped the country from the Rājputīs. At that time many Brāhmans and Rājas fled to Prāg, now called Allahabad, and thence went to different places.

² [This probably represents a division into Śaivas and Vaiṣṇavas.— Ed.]

Table of the Sections of the Hill Rājputs.

No.	Original Caste.	Present Name of the Caste.	Real Home.	Time of Coming.
1	Kshatriyas or Rājputs.	Pramar or	} Ujjain ... ..	.....
2	Do. ...	Pawār... ..		
3	Do. ...	Chohān		
4	Do. ...	Solāngihī ... ..	.....	.....
5	Do. ...	Prahar ... ..	.....	.....
6	Do. ..	Gaur	Bengal	1267, Bikanir.
7	Do. ...	Gyāru... ..	Gya ... ..	.....
8	Do. ...	Katāl	Nāhān ... ..	.....
9	Do. ...	Vishāl	Ujjain ... ..	.....
10	Do. ..	Bhardwaj	Kauchanānagar (Deccan).	.....
11	Do. ..	Mabbālī	} Mārwar, etc. Different districts.	.....
12	Do. ..	Lohākri		
13	Do. ...	Pangliāni		
14	Do. ..	Trōndi		
15	Do. ...	Ghiāni		
16	Do. ..	Niral	} Mārwar ... ..	.....
17	Do. ...	Thākur		
18	Do. ...	Rāna... ..	} Delhi	300 years ago.
19	Do. ..	Pathāniā		
20	Do. ..	Padwāl		
21	Do. ..	Kshatriya	Descended from Paras Rām.	.....

The name Kshatriya was applied to the crowned rulers of a country or territory. They were quarrelsome, given to robbery and well versed in the art of war. They were brave, courageous and kind. Their sons, other than the heir-apparent, were known as Rājputs, or the sons of rulers. Nowadays this word is applied to all the Kshatriyas. In fact, the Rājputs are next in rank to the Kshatriyas, but these words are used interchangeably. The Kshatriyas are divided into two main sections: (1) the Sūraj Bansi; (2) the Chandar Bansi. Brahmā had two sons, Dachhā and Uttar, and these were the ancestors of these two tribes. Dachhā was the father of the Sun, from whom came the Sūraj Bansi; and Uttar was the father of the Moon, from whom the Chandar Bansi descended. The capital of the Solar dynasty was Allahabad. Every Rājput, of whatever tribe, caste or sect, is ultimately descended from either the Solar or the Lunar dynasty, and the above table clearly shows the manner of their immigration.

It is said that the *phākurs* or *movannās*, who were previously settled in the hills, were also Rājputs, but their customs are quite different from those of the Rājputs. It is further said that when **Rāja Saki Singh**,³ who flourished some 2352 years ago (= 450 B. C.), introduced **Buddhism**, it began to spread from this direction, so that this religion is still found in Kanāwar, Tibet, Lāhāul, etc. Much confusion has taken place among the Rājputs for this very reason. The history of no tribe is trustworthy, nor can its genealogy be correctly traced. It is said that at the time of the great war of the *Mahābhārata* the Rājputs were the rulers of the hill territories. There is mention of the ancestors of the Rājas of this region in the *Bhagavat Gītā* and the *Mahābhārata*.

The **Rāwats** and **Bāthis** also come under the heading Rājputs. These people plough and cultivate land with their own hands. Their rites at marriage or death are not according to the Scriptures.

Sartiras are persons born of a Rājput father and Kanait or some other low caste mother. The Rājputs do not intermarry with them, nor eat food prepared by them.

Table of the Sections of the Hill Vaisyas.

No.	Original Caste.	Present Name of the Caste.	Real Home.	Time of Coming.
1	Bôhrâ... ..	P o o n a, S a t â r a (Deccan).	.....
2	Baniâ	Plains ... ..	.....
3	Sûd	Do. ... ..	.....
4	Bhâbra	Do. ... ..	.....

They are not the original inhabitants of the hill region, but came from the plains and settled there. Therefore nothing certain can be known of their history or genealogy. But the history of the Kāngrâ District shows that the Bôhrâs came, in the beginning, with the Rāja of Kāngrâ from Poona and Satâra in the Deccan, and gradually spread to other places. In the Hill States they were put in charge of the store-houses and godowns.

It is said that Rāja Nirandar Chandar died and left behind him a widow, who was with child. The widow, fearing lest she might suffer at the hands of her husband's heirs, went to her parents in the Deccan. While on the way she gave birth to Rāja Shêr Chand, and taking him with her reached her paternal home at Poona. When the boy, who was brought up by his grandfather, became of age and learnt that Kāngrâ was his inheritance, he determined to conquer his kingdom. He took an army of his grandfather's subjects with him, attacked Kāngrâ, subdued those who occupied the throne, and succeeded to his paternal kingdom. Diwān Rûp Lâl Bôhrâ, who was sent with the Rāja by his grandfather, was made the Minister. Then gradually some persons of the family of the Minister came and settled in Kāngrâ. Some of them went to Rûpar. Then they went to other parts of the country for trade. These people knew Urdû, Hindî, and Nāgarî, and so they were respected everywhere and were honourably entertained.

The following is stated to be the origin of the Sûds: — A man of low caste owed some money to a Baniâ. They settled their account after some years. The principal amount was paid by the debtor, but he would not consent to pay the interest, and the Baniâ would not forego the interest. The debtor, instead of paying the interest, agreed to give his wife to the creditor. The children of this woman and the Baniâ became known as Sûd (interest). In the course of time the Sûds began to intermarry with the high castes. Now they are considered of high caste like the Baniâs, etc.

The **Baniâs** are generally divided into (1) the Aggarwâls and (2) the Sarâogis. The Sarâogis are Jains. The Aggarwâls are considered of high caste. They totally abstain from meat.

³ [A recollection of Sakyamuni = Buddha. — ED.]

Table of the Sections of the Hill Sûdras.

No.	Original Caste.	Present Name of the Caste.	Real Home.	Time of Coming.
1	High Sûdras	Kanait	Aborigines	.....
2	Do.	Goldsmith	.....	.....
3	Do.	Jat	.....	.....
4	Do.	Barber	.....	.....
5	Do.	Gardener	.....	.....
6	Do.	Milkman	.....	.....
7	Do.	Potter	.....	.....
8	Do.	Mason	.....	.....
1	Low Sûdras	Washerman	.....	.....
2	Do.	Die Sinker	.....	.....
3	Do.	Bâdi (carpenter)	.....	.....
4	Do.	Ironsmith	.....	.....
5	Do.	Thithâra or Harêra	.....	.....
6	Do.	Tûri, Dhâgi or Dhâdi.	.....	.....
7	Do.	Chanâl	.....	.....
8	Do.	Kôli (minstrel)	.....	.....
9	Do.	Shepherd or herdsman.	.....	.....
10	Do.	Sweeper	.....	.....
11	Do.	Shoemaker or cobbler.	.....	.....
12	Do.	Râwâr	.....	.....
13	Do.	Weaver	.....	.....

Something has already been mentioned about these tribes. The first eight sub-divisions were Râjpûts or Brâhmins, but they settled in such turbulent territories that they could not peaceably perform their religious ceremonies. Kanait gets their name from this cause, for, as already stated, the word Kanait means violator of the law. When the Brâhmins came and saw the ceremonies of Kanait, they gave the tribe the nickname, which has led to the formation of a distinct sect of Kanait. The other castes took their names from the profession they adopted.

We learn from old histories that the aborigines of India were Bhîls, Gônds, Mînâs, Kôls and Jôars, who were found near Nâgpur. They did not know Sanskrit, and their language was quite different from it. Their religion, too, differed from that of the Hindus. When the people of other countries occupied their territory, they fled to the forests and hills. Enquiry shows that they had no caste distinctions. They did not believe in contamination by touch. They used meat and wine, while

superior Hindus abhor these things. They kept in their houses the dead body of a person for several days after death. They offered alms two or three days after death, and these constituted all their funeral ceremonies. They never cleaned their houses and were impure. Some of them worshipped a god, while others worshipped a goddess. Every village had temples. They were ignorant and unclean. They were idolaters, and none of their customs were in accordance with the Hindu Scriptures. On examination of old books, and on taking photographs of the inscriptions on stones and examining them, it is found that the characters used therein are neither like those of the Sanskrit nor of any other language; for example, the letters of the inscriptions on the image of a goddess at Hât, on the big stone at Datta Nagar, on the big stone at Sohanpur near Hât, and at Jhonjan Deora in Shâmgîn. These facts show that these people belonged to the pre-Sanskrit period. They became civilised gradually with the spread of Sanskrit.

Table of the Sections of the Hill Mendicants.

No.	Original Caste.	Present Name of the Caste.	Real Home.	Time of Coming.
1	Hindu Faqirs ...	Bairâgî	Plains ... ..	.....
2	Mendicants ..	Sanyâsî ... ..	.....	.....
3	.....	Jôgi ... ..	.....	.....
4	.....	Udâsî ... ..	.....	.....

These people came up from the plains and established themselves in the hills as monks of the temples. They seem to have come specially from Kurukshêtra and Hardwâr. Some of the mendicants adopted family life, and others remained as they were and lived by begging their bread.

As for **Muhammadans** only Shekhs came up from Bâsî, Rûpar, and Kharar. The reason of their migration is said to be this, that originally they were **Hindus**, but the king who ruled at that time converted them to Muhammadanism by force. Some members of a family remained Hindus, while others turned Muhammadans. The converts gave up their share of the property in favour of their brothers, and they themselves came and settled in the hill country. They lived by trade. Their settlement in the hills does not seem to be older than twenty-two or twenty-four generations.

IV. — Tribal Head-Quarters.

7. The tribes have no common head-quarters. Every tribe has its own head-quarters in its own village, which is called by the name *thârî* or *chaurî*.

8. Some tribes declare themselves to be the **aborigines**. Some say that they came from the Deccan, Bengal, Ujjain, Gya, Nâhan, Sirmûr, Poona, Satâra, Mârwar, Delhi and Mâlwa, as has been fully shown in the above tables.

9. Because it is very long since the tribes came to the hills, they do not go on pilgrimage to their original homes. Every tribe or sect has appointed a place of pilgrimage in some village situated close to its own.

10. All tribes have in their respective villages **cremation grounds**, where they burn their dead. If a man of one tribe dies in the village of another, or near his own village, his corpse is brought to the village to which he belonged and is cremated at the place where his forefathers were cremated. In this way corpses are brought even from a distance of two or four days' journey. The crematoria of some tribes are near the banks of the Sutlej, Khud Giri or Payar.

V. — Genealogical Tables.

11. The genealogical tables of the Brāhman and the Kshatriyas remain with the family priests, and generally they trace only so many generations as are necessary to be known for the performance of ceremonies on occasions of death or marriage. The genealogical tables of the great Rājas and Rānas are kept in the State offices. When the Purōhīts (priests) of Ganges (Hardwār), Kurukshētra, Bhōa and Gôdāwari come into the hills, they prepare the genealogical tables of their disciples, and having written these tables down in their books, take them away.

Table showing the Names of the Conventional Ancestors of some of the Hill Tribes.

No.	Name of Tribe.	Names of Ancestors.
1	Brāhman or Bhāt	Bhardwāj, Gautam, Atri, Balrām, etc., famous <i>rishis</i> (saint).
2	Chhatrī or Rājput	Ram Chandar, Krishṇa, Puru, Birāt Raja, Bhīmchand Raja, Man Dhāta, Bikrama Jit and Bhoj, Raja Jagdeva, Sālbāhan and Raja Karan.
3	Khatrī	Sukh Datta, etc., famous Rajas.
4	Kayastha	Bhoj and Koria, etc., famous Rājas. The people of this section are not found in the hills, therefore no mention of them has been made above.
5	Baniā, Sūd, Bōhra, etc. ...	No tradition about these worthy of mention.
6	Kanait	Born of the intermarriage of the Brāhman and the Rājput.
7	Jat	Unknown.
8	Goldsmith	Do.
9	Barber	Do.
10	Gardener, milkman, potter, and mason.	Do.
11	Bādi or carpenter	Bāwa Rām Singh Kūkā, who was a carpenter by caste.
12	Other low castes, i. e., Koli, Rahīr (shepherd), shoemaker and cobbler.	Kabir and Rām Dās, noted saints, are considered to be the forefathers of these.
13	Tūri, Dhaki, Dhādi	Baju Bāvra and Tān Sēn, famous musicians.
14	Bairāgi	Ramānand and Nīmānand, well-known saints.
15	Sanyāsi	Unknown.
16	Jōgi	Gōrakh Nāth, Machandar Nāth, Jālandhar Nāth, noted Jōgis.
17	Udāsi	Nānak, Rām Dās, Amar Dās, Gōbind Singh.

Nothing is known about the other tribes, nor is any story or tradition concerning them available.

13.⁴ No tribe has got any genealogical table to enable one to trace the descent from the ancestors. The Rājas and Rānas have their genealogical tables, which I have not been able to get, and hence no account of them can be given.

⁴ [The answer to Question 12 seems to have been omitted. — ED.]

14. The Brāhmins, the Rājput̃s and the Baniās consider the Kanait̃s to be an offshoot of the higher castes. All the tribes, as explained above, except the Sūdras, consisting of Kanait̃s, came from the plains and settled in this part of the country.

15. Neither marriage nor death ceremonies among the Kanait̃s are performed according to the rules laid down by the Hindu Scriptures, but are according to the customs formerly prevailing in the country. Saints, Brāhmins, Rājput̃s and Baniās do not eat the food prepared by the Kanait̃s, who are not privileged to worship after the methods of the Hindu Scriptures.

VI. — Monuments.

16. Neither tomb nor monument belonging to any tribe is to be found. Each tribe has its own crematorium. A person belonging to one tribe cannot burn his dead in the crematorium of another. Likewise the high and low castes have separate *bdolis* and springs of water. The men of low castes cannot take water from the *bdolis* or springs belonging to those of high castes. The habitations of the population are also arranged according to the divisions of castes, *i.e.*, Rājput̃s live in one part of the village, while Brāhmins occupy another part. The low castes live at some distance from the village, for the reason that the high castes may not come in contact with the smell and smoke of the kitchens of the low castes.

17. Something about the migration of these tribes can be ascertained from the names of some towns. No history of their migration can be traced by means of the inscriptions on stones.

VII. — Caste Marriages.

18—20. As regards marriage, there is, nowadays, no distinction of caste. However, people of the same caste can marry among themselves, but the high castes do not marry with the low castes. A detailed account of the marriages of all tribes is given below under paragraph 36.

VIII. — Totemism.

21. It is not the prevailing custom among the people not to eat the flesh of an animal, whose name is like that of any person. However, some persons do not eat fish and pork, for the reason that incarnations of the deity had taken the form of a fish and a pig. But this is held only by some people, and is not accepted by any tribe or sect as a whole.

22. No tribe of the hills has given up the use of any arm or instrument merely for the reason of its name being after the name of some ancestor of theirs, nor for any other reason.

23. The high castes — such as the Brāhmins, the Rājput̃s, and the Baniās — worship the *pīpal* and the banyan trees, and do not burn their wood. All these tribes have two forms of religion: (1) Vaishnavas or Dakshmārag; (2) Saivas or Saktis or Vāmmārag. Those professing the first form of religion do not eat any of these articles: meat, onions, garlic, turnips, radishes, cones and mushrooms; or drink wine. Those of the second section eat all these things, but not eggs, domestic fowls, crows, peacocks and other animals forbidden by the Scriptures.

IX. — Peculiarities of Tribal Names.

24. Different tribes have different names, and no two sections have like names. However, the names of sub-sections of Kanait̃s are like those of the Brāhmins or Kshatriyas, and the reason of this is that they are held to be an offshoot of the Brāhmins and the Kshatriyas.

25. Some of the low castes have named some of their sub-sections after the name of the high caste which they have been serving.

26. The first four sections of the Dashāls — *i.e.*, Gōnds, Thēōgs, Mādhans, Darkōlis, *etc.* — were considered, for a long time after their migration to the hills, to be low castes, like the Kanait̃s. They did not put on the sacred thread, nor did they perform death ceremonies. Gradually they mixed with the Rājput̃s, and began to give their daughters in marriage to wealthy Rājput̃s. Afterwards the Rājput̃s also consented to marry their daughters to them.

The history of the migration of **Jār Giārus** and **Jār Katāls** is very much the same. In reality they were Brāhmins, and Brāhmins of their brotherhood are still to be found. But they gave up the Brahmanical functions and, adopting the marriage and death ceremonies of the Rājputs, have mixed with them. For example:—Kot Khāi, Kumhārsain, Karāngla, Delta, Kanthi, Jūbal, Ranvin Sairi, Trôch and Khāsh were full of the low castes of Kanait, but now they have adopted the ceremonies of the superior Kanait.

The Sārsut and the Gaur Brāhmins formerly did not intermarry, but now they do so.

X. — Public Assemblies.

27. There is no assembly of lawyers or rulers appointed by the people. Whenever any religious or secular dispute arises, all the people concerned come to the temple of their god and hold a meeting there. The members of the *panchāyat* (council) are the custodians and the worshippers of the deity's temple, and they summon, through the priest, all the followers of the god. Respectable and rich folk of every village come and give their decision in the matter under dispute. If the parties are satisfied with the decision of the *panchāyat*, the matter ends there and then. Otherwise a party not agreeing with the decision is asked to refer the matter to a law court, and the *panchāyat* serve as witnesses. This *panchāyat* deals only with religious points and has no concern with legal matters.

28. The same assembly is called by the name of **Dūm** or **Khumāli**.

29. The priests and custodians of the temple of the deity are generally the members of the council. The office of these members is hereditary. They belong to the priest and Kanait class and are inferior to the Brāhmins.

XI. — Deities.

30. Generally the hill people worship separate deities and are their disciples. In every *pargand* (group of villages) the people of some villages have a god of their own, and have his temple made in a village situated at convenient distances from the habitations of the followers of the god. Some five to seven families of priests live in this village. They enjoy a free lease of land, as remuneration for their services in the temple. Every one of the disciples of the god, at the time of harvest, gives 10 to 12 seers of grain to the priests. The priests, in addition to the service of the god, also perform, in accordance with the requirements of the time, other religious or secular business.

31. Overseers are appointed to look after the temple and the priests. This office is also hereditary. They are called **kārdārs**, **mēhtās** or **wazīrs**. A portion of the income of the temple is given to them as their remuneration.

XII. — Constitution and Duties of Assemblies.

32. If any social, religious or secular quarrel arises, the complainant informs the priest about this. The priest, with the consent of the overseer, imparts verbal orders to all the people. He goes from village to village, and tells the people that in such and such a temple on such and such a day a *panchāyat* (committee) will be held to decide such and such matters, that all the people should attend it, and that those who do not do so will be punished by the deity. If the business be a very urgent one, the words **dādhi**, **tēk** and **dāl** are pronounced, on hearing which the people leave their engagements, however urgent they may be, and go to attend the council at once. Otherwise every one is fined one rupee. This fine, in a territory under British Government, is given in the temple fund, but in a Native State to the Rāja or Rāna of that place. The priest's method of proclamation is to call aloud to the men of the village, and ask them to present themselves at a certain place on a certain day. People necessarily obey this call, and present themselves at the place and on the date required.

33. The office of the **chairman** is a permanent one. Men of certain families are selected for this office, and the selection rests with the council.

34. The members, as mentioned above, are called *kardárs*, *wazirs* or *méhtás*.

35. If the hereditary chairman be a minor, he is represented by a grown-up man belonging to his brotherhood. If a fit person is not to be found in the brotherhood, then the council appoints a guardian.

XIII. — Trade.

36. The chief articles of commerce are opium, potatoes, wool, borax, fur, woollen cloth, stone, goats, and horses. A detailed account is given below.

Kôt Khái is the greatest centre of the opium trade. People buy this article from the surrounding territories, and sell it, according to the laws, at Kôt Khái. All the license-holding Kanais go to the neighbourhood to buy opium. Any action against the law is discussed and decided among themselves. The buyers of opium are of two sorts: (1) The license-holders who, like great merchants, buy opium from their agents. These merchants send to their agents, in the month of Kártik or Maghar, as much money as the agents ask for. The agents in return supply their masters, in the month of Hâr, with opium at four rupees per seer, no matter what the market rate of opium may be: (2) License-holders who buy opium directly. They buy it at the rate agreed upon by the parties. The same is the case with potatoes. The rest of the trade is with Tibet, and this trade cannot be carried on by a single person. There are three passes into Tibet: the first through Busáhir, the second through Gaphwâl, and a third through Sultánpûr in Kûlu. People go for trade in caravans of hundreds of armed men, for the passage is infested with robbers, and for this reason a small number of men cannot safely travel. The traders going by these three paths have, each, a distinct part of the country set apart for trade. One cannot trade in the territory belonging to the other. Any one doing so is arrested. Some men of each of these three territories are appointed as the members of the council in Tibet. Some four or five Tibetans, too, take part in it. All the cases of theft and civil and criminal suits are decided by it. Half the punishment is borne by the Tibetans and half by the members of the council belonging to the country of the culprit. Besides this, the parties to a case are required to feed the council. This food is named *charvâ*. The members have full authority, and they can decide even murder cases. The money realized from fines is appropriated by themselves. A nominal sum of one or two rupees is paid to the Raja. All commercial contracts are made by the merchants among themselves, and there is no particular rule about this. Different measures suited to different opportunities are adopted.

The merchants of Busáhir are divided into four groups: Takpais, Gâvôas, Shawâls and Râjgrânvis. They are named after the names of their *parganâs* (districts). If a person belonging to one group joins or trades with another group, then the members of his group punish him as well as the group who admitted him without the consent of his party.

The rates of all commodities are fixed by an assembly of all the merchants, and tables of rates are prepared by them. Any one who charges a rate higher or lower than the common rate is considered guilty of disloyalty to the assembly. Commodities cannot be sold before a fixed time. The rate of every article is determined by the merchants and the producers of that article after some days' consideration.

XIV. — Artizans.

Bâdis or Carpenters. — They build houses and make ploughs and other implements of cultivation. The wages for building houses are not fixed, but depend upon the labourers and their employers. They make implements of cultivation and give them, every season, to the land-owners, free of charge. They get food from the land-owners. They also get some grain at the harvest time. This grain is named *shikôtâ*.

Ironsmiths. — They also, like the carpenters, serve the land-owners.

Shoe-makers and Cobblers. — The hides of the dead kine, oxen or buffaloes are given to the cobblers, who make shoes for the land-owners of half the hide; the other half being kept by the shoe-maker as his remuneration. They also get some grain at harvest time.

Shepherds. — One or two of them live in every village. They graze the cattle of the villagers. They get from every house in the village one or two cakes daily, either in the morning or in the evening. They also make agricultural utensils of bamboo, which they give to the land-owners free of charge. They get some land rent-free from the common land of the village, and also some grain at harvest time.

Barbers. — They shave the land-owners for nothing. They get grain at the time of harvest. This also is termed *shikôtā*.

Goldsmiths. — They also serve the land-owners without charging any wages, and get as their remuneration some grain at harvest time.

Tāris. — They mostly beat a drum when a corpse is carried out to the cremation ground. They get some wages in proportion to the wealth of the dead. They are also given some grain at the time of harvest.

Jōgis. — They were originally mendicants, but now they have become householders. They burn their dead, and for every corpse get four annas in money, together with a plate of brass or *kānsi* (spelter) and a woollen or cotton cloth. They also get some grain at the time of harvest.

XV. — Marriage Customs.

Table of Intermarriage Rules.

No.	Caste.	Principal Sub-divisions.	Sub-divisions that can intermarry.	Gōt (sub-section)	Sub-divisions that cannot intermarry.
1	Chhatri or Rājput.	Suraj Bansi and Chandar Bansi.	Khatris, Kayasthas, Solanghis, Puwars, Chohāns, Parmaras, Gyārs, Katwāls, Dishāls, Gaurs, Rāvats, Thākurs, Rāthīs, Sartōrēs, Jamwāls, Sonlis.	Bhardwāj, Gantam, Chohān, Atri, Kashap, Kāshayap, Samdeva.	Mahbali, Pangliani, Nirondi, Ghiani, Naryāl, Sarāti, Ravāti, Johalti, Kotgurn, Kenu, Krānglu, Deltu, Kumbharsenu, Balsni, Thagoi, Ghondi, Sāngri, Badsāl, Takrāl, Atoel, Darkoto, Rihani.
2	Brāhman.	Shukaland Krishan.	Gaur, Sarsut ...	Atri, Bashist, Bhardwāj, Kāshayap.	Kanauji, Bhat, Kan Kobi, Methul, Darāwar, Agni Hotri, Balrami, Mahtā Brāhman, Achārj, Bhāt, Dakaut, Shalauri, Chauti, Papuch or Papuj, Nāmti, Pande, Pujari.
3	Kanait ..	...	Khāsh, Rahu, Karun, Khanāri, Chandel, Chohān, Dogri, Mehta, Dadarwāl, Behrwāl, Pabarwāl, Jād, Lama.	Badohi, Chohān, Kashayap.	The whole of the hilly tracts are full of Kanait, who have many sub-divisions. Every village has two or three minor divisions of them, therefore a detail cannot be given.

37. All tribes and sects can marry among themselves. But the high castes — such as Kshatriyas, Brāhmans, Rājputs, Sūds, Bōhrās, Baniās, Kanait, Goldsmiths, Barbers, Khāsh, Kārun, Rāhus, Khanāra, Jāds, Lāmas — cannot marry with persons belonging to their sub-section. This is called here *khēl*. The *khēl* does not extend over more than twelve generations. *Sūtak pūtak* is also taken into consideration only up to seven generations. No *sūtak pūtak* exists among those families who have no connection with one another within seven generations. Families which are connected even by the twelfth generation do not intermarry, but those who have no such connection can do so.

The **low castes**, such as Kôlis, shepherds, etc., have different rules. They do not intermarry in families which are connected even in the fourth generation. They marry with their maternal uncles' daughters.

The **high castes** hold to the following rules :—

- (1) They do not intermarry with families connected with theirs even by the seventh generation.
- (2) They do not intermarry with families connected with that of their maternal grandfather even by the third or fourth generation.
- (3) They do not marry with girls of lower families than their own.
- (4) They do not marry daughters of the father's or grandfather's sisters.

38. A detail of the relations with whom **intermarriage** is prohibited has been given above.

39. In addition to the facts already mentioned, the following **circumstances** are considered **unfavourable for marriage**. The society is not bound to obey any fixed rules, but the following things about the girls are considered as defects at the time of the marriage : small neck, blue eyes, white or black spots on body, leprosy, syphilis, consumption, etc., which are chronic diseases ; evil names, such as Nāgan, Jōgni, Kāni, etc. ; being born of diseased parents ; not having either known parents or own brothers.

XVI. — Marriage Rites and Rules.

40. **Marriage must be celebrated** according to the rules laid down by some religion. A man belonging to one form of religion cannot marry, either according to the Scriptures, or according to the customs of the country, a woman belonging to another.

41. Some tribes of different castes do indeed **intermarry**, but the high castes do not do so. As for example, goldsmiths and barbers marry the daughters of Kanaits, but they do not give their daughters in marriage to Kanaits. Kanaits marry the daughters of Khāsh and Kārun, and also give their daughters in marriage to the latter. This custom does not prevail among other tribes.

42. Such marriages are not conducted according to the Hindu Scriptures, but they are **customary marriages** known as the **karêwa**.

43. The **Bajpûts** marry the daughters of people of castes lower than theirs. In the same way the men of high castes marry the daughters of men of low castes. The children born of such marriages are considered inferior to those born of religiously lawful marriages.

44. The high and low tribes are distinguished by caste. The men of **high castes** marry the daughters of men of **low castes**. The children thus born are considered inferior to others and are called **sartôrê**. The men of low castes cannot marry the daughters of men belonging to high castes.

45. When the **bride** comes to the house of the **bridegroom**, then, if the marriage is being celebrated in accordance with the Scriptures, the husband and wife play a **gambling match**. Afterwards cooked food is brought and laid before the pair. The husband feeds the wife, and out of the same plate the wife feeds the husband. The bride also pays some money to the Brāhmans and to the sister of the bridegroom. If the husband already has another wife, then the new wife interviews the old one with great pomp and show. This interview is named 'shaking hands.' It is said that the old wife, together with some other women who are singing songs, comes from one side, and the new wife and her husband, together with some other women, come from the other side. The women of both parties sit at the place appointed for interview. At this place also a ceremony called **mukh dikāi** (showing the face) is performed by the women of both parties.

46. Every man marries, according to his capacity, as many wives as he pleases, as there is no limit of number in this respect.

47. If a man marries more than one wife, then, as long as no son is born, the **first wife** is considered the chief or head Rāni, but when a son is born the wife giving birth to the son is considered the chief Rāni. She rules supreme in all the household business. The servants consider her their only master, and the husband as well as other members of the family respect her.

48. Poor men keep all their **wives** in the same house, while rich men set apart separate rooms for every wife.

49. Licentious people **keep girls**, too. Among the high families it is necessary to employ maid-servants; for no man can enter the houses where the *pardā* system is observed, and therefore maid-servants have to perform all the household duties.

XVII. — Divorce and Remarriage.

50. Except the Brāhmins and the Rājputs, among whom the *karṇūd* (irregular marriage) not prevails, the women of all other tribes, such as Sūds, Baniās and Bōhrās, can marry more than one man. The parents of the woman pay to her husband the expenses of the marriage and get her divorced. After this the woman can marry whomsoever she likes.

51. Men set up **illegal connections** with women, and thus directly choose wives. Generally women of loose character marry more than one husband. The well-conducted women stick to one only.

XVIII. — Polyandry.

52. It is a custom among the Sūdras, such as Kanaitis, that the eldest of four or five brothers marries a wife according to the customs of the country. The wife thus married is told that **all the brothers** shall treat her as their **common wife**, and the wife also agrees to this and takes every one of them as her husband. Thus the woman is considered the common wife of all, provided the husbands are own brothers.

XIX. — Prostitution.

53. The women of high families have **no freedom before marriage**, and their parents look after them. It is a common saying that women have three guardians, i.e., parents in early age, husband in youth, and sons in old age. The women of low castes remain free before marriage.

54. Only Tūris, and no other tribe, offer their daughters for **prostitution**.

55. If any girl turns out of loose character before marriage, her parents do not accept any feast in return for their daughter. In the first place, girls cannot become immodest, and even if any one becomes so, she is checked from doing so as far as possible. The matter is kept quite secret, for it leads to the disrepute of the husband as well of the parents.

XX. — General Marriage Customs.

56. The girls are married only when they are above nine years of age.

57. Early marriage cannot be cancelled, whether either of the parties be of age or not. When the religious ceremony is once performed, it becomes, without any regard for sexual intercourse, irrevocable.

58. In high castes, husbands are chosen entirely by the parents of the girls. In low castes, like the Sūdras, the mother of the girl asks her opinion also in the matter of the choice of her husband. The parents of a girl send their barber or Brāhman in search of a husband for the girl, and these men propose betrothals. In other tribes, either the parents of the girl themselves or their relatives choose the husband for the girl.

59. Among the Brāhmins and the Rājputs generally, the barbers and the priests serve as **mediums in marriages**, for that is their profession. These men generally deceive the people. They take bribes from one party as their brokerage. But nowadays people do not invest them with full powers of betrothal, and make enquiries to satisfy themselves.

60. If the girl be a minor, then consent of the guardian and own brothers of the girl is necessary to make the contract valid and to ensure marriage. But if the parties be of age, then their consent alone is sufficient. Under either of the circumstances, the calling together of the

brotherhood and making them witnesses, as it were, is very essential. The object of the distribution of red thread and sweetmeat at the time of the confirmation of the marriage contract is only to make witnesses of those persons who get the red thread and the sweetmeat.

61. Neither the bride nor the bridegroom is allowed to make a choice of the other. They cannot even see each other before their marriage. However, among the Sûdras, like Kanaits, etc., there is no such restriction, and they can make a choice before marriage.

62. (a) If the bridegroom be of a caste higher than that of the bride's parents, then they pay to him *bhatta* (money to make up the deficiency of the caste), and the sum of this money is determined by the parties. Also money must be paid in cases when an inferior man wants to marry his daughter to a superior man, e.g., if a Râna wants to marry his daughter to the son of the Râja.

(b) The bridegroom buys the bride in the way indicated above; but it has now become a custom that, if the girl's father be a poor man, he sells his daughter. Generally this custom prevails among the Kanaits, but now it is gaining ground among the Râjpûts and Brâhmans also.

63. There are no rules to fix this price. If the bridegroom likes to take *dhattâ*, it will be fixed according to the capacity of the bride's parents. If the parents of the girls want to pay the *dhattâ*, it will be in proportion to the rank of the bridegroom's parents. Among the Kanaits, Kôlis and shepherds, the girls of Kanaits are valued at Rs. 60, and those of Kôlis or shepherds at Rs. 40. This price is termed *dhôri*.

64. The price of neither sort can be appropriated by the bride or the bridegroom, but their parents spend this money in marriage expenses.

65. If a formal marriage is once performed it cannot be cancelled. However, among the Muhammadans, marriages can be set aside.

66. The marriage cannot be set aside if either party lose any organ. But customary marriages can be cancelled at the option of the parties. Muhammadans can cancel their marriages.

67. No woman can be set at liberty to re-marry only on account of any of her omissions or commissions. The man does not cohabit with his regularly married wife if she proves to be of loose character, but has to maintain her throughout her life. She can either remain in her husband's house or go to her parents. The Muhammadans divorce a woman of bad character.

68. The system of divorce does not prevail among the Hindus. Muhammadans can divorce their wives on certain conditions, such as impotency of the husband or suspicious character of the wife.

69. The Muhammadans use the *talâka-i-bâin* (irreversible divorce). The husband can divorce the wife without any fault on her part. This divorce becomes valid, when it is proved that the parties quarrelled at least thrice. It is necessary that the divorce be repeated after every month. The husband has the power, either directly, or indirectly, to revoke the divorce. If *talâka-i-bâin* be pronounced thrice, the parties so separated cannot re-marry without the woman going through the formality of marrying another man and being divorced from him. But if the divorce be pronounced only once or twice, this condition is not necessary for re-marriage. If the husband at the time of his death divorces his wife and dies before the expiration of his *iddat* (period of probation of 4 months and 10 days, to see if the woman is *enceinte*), the wife is entitled to her husband's inheritance. It is natural for a woman to wait so long before her second marriage. Also, if the husband abstains from sexual intercourse for 4 months with the wife, this fact is also considered as an irrevocable divorce.

70. There are two kinds of marriages among the Hindus — the legal and the illegal. A formally married wife cannot be divorced, nor can she re-marry. The customary wife is free. She can leave one husband and marry another. It is a popular saying that the women of the hills never become widows — i.e., if one husband dies they marry another. Among Muhammadans, all women re-marry.

XXI. — Inheritance.

71. In the hills the right of children is considered *per stirpes* and not *per capita*. The rights of children born of a formal marriage are superior to those of the children born of a customary marriage. The children whose father and mother are of different castes are called *sartôri*.

Their rights are inferior to those of the children born of customary marriages. They are given money and immoveable property, just sufficient to support them. The children born of criminal connection between a man and a woman are called *jhāta* or *jhātu*, and they live as servants of the family, or are given one or two fields and moveable property worth twenty or thirty rupees.

72. If a man has got two sons by a formal wife, two sons by a customary wife, two sons by a customary wife belonging to a low family, and two sons by a wife of another caste or religion, then the sons of the formal wife have the main right to their paternal inheritance, but they give some portion of it to other sons of their father — i.e., one-half of the property left by the father will be retained by the **legitimate sons**, while the other half will be given to the rest of his sons. The shares of the latter are determined by the members of the brotherhood. The greater portion of the father's property is given to the legitimate sons, and the others are given maintenance as the village council directs, for there is no special law about this. At some places the legitimate children get two-thirds of the whole property of their father, while the natural sons get only one-third.

73. The **legitimate sons** follow their father's religion or faith. The natural sons are termed *sartōri*, and now they have become a separate caste. But gradually this caste is being turned into the caste of its forefathers, for it organises relations with the pure caste.

74. There is a great difference between **legitimate and illegitimate sons** (i.e., sons by wives formally and customarily married). They cannot intermarry, nor do the former eat food prepared by the latter. Among the Kanaita there is no restriction as to eating and drinking. Such restrictions are observed only among the Rājputs, the Brāhmins, the Sāds, the Bōhrās and Baniās.

75. After seven or, at the most, twelve generations, one family loses sight of the fact of being descended from the same forefathers as another family.

76. The **paternal caste** can be lowered only by contracting some irreligious or illegal connections. By no other means can this be effected.

XXII. — Tribal Details.

77. It has been already stated that the Brāhmins are divided into two main sub-divisions, i.e., Gaur and Sārsut, and from these the minor sub-divisions — such as Kanaujī, Bhāt, Kan Kobja, Mēthāl, Dārāvār, Agni Hotri, Bālrāmī Mahābrāhman, Acharāj, Dakaut, Shalāvarī, Chautī, Papūj or Papuch, Nāmtī, Pāndē and Pujāri (priests) — have descended.

The following sub-divisions claim their descent from Rājputs, the Brāhmins and the Baniās:— Kanait, Rāhu, Kārūn, Khāsh, Khānāri, Chandēl, Chohān, Dōgrē, Mehtā, Dadarwāl, Pabarwāl, Jād, Lāma, Goldsmith, Barber, Potter, Bairagi, Sanyāsi, Udāsi and Jōgi.

The following state that their ancestors were Rājputs and Brāhmins:— Kōlis, Shepherds, Washermen, Dye-sinkers, Tūris, Carpenters, Ironsmiths, Bharērās, Cobblers, Shoemakers, Sweepers.

78. The ancient Brāhmins lived near the Indus and the Saraswati and the surrounding territories. The Gaurs and the Sārsuts were their descendants who first came to the hills. As this happened in very remote and ancient times, so they forgot their origin and became known by the name of the place where they went and settled. Those who took their abode in Kānā became known as the Kanaujīs, and those at Cawnpore were called Kan Kobja. Hence it is that those Brāhmins who are now found in the hills are held to be descendants of the two main Brāhman divisions.

The Rājputs, Brāhmins and Sāds say that the Kanaita are the most numerous of all the tribes. All men belonging to any religion, who adopted the *karēwā* (customary marriage) and gave up the religious and national customs, were known as Kanaita. They were sub-divided according to the professions which they adopted. For instance, one who undertook to make gold ornaments was called goldsmith, and so on.

The tradition about the Kōlis is that a Kanait father had two sons by two wives. The sons quarrelled as to who had the superior right. At last it was decided that the one who should plough the field earliest in the morning should get the superior right. So, next morning, one of the brothers

went to plough the field, while the other began to plough the lowest floor of his house, but the place was too narrow to be ploughed. At last, being annoyed, he cut off one of the feet of his bullock. His brother, seeing this, turned him out of his home, for acting against religion. The Kôlîs, the shepherds, the shoemakers, the weavers and the boatmen are his descendants.

XXIII. — Widow Marriage.

80.⁵ The widows of all tribes, except those of the Brâhmans, Râjpûts, Sûds, Banias and Bohras, can re-marry. This custom prevails even among Râjpûts, who do not follow the rules which are observed by the high castes.

81. Widow marriage is not allowed by the Scriptures, for the marriage ceremonies can be performed but once. As the proverb goes: the lion produces a whelp by a single intercourse with the lioness, so the true man acts upon what he says. The banana tree, if once planted, always yields fruit; a woman, once married, cannot be re-married: and rich men do not give up their prejudices.

82. The younger brother can marry the widow of the elder brother, but not *vice versâ*, except among Kanaitis.

83. The widows of low castes can re-marry either a man of their own caste or one of another caste.

XXIV. — Inheritance after re-marriage of widows.

84. If a widow re-marries, her children by the first husband are to be supported by the husband's brother, whether the children be male or female.

85. If the widow marries a man of a caste different from hers, her husband's property is inherited in the following way:—

(a) The widow is entitled to no share of her husband's property if she re-marries.

(b) The children by the first husband are entitled to inherit the property of their father and their shares are determined by custom.

(c) The husband's brother cannot inherit any portion of the property of the deceased. He is entitled only to his father's property.

86. If the widow marries her husband's brother, then the following rules about inheritance are observed:—

(a) The widow cannot claim the property of her first husband.

(b) A person by marrying his brother's widow becomes disentitled to his brother's property.

(c) The children by the first husband inherit the property of their father, and their shares are determined by custom.

(d) The children by the second husband have no right to claim the property of the first husband. They inherit their father's property.

87. The sons of a widow by her husband's brother are not called the sons of her first husband, but those of the second. The children born in the lifetime of the first husband, or within ten months of his death, are considered his sons.

XXV. — Household Customs.

Pregnancy and Childbirth.

88. No ceremonies are performed during pregnancy.

89. The woman assumes one of two postures at child-birth:—

(a) She kneels on the ground. The midwife remains behind her, and, fixing her knees in the back of the lying-in woman, holds both of her shoulders by her hands.

(b) The woman prostrates herself on the ground. The midwife keeps to her left side. Other women take hold of the head, hands and legs of the lying-in woman.

90. The midwife serves in the room of the lying-in woman. After child-birth, persons who are rich, or belong to high families, employ nurses. The wife of a poor man is attended by his parents only.

⁵ [No answer was apparently given to Question 79. — Ed.]

91. Different ceremonies are performed at the birth of a child. Poor men prepare good food and distribute it among the Brāhmins and people of their own brotherhood. On the third day after the birth of the child the family celebrate the first feast. The priest comes and prepares the horoscope of the child. Sugar and sweetmeat is distributed among friends. Singing and dancing parties are given and guns are fired. The second feast comes after seven days, the third after nine, and the fourth after eleven days. The lying-in woman is kept, at the time of child-birth, in the lowest story of the house. After the fourth feast the woman takes the child in her lap. Music is played and songs are sung, and thus the mother, together with some other women, in the first place, worships the sun, and then the gate of the house. Afterwards the household god is worshipped, and some alms are paid to the Brāhmins. Among all the women present, presents and sweetmeats are distributed. People of the surrounding territories come with their guns and fire them. They are given some money or sugar. They present some green grass to the father of the child as a good omen. They call this grass *ḍib* (urf). The four feasts are celebrated only at the birth of a son, and this ceremony is named *gauntrālā*. After eleven days, when the last *gauntrālā* has been performed, the mother can go and live in the upper flats of the house. *Havan* (sacrifice) is also performed. At the birth of a girl no ceremony, except that of good food, is performed, nor is there any special rule about this. As long as the last *gauntrālā* is not performed, nobody either eats food or drinks water from the house of the person where the child was born, except his relatives and people of low castes. This period is termed *sūk* (impure state). The Brāhmins are purified after ten days; the Kshatriyas after twelve days; Baniās, Bôhrā and Sûds after fifteen days, and other castes after one month.

92. If the father be a poor man, then he stops his business for three days, because his relatives, friends and men of the brotherhood come to congratulate him. He has to present to them, according to his capacity, some money, sugar or cloth. In wealthy families, feasts and distribution of alms extend over all the eleven days. All the poor men, Brāhmins, mendicants, priests and barbers get alms and rewards. Green turf is presented and presents are given. Dances and other entertainments take place. At the birth of a girl the father stops his business for one day, or at the most three days. Generally on such occasions only food is distributed, and alms and rewards are not given.

93. There is no reason, except the one mentioned above, for stopping business.

94. No special rule or ceremony is necessary to be observed at the birth of twins.

XXVI. — Adoption.

95. There is no particular rule for adoption. Generally the custom in the hills is that the adopter calls to his house the boy whom he wants to adopt and paints his forehead with *sanḍal* paste. A contract is made according to the conditions agreed upon. Then they go to the temple of the god and break the *dingī* (a piece of wood, to signify truth of purpose) there, and make a solemn vow before the god that if they do not carry out the contract, then the god may punish them. Some remuneration is given to the priest and overseer of the temple, and this is called *bishtī*. Then the boy becomes bound to serve his adopter as his father. The adopter gives every authority to the boy as his son. One rupee is offered to the god.

96. Until the contract has been reduced to writing, or the *dingī* has been broken at the temple of the god, the adoption is considered invalid.

97. The validity of the adoption depends upon the performance of this ceremony alone.

98. No custom, other than those given above, prevails in the hill tracts. There is no restriction of age for adoption. However, it is necessary that the adoptee be of the same blood as the adopter.

XXVII. — Puberty.

99. A ceremony is performed to mark the beginning of puberty, which is termed *dasṭhan*. Alms are distributed and Brāhmins are fed. In the hills this custom is observed by very few people, except the high caste Kshatriyas.

100. The period of puberty is marked among the Hindus by wearing the sacred thread, and among the Muhammadans by circumcision. Both these ceremonies are performed at a time when the boy has gained enough wisdom and sense to distinguish between right and wrong, and good and bad.

XXVIII. — Betrothal.

101. Betrothals are of two kinds:—

(a) **Barni** is that which is according to the Hindu Scriptures. The parents of the boy and those of the girl propose the betrothal, and the priest appoints a day for carrying it out. On this date the boy's father sends the priest and barber with some ornaments and clothes, which the girl puts on. Some money is given to the barber, the priest, the nurse and the Brâhman as their reward. A feast like the one given at the time of marriage is given, and a music band attends. The servants of both parties get rewards. Then the girl's parents send clothes and ornaments for the boy.

(b) **Sagâi or sôtâ**. In this case a few ornaments or, if these be not available, one or more rupees are sent by the father of the boy to the girl through the priest or some elation. In order that the betrothal be considered permanent, the man carrying the ornaments takes his food in the house of the girl's parents. No other ceremony is celebrated, nor any rewards are given. Nothing is sent by the girl for the boy.

102. In the **Baoni Ceremony**, in order to ensure betrothal, the wearing of ornaments and clothes and painting the forehead with *sandal* paste and distribution of rewards are necessary. In the **Sagai Ceremony**, the taking of food by the messenger and handing over of money or ornaments to the girl's parents is essential.

103. However, the continuance of betrothal depends upon the option of parties.

104. Betrothal can be made after or before the parties are five years of age.

105. The consent of parents is essential for betrothal. If the woman be of age, then her parents also are consulted. If the father be dead, the permission of the elder brother or the guardian is taken. If there be no guardian, then the own brothers and near relatives are the persons whose consent is necessary.

106. If the betrothal is cancelled, one party pays the expenses incurred by the other. A list is prepared of all the articles exchanged at betrothal.

XXIX. — Marriage.

107. Marriages are of three kinds:—

(a) **Bêd-lagan**. — The bridegroom, wearing a bridal chaplet or wreath on his head, goes to the house of the bride with music and attendants. The girl's parents give two or four feasts according to their capacity. The *bhânwar* (marriage service) is recited. After the *bêd-lagan* (matrimonial ceremony) the party is dismissed. The bridegroom comes back to his house and gives a feast, and the marriage festivities continue for some days. Prizes are given to his own menials, as well as to those of the bride. The bride pays some money to the men who accompanied the bridegroom to the house of the former and *vice versa*. The rewards and prizes are given according to the capacity of the parties, and there is no fixed rule for this. The recital of the *bhânwar* is essential in such marriages.

(b) **Jhâjrâ or Gâdar**. — One or two men representing the bridegroom go to the house of the bride, where one person from every family in the village is present. They are given either a dinner or a supper by the bridegroom. The priest, the barber, the musician and other menials of the village are given four annas each, or at the most one rupee each, as their remuneration. The bride is brought to the bridegroom's house. Ganêsh is worshipped, and this is essential.

(c) **Bardani**. — The bridegroom sends a woman to fetch the bride. One or two women come with the bride also. Ganêsh is not worshipped nor any prizes given.

108. In the case of the Bêd-lagan the recital of *bhânwar* is necessary, in the case of the Jhâjrâ the worship of Ganêsh, and in the case of the Gâdar nothing.

109. There is no custom of **seizing the bride forcibly**. Two or three days after the carriage, if the wife be of age, the ceremony of union known as the *pusman sammit karam* (the union of man and woman) is performed. The priest appoints an auspicious date for this purpose. On that date one common bedding is laid for the pair. The husband, according to his capacity, gives some

money or ornaments to the wife on this first intercourse, which is called the *nāru khulāi* (remuneration for untying the girdle). The women distribute some sweets among themselves.

If a man forcibly seizes a woman and brings her to his house, this is called *hār* (abduction) and is considered an illegal marriage.

110. No such custom as the marriage of the bride with a god prevails.

XXX. — Death.

111. The dead of all the tribes are cremated, except those of the Muhammadans, the Bairāgis, the Udāsīs, the Sanyāsīs and the Jōgis, whose dead are buried.

112. The Muhammadans place their dead, at the time of burial, in a lying position; the Bairāgi, etc., in a sitting posture.

113. The Hindu corpse is kept in a coffin, having its upper side open, and fine cloths are put upon it. A funeral pile of wood is prepared, and the coffin containing the corpse is placed upon it. and then it is set on fire. When all the corpse is reduced to ashes, these ashes are either thrown into the *khādī* (a deep valley), or are sent over to Hardwār to be washed away by the Ganges.

114. Different tribes have different ways of disposing of their dead :—

(a) The Muhammadans wash the corpse before it is buried. Then it is taken to the burial ground on a *chārpāi* (couch) or in a box. Then a grave is dug. Their priest chants some words according to their faith, and the corpse is laid into the grave and the pit is filled with earth. Some men put in some salt also, in order to hasten the dissolution of the corpse. A stone is placed on the mouth of the grave, and it is covered by a sheet of white cloth. A *fakir* (mendicant) lives there to take care of the grave, and after some days the sheet, the *chārpāi* and some money are given to him.

(b) The corpse of a Brāhman, Rājput, Bania, Sūd or Bōhrā is well washed. Then it is enveloped in a shroud of gauze or muslin and is placed in a painted coffin open at one end. Shawls and other silken cloths cover the dead body. The coffin is then placed in the court of the house and music is played. Thousands of people gather together, as if to a fair. They come in white robes to mourn for the dead. Musicians walk before the coffin, and all the relatives and other men, who come together for mourning, follow the coffin to the cremation ground, where the Jōgi prepares a pile of wood two or three cubits wide and four or five cubits long. There, a cow with a calf is given to the Jōgi or to the Mahābrāhman. Then the corpse is placed upon the pile, and funeral cakes, together with some alms, are offered in the name of the dead. Then one of the relatives strikes the head of the corpse with a stick, and this is called *k upāl kirya*.

The Achārj (man officiating at the funeral ceremonies) is paid some money. Then the pile is lighted. All the musicians and Achārīs present are paid some money. Grain, fruits and pieces of money are thrown over the corpse throughout the passage from the home to the crematory. All these expenses are fixed according to the capacity of the dead.

(c) Among other tribes, the corpse is washed. The musicians are sent for, who play on instruments for one or two days. In some places the corpse is kept at home for two to three days. Then the coffin is taken out with the band playing before it. All the men who have come for mourning accompany the coffin to the cremation ground. They throw as much grain, fruits and pieces of money as they can afford over the corpse on their way from home to the cremation ground. Then having placed the corpse on the funeral pile, they take off all the costly coverings and burn, with the corpse, the ordinary ones. The musicians are paid their wages. The *kapāl kirya* is not performed. Funeral cakes are not offered as in the case (b). The ashes are thrown into the valley. The well-to-do people carry the bones to Hardwār.

115. There are three different methods of propitiating the dead :—

(a) If the deceased died a natural death, the Brāhmins, Rājputs, Baniās, Sūds and Bōhrās put a lamp in the room where the deceased breathed his last, and keep it burning throughout day and night for ten days, taking care for it to burn continually. An earthen pitcher full of water is placed at the door with a hole in the bottom, from which water trickles. Every evening the son, or other

relative of the deceased, offers the funeral cake. The priest sits near the lamp and reads a *kathā* (a text) from the *Nasket* and *Garuḍ Purāṇas*. After ten days the lamp and the pitcher are thrown into the valley, and the reading of a *kathā* is also stopped. Then *spindī karam* (a ceremony to unite the dead with his ancestors) is performed, and after that the *vikhāl sharādīh* is performed. The Achāraj is given ornaments, clothes and food. All the Brāhmins present are given some alms and cows, and horses are also given to them. After a fortnight or more a goat is killed, and all the relations are called together and fed with meat and rice. The father of the wife of deceased person's son supplies all the requisite material at this time, and gives clothing to his daughter and son-in-law. All present are fed for two or three days by the family of the deceased. After this a *shrādīh* (offering of funeral cakes to the dead) is performed every month. After six months a great sacrifice is performed, and cows, ornaments and clothes are given to the Brāhmins in the name of the dead. In the same way annual and quadrennial sacrifices are performed; after which only an annual *shrādīh* is observed. The bones of the dead are sent to Hardwār. Rice balls are offered at Bhoa and Kurukshētra, too.

(b) There is no particular custom to be observed at the death of a **childless man**. All the ceremonies of *shrādīh* and the sacrifices mentioned above are performed in this case, too, with the ordinary expenses.

(c) In the case of a **violent death**, it is necessary to offer funeral cakes in the name of the dead at Hardwār, Bhoa and Kurukshētra. Some persons perform the Nārāiṇī Balī Shrādīh — i. e., funeral cakes are offered for forty days instead of ten.

(d) Among the other tribes, having or not having of children by the deceased is of no importance. Much stress is laid upon music. Poor men call in a small band, while rich men employ a large band of musicians. Funeral cakes are offered on the third day after death. The ten *karmas* (ceremonies) are not performed. The goat is either not killed, or the heir of the deceased kills the goat any time after three days, and the mourning ceremonies then come to an end. Funeral cakes are offered at Hardwār, but this has been introduced only very lately. Monthly *shrādīhs* are not performed, but *shrādīhs* are performed after six months, one year and four years. Ornaments and clothing are given to the Brāhmins. The son of the sister of the deceased is given some alms and ornaments, instead of the Achāraj (the man officiating in funeral ceremonies).

(e) Among **Muhammadans**, after forty days a feast is given to all the brotherhood. No other ceremony is performed.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

THE FRENCH ARCHÆOLOGICAL SOCIÉTÉ D'ANGKOR.

By the Franco-Siamese treaty of 23rd March 1907, we learn that France has acquired the provinces of Battambang, Siemreap and Sisophon. These new provinces include the most magnificent group of architectural monuments in Asia, which are now added to those previously possessed by France in Cambodia and Annam. Among the numerous edifices that bear witness to the splendour of the ancient Indo-Chinese civilization are the wonderful temples of Angkor, — rivalling the greatest architectural marvels of the world.

As repository of these treasures France has not been slow in recognising the duty of carefully

preserving them, and, indeed, after existing for a millennium exposed to the ravages of time, a tropical climate and its vegetation, they are in need of careful conservation. French archæologists will avoid the evils of restorations but, though local revenues cannot assume the full burden of the expenditure required for so large an undertaking, they are resolved that it shall not be said that Angkor long suffered from French national indifference. They have therefore formed the 'Société d'Angkor' for the preservation of the remains. It consists of over fifty founders — French archæologists, professors, scholars and others interested in Indo-China and the preservation from destruction of the relics of its glorious past.

THE AGE OF THE TAMIL JIVAKACHINTAMANI.

BY T. S. KUPPUSWAMI SASTRI (TANJORE).

THE religious works of the Jinas made their appearance first in Sanskrit, and then, assuming the garb of the Indian vernaculars, spread through the country. The Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi* is probably one of such. Having been adapted into Tamil, it is looked upon even during the present day as a standard Tamil classic. The works that deal with the story of Jivaka are four in number, viz. — (1) the *Gadyachintāmaṇi* by Vāḍibhasiṃha, (2) the *Kshattrachūdāmaṇi* by the same author, (3) the *Jivandharachampū* by Harichandra. These three are in Sanskrit. Another work is said to have been composed by Harichandra and called the *Jivandharandhaka*, which is believed to treat of the life of Jivaka. No manuscript of it has been traced so far, and I therefore doubt if it ever existed. Consequently, it may at present be assumed that the fourth extant work dealing with the life of Jivaka is (4) the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi*. We shall now proceed to examine if this poem is an original work, or if it is merely an adaptation of some earlier epic.

Mahāmahōpādhyāya Pandit Saminatha Aiyar, in his edition of a portion of the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, published in 1899, observes : “ The Sanskrit works *Kshattrachūdāmaṇi* and *Gadyachintāmaṇi* by Vāḍibhasiṃha, and *Jivandharachampū* and *Jivandharandhaka* by Harichandra deal with the story of Jivaka. This story is related in the *Mahāpurāṇa*, which contains the stories of the sixty-three *Saldākāpurushas*. The bilingual *Sripurāṇa*, which gives an account of the twenty-four *tīrthaṅkaras*, also refers to the life of Jivaka in the story of Sri-Vardhamāna. On comparing the first three poems with the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, I was struck with the resemblances between the two, and thought that in each of the former could be found several passages containing the sentiments and ideas expressed in some of the verses of the latter. I naturally began to suspect if the Sanskrit poems had been composed on the model of the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*. But on closer examination it was found that this supposition was untenable, because all the Sanskrit names introduced into the *Gadyachintāmaṇi*, *Kshattrachūdāmaṇi*, and *Harichandrachampū* are found in the Tamil work. Many corrupt Sanskrit and Prākṛit words and many coincidences of thought and sentiment were at the same time traceable. I, accordingly, concluded that the *Jivakachintāmaṇi* was not an original work like the Tamil *Silappadigāram*. The former bears a closer resemblance to the *Gadyachintāmaṇi* than to the other two Sanskrit poems, while the story as found in the *Jivakachintāmaṇi* is different from the account given in the *Sripurāṇa*” It is thus clear that Mahāmahōpādhyāya Pandit Saminatha Aiyar is of opinion that the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi* is not an original work, but that it is, greatly indebted to the Sanskrit *Gadyachintāmaṇi*. A few of the parallel passages are extracted below and serve to illustrate my remark.

- (1) “Uṇḍ-ṇav=ṇaiyir=kēṭṭpār-uyir=ṇu pāvam-ellān
gaṇḍ=ṇi-tteliḡav=ṇru kāṭṭuvāḷ pōlav=āgi
viṇ-ḍoḍa nivanda kōyil viṇṇavar-magaḷir=chenṇāḷ
veṇ=ḍalai payiṇra kāṭṭuḷ viḷaṅ-iḷai tamiyaḷ=āṇāḷ.”

Jivakachintāmaṇi, Nāmagal-ilambagam.

“जीवानां पापवैचित्रीं भुतवन्तः भुतो पुरा ।
पश्येयुरधुनेतीव श्रीकल्पाभूदकिंचिना ॥”

Kshattrachūdāmaṇi, 1st lambaka—85.

The idea in the above two quotations is the same :— “ That lady who might be compared to the goddess Lakshmi became lonely and helpless as if she meant to show to the world which had only heard it explained from books that sin cannot be exhausted but by the inevitable working out of its evil results.”

- (2) “ Solliya napmai=illâ=chchunangan=i-vvudambu nîngi-
y=ell-olî=ttêvan=âgi=ppirakkumôv=enña vênḍâ
koll-ulaiy-agatt=iṭṭ=ûdi=kûr-irum piradañ=gutta
v=ellaiyil sem-bonn=âgiy=eri-niram perrad=anrê.”

Jivakachintāmaṇi, Guṇamālaiyâr-ilambagam.

“ यक्षेन्द्रोऽजनि यक्षोऽयमहो मन्त्रस्य शक्तितः ।
कालायसं हि कल्याणं कल्पते रसयोगतः ॥ ”

Kshattrachūdāmaṇi, 4th lambaka, ślō. 4.

Here again the idea is the same :— “ By the power of *mantra*, this dog became the king of Yakshas. Is not iron changed into gold by amalgam in the process of alchemy ? This is even so.”

- (3) “ Ven=ṇira=ttugil-iṇangan vīṇndu māś=âgi nīṇra
v=on-ṇirav=udiran=dannaiy=udiratt-âl=olikkal=âmê
paṇ-ṇira=kkilaviyâr tam-bāṣaiyiṇâr=piranda pāvañ-
gaṇ-ṇira-mulaiyiṇâr tañ=galviyâr=kaḷikkal=âmê.”

Jivakachintāmaṇi, Kēmasariyar-ilambagam.

“ भन्यानुबन्धी संसारस्तेनैव न परिक्षयी ।
रक्तेन दूषितं वस्त्रं न हि रक्तेन शुध्यति ॥ ”

Kshattrachūdāmaṇi, lamba 6, ślō. 10.

Once again the same idea is given :— “ The misery of this worldly life which grows up by attachment can never be cut off by attachment again. A cloth stained with blood can never be cleansed by blood.”

It will be seen from the above extracts that the expressions vary only as much as might be expected from the difference of idiom between Sanskrit and Tamil. The ideas are exactly the same. What is compressed in two lines of verse in Sanskrit is expanded into four lines of Tamil. There is no other difference. Similar passages may also be quoted from the *Gadyachintāmaṇi*.

The Sanskrit poems which treat of the story of Jivaka are based on the Jaina purāṇas. And this fact is attested to by the authors of the former. For instance, Vāḍibhasimha says in the preamble to his *Gadyachintāmaṇi* :—

निःसारभूतमपि बन्धनतन्तुजातं
मूर्ध्ना जनो वहति हि प्रसवानुषङ्गात्
जीवधरप्रभवपुण्यपुराणयोगा-
द्वाक्यं ममाप्युभयलोकहितप्रदायि ॥

“ The string by its association with flowers is accepted by the head. Even so then shall my humble words showing the joys of this world and the world hereafter be acceptable by their association with the holy *purāṇa* which recites the life of Jivaka.”

As the subject-matter is the same in the *Kshattrachūdmani*, there was no need for the author, Vāḍibhasin̄ha, to refer pointedly to the fact of the poem being based on the *purāṇas*. In the Tamil *Jivakachintāmani* the author, Tiruttakkadēvar, says:—

*Munnir=ppiranda pavalattōḍu saṅjumnuttu-
m=annir=avarlekum=enin yā.=avai nikkugirpā-
r=annirar=en sor=paḷudūyin=ūh=goḷavararē
poyṇṇiravallā=pporulḍi viṇ puguḍum=enbār.*

The commentator Nachchiṇārkkīyār explains the words *poyṇṇiravallā=pporul*, 'ideas that do not partake of falsehood,' as follows: "The majority of those that think they can obtain liberation through the true words of the *purāṇa* will certainly never despise the poet's words, however distasteful and insipid they may be, as they are only the medium by which the ideas of the *purāṇa* are conveyed. This the poet was convinced of and hence his boldness in writing thus." It is then clear that, at the time of the commentator Nachchiṇārkkīyār, Tiruttakkadēvar was believed to have based his *Jivakachintāmani* on the Jaina *purāṇas*. As Tiruttakkadēvar does not refer either to the *Gadyachintāmani* or to the *Kshattrachūdmani*, it remains doubtful if they were really anterior to the *Jivakachintāmani*. At any rate there seems to be no doubt that the latter was written after the *purāṇas*. And according to Jaina tradition, the original story of Jivaka is found in the *Mahāpurāṇa*, while the bilingual *Śrīpurāṇa* is admittedly of later date.

We have now to ascertain the date of the *Mahāpurāṇa*. The author who began the composition of the work is Jinasēnāchārya, disciple of Virasēnāchārya. The former wrote the *Harivaṃśa-Purāṇa* in Saka-Samvat 705 (= A. D. 783) and became the preceptor, it is said, of the Rāshtrakūṭa king Amoghavarsha I., whose accession took place in A. D. 813. The *Pārsvādhyudaya* was written during the same reign by the same author at the request of a co-disciple, named Vinayasēnāchārya, for a poetical work celebrating Pārśvanātha-Tirthaṃkara. In composing this work Jinasēnāchārya chose to honour the Sanskrit poet and dramatist Kālidāsa in an ingenious way. He wove each line of verse of the poem *Mēghasāndēśa* into his own *ślōkas*. The last line of each of the latter is identical with that of one of the verses of the former. Not even a line of the *Mēghasāndēśa* has been omitted. Neither has he at the same time sacrificed his own thoughts or his subject in thus trying to honour the lines of Kālidāsa's poem. Jinasēnāchārya, who began the *Mahāpurāṇa*, did not live to complete it. The work was taken up by his disciple Guṇabhadra-chārya and finished. The portion of the *Mahāpurāṇa* which was composed by the former is called the *Pūrvapurāṇa*, while the composition of the latter is known as the *Uttarapurāṇa*, and contains the story of Jivaka. It may therefore be supposed that the Sanskrit poems mentioned above, as well as the Tamil *Jivakachintāmani*, are based on the *Mahāpurāṇa*, composed by Jinasēnāchārya and his disciple Guṇabhadra-chārya. The date of the *Mahāpurāṇa* would then be the upper limit of that of the *Jivakachintāmani*. Luckily, we have no difficulty in fixing the former, because the subjoined *prasasti* of the *Uttarapurāṇa* tells us that it was written during the time of the Rāshtrakūṭa king Akālavarsha and in the Saka year 820, corresponding to A. D. 897. The very day on which the work was finished may be fixed with the help of the astronomical details furnished in the following passage:—

“ अकालवर्षभूपाले पालयत्यखिलमिलाम् ।
तस्मिन्निध्वस्तनिःशेषदिशि वीभ्रयशोऽनुषि ॥
पद्यालयमुकुलकुलप्रविकासकसत्प्रतापतमहसि ।
श्रीमति लोकादित्ये प्रध्वस्तप्रयितशत्रुसंतमसे ॥
चेल्लपताके चेल्लध्वजानुजे चेल्लकेतनतनूजे ।
जैनेन्द्रधर्मवृद्धिविधायिनि विधुवीभ्रयशसि ॥
व्रतवासदेवमखिलं भुञ्जति निष्कण्ठकं सुखं सुचिरम् ।
तत्पित्रा निजनामकृते ख्याते वङ्गापुरे पुरेष्वधिके ॥

शकनृपकालाभ्यन्तरविश्वविकाशतमिताब्दान्ते ।
 मङ्गलमहार्थकारिणि पिङ्गलनामनि समस्तजनसुखरे ॥
 श्रीपञ्चम्यां बुधार्द्राद्युजि दिवसकरे मन्त्रिवारे बुधांशे
 पूर्वायां सिंहलग्नं धनुषि धरणिजे वृश्चिकाकौ तुलायाम् ।
 सर्वे शुक्ले कुलीरं गवि च सुरगुरौ निष्ठितं भव्यवयैः
 मासेज्यं सर्वसारं जगति विजयते पुण्यमेतत्पुराणम् ॥ ”

Before proceeding to fix the lower limit of the date of the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, I take advantage of this opportunity to refer to another Tamil work composed by a Jaina preceptor. This is the versified Tamil lexicon *Sūlāmaṇinigaṇḍu*, compiled by Maṇḍalapurusha, the disciple of Guṇabhadra. In the body of the lexicon, Maṇḍalapurusha gives a clue as to his date when he mentions Kīruṭṭiṇārāya (Kṛishṇārāya) as having made unbounded gifts (*koḍai-maḍam*). By Kīruṭṭiṇārāya the Vijayanagara king Kṛishṇārāya cannot be meant, because Maṇḍalapurusha claims Guṇabhadra for his preceptor. By the Tamil expression *koḍai-maḍam* the author evidently refers to the *biruda* Akālavārsha of the Rāshṭrakūṭa king, Kṛishṇa II. It thus appears that both Guṇabhadra and his disciple Maṇḍalapurusha were protégés of the Rāshṭrakūṭa king, Akālavārsha-Kṛishṇa II, whose dates range from A. D. 888 to 911-12. The Tamil lexicon *Sūlāmaṇinigaṇḍu* was therefore compiled roughly in the third quarter of the 9th century A. D.

Returning to the lower limit of the date of the *Jivakachintāmaṇi* we find that the Śaiva teacher Umāpatiśivāchārya, who flourished at the beginning of the 14th century, refers to the work in his *Tiruttonḍarapurāṇavaralāru*. In describing the circumstances which led to the composition of the Tamil *Periyapurāṇam* by the Chōḷa minister Sēkkiḷār, Umāpati tells us that the Chōḷa king Anapāya, the patron of Sēkkiḷār, was devoting his time to the study of the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*. Sēkkiḷār exhorted his patron to study the lives of the Śaiva devotees and not waste his time over the *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, which was based on fiction, and by the study of which no merit would accrue to him. Subsequently, Sēkkiḷār composed the Tamil *Periyapurāṇam* at the instance of the Chōḷa king. This Anapāya-Chōḷa is otherwise known as Rājendra-Chōḷadēva *alias* Kulōttuṅga-Chōḷa I. or Śūmāgandavirtta-Chōḷa. Archaeological experts say that his time was between 1070 to 1118 A. D. here is no mention of *Jivakachintāmaṇi* in any work prior to the time of the *Periyapurāṇam*. As I have already pointed out, that the former must have come into existence only after the 9th century, it may be concluded that Tiruttakkadēvar's *Jivakachintāmaṇi* was composed during the period ranging from the beginning of the 10th to the second half of the 11th century A. D.

¹ It is not clear on what grounds Mr. Kappuswami Sastri identifies Anapāya with Kulōttuṅga I. But as he is not the first to make this identification, it is necessary to state the case as it actually stands. So far as it is known at present there is only one inscription which mentions the Chōḷa king Anapāya. It is engraved on one of the walls of the Tyāgarāja temple at Tiruvārūr in the Tanjore district, and is dated during the reign of a Kulōttuṅga, who, to judge from the alphabet employed in the inscription, cannot be Kulōttuṅga I. Even on purely literary grounds the identification of Anapāya with Kulōttuṅga I. seems to be untenable. The author of the Tamil *Periyapurāṇam*, who was a protégé of the Chōḷa king Anapāya, must have lived a pretty long time after Nambi-Āṇḍār Nambi, who arranged the Śaiva Tamil scriptures (*Tirumurai*). The *Tiruvīśaipp*, which forms a part of these scriptures, has a hymn on the Gaṅgaikōṇḍachōḷēśvara temple, built evidently by the Chōḷa king Gaṅgaikōṇḍa-Chōḷa or Rājendra-Chōḷa I., the maternal grandfather of Kulōttuṅga I. It is thus apparent that Nambi-Āṇḍār Nambi must have lived some time after Rājendra-Chōḷa I. If Anapāya had been the grandson of Rājendra-Chōḷa I., it is not easy to believe that the work accomplished by Nambi could have been forgotten so soon, especially as the circumstances under which he discovered the sacred scriptures were almost miraculous. King Anapāya was altogether ignorant of Nambi and his work, and had practically lapsed into the Jaina creed. The interval between Rājendra-Chōḷa I. and Kulōttuṅga I. is hardly 50 years, and the meritorious work of Nambi, accomplished during the earlier portion of this interval under such exceptional conditions, could not have been completely forgotten towards the close of the interval. It seems to me therefore that the identification of Anapāya with Kulōttuṅga I. is untenable on epigraphical as well as literary grounds. — V. V.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.

From the Native point of view.

BY MIAN DURGA SINGH.

*(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)**(Continued from p. 284.)*

XXXI. — Purification Ceremonies.

The Brahmins are purified in ten days, the Kshatriyas in twelve days, the Vaiśyas, *i. e.*, Baniās, Sûds and Bôhrās, in fifteen days, and all other tribes in one month. People neither eat nor drink in the house in which some one has died, during the period of impurity. But when the heirs of the deceased eat either meat or asafoetida, they are considered purified, even if it be done within the period of impurity and then people do not object to eating food prepared by them.

The Kshatriyas and Baniās, etc., get their heads shaved at the death of a relation. But this is not a general custom: for to shave the head it is necessary that the written permission of the Râja or the Rânâ be obtained beforehand.

116. The *shrâdhs* are of two kinds:—

(a) Those performed in the name of the deceased. A detailed account of such *shrâdhs* has been already given.

(b) Those which are performed in the *pitri paksh* (the dark half of the lunar month) in the month of *Bhâdron* (about September). In this month all tribes, except the menials, perform *shrâdhs*. Some persons perform *shrâdhs* during the whole of the fortnight. Others perform only one *shrâdh*, in the name of all their dead, on the *amâvas* day (the last day of the lunar month). Every kind of food is cooked for the *shrâdhs*; fruits are put upon the table. The Brâhmins are called on the eve of the *shrâdh* to feast at a certain person's house, all arriving in the morning. The owner of the house calls the family priest and offers funeral cakes. Sacrifice is also performed. After this he washes the feet of all the Brâhmins, offers them *sandal* and flowers, and feeds them. In the end, money is given to the Brâhmins and they are dismissed. The family priest gets more than all the others.

117. The Brâhman works as the priest in funeral ceremonies and also chants the hymns.

118. All the tribes in the hills have Brâhmins to officiate in their funeral ceremonies. The nephew also receives some gifts.

119. The method of purification has been stated above. It is done by killing a goat and eating asafoetida.

120-121. Either in the case of death or birth, it is after the prescribed periods that purification is regained. During that period, provided the heirs of the deceased do not use meat or asafoetida, the impurity continues.

122. On the day appointed for eating asafoetida or killing the goat, all the relations and the Brâhmins are called together, and all of them are required to eat asafoetida, while Brâhmins are also fed. The Brâhman chants some hymns over a mixture of milk, Ganges water, and cow's urine (called the *panoh gavyâ*) and makes the heirs of the deceased take some of this mixture, and thus purification is effected.

XXXII. — Religion.

Sects.

123. The Hindus are divided into three sects, Saivas, Vaishnavas, and Sâktaks, worshippers of Sakti, the Female Principle.

The Saiva worship Siva. They are the disciples of the Sanyâsi or Udâsi mendicants. Some of them use meat and wine, while others do not.

The Vaishnavas are the followers of the Bairâgis. Generally they do not use meat and wine. The majority of the Brâhmans belong to this sect.

The Sâktaks have as their teachers the Jôgis, the Sanyâsis, and the Udâsis. They worship all sorts of deities. The use of meat and wine at the time of worship is considered good. They sacrifice goats to the goddess Kâlî. There is a separate god to every village or every four or five villages. Some of this sect go to Jawâla Mukhî to worship in the temple there.

Only Shêkhs are found among the Muhammadan sects. They believe in the Lakh Dâtâ Saint (the giver of millions). They do not follow any of the rules of the Hindu religion, but act according to their own laws.

124. The existing religion has been the religion of the people of this country from ancient times, and the three sects have always observed the rules of their own order.

125. It has been already stated that in ancient times the people followed the Vedic religion, until it was supplanted by Buddhism. After the decline of Buddhism the former religion revived and is still flourishing.

126. Ordinarily, Hindus follow one of the three forms of belief above mentioned. Some people here and there follow the dictates of their conscience and believe in other gods and teachers. But these are very few.

127. Some persons worship tombs and *pîrs* (saints) also.

The Gods of the Hill Tracts.

No.	The Name of God.	The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
1	Dêvi or Durgâ.	Kiyârî...	Kôt Khât and Kôtgurû.	Lêvi is worshipped throughout the hills.
2	Chatur Mukh...	Mailôn	Kôtgurû	All the people believe in the god of Kôtgurû. He is also worshipped in Kanehtî and Rêk and in all the small villages.
3	Dum ...	Danthlâ	Do.	Worshipped only by the natives of Danthlâ.
4	Dum ...	Pumlâhî	Do.	The god of this one village only.
5	Dum ...	Shamâthlâ	Do.	Do. do.
6	Dum ...	Dalân	Do.	Do. do.
7	Marichh	Kêpu	Do.	Worshipped in Kêpu, Gharâl, and Nanjâ.
8	Dêva Kîrtî	Kîrtî	Do.	Worshipped in Kîrtî, Bhanânâ, and Shâwat.
9	Bhôtêshar	Bhôthi	Do.	Worshipped in Bhôthî, Bagâhar, and by the agriculturists of Mâhorî.
10	Baindrâ	Dêvrî	Kôt Khât	The god of the Majbghôr and Thakariâghôr territories.

No.	The Name of God.	The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
11	Chambî ..	Brêôn	Kôt Khâî ..	The god of the agriculturists of Brêôn and Auri.
12	Dum	Nehrá	Do. ...	The god of this one village only.
13	Mahâ Dêva ...	Pûrag... ..	Do. ...	The god of half Chhê Bisi.
14	Nâg	Chathlâ	Do. ...	The god of Chathlâ and Pungrish.
15	Kâlî Tûnâ ...	Rakh Chambî Kûpar.	.....	Worshipped throughout Kot Khâî.
16	Sharavan Nâg.	Shôshan ...	Kôt Khâî ...	Worshipped in Gajdhâr in the Kôt Khâî Tahsîl and in Shêlâ in Darkôtî.
17	Baindrâ Tânî...	Khâri and Pî-darâ.	Do. ...	Worshipped only in these two villages.
18	Nandharârî ...	Pujârî ...	Do. ...	The patron of Chêwar, Gajdhâr, Chehr, Shalêwar, Darkôtî State and half Chhê Bisi.
19	Mahâ Dêva ...	Dalsâr ...	Do. ...	The god of Dalsâr only.
20	Nandan ...	Devri	Kanehtî State..	God of all Kanehtî, except Sadôch.
21	Dêvî Âd Shaktî	Kachêr ...	Kumhârsên State.	The goddess of the whole territory, but there are other minor village gods.
22	Mahâ Dêva ...	Kôtî Madhâtî...	Do. ...	Worshipped in all Kumhârsên, but there are other minor gods of villages.
23	Magnêshar ...	Kôt	Do. ...	The god of the Sêl territory.
24	Dum	Sarmalâ	Do. ...	The god of the Obâdêsh territory.
25	Nâg	Ghûndâ	Do. ...	The god of Ghûndâ and Chadyânâ in the Kôt Khâî Tahsîl.
26	Baindrâ ...	Dim	Do. ...	The god of one village only.
27	Dum	Himrî	Do. ...	The god of the Chagâon territory.
28	Nâg	Bâgî	Do. ...	The god of the Chajôli territory.
29	Bhîma Kâlî ...	Sarâhan ...	Busâhir State..	The goddess of the territory of Busâhir. There are other minor gods under her.
30	Mahâsû ...	Shêkal ...	Do. ...	The god of agriculturists of Shêkal only.
31	Pabâsî ...	Chapâri ...	Do. ...	The god of the agriculturists of Balâr in the Râwin State, Chapâri and Lohârkôtî.
32	Pabâsî ...	Gavâs	Do. ...	The god of the rest of the State.
33	Panch Nâg ...	Janglêkâ, Dêvdî, Tangnû, Pêkhâ, and Gô-sakvârî.	Do. ...	Has a temple in each of these five villages.

No.	The Name of God.	The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
34	Chasráli ..	Gûsakvârî ...	Busâhir State ...	The god of two or three villages only.
35	Godârû Pûbâsî. or	Daswânî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Daswânî territory.
36	Godârû Pûbâsî. or	Khaniârâ ...	Do. ...	The god of Khaniârâ territory.
37	Dêva Sheldêsh.	Shêldêsh ...	Do. ...	The god of the Larôt and Shêladêsh.
38	Nâg ...	Khâbal ...	Do. ...	The god of the Khâbal territory.
39	Pûbâsî ...	Rôhal ...	Do. ...	The god of Rôhal.
40	Nârâin ...	Jâbal ...	Do. ...	The god of the Jôgahâ territory.
41	Mahâ Dêva ...	Pôjâlî ...	Do. ...	The rural god of Pôjâlî and Bêtiânî.
42	Dêva ...	Jakhrôtî ...	Do. ...	The god of Jakhnôtî.
43	Khantû ...	Dêvi Dhâr and Ranôl.	Do. ...	The god of the Sârî of Râjgarh territory.
44	Bakrâlû ...	Dalgâon and Rôphû.	Do. ...	The god of the Spêl territory.
45	Baindrâ ...	Bachhônchî ..	Do. ...	The god of half the Mandalgâh territory.
46	Mêshar ...	Pôjârî ...	Do. ...	The god of the other half of Mandalgâh.
47	Nâg ...	Pôjârî ...	Do. ...	} The gods of the Nâvar territory.
48	Lôdar ...	Pôjârî ...	Do. ...	
49	Nârâinû ...	Nârâin ...	Do. ...	
50	Dhólû ...	Karâsâ ...	Do. ...	The god of Ghôrî Karâsâ in the Nâvar territory.
51	Shâlû ...	Mêlthî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Nâvar territory.
52	Nâgêshar ...	Jharag ...	Do. ...	The god of the Pandrâ Sau territory.
53	Dêvi Durgâ ...	Shîl ...	Do. ...	Worshipped by the agriculturists of Shîl.
54	Mahâsû ...	Mandhól ...	Do. ...	Worshipped by the natives of Mandôl.
55	Dêvi Durgâ Hât	Hât Kôti ...	Busâhir, Jûbal and Râwin States.	Worshipped in the Pandrâ Sau, Nâvar Jûbal and Râwin territories.
56	Kharânû ...	Kharâhan ...	Busâhir State...	The god of the Rêk and Sâmât territories.
57	Palthân ...	Shôlî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Mastgarh and Alat terri- tories.
58	Khanâsî ...	Barkal ...	Do. ...	The rural god of the Barkal territories.
59	Khanâsî ...	Mahbûli ...	Do. ...	The god of the Sêû territory.

No	The Name of God.	The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
60	Kalêdâ ..	Kalêdâ ...	Busâhir State...	The god of the villages of Kalêdâ and Phôlâ.
61	Chatar Khand.	Brândli ...	Do. ...	} The gods of the Kanchhin territory.
62	Manglêshar ..	Dwârâ... ..	Do. ...	
63	Lachhmî Nârâin	Kumsû ...	Do. ...	The gods of the Shalâtî territory.
64	Khantû ...	Majhâlî ...	Do. ...	} The gods of the Barshôl territory.
65	Dêva Kôkhi ...	Darkâlî ...	Do. ...	
66	Lachhmî Nârâin	Pât	Do. ...	} The gods of Bârî Ghôriwâlâ and Kâshâ.
67	Dêvijijî ..	Munush ..	Do. ...	
68	Kanglêshar ...	Dêôthî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Hôchhi territory, and Majhâlî and Chaksâ villages.
69	Nâg	Kîm	Do. ...	The god of Kîm village.
70	Chharî Gudrî...	Karêrî .	Do. ...	The god of one village only.
71	Jakh	Rachôlî ...	Do. ...	The god of four or five villages.
72	Gasô Dêv ...	Gasô... ..	Do. ...	The god of one village only.
73	Bashêrû ...	Bashêrâ ...	Do. ...	The god of Tin Kôthî, but universally worshipped.
74	Nârâin ..	Kînû	Do. ...	The god of the Ohbê Bîsî territory.
75	Lachmî Nârâin	Manjhêôlî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Nau Bîsî territory.
76	Jhangrû ...	Manjgâon ...	Do. ...	The god of the Panjgâon territory.
77	Nâg	Navârû ...	Do. ...	The god of the Pat Sô territory.
78	Nâg	Barî... ..	Do. ...	The god of the Barî territory.
79	Dêvî	Tarândâ ...	Do. ...	The god of the farmers of the Tarândâ territory.
80	Mahêshwar ...	Sôngrâ ...	Do. ...	The gods of the farmers of the Sôngrâ territory.
81	Okhâ	Nachâr ...	Do. ...	The goddess of the Nachâr territory.
82	Durgâ	Kambâ ...	Do. ...	The goddess of the Rôpî Kamba territory.
83	Mahâ Rudr ...	Kiâo	Do. ...	The god of the Khiônitchâ territory.
84	Nâg	Barândâ ...	Do. ...	The god of the Jagôrî territory.
85	Jal	Sarpârâ ...	Do. ...	The god of the Kâo Bîl territory.
86	Nâg	Barûâ ...	Do. ...	The god of the Kilbâ territory.
87	Mahêshwar ...	Bhabbâ ...	Do. ...	The god of the Bhabbâ territory.
88	Mahêshwar ...	Chagâon ...	Do. ...	The god of the Chagâon territory.

No.	The Name of God.	The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
89	Badri Nâth ..	Kâmrû ..	Busâhir State...	The god of the Tukpâ territory.
90	Chandikâ ...	Kôthi... ..	Do. ...	The god of the farmers of Shôa.
91	Thâkur Dwârâ..	Naising ..	Do. ...	The god of the farmers of Naising village only.
92	Raghû Nâthjî ..	Sarâhan ...	Do. ..	} Worshipped throughout the country.
93	Narsinghî ..	Râmpur ...	Do. ...	
94	Bâlramjî ...	Larsa, Dansa, Shingla, Shaneri.	Do. ...	Worshipped in four villages only.
95	Bâlramjî ..	Nirat ...	Do. ...	Worshipped in Niratnagar only.
96	Bâlramjî ..	Nandla and Torsa.	Do. ...	Worshipped in Nandlâ, Tôrsâ, Cheônî, Gômân, Dagôli.
97	The tombs of Mansâgir and Dhânîgir.	Ghônâ ..	Balsan State ..	} Worshipped by the people of all the territory ; there are separate rural gods in every village also.
98	Dêvi Mansâ ...	Ghônâ ...	Do. ...	
99	Kadhâsan ...	Dêâtîf ...	Do. ..	The god of the farmers of the Dhârtî, Duêl and Nôti <i>pargand</i> .
100	Râi Rê Mâlâ..	Kadhâran ...	Do. ...	The god of the Kadhâran, Shûgri and Dhâr territories.
101	Chêôli ...	Shêlâ ...	Do. ...	} The gods of the Shêltâ territory.
102	Chitrâ ...	Chândni ...	Do. ...	
103	Nâg ...	Pal ...	Do. ...	The gods of the Shalgâon territory.
104	Mahêshwâr ...	Mahâsû ...	Do. ...	Worshipped in Majhêti and Draunk <i>pargands</i> .
105	Kadâsan ...	Tâlî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Parli Phâtî territory.
106	Bagêshar ...	Bagêshar ...	Do. ...	Worshipped in Shâkh, Katâr, and Bagêshar of Balsan, and in the adjacent Nâhan villages.
107	Nâg ...	Kathôri ...	Do. ...	The god of Kathôri village only.
108	Gôn ...	Bakrârî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Kalâsî territory.
109	Nainôn ...	Dêvtî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Parâlî territory.
110	Banâr ...	Sharâchî ...	Kêonthal State..	The god of all Râwin territory.
111	Mahâsû ...	Hanôl ...	Do. ...	Do. do.
112	Nigâhû ...	Jâlî ...	Do. ...	The rural god of Aglâ Pônâr.
113	Banêshar ...	Chôhâg ...	Pônâr, Kêonthal State.	The rural god of Pichhlâ Pônâr.
114	Paddôî ...	Parôl ...	Sangiri State ...	The god of the Sângri, Kumhârsen and Bhâjî States.
115	Nâg ..	Shêdrî ...	Do. ...	The god of the Bhâjî, Sângri, Busahir, and Kûlâ.

No.	The Name of God.		The Name of the Village or Seat of God.	Territory.	NOTES.
116	Bânô	...	Banâr	.....	Worshipped in the Banâr territory only.
117	Marichh	...	Sawân	.....	Worshipped in the Sawân territory only.
118	Grêhan	...	Dêôtî	Ghông State	The god of the Shilâ territory.
119	Shilgur	...	Ghund	Do.	The god of the Prâlâ territory.
120	Thâkur Dwârâ.	...	Ghund	Do.	The god of farmers.
121	Bânthiâ	...	Chikhur	Thêôg	Do. do.
122	Bânthiâ	..	Janôg	Do.	Do. do.
123	Jimprû	...	Padrôg	Do.	Do. do.
124	Mahâsû	..	Gajyârî	Do.	Do. do.
125	Banâr	...	Sharâchli	Jûbal State	The god of the Barâr territory in the Jubal State, and of the Rânâ of Jubal.
126	Mahâsû	...	Hanôl	Do.	The god of all the Jûbal State.
127	Shrigul or Bijat	...	Sarâhan	Do.	The god of the Bis Sô territory.
128	Râthî kâ Banâr.	...	Barhâl	Do.	The god of the Barhâl village only.
129	Santôpiâ	...	Dhâr	Do.	The god of Dhâr village only.
130	Shârî	...	Shârî	Do.	The god of four villages.
131	Dêvi	...	Jûbal	Do.	The goddess of the Barâr territory, and of the Rânâ.
132	Dêvi	...	Hatkoti	Râwin, Jûbal, and Busâhir States.	The goddess of the territories round Jûbal.
133	Rihatnâ	...	Thalôg	Jûbal State	The god of the Jakhôlî territory.
134	Gônâ	...	Bôdhnâ	Do.	Do. do.
135	Dêvi Jogrâsan.	...	Pôjarlî	Do.	The rural god of the Pêônthrâ territory.
136	Kanêrâ	...	Pôjarlî	Do.	The rural god of the Shak territory.
137	Dêvi Dunudi	...	Dhabâs	Do.	The rural god of the Hamal territory.
138	Dum	...	Bhôt	Do.	The rural god of the Jakhôlî territory.
139	Mahâsû	...	Pôriyâ	Tharôch State	The gods of all the territories of Tarôch and Sangiri.
140	Maheshwar	...	Mashrân	Do.	Do. do.
141	Mahâsû	..	Hanôl	Do.	Do. do.
142	Thân	...	Sawân	Sangiri State	Do. do.
143	Tawânsî	...	Barâgâon	.....	Worshipped in Maghidhâr territory.

XXXIII. — Origins of the Gods.

128. (1) A Sanyâsi mendicant, named *Ilâchigir*, came to Balsan and Thêôg States. The Chiefs of both the States became his disciples, for he knew *jôg* (spiritual science) very well. After his death, a tomb was raised over his ashes, and this tomb is now worshipped. The real seat of the saint is Thôr in Sirmûr State, and the Chiefs and subjects of both the States pay visits to this place also.

(2) The gods of the hills are of two kinds :— Female, i. e., *Dêvîs* (goddesses) ; male, i. e., *Dêvatâs* (gods). The image of a goddess is always complete. In the case of a god, his head or bust only is represented.

(3) The accounts of their origin and attributes vary. The gods are generally of one type, though they bear different names. The modes of worship are the same, and their images alike. Some goddesses are represented with four arms, some with two, some with eight, twelve, or even sixteen. Some are made to sit upon a dead body; some are shown as riding a lion. There are many other images in a temple, besides those of the god and the goddess, bearing different names, such as *Shibijî*, *Shambhujî*, *Gan`sh*, *Indar*, *Râjan*, etc.

XXXIV. — Forms of Worship.

(4) The priests worship the gods twice a day. In the morning the priest provides some *sandal*, rice, purified butter for the lamp, flowers, *dhûp* (scent), and some sweets or fruits for the god. First of all, the god is washed with fresh water, and then his image is wiped with a clean cloth; *sandal* is pasted upon the forehead and some rice also. A garland of flowers is thrown round his neck. A lamp is lighted, drums are beaten, and bells are rung. The priest offers incense and chants hymns. Then sweets or fruits are placed before the image. After this all the worshippers offer their presents. The priest paints their foreheads with *sandal*, and prays to the god to fulfil their desires. Then the *chêlâ* (disciple) of the god goes into a trance and foretells success or failure to the pilgrim, offers him rice, and gives him directions in answer to his questions. In the evening only the lamp is lighted, incense and food being offered; after which the god or goddess retires. This is called *ârtî*.

(5) All kinds of presents are offered. Some men present gold and silver ornaments, clothes, money, grain, fruits, and purified butter, etc. A goat is killed. One loin of the goat is given to the person offering it; the remainder is distributed among the priests. Two or four annas in cash are given to the priest for each goat. In the temple of the goddess, presents are offered in the months of Chêt and Asôj. In addition to this, one can offer presents, if one likes, on a Tuesday, the day of the full moon, and the fourteenth, eighth or ninth day of the moon. Presents can be offered to a god at any time; but to do so on the first day of the month, or in Baisâkh, Bhâdôn or Mâgh, is considered best.

(6) The presents offered to a god or goddess are collected in the treasury and are spent in charity. The men in charge of the temple, such as the priest, the monk and the musician, are paid small sums by the pilgrims, the least sum being six piês. The pilgrims can pay them as much as they like.

XXXV. — Ghosts and Spirits.

129. *Bhûts* (ghosts), *parîs* (fairies), *chadrûs* and *manhrûs* are believed in by children and women.

130. Stones are not worshipped in any way, except that people make images of stone and hang them round their necks.

131-132. No.⁶

133. Nil.⁶

134. The *Vâm Mârgis*, who worship the genital organs, are not to be found in this territory.

⁶ [Obviously answers to questions. — Ed.]

XXXVI. — Initiation Ceremonies.

135. (a) To admit a person to any religious order, the brotherhood of the village assemble in the temple of its god. After discussing the question, they send for the man who is to be admitted. A Brâhman is called to that place by permission of the Chief. He chants some hymns on the *pañc gavyâ* (a mixture of milk, honey, cow's urine, water of the Ganges, and clarified butter) and makes the candidate for admission drink it. A feast is given to all the brotherhood, and the **excommunicated** can join in the feast. Then he goes to the god and presents offerings. This is allowed to reclaim those who have been excommunicated by the brotherhood owing to some mistake. **Apostates** who voluntarily give up the Hindu religion and become converts to any other religion cannot be reclaimed.

(b) Generally it is necessary to wear the sacred thread in order to join the Hindu religion. But the Sûdras, as already mentioned, do not wear it. They are considered members of the religion if they obey the ordinary rules, even if they do not wear the sacred thread.

XXXVII. — High Class Hindu Sects.

136. High class Hindus are divided into two sections — (1) **Saivas**, who worship the god Siva; (2) **Sâktaks**, who worship Siva, the goddess, and other gods. Those belonging to the first sect regard the sacrifice of goats and drinking of wine as sins. Those belonging to the second consider both to be virtuous. Enquiry shows that the latter abound in the hills, while the former are very few, not more than two per thousand.

XXXVIII. — Brâhman Sects.

137. Brâhmans are divided into two kinds: — (a) Pandits or Pâdhas, *i. e.*, **Shukal**; and (b) Achâraj, Bhât or Dakaut, *i. e.*, **Kishan**.

The Shukal Brâhmans accept the alms offered on happy occasions — such as the birth of a child, a marriage, or some other festival. They also chant hymns, or officiate in the worship of gods at such times. Every tribe has a separate Brâhman of this kind.

The Achâraj receives alms offered at funeral ceremonies. On these occasions the reading of the *kathâ* and the chanting of hymns is done by the Shukal Brâhman, *i. e.*, the priest. The alms are given to the Achâraj.

The Bhâts are given alms only at marriages. They are inferior to the Brâhmans, but superior to the Achâraj.

Alms offered to propitiate evil stars, such as Râhu, Kêtu, Sani, are given to the Pandâs or Dakauts. They also receive *tulâ dân* (alms in the form of grain, metals, etc., equal in weight to the weight of the man offering them). The hymns are recited by the Shukal Brâhman. Only the alms are given to the Dakauts.

The Brâhmans of all the tribes, except those of the Cobblers, Kôlîs, Shepherds, Musicians and Sweepers, do all the work mentioned above and take alms.

The Shukal Brâhmans do not eat food prepared by the Kishan Brâhmans.

XXXIX. — Priests.

139. Only Brâhmans act as priests.

140. No priest is to be found who performs ceremonies not pertaining to any particular god.

141. Every tribe has its own priests. None but Brâhmans can serve as priests.

142. Each family has a priest.

143. The priest knows all the business that he has to perform in the house of his disciple. He is not bound to keep *brahmcharj* (celibacy) to the prescribed age, nor is he under any restrictions as regards profession. It is necessary for him to know the rules for giving or receiving alms at the times of death, marriage, birth, or any other festival.

XL. — Places of Worship.

144. In some places there are separate buildings set apart for worship, while in others there are not.

145. The temples have their doors either to the north or east or on all sides.

146. A temple is either a *shivāḷā* or a *thākūr-dwārā* or a *dēvi-dwāḷā*.

147. A *shivāḷā* contains the images of Shibji, Rāma, Ganēsh, Hanumān and Bhairōn. A *thākūr-dwārā* those of Shivaji, Rāma, Lakshman, Krishnā, Balrām, Gōpālji, and Hanumān. A *dēvi-dwāḷā* the images of Dēvi, Kālī, Lōṅkrā, and a lion.

148. The god of the temple is worshipped thrice every day, in the morning, noon and evening, but in some places this worship is performed only twice. Offerings are made. The Brāhman is fed at particular festivals and *hawan* (sacrifice) is performed.

149. Some ceremonies are performed openly, and some secretly. The latter are called *narōl pūjā*, and are performed on the occasion of particular festivals only and not every day.

XLI. — Sacrifices.

150. (1) Goats and sheep are sacrificed to all the gods.

(2) Goats are sacrificed in the name of the Dēvi or Kālī.

(3) Sheep are sacrificed in the name of Bhairōn, Lōṅkrā, and Narsingh.

(4) Buffaloes are sacrificed to the younger Lōṅkrā.

(5) Fowls, pigs, fish, and lizards are offered to the lesser Kālī.

151. Generally the family priest officiates at the time of the sacrifice, but one can sacrifice without the aid of the priest as well. The sacrifice is offered to the god who is the patron of the offerer.

152. The sacrifice is performed at the temple.

153. If the sacrifice be of a goat or sheep, one loin is given to the person who offered it, and the remainder is distributed among the monks, gods, and the priests. Sometimes the sacrificial animal is buried. In some places the head and liver of the sacrificed goat are kept by the priests and monks, and the remainder is given back to the offerer.

The sacrifice of the other animals are offered by the Kōlis, Cobblers or Shepherds.

154. Sometimes, instead of a living creature, an imitation of it in flour or silver are offered, or the living beast, without being sacrificed, is let loose in the temple of the god. The animal remains in the forest, and the custodians of the temple look after it. When fat it is sold, and the money thus realised is added to the god's treasure. If the image offered be of silver, it is stored in the treasury. If of flour, it is cooked in oil or clarified butter, and is eaten by the priests.

155. The worshippers do not offer any part of their body as sacrifice.

XLII. — Human Sacrifice.

156. It is said that in ancient times men, women, and children were offered as sacrifice to the Dēvi or Kālī. Men were sacrificed to Lōṅkrā also.

157. It is said that men had their heads cut off as offerings to Jawālā Mukhī, Kālī, Bhīma Kālī and Bhairōn Bīr, etc., and put into the sacrificial fire. Many men cut out their tongues and offered them to the goddess.

A sacrifice of the nature of human sacrifice is, however, still performed in the hills every forty or fifty years, and is called *Bhundā*. A man of the *Bēḍā Tribe* of Kālū and Garhwāl is sent for. From ancient times such men have been kept as priests in the places where this sacrifice is performed. They are treated like the ordinary priests, and are given an

annual pension out of the temple fund. When the time of the sacrifice has been fixed, the Bêḍā is sent for three months before the date. He comes with his family and gathers hemp, with which a big rope, four or five hundred yards long, is prepared. All the men accompanying the Bêḍā are sumptuously fed, and one of them who willingly offers himself is chosen for the sacrifice. He is given plenty of wine, meat, milk, etc. The sacrificial fire is kept burning for three months in the temple of the god. On the appointed day, saints, Brāhmans, and gods of the neighbourhood are sent for, and all are provided with food.

The Bêḍā is brought to the temple in the morning and placed near the sacrificial fire. He is then worshipped and sacrificed, like a goat, in the name of the god. A rope that is prepared by the man himself is tied to two poles, and then the man is thrown over this rope. Some die, while others escape alive. In the latter case he is given eighty-four rupees in cash, garments and ornaments from the god's treasury. He has authority to ask for anything he likes from the pilgrims, who are bound to give it to him. This is a very critical time, and much care is taken in British territories. It is however held that the man's death or otherwise is under divine control. Some places where the rope is bound to poles are flat, while others are valleys between two rocks.

158. The men to be sacrificed, like the priests, are certain men fixed upon and are sacrificed in turn. A quarrel, as among the priests, arises if one offers himself in the place of another.

159. Open human sacrifice is now quite obsolete.

List of Bhundā Sacrificial Spots.

No.	Name of God.	The Place of Sacrifice.	Territory.	NOTES.
1	Bashêrû ...	Bashêrâ ...	Busâhir State.	A good place, but very distant.
2	Kanglêshwar ..	Dêvthî ...	Do. ...	An ordinary place.
3	Lachmî Nârâin.	Manjhêôlî ..	Do. ...	Do.
4	Dêvîand Balrâm	Shinglâ ..	Do. ...	Do.
5	Do. ...	Shanêrî ...	Do. ...	Do.
6	Do. ...	Larsâ ...	Do. ...	Do.
7	Do. ...	Dansâ... ..	Do. ...	Do.
8	Datâtrâ a n d Balrâm.	Nagar ...	Do. ...	Do.
9	Sûraj a n d Balrâm.	Nirat	Do. ...	Do.
10	Kharânû ...	Kharâhan ...	Do. ...	A difficult place, steep on both sides.
11	Palthân ...	Shôlî	Do. ...	Do. do. do.
12	Bakrâlû ...	Dalgâon ...	Do. ...	Do. do. do.
13	Bhîma Kâlî ...	Sarâhan ...	Do. ...	Do. do. do.
14	Thârî	Brâhl	Jûbal State ...	Do. do. do.
15	Dêvî	Nirmand ...	Kûlû	Do. do. do.

XLIII. — Table of Festivals.

No.	Name.	Month (English).	Month (Indian).	Notes.
1	Lohri ...	Middle of January.	Pôh and the 1st day of Mâgh.	Food prepared and alms given to the Brâhmans.
2	Khattâlâ Ekâ-dashî.	End of January	Mâgh ...	Fasts are observed and sesame is offered as alms.
3	Basant Panch-amî.	Early in February.	Phâgun ...	Dances are performed. The New-year is celebrated.
4	Shiv Râtrî ...	February or March.	Phâgun ...	A fast is observed in the name of Siva : food is prepared, and a goat sacrificed.
5	New-year's Day	March ...	1st of Chêt ...	The Brâhmans foretell the events of the year to the Kshatriyas, and receive some money as a gift.
6	Hôlî ...	March...	Phâgun ...	People throw coloured water on one another. Dances are performed, shows are held, and feasts given.
7	Chêtâr Chau-das.	April ...	Chêt ..	A proper day for making offerings to gods. The <i>thâkur dârdâs</i> are the scenes of great festivities.
8	Nôrâtrê ..	March or April	Chêt ...	Fasts are observed in honour of the Dêvî (goddess), and goats and wine are offered to her.
9	Baisâkhî ...	April ...	1st of Baisâkh.	Gift are given to Brâhmans. Fairs are held for a fortnight.
10	Nirjâlâ Ekâ-dashî.	May ...	Jêt ...	People observe a fast. Sherbet is given gratis to the people to drink.
11	Dêb Sani Ekâ-dashî.	June or July ...	Hâr ...	Alms are given and fasts observed.
12	Biâs Pûjâ ...	June or July ...	Hâr ...	Do. do. do.
13	Narsingh Chau-das.	March ...	Chêt ...	Presents are offered in the <i>thâkur dârdâs</i> . Image of Narsing is displayed.
14	Râm Naumî ...	March ..	Chêt ...	Do. and the Râm Lîlâ is performed.
15	Sâonî ...	15th July ..	1st Sâwan ...	People eat food. Garlands of flowers are put round the necks of the cattle.
16	Rakhri ...	August ..	Sâwan or Bhâ-dôn.	The Brâhmans make arm-rings of thread and tie them to peoples' wrists, and get money as a reward.
17	Janam Ashtamî	August ...	End of Sâwan or beginning of Bhâdôn.	People fast, and feed the Brâhman next day.

No.	Name.	Mouth (English).	Mouth (Indian).	NOTES.
18	Kishun Gharī Māvas.	August	.. End of Sāwan or beginning of Bhādōn.	Farmers worship their land on the second day after <i>amāvas</i> (last day of the lunar month) and sacrifice a goat.
19	Nūg Panchamī.	August or Sep- tember.	Do. ...	People worship their gods and offer sacrifices to them.
20	Anant Chaudas.	September	... Beginning of Asōj.	Anant is worshipped, and gifts are given to the Brāhmans.
21	Pitra Pakh Amāvas.	September	... Asōj ...	Brāhmans are given gifts in the name of the dead forefathers.
22	Nōrātrē ...	October	... Asōj ...	The goddess is worshipped, sacrifices are offered, and masquerade shows are held.
23	Dasēhrā ...	October	... Asōj ...	The end of the <i>Nōrātās</i> . At the Dasēhrā festival gifts are awarded to the poor.
24	Chrewal ...	August	... 1st of Bhādōn..	Gods of clay are made and worshipped. Lights are shown to the gods every evening.
25	Sāēr ...	September	... 1st of Asōj ...	The barbers show mirrors to rich men, who give them rewards.
26	Dīwālī...	October	... Kātik ...	Every village and every house is illuminated. Rich food is cooked and distributed amongst relatives.
27	Karnvālī ...	October	... Kātik...	} Celebrated in <i>thālur dūrās</i> only.
28	Gōpā Ashtamī.	October	... Kātik...	
29	Panch Bhishmī Ekādashī.	November	... Māghar	} Fasts are observed, and gifts are given to the Brāhmans.
30	Panch Bhishmī Puranmāshī.	November	... Māghar	
31	Sankrānt ...	December	... 1st Pōh	Goats are sacrificed throughout the country. Goats reared during the summer are sacrificed at this time.
32	Sataya Nārāin.	December	... Pōh ...	The people fast on every <i>puranmāshī</i> (full moon) and give alms to the Brāhmans.
33	Somavati Amā- vas.	December	... Pōh ...	This festival returns after long intervals. Fasts are observed, and charity bestowed on the Brāhmans.
34	Pandrū ...	December	... Pōh ...	} Fasts are observed in the name of Siva, and there is also feasting.
35	Kharāin ...	January	... Māgh ...	

XLIV. — Some Details of the Festivals.

161.* A brief account of every festival has been given in the table above. Some details are now given.

(1) *Lôhrî khichrî* (a kind of food) is prepared and is distributed among relatives. The people play with balls in every village or in the temple of the god. The *sains* and *Brâhmans* are given rice, pulse, and money. Some people perform oblations in their homes. The priests worship the doors of their customers.

(2) *Basant Panchamî*. — This festival is celebrated in the court of the Chief only. The *tûris* (musicians) sing and play upon instruments and get rewards. The people sprinkle coloured water over one another. Some men and women wear yellow scarves, but it is not a general custom.

(3) *Shiv Râtrî*. — Fasting is observed during the day. In the night an image of *Siva* is made of clay. A coloured square is prepared, and the god is placed in the middle of it. Cakes are placed on all sides round the square. The god is worshipped throughout the night. Songs are sung, and music played. A goat is sacrificed. In the morning the god is thrown into water. The cakes are given to a *Brâhman*, and distributed amongst the brotherhood.

(4) *New-year's Day*. — On the first of *Chêt*, *tûris* (musicians) sing songs and play on instruments, and receive gifts. The *Brâhmans* foretell the events of the year and get rewards. The *tûris* go from village to village and entertain people throughout the month of *Chêt*.

(5) *Hôlî* is celebrated in the Chief's court only. Coloured water is sprinkled and songs are sung. All the men taking part in the *Hôlî* are entertained with a feast.

(6) *Nôrâtrê*. — The goddess is worshipped and sacrifices are offered to her.

(7) *Baisâkhi*. — On the 1st day of the month the priest worships the gates of his customers, who give him, according to their capacity, grain and money. During the whole of the month sacrifices are offered to the god on different dates. The people practise archery at a fair.

(8) *Sankrânt Sâwani* (first day of the month *Sâwan*). — Wreaths of flowers are thrown round the necks of quadrupeds. Rich foods are prepared and distributed among the family and relations and guests. Fairs are held throughout the month in the temples of gods. All the people of the neighbourhood gather at the fairs, and dance and sing during the day. In the evening they go to feast at home or at their relatives' houses.

(9) *Nâg Panchamî*. — In some places fairs are held at the temples of gods. The people keep awake the whole night, and hill songs are sung and instruments are played upon. In the morning all the people present are fed. The fair at this time is called *Jâgrâ* or *Bhadrônjû*.

(10) *Nôrâtrê*. — The goddess is worshipped. Masquerades are held in the night. Music is played, and in some places is called *batri* or *karâlî*. The next day is the *Dasêhrâ*. A man impersonating *Râmchandar* drives in a chariot and conquers *Lankâ*.

(11) *Shêrî* or *Sâêr*. — Each man makes an image of clay, puts flowers on it, and places it before his house. Rich food is prepared on the first day of the month. In the evening illuminations are made all around the image, and it is worshipped.

(12) *Diwâlî*. — Every person illuminates his house. Food is prepared and distributed among relatives. The people amuse themselves with gambling. A heap of wood is kept burning all night, and all the villagers gather round it and abuse the natives of adjoining villages, who in return abuse them. The people remain awake during the night and sing the songs of *Diwâlâ*, like the *kathâ* (recitation). A song is fixed for this festival.

* [No answer was apparently given to Question 160.—

Men and women of every tribe attend the fairs at this time, except women who observe the *pardā* system. Persons of all ages are among the spectators.

162. The dates for all the festivals are fixed, except the *Somāvati Amāvas* and *Satyā Nārāin*.

163. No festival is celebrated to commemorate any season.

164. Food is given to the Brāhmins in the name of the dead on the date corresponding to the death of the deceased, and this is termed *tithi shrādh*. This is done by a few persons and is not a general custom.

165. All the Hindu festivals are celebrated by the people generally. However, some of the festivals pertaining to *thākur dūdrās*, as mentioned in the above table, are celebrated by some persons, while others do not observe them.

166. The Hindus do not observe the festivals of the *Sarāogis*.

167. There is no festival where boys and girls desirous of marriage meet and select their consorts.

168. Among certain classes the festival of *Karvā Chanth* is considered to be for the wife and husband only.

169. Wine is used in the fairs held on *Baisākhi*, *Sāñt*, and *Hôli* festivals.

XLV. — Objects of Worship.

170. There are no ghosts or spirits who are considered to have any connection with sticks. However, the sticks, lances, and bugles of a god are honoured like the god himself.

171. The silver sticks, lances, bugles, and bells of a god are thought sacred. It is also believed that these things possess supernatural powers.

172. Wood and stone are worshipped, for they are considered to be the abodes of gods.

XLVI. — Animism, Spirit Worship.

173. The people believe in spirits living in rivers, hills, trees, ruins, and in clean and unclean places.

(a) *Yama* (god of death) is supposed to live in rivers.

(b) *Bāolis*, brooks and springs are supposed to be the abodes of *jal paris* (water nymphs) and *mātris*.

(c) *Kālī* is supposed to live in hills.

(d) Spirits of all kinds are supposed to live on trees.

(e) *Banshir* spirits live in ruins of old buildings, or valleys or mountains.

(f) Vicious spirits live in dirty places, and virtuous spirits or gods in clean and pure localities.

174. A detailed account of the worship of ghosts is given below. If a person is laid up with some disease and does not improve with medicine, a Brāhman is called and is asked to exorcise the disease. He indicates the kind of ghost, if any, with which the man is possessed. The following are the signs of possession by ghosts:—

(1) The patient seems comparatively comfortable during the day, but as the night advances, his restlessness increases. He gains composure with the passing of night and coming of day.

(2) The pulse of the patient beats like that of a healthy person. Now he becomes faint and again comes to his senses. Sometimes he speaks, while at others weeps and cries.

(3) The more medicine is administered, the more the disease increases. Sometimes he is cured without the use of medicine. The patient feels nausea, depression, and palpitation of the heart.

When these signs and the opinion of the Brāhman concur, the guardians of the patient make the following arrangements for the propitiation of the ghost:—

(a) The water nymphs or *Mātrīs* are supposed to have female forms. They are of two kinds:—Virtuous or superior, and vicious or inferior. Means for propitiating virtuous nymphs are these: Fruits and flowers are offered to them, a small palanquin is made of bamboo and covered with cloths of five colours, the Brāhman makes a cake, recites some hymns, and places the palanquin before the patient, and puts the fruits and flowers in it. The patient is made to worship a lamp and the palanquin, after which it is placed at a crossing. To propitiate an evil or vicious nymph, a goat, or a sheep, or a pig or a hen is offered as sacrifice. The remaining methods of adoration are like those mentioned above.

(b) Propitiation of the god of death is performed thus:—Some beasts, as hens, pigs, or sheep are brought. A cake of seven kinds of grain is cooked. Five or six lamps are lighted and placed upon this cake, together with some pieces of stone. All this is placed before the patient. The Brāhman chants a hymn on every stone and puts it upon the cake. The stones are either 5, or 7 or 11 in number, always representing odd numbers. When this is done all these things, together with the beasts, are taken to the cremation-grounds, where the Brāhman sacrifices the animals and takes them away.

(c) *Kālī* is worshipped with the sacrifice of a goat, flowers, fruits, wheaten bread, and lamps, in the same way as a *Mātrī*.

(d) Ghosts and *nahshirās* are propitiated by sacrifices of goats in some places, and by dust or gravel in others. In the same manner evil ghosts are propitiated by the sacrifice of a boar, or hen, or dust only.

175. Dags or demons are the ghosts connected with fields. It is a well-known fact that an estimate is made of the produce of the fields. If the crops of a certain season yield produce less than the estimated one, the difference is thought to be appropriated by the *dāg*.

176. Most men perform the *Kunjhāin pūjā* instead of sacrifices.

177. *Kunjhāin* is ordinarily offered to *Kālī*, a *parī* (fairy), or a *mātrī*. A certain portion of the forest or hill is set aside for this purpose. Even if the forest is cut down, yet the portion consecrated to the god is preserved for his worship. None of the trees in this portion is cut, nor are any leaves or boughs broken.

178. Monkeys, elephants, cows, oxen, and snakes are worshipped as gods.

(1) A monkey or an ape is considered as a representation of *Hanūmān*. Large cakes, grain, and gram are offered to them.

(2) An elephant is taken as a representation of the god *Ganēsh*, and is worshipped on such festivals as *Ganēsh Chauth*, etc.

(3) Cows are of two kinds, *viz.*, *kām dhēnū* and *kapild*, and both of them are adored as gods. Cows having a tongue or a hoof on their backs are also worshipped.

(4) An ox or *nāḍ* is worshipped instead of *Siva*.

(5) Snakes are worshipped as the *nāg dévī* (snake-god).

XLVII. — Ancestor Worship.

179. Prayers and sacrifices are offered to the spirits in the name of the dead.

180. No ceremony deserves mention.

181. No sacred animal, nor any plant, nor any other thing, is worshipped in the name of any ancestor.

182. The heirs of the deceased offer alms in the name of the dead while performing *kiryā karm* or *shrādh* (funeral ceremonies) under the impression that all this goes to the spirit of the dead.

183. The things placed with a corpse are disposed of in the following manner:—

(1) All that is put in the mouth of the dead, as *pañc ratan* (five gems), is burnt with it.

(2) The ornaments are, in the case of poor men, taken back, and in the case of rich men, sent to Hardwâr, or given to the Achâraj (man officiating at funeral ceremonies).

(3) Clothes of small value are burnt with the corpse or buried with it. Costly clothes are taken back by poor people, but sent to Hardwâr or given to the Achâraj by rich men.

(4) Edible things are generally given to the Achâraj.

184. Living persons fear the spirits of the dead.

185. If the soul of a dead person is seen in a dream by any one, and it troubles him, the deceased is considered to be the cause of this. A Brâhman is asked to offer prayers for the salvation of the dead. A charm is written and tied to the neck or arm of the person dreaming about the dead.

186. The spirit of the deceased is considered to haunt his house for eleven days after death. The following matters are taken into consideration as regards other haunts:—

(1) The spirit that has become united to the universal spirit does not return.

(2) The spirit which, on account of his sins, has not obtained salvation, always haunts here and there, finds rest nowhere, and is not pleased with any place. So spirits of the second sort haunt all places, like graveyards and cemeteries. Their forms are very fearful and they have no flesh on their bodies. They are said to be of fabulous sizes.

187. The forms of ghosts lead us to the conclusion that they were great sinners in their lives, or died a sudden death—such as by poison, or by falling down, or by suicide—and have not obtained salvation. There are different interpretations of these facts; but it is of no use to give their details, for it is impossible to find out the truth in this way.

188. The Brâhmins expel ghosts by charms and magic. The person possessed by a ghost is made to inhale the smoke produced by burning wheat, chillies, the flesh of a tiger, and pork. If the ghost is not dispelled by these means, then the method mentioned in para. 174 is applied.

189. The kinds of ghosts have been given in para. 174.

190. Fifteen days are consecrated to the deceased ancestors in Bhâdôn or Āsôj. This period is called *pîtri paksh* (ancestor's fortnight), and at this time Brâhmins are fed and given alms in the name of ancestors. This is called *shrâdh*.

191. It is necessary to perform the *shrâdh* of a man at Gyâ, and that of a woman at Gôdâvarî. For instance, if the parents of a person die, then he will perform the *shrâdh* of his father at Gyâ and that of his mother at Gôdâvarî.*

* [Or, at some place recognised as a substitute. — Ed.]

XLVIII. — Animal Worship.

192. No tribe nor any subdivision of a tribe is named after the name of an animal, a tree, or an arm or instrument.

193. The Hindus honour such objects, for they take them to be sacred according to their Scriptures. They abstain from killing, cutting, burning, or eating any male or female cattle, elephant, monkey, snakes, crows, *garur* (a large heron), peacocks, cat, or dog, or any *pīpal* tree, or banian tree.

194. Hanūmān is represented as a monkey; Ganēsh is represented as an elephant. The images of the animals mentioned above are kept by the people for worship. Besides these the people make images of all gods and adore them.

195. Every custom is handed down from ancient times. There is no special tradition about this. Idol worshippers have a strong faith in images.

XLIX. — Tree Worship.

196. Women particularly worship the *pīpal* and banian trees. They also worship the *tulsi* (a shrub); and the sensitive plant.

197. The *pīpal* is worshipped on the occasion of a marriage or any other like happy occasion. Also the *tulsi* plant is worshipped. Girls can be named after the *tulsi*, but there is no such rule for the names of boys.

Superstitions.

L. — Omens from Animals.

198. A detail of ill-omens is given below : —

(1) If a cow, buffalo, goat, or sheep give birth to a young one during the period extending from the 26th of Baisākh to 8th Jêth, this young one, with its mother, is given away to the Brāhman, or it is sold. To keep it is considered unlucky.

(2) The same rule applies to cattle bringing forth their young in Bhāddōn or Māgh.

(3) Cattle producing young in Jêth under the influence of the star Mûl are subject to the same rule.

(4) The animal that howls at night, or seems grumbling like an unhealthy individual, is either given away in charity or is sold.

(5) If small spots appear on the skin of a buffalo, it is sold.

(6) Cows or goats yielding blood instead of milk are sold.

(7) Cows or goats that drink their own milk are sold.

(8) An animal that kills or devours its own young is sold.

LI. — Omens from Domestic Utensils.

(1) It is forbidden to eat out of a broken vessel of white brass.

(2) The vessels of clay or white brass are used by the members of one class only. They become polluted if used by members of another caste.

(3) A vessel is considered unclean unless it is cleaned with dust and water.

(4) The cooking vessels are liable to impurity more quickly than the utensils for water.

(5) The people do not allow the members of a caste, different from theirs, to use their copper and white brass metals. Other vessels are free from such restrictions.

LII. — Omens from Houses.

(1) The place where a crow caws at night and a jackal howls at day, becomes unfit for habitation. This is considered to be the forecast of somebody dying there.

(2) The sitting of an owl, a pheasant, or a vulture on the roof of a house is considered ominous. If this happens, a goat is sacrificed at once.

(3) The crawling of a snake in the upper floor of the house is considered to portend evil. If one appears, it is expelled by pulling down the roof and not through the door. Something is also given in charity.

(4) Cracking sounds in the roof or furniture of a house are unlucky.

(5) If in a house the sound of a stranger, or of a member of the family, is heard, and after enquiry it is found that there was no such man there, but the sound was only an unnatural one, the house is thought to be unfortunate.

(6) The appearance of moisture in the walls of a house without any rain, is thought ominous.

(7) The following are ill-omens for a house : — The subjection of the inmates to constant whimsical thoughts, excessive sleep, poverty, constant dreams, expenses greater than income, perpetual illness.

(8) The going out of a fire suddenly at the time of cooking food.

(9) Decrease in charity, prayers and worship, and increase in sin, portend misfortune.

LIII. — Omens from the Roads.

To lay a road along one's habitation is prohibited.

LIV. — Omens from Movements of the Body.

(1) The trembling of any limb, in a healthy state of the person, is of evil import.

(2) Unusual silence or too much talk, sickly heart and whimsical thoughts, foreshadow coming evil. Also evil dreams; sneezing of a person in front or on the left; a succession of calamities; spitting; a snake, a lizard, a jackal or an ass touching the body; the perching of a crow on the head or the fall of a crow's droppings on the body; the appearance of drops of blood on a cloth when the cause cannot be found out; biting by a dog or cat; burning by fire; cloth being damaged by mice.

LV. — Lucky and Unlucky Stars.

199. Every one has two *rāshis* (stars of fate), i. e., birth *rāshī* and name *rāshī*. If an evil star comes near this *rāshī* at a distance of 4, 8 or 12 stages, the man under its influence has to propitiate it, and considers himself unlucky.

The images or likenesses of stars are not buried.

LVI. — Omens from the Rivers.

200. If the following omens occur to a man crossing a river, he will stop for an hour and then cross it : — Sneezing, tumbling, confronting an ass or a snake going to the right, confronting a bareheaded man or a man bringing wood, a bridegroom going to a marriage, one being asked as to where he is going, appearing to the left or in front of a partridge, a crow, a pheasant, a deer, a jackal or a heron, a widow.

If one comes across some of these omens successively in crossing a river or a road, he returns and does not proceed.

LVII. — Sumptuary Customs.

201. *Kolis*, cobblers, weavers, washermen, barbers, *tūr's* (musicians), ironsmiths, *bharéyās*, and shepherds do not wear gold and gems, nor do they wear shawls, *chugās*, *sarbandā* (dresses), *gulbadan* and *kimkhāb* (silken cloth). In addition to these tribes, the Kanaitis do not wear gold arm-rings, *barāgar*, *sarskhābā*, *amirash* and diamonds (ornaments), and cloths of *kimkhāb*. But nowadays this custom is being disregarded.

No tribes, except Brāhmins, Rājapūts and Baniās can take their food in silver vessels.

There is no custom as regards planting and eating of herbs or plants.

LVIII. — Naming Customs.

202. Some plants have names like those of some of the tribes, but there is no tradition about them worth mentioning.

203. Children ordinarily have two names : birth name and ordinary name. The former is used in performing religious ceremonies, and no one except the priest knows this name. The latter is used in ordinary business and is known to all. An opprobrious name is given to a boy whose elder brother died before his birth, e. g., Gandū, Badū, etc., in order that he may live. Holes are made in his nose and ears like the women.

204. The above applies both to boys and girls.

205. In ordinary matters, parents swear by their children and *vice versā*. They touch their bodies. In legal matters, a man is made to swear by the god that he believes in. The man who takes an oath in the temple of a god, touches the image of the god, or throws a stone towards the temple, or picks up the money or disputed objects before the god. Some oaths are performed by touching a cow or lifting upon one's head the water of the Ganges.

206. The truth or falsity of a man who takes an ordeal is determined in this way — that if he suffers any loss or injury, then he is considered false ; and if he prospers, then he is true. In ancient times cases were tried by making the culprit dive in water, by putting the hand in hot oil, or by giving poison to a goat.

The party who was willing to take an oath was taken to a tank or a *khad* (valley) full of water and was made to dive. If he was true, then he came back to the surface and won the case ; otherwise he was considered false and, being pronounced guilty, suffered punishment.

Ten or fifteen seers of oil were boiled in an iron cauldron, and when it was foaming a copper piece was dropped in it. The man ready to take oath was then asked to pick up this piece. If his hand was burnt, he was considered false, and lost the case. If, on the other hand, he received no injury, he won the suit.

A flat piece of iron was made red hot, and the tongue of the swearing person was branded with it. The burning of the tongue showed the falsity of the swearer, while its safety proved him true in his cause.

The parties to a dispute used to bring two goats alike in all respects. The goats were given equal quantities of poison. The party whose goat was affected with poison before the other's was considered to be in the right and won the case.

All these three customs are now out of use in British territories.

207. All quarrels are decided by the oaths stated above.

LX. — Magic and Charms.

208. Magic is practised by **magicians** only, and there are no **witches**.

209. This practice is no concern of the priest, nor has he any enmity with the magicians. In some places even the priests act as magicians: and in others, other men do so. In short, any one who learns this science can become a magician.

210. The magician's business is to foretell by means of figures. He always remains at home. He goes to the house of a person who calls him, and there he either makes a charm or dispels one. Generally, the people look upon him with respect.

211. The man who remains dirty and unclean, and does not worship gods, but devotes his whole attention to the worship of evil spirits, and does not take a bath, is taken to be a magician.

212. The people generally believe that the attendance of a magician means either the calling of ghosts to disclose some secret or to make a person receive some gain or injury.

LXI. — Possession and Exorcism.

213. It is believed that people become possessed of ghosts. In order to cure a possessed person, he is made to inhale the smoke of chillies. If the ghost does not leave him, a Brāhman or a magician is called in, who, according to his own science, makes charms as mentioned above.

214. Possession by a ghost is considered evil. Spirits are generally under the control of low persons, such as Kōlis, cobblers, shepherds, ironsmiths, etc., as well as under that of Brāhmans. A ghost imposed by a low person is thought to be unholy, while that by a person of high caste is holy.

LXII. — Dreams.

215. Dreams dreamt in good health and on a clear night can portend good or evil, can tell about the past, and foretell the future.

216. A learned Brāhman is called to interpret a dream, and is told all about it. If the dream seems, according to the rules of the books, evil, the Brāhman makes the man who dreamt it give some charity, but there is no need of charity in the case of a good dream.

217. If a dead person is seen in a dream, and conversation is held with him, then the dream is considered to be one relating to the communication with spirits. Other dreams are good or bad omens.

LXIII. — Spirit Propitiation.

218. To propitiate spirits, Brāhmans are made to recite *panchak shānti* hymns (hymns to propitiate), and alms are given. Brāhmans or magicians make charms and tie them to the necks of the possessed persons.

LXIV. — The Evil Eye.

219. People believe in the effects of the evil eye and are much afraid of it. They consider it worse than magic.

220. Some men have so much power in their eyes, that if anything be eaten in their sight, it is soon vomited. No particular reason given for this is worth mentioning.

221. The effects of the evil eye are done away with by charms, or by performing the business out of the sight of the man suspected to possess it. A portion of something brought from without is put in the house fire. The effect of the evil eye upon an animal is neutralized by throwing some dust over it.

LXV. — Charms.

222. Magicians perform charms upon a person by means of things belonging to that person, or by things that were a portion of his body : —

- (1) Nails or hair cut from his body, or the dust over which he has trodden.
- (2) Driving a nail in a tree bearing the same name as the person intended to be injured, will wound that person.
- (3) Warming the water of a spring of the same name as the victim on a fire, will make him to suffer from heat.
- (4) Making an image of a person and wounding it with a nail in his name.
- (5) Making an image of a person and either burying or burning it.
- (6) Putting the flesh of a corpse, or some pepper or mustard, in the name of the victim, on a sacrificial fire.

All these things are done in order that their effect may fall upon the victim.

223. Special care is taken to destroy nails or hair when cut. Every man has two names, and the reason of this is that the magicians may not know the birth name.

LXVI. — Fortune-telling.

224. A magician or a *jôtiṣhī* (astrologer) foretells and foresees future events.

225. The following are the methods of prophesying and foreseeing : —

- (1) The astrologer has three dice. He throws them and, making estimates by means of the letters of the alphabet, interprets good or evil results.
- (2) The disciple or *dād*, who is well known as a magician, concentrates his attention for a few minutes, and answers any questions put to him as to the good or bad end of the enquirer.
- (3) Some oil is poured on a plate of white brass, and a lighted lamp is placed on this plate at night. The medium fixes his eyes, for a few minutes, upon this lamp, after which he goes into a trance, and in this state he foretells future events.
- (4) Questions are put to the medium in the evening, and he answers them the next morning. It is supposed that he receives information at night from some god.
- (5) Sometimes the medium takes some oil or *ghī* (purified butter) in his hands and rubs them for a few minutes, and then answers questions. Some interpret answers by making the questioner name any fruit or flower.

Answers to most of the questions about the past or present are correct, but to those about future are very seldom correct. Magicians and charmers belong to the Brāhman, Jôgi, shoemaker, Kôli, minstrel, smith, and Bâdī classes.

LXVII. — Illness is Spirit-caused.

226. Illness is generally attributed to ghosts.

227. If a man is suffering from a disease which cannot be diagnosed by physicians, or if it increases with the use of medicine, or if it abates in the day and increases in the night, then it is thought to be a case of possession, and is referred to a Brāhman or disciple (*dād*). He throws dice or goes into a trance, and thus tells what sort of spirit is possessing the patient. The patient is treated in the manner suggested by the medium. Generally the medium cures him by adoration and other such means.

Social Restrictions.

LXVIII. — Abstention from Foods.

228. The Hindus abstain from taking the meat of a cow, an ox, a buffalo (male and female), a dog, a cat, an ass, a horse, a mule, a camel, a crow, a jackal, a heron, a peacock, a mouse, a serpent, a lizard, a tortoise, and a sheep. They do not use garlic, onion, turnip, raddish, carrot, and mushroom among the vegetables. But these customs are observed by some of the people and not by all.

229. All persons do not abstain from the use of things already mentioned, but only high caste men and Brāhmins, such as Rājputs, Baniās, Sūds, and Bôhrās, do so. Others, such as Kanait, smiths, minstrels, Bāris, barbers, and goldsmiths, do not care for the above restrictions. All the tribes, except shoemakers, Kālīs, shepherds, and Nigalūs, abstain from the above-mentioned meats, but not necessarily from the vegetables.

230. It is a religious restriction not to take these things.

231. People abstain from these only on account of religious restrictions. Otherwise there is no reason for giving them up.

LXIX. — Tribal Descent.

232. No tribe is considered to have been descended from any plant or animal. However the *pīpal* tree, the banian tree, and the *tūlastī* plant are thought to have divine powers.

233. No reasonable explanation can be given of the tribal fables.

LXX. — Customs on Eating, etc.

234. The customs of the people as regards eating, touching, speaking, seeing, and pronouncing names are given below :—

Brāhmins, Rājputs, Bôhrās, Baniās, Sūds, and Kshatriyas. — There are some sections who do not take unfried food prepared by any person not belonging to their own section. There is no restriction regarding touching, seeing, speaking, and pronouncing names. They do not drink even water touched by a low Brāhman, such as the Krishan.

Kanait and other sects neither eat food prepared by a person not belonging to their own sect, nor do they drink water touched by such a man. There is no restriction as regards touch.

235. The restriction of touch is according to caste. For instance, men of high castes do not touch those of low castes. The restrictions of eating and drinking are according to the subdivisions even of the same sect.

236. High-caste people look down upon low-caste men. They hate the men who eat flesh of cows or buffaloes. However, this custom prevails among the low castes only.

LXXI. — Restrictions as to Women.

237. Infants and women cannot enter into temples unless they are purified by means of baths, etc. A woman whose husband is alive is not allowed to worship the god Siva, nor can she worship Bīr Bhairôn or Hanūmân nor Kālī. Widows worship Siva.

238. The father of the husband of a woman has no scruples against using the things of her father, but her father cannot take anything from his son-in-law. He will not even drink water from the village where his daughter is married. But this custom prevails only among those tribes whose marriages are performed according to religious tenets. There is no such restriction for those whose marriages are not thus performed.

239. The reason of the above restrictions seems to be this — that as the father makes a vow to forsake everything that he gives as dower to his daughter, and it is not permissible to appropriate anything that has been once given up, so he does not even take meals at his son-in-law's house; for everything in the house of the latter is affected by the things given by the former. For the same reasons, a *śiṣya* (disciple) of a Brāhman cannot take food in the house of that Brāhman.

LXXII. — Pronouncing Names and Words.

240. The names of elder relatives are not pronounced out of respect for them. The younger relative does not pronounce the name of the elder, but the elder can call the younger by name. For instance, a son does not pronounce the name of his father, mother-in-law, or elder brother, out of regard for them, and considers them more sacred than others.

241. There is no fear of magic or charm. The name is not pronounced only out of respect.

242. Many men do not pronounce, in the course of a conversation, the name of the chief or of a deceased person. The chief is mentioned by his title, and the deceased by his relationship.

243. Words or subjects denoting contempt, licentiousness, drinking, etc., are not spoken in the presence of a chief, or elder, or respectable person.

LXXIII. — Courtesy Titles.

244. The following are the titles used by different castes. An inferior person will call a superior one by his customary title. Men of equal rank can call each other by name: —

Titles of Brāhmans: — Pandit, Jōtishī, Pādha, Parōhit, Achārya, Pandā, Rāi, Bhāt.

Titles of Rājputs: — Rājā, Mahārājā, Rānā, Mahārānā, Thākur, Kāwar, Miān, Rathī, Rangar, Ravat, Dād, Sartōrā.

Titles of Baniās: — Shāh, Sēth.

Titles of Kanāits: — Mukhiā, Wazir, Mehtā, Mehr, Nēgi, Palsrā.

Other tribes have ordinary titles according to their professions, and they need not be dwelt upon.

An inferior person will address a superior one with the following words: — Panditji, Jōshiji, Mahārāj, Rājā, Sāhib, Rānā Sāhib, Shāhji, Mukhiyaji, and so on.

LXXIV. — Agricultural Superstitions.

245. (1) It is prohibited to plough land on the *amāvas* (last day of moon), *ekādashi* (eleventh day of moon), or any other important festival. If at the time of ploughing, a snake be killed by the ploughshare, it is forbidden to go on ploughing without purifying it.

At the time of seed sowing the following matters are regarded as necessary: — (a) That the sower be under the good influence of the moon; (b) That there be no evil *nakṣatra* (star), *tithi* (date) or *jōg* (combination of stars); (c) That the day be neither Tuesday nor Saturday.

(2) The following things are regarded as necessary, both at the time of sowing and of harvest : —

The people generally are very careful of *panchak jôg*, Tuesday, Saturday; *amâvas puranmâshî* (full moon) and *shankrânt* at the time of seed sowing and harvesting, but they do not care for evil stars and *jôgs*. If it rains a day or two after seed sowing it is considered ominous. The same is thought of rain at harvest, or of excessive rain at the time of planting a corn-field or one or two days after it, or of rain on the night of *janamashî* or *puranmâshî* in Hâr or *amâvas* in Bhâdôn.

Ordinarily, land is ploughed twice, but good farmers plough it thrice, *i. e.*, first in lines parallel to the length of the field; secondly, crosswise from one corner to the other; and thirdly, also crosswise from the third corner to the fourth. The advantage of this is that the soil which remains unturned by the first ploughing is turned by the second, and thus the whole of the field is uniformly made fit for the crops to grow.

A long post is fixed in the field and a bone, or the skin of some animal, is hoisted on this post as a **scare crow**. Beasts being afraid of it, do not come near and injure the crops. It is also believed to be a safeguard against ghosts or the evil eye.

246. Feasts are given to the Brâhman at the time of digging a well, or a water-channel, or harvest. When a well or a water-channel is ready, the Brâhman is made to offer prayers, and after this they are used for watering purposes. When the harvest has commenced a big wheaten loaf is brought to the field and distributed among all the men present, or a goat is sacrificed and taken home. When corn is separated from the chaff it is collected in a large heap and worshipped, and a portion of it is set aside for the god. The scrapings are stored in bags or boxes. The people do not use fresh corn without feeding a Brâhman with it. Also some grain is devoted to the deceased ancestors, with which Brâhman are fed. At the end of the year — *i. e.*, at the end of the *kharîf* season, when all the crops have been garnered — the people of the village bring their god from his temple with great *éclat* and worship him and sacrifice to him a goat. All the persons accompanying the god and saints and mendicants are fed. Generally this entertainment is given by several villages from the month of Bhâdôn to Mâgh, and is called *bhadrônjâ*, *halan*, *jâgrâ*, *panîlâ* *pehrâ* or *mâghôjî*.

247. Sowing for the *rabi* crops begins in Asôj and ends in Pôh, and that for the *kharîf* continues from Chêt to Hâr. The reaping of crops begins in Baisâkh and ends in Hâr for the *rabi*, and that for the *kharîf* begins in Asôj and ends in Maghar. Sowing and reaping not done at the proper time is defective, and excess or want of rain on both these occasions is harmful.

248. There are no special gods for special seasons.

249. No tribe has any particular god, nor is caste of any importance in becoming a disciple. People can worship any god they choose.

LXXV. — Food and Drink.

250. A detail is given below of the use, or otherwise, of wine, beef, the flesh of a monkey, pork, cloven-hoofed or uncloven-hoofed animals' flesh, fowls, fish with or without scales, shark, snake, mice, and other insects, and food of which another person has been eating.

Ved Pathī Brāhmans or those living in plains, Bhābrās, Baniās, Khshatriyas, and Bairāgi mendicants neither eat nor touch any of these articles.

Brāhmans of the hills, Rājpūts, Sūds, Bōhrās, Kanaitis, goldsmiths, Jats, barbers, gardeners, milkmen, potters, masons, washermen, dyesinkers, carpenters, smiths, Thathêrā or Bharêrās, minstrels or Tūrīs, or Dākīs, and Dhādīs, if Saivas or Śaktaks, eat the flesh of animals and use wine; if Vaishnavas, they do not.

The Saivas use the following : — Wine of all sorts ; flesh of goats, either male or female ; flesh of male sheep ; pork ; flesh of wild fowl ; fish of every kind. There is no rule for the use or otherwise, of the flesh of animals with cloven or uncloven hoofs. Some men eat the flesh of cloven hoofed animals, and others do not. The same is the case with animals with uncloven hoofs and wild birds. The flesh of the peacock, crow, *kansharāi*, heron, and kite, etc., is not used.

The Chanāls, Kōlis, minstrels, shepherds, sweepers, cobblers, sailors or boatmen, and weavers use beef, the flesh of buffaloes, pork, flesh of cloven-hoofed and uncloven-hoofed animals, except those mentioned above and the flesh of a snake, a jackal, or a mouse.

No tribe eats anything of which a person of another tribe has been eating. Also men of the same tribe do not use food left after eating by another person. If a person of low caste be in the service of a person of high caste, then he can eat the food left by his master. A wife can use the food left by her husband, and children can use food left by their parents or elder brothers.

251. Some men do not take meat in the rains. They do not use cold things in winter, and warm things in summer.

252. It is forbidden by religion to take meat in the rains. In other seasons some things are not used in order to preserve health.

253. Widows and small children do not use meat. There is no difference between men and women, mirrors and adults, poor and rich, in taking or rejecting other foods.

254. None but the Chanāls and low castes use the flesh of monkeys, elephants, cows, oxen, herons, etc., for they are regarded as belonging to the gods.

LXXVI. — Dining Customs.

255. Among the Hindus none but Kayasthās eat together. Every adult person eats on a separate table. Minor boys and girls can take food with their parents, but only as long as they are six or seven years old.

256. Men and women do not eat together among the Hindus.

257. After the food is ready, a little of everything cooked is set apart for the god, and some of it is consigned to the fire of the hearth. Then it is laid before all the men. Every man puts aside, from his own plate, some portion for a cow, and a little is given to the crows and dogs. Some is put in the fire, and the rest is eaten.

258. There is no peculiarity concerning eating and drinking, except that it is an ancient custom.

LXXVII. — Stimulants and Medicines.

259. Stimulants and medicines are indifferently used. Some men do not use medicines prepared by a doctor who is of a low caste. Medicines, containing anything the use of which is prohibited by religion, are not used. No particular custom deserves mention.

260. People use wine at the time of the Holi or on any other happy occasion.

261. Wine is often used as a preventive of epidemics, like cholera, etc.

262. Drinking and use of other stimulants is regarded in the following manner by people :—

(1) Excessive drinking is badly thought of, if it produces lowness of spirits and brain fever. If it is used in small quantities, so as not to bring on excitement, or not to retard the ordinary course of business, then it is considered no harm to drink.

(2) The use of *charas* and *ganja* (intoxicating hemp drugs) is considered wicked.

(3) Use of opium to prevent some bodily disease or infirmity is not thought badly of, but otherwise it is looked down upon.

(4) To smoke *chandu* (a hemp drug) is considered wrong.

(5) The use of *bhang* (a light hemp drug) in summer as a cooling draught is thought good.

(To be continued.)

MISCELLANEA.

THE SEASONS OF GIRDHAR SADHU.

By the Poetess *Sanvri Sakhi*.

Text.

Girdhar, bansî bajî ; Shâm, terî âwâz sunkar
main daurî.
Rimjhim rimjhim mehâ barseh tât : Jamnâ
par lagî jharî.

I.

Pahlâ mahinâ Asâph lagiyâ ; merâ dil ho rahâ
bhorangî.
Pañdit, joshî, sabhî bûjh liye ; bûjh liyâ ramtâ
jogî.
Girdhar, bansî bajî, &c.

II.

Dûsrâ mahinâ Sâwan lagiyâ ; haryâlî ho rahî
jungal meñ.
Dam dam par yâd karûn ; thî jhurwat apne
mahlân meñ.
Girdhar, bansî bajî, &c.

III.

Bhâdon mahinâ it ghan garje, dhamak tarîñ,
chhatyân larzeñ.
Wâ, Man Mohan, kathorî mere dil kâ, dard koî
nahîñ bûjhe.
Girdhar, bansî bajî, &c.

Translation.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded ; Shâm, hearing
the sound I hastened to thee.
Heavily, heavily fell the rain : I hastened to
the Jamnâ.

I.

The first month June has come ; my heart is in
a turmoil.
Priests, astrologers, all have I consulted ; I have
consulted the wandering jogî.
Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

II.

The second month July has come ; the grass is
green in the woodlands.
Every moment I recall them ; there was suffering
in my palace.
Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

III.

In the third month August the clouds thunder,
and the lightning falls and the heart grieves.
Alas, Man Mohan, fascinator of my heart, no one
considers my pain.
Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

IV.

Asoj āsā lagi rahī, Sakhi rī; ājhū nā āye Har Khrishṇā.

Tulsi ki mālā leke hāth meñ, Rām Rām raṭnā ratnā.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

V.

Kātik karm-bhāg mere chūke nahīn mile Nand ke lālā.

Mukaṭ ki latak mere man bas gai; rī Mohan-mālā!

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VI.

Manghur māng bhari naksak se, sab zēwar merā some kā.

Ajhūn na āe. Kin barmāe? Barā andēshā hai pī ka.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VII.

Poh piyā mad māti ḍoleñ, jūn Sāwan ki hai bijli.

Palpal bars parā; pal bite; jūn bite, jūn jān sahāye.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

VIII.

Moh mahinā man merā aṭkā: Har darshan ki hūn piyāsi.

Afrūt apnā sir morī; ajhūn na āe Birj-bāsi.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

IX.

Phāgan phāg khel Man Mohan: 'abir, gulāl, uḍe roli;

Kēsar rang ki kich bahī hai; lipaṭ jhapat khelen Holī.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

X.

Chet mahinā at mohe chintā lagi; bhāl ghar nā sūjhe.

Prān patī piyāre, Man Mohan, bilā darshan koī na pūchhe.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

XI.

Baisākh mahinā sab sakhi milkar, Dewal pūjan meñ jāti.

Shām mile to sab dukh bichheñ, sital ho merī chhāti.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

XII.

Jeṭh mahinā tapen deotā bich Puhār Kushāvartī. Saivri Sakhi par kirpā kijō; ān milēn Mathrā-bāsi.

Girdhar, bansī bajī, &c.

IV.

September has commenced, O Sakhi; Har Khrishṇā has not yet come.

I take my *tulsi* garland in my hand to repeat the name of Rām again and again.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

V.

In October my heart grieves that I have not met the son of Nand.

The brilliancy of his crown has filled my heart; oh the Mohan necklace!

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VI.

In November I have braided my hair, and put on all my golden jewels.

Yet he comes not. Who has deceived him? Great is the anxiety in my heart.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VII.

In December my love is filled with pride, like the lightning of July.

The separation of a year has passed; I suffer the separation; as I suffer, so my life passes.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

VIII.

In January my heart is in love: I am athirst for a sight of Har.

The spring is set; yet the dweller in Brij comes not.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

IX.

In February Man Mohan has come to play: *abir*,¹ *gulāl*² and *rolī*³ are used;

Saffron has fallen lavishly; leaping and dancing they play at the Holī.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

X.

In March my heart is grieved; pleasure comes not to my house.

The master of my life, Man Mohan, has not asked to see me.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

XI.

In April all my companions go together to the Diwālī festival.

If I meet Shām, all my trouble is eased and peace enters my breast.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

XII.

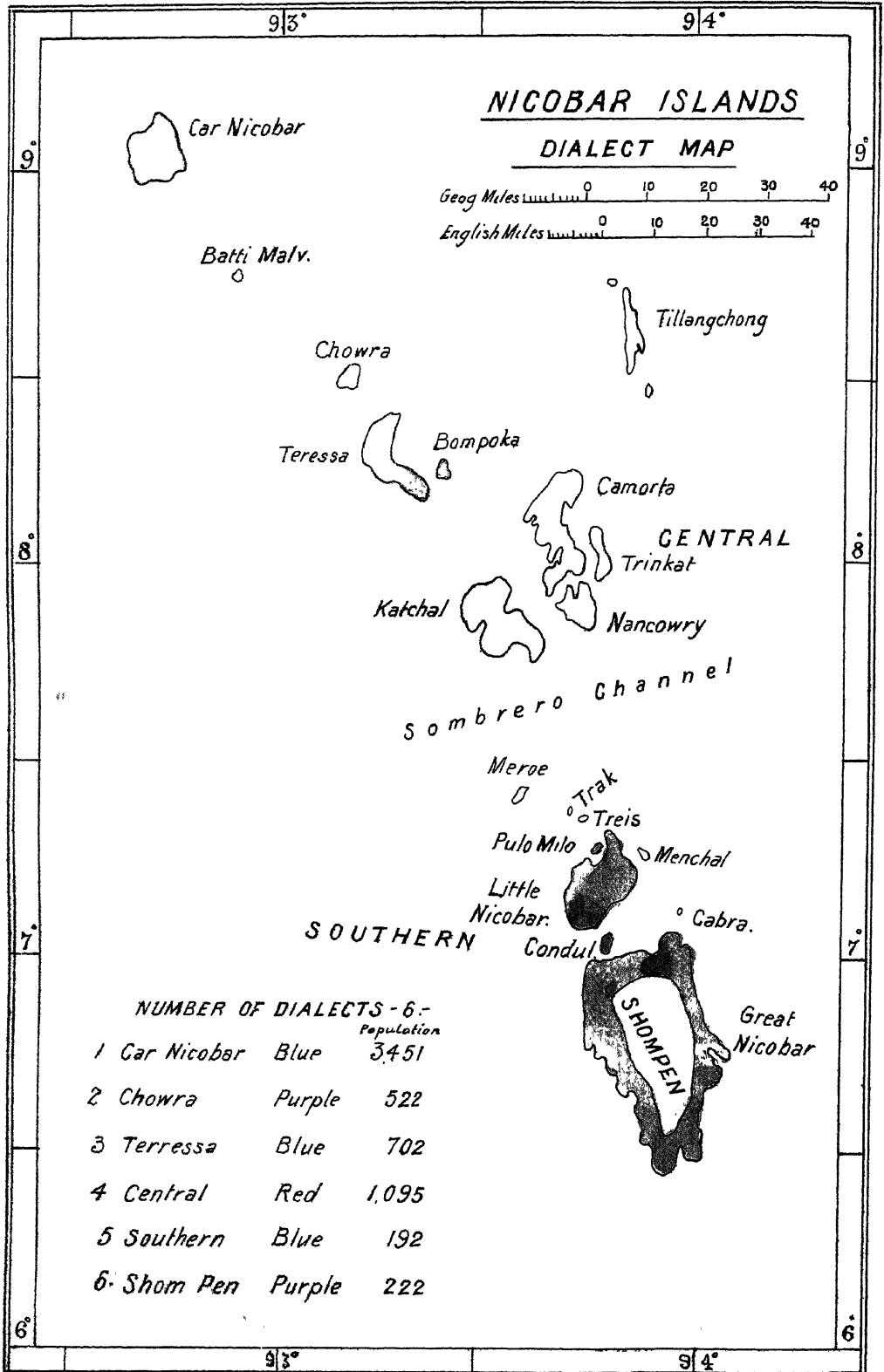
In May the gods do penance on Kushāvartī Hill. Do Saivri Sakhi a favour that she may meet the dweller in Mathrā.

Girdhar, thy lute sounded, &c.

¹ The red powder thrown by the people on one another at the Holī.

² A mixture of rice, turmeric and alum with acid used to paint the forehead.

³ Saffron ambergris.



A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

(Continued from p. 251.)

III.²⁵

THE THEORY OF UNIVERSAL GRAMMAR APPLIED TO THE NICOBARESE LANGUAGE.

Prefatory Remarks.

THE Nicobarese speak one Language in six Dialects so different as to be mutually unintelligible to the ear. These six Dialects are, from North to South, Car Nicobar, Chowra, Teressa, Central, Southern, and Shom Pen (*vide* Map attached).

The chief place of European residence has always been Nancowry Harbour, where the Central Dialect is spoken and hence that Dialect is by very far the best known. Therefore, except where otherwise specially stated, all examples and all vernacular words quoted are taken from that Dialect. Diacritical marks have not been used, except where unavoidable.

The works of Prof. Kuhn, Grünwedel, Vaughan Stevens, and Pater W. Schmidt were not available to me while writing this Grammar.

I. — GENERAL DESCRIPTION.

a. — History of the Study.

The Nicobarese Language in the Central Dialect has been long since studied. Vocabularies, collections of sentences, and partial Grammars of this Dialect have been made at intervals by various missionaries and others from 1711 onwards — the two Jesuit Fathers Faure and Bonnet in 1711; Surgeon Fontana of the Austrian vessel *Josef und Theresia* in 1778 (published 1795); G. Hamilton in 1801; the Danish missionary Rosen in 1831-4; Fathers Chabord and Plaisant (in Teressa) in 1845; Fathers Barbe and Lacrampe in 1846; Dr. Rink in the Danish vessel *Galathea* in 1846; the Austrian *Novara* Expedition in 1857 (published in 1862), with additions by de Roepstorff and others under Colonel H. Man; Maurer in 1867; Mr. A. G. Man in 1869; comparative statement by V. Ball of all information up to 1869; Mr. E. H. Man in 1871 onwards; F. A. de Roepstorff in 1876 onwards; Dr. Svoboda of the Austrian *Aurora* Expedition, 1886 (published 1892).

Ten Vocabularies and a translation into the Central Dialect of 27 Chapters of the Gospel of St. Matthew were made by the Danish Moravian missionaries (Herrnhuter) in 1768-87. These are still preserved in manuscript at Herrnhut, and were partially embodied in de Roepstorff's posthumous *Dictionary of the Nancowry (Central) Dialect*, 1884; a capital book with valuable appendices, requiring, however, retransliteration for English readers.

b. — Man's Enquiries into the Central Dialect.

But the latest and best attempt to reproduce this Dialect is Mr. E. H. Man's *Dictionary of the Central Nicobarese Language*, 1889. This contains also a brief and valuable attempt at the Grammar and a Comparative Vocabulary of all the Dialects. The system of transcription adopted is the very competent one of the late Mr. A. J. Ellis. Mr. Man had the advantage of all the labours of his predecessors, together with a much longer residence in the islands than any of them and better means of locomotion. To these he has added the accuracy and care which distinguish all his work. In this Article, therefore, his book has been followed for the facts of the language and the forms of its words, and all the examples given in it are culled from the great number of sentences he has recorded. For the mode of presentation I am, however, responsible, as Mr. Man attempted in his *Grammar* to explain the language exclusively from the current English view of Grammar, rather than to present its character as a scientific study.

The other Dialects only find a place in Mr. Man's studies and are still but little known, no one with sufficient scholarly equipment or inclination having ever resided on any of the islands for the time necessary to study them to the extent that has been possible at Nancowry.

²⁵ Largely reprinted with additions and many corrections from Chapter IV, Part II, of the *Census Report*, India, 1901, Vol. III.

c. — Philological Value.

The Nicobarese speak one language, whose affinities are with the Indo-Chinese Languages, as represented nowadays by the Mon Language of Pegu and Annam and the Khmer Language of Cambodia amongst civilised peoples and by a number of uncivilised tribes in the Malay Peninsula and Indo-China. It has affinities also with the speech of the tribes in the Peninsula, who are generally classed as "wild Malays" (Orang-utan and Orang-bukit), so far as that speech has come under the old influence of the Indo-Chinese Languages. The Nicobarese language is thus of considerable value philologically, as preserving, on account of isolation and small admixture with foreign tongues for many centuries, the probable true basis for the philology of the Languages of the Indo-Chinese Family.

d. — Dialects.

The language is spoken by 6,300 people in six Dialects, which have now become so differentiated in details as to be mutually unintelligible, and to be practically, so far as actual colloquial speech is concerned, six different languages. These dialects are limited in range by the islands in which they are spoken —

1. Car Nicobar (population 3,451).
2. Chowra (population 522).
3. Teressa with Bompoka (population 702).
4. Central — Camorta, Nancowry, Trinkut, Katchal (population 1,095).
5. Southern — Great Nicobar Coasts and Kondul, Little Nicobar and Pulo Milo (population 192).
6. Shom Pen — inland tribe of Great Nicobar (population 348).

e. — Mutual Unintelligibility.

Although it can be proved that the Nicobarese Language is fundamentally one tongue, yet the hopeless unintelligibility of the dialect of one Island to the ear of the people of another may be shown by the following example:—

Car Nicobar.

om paiaikua dra chian kã 'tãrik
don't afraid not I eat man

Central.

wòt meñ pahôa chât okngôk ten paigũh
don't you afraid I-not eat to man

Sense of Both.

Don't be afraid ! I don't eat men ! (I am not a cannibal).

f. — Foreign Influence.

In spite of the aptitude of the people for picking up such foreign tongues as they hear spoken, quite a few foreign words have been adopted into their speech. Examples are—

From Portuguese.

ENGLISH.	NICOBARESE.	ENGLISH.	NICOBARESE.
boot	shapâta	cask	pîpa
book, paper	lêbare	elephant	lifânta
hat	shapêo	rupee	rupia
copper money	Santa Maria	shaman, sorcerer	pater
"God"	Dêuse, Rêos		

From Hindustani.

salt shal, sal

From Malay.

cup	môngko	an evil spirit	iwipôt ²⁶
buffalo	kapo	fowl	haiyam
cat	koching		

²⁶ The *wi* are spirits of the departed ghosts, one of which is *wi-pôt*, *pôt* being the Sanskrit *bhûta* through some Indo-Chinese form.

Only a century ago Portuguese was the trade language of the islands, with a sprinkling of Danish, German, and English. Malay and Chinese were both so before the Portuguese day, and now English, Burmese, and Hindustani are well understood. Indeed, the nature of the trade at any given island can be tested by the foreign languages best understood there. *E. g.*, on Car Nicobar, Burmese is best understood, and then English and Hindustani: Malay and the other Nicobarese dialects not much. On Chowra, Hindustani, Tamil, Malay, and English are spoken to a limited extent, and there is a trading knowledge of the other Nicobarese dialects, except Shom Pen. On Teressa, Malay, Burmese, and English are the languages, with the dialects of Chowra and the Central Group. In the Central Group they talk Hindustani, Malay, English, Chinese, and a little Burmese, with the dialects of the South and Teressa. In the Southern Group they talk Malay, Hindustani, Chinese, and English, with the Central Dialect.

The women know only their own dialect, and are dumb before all strangers. And here, as elsewhere among polyglot peoples, natives of different islands sometimes have to converse in a mutually known foreign tongue (*e. g.*, Hindustani, Burmese, Malay, or English), when unable to comprehend each other's dialects.

g.—Effect of Tabu on the Language.

There is a custom of tabu, which in the Nicobars, as elsewhere when it is in vogue, has seriously affected the language at different places, at least temporarily. Any person may adopt any word, however essential and common, in the language as his or her personal name, and when he or she dies it is tabued for a generation, for fear of summoning the ghost. In the interval a synonym has to be adopted and sometimes sticks, but that this is not very often the case is shown by a comparison of the Vocabularies published or made in 1711, 1787, 1876, and 1889, which prove that the language possesses a stability that is remarkable in the circumstances of its being unwritten and therefore purely colloquial, spoken by communities with few opportunities of meeting, and subject to the changing action of tabu.

h.—Method of Speech.

The Nicobarese speech is slurred and indistinct, but there is no abnormal dependence on tone accent, or gesture to make the meaning clear. The dialects are, as might be expected, rich in specialised words for actions and concrete ideas, but poor in generic and abstract terms.

i.—A Highly Developed Analytical Language.

Nicobarese is a very highly developed Analytical Language, with a strong resemblance in grammatical structure to English. It bears every sign of a very long continuous growth, both of syntax and etymology, and is clearly the outcome of a strong intelligence constantly applied to its development. Considering that it is unwritten and but little affected by foreign tongues, and so has not had extraneous assistance in its growth, it is a remarkable product of the human mind. There is no difference in the development of the different dialects. That of the wild Shom Pen is as "advanced" in its structure as the speech of the trading Car Nicobarese.

j.—Nature of Growth.

The growth of the language has been so complicated, and so many principles of speech have been partially adopted in building it up, that nothing is readily discoverable regarding it. The subject and predicate are not at once perceptible to the grammarian, nor are principal and subordinate sentences. The sentences, too, cannot at once be analysed correctly, nor can the roots of the words without great care be separated from the overgrowth. Neither syntax nor etymology are easy, and correct speech is very far from being easily attained.

k.—Order of the Words.

Grammatically the point to bear in mind is the order of the words, which is practically the English order, especially as functional inflexion is absent to help the speaker to intelligibility, and there is nothing in the form of the words to show their class, whether nouns, verbs, adjectives, and so on. Prepositions, conjunctions, auxiliaries, adverbs, and the "particles" of speech are freely used, and so are elliptical sentences. Compound words and phrases, consisting of two or more words just thrown together and used as one word are unusually common, and the languages show their Far Eastern proclivities by an extended use of "numeral co-efficients."

1. — Difficult Etymology.

The great difficulty in the language lies in the etymology. Words are built up of roots and stems, to which are added prefixes, infixes, and suffixes, both to mark the classes of connected words and to differentiate connected words when of the same class, i. e., to show which of two connected words is a verb and which a noun, and to mark the difference in the sense of two connected nouns, and so on. But this differentiation is always hazily defined by the forms thus arrived at, and the presence of a particular classifying affix does not necessarily define the class to which the word belongs. So also the special differentiating affixes do not always mark differentiation.

Again the affixes are attached by mere agglutination, in forms which have undergone phonic change, and by actual inflexion. Their presence, too, not unfrequently causes phonic change in, and inflexion of, the roots or stems themselves.

The chief peculiarity of the language lies in a series of "suffixes of direction," indicating the direction (North, South, East, West, above, down, below, or at the landing-place) in which action, condition, or movement takes place. But even suffixes so highly specialised as these are not by any means only attached to words, the sense of which they can and do affect in this way.

It is just possible that "North = up there: South = down there: West = below: East = in towards" have reference to the original migrations of the people, because the general direction of a migration, still in steady progress, of half-civilised tribes of considerable mental development on the Northern Burmese frontiers is North to South regularly. But this point would require proof.

It is thus that only by a deep and prolonged study of the language, one can learn to recognise a root, or to perceive the sense or use of an affix, and only by a prolonged practice could one hope to speak or understand it correctly in all its phases. Nicobarese is, in this sense, indeed a difficult language.

m. — Specimens of the Speech.

The following sample sentences in the Central Dialect will sufficiently exhibit the manner of Nicobarese speech.

The abbreviation c. i. r. = connector of intimate relation, a point to be explained later on. By translating it "in respect of" the sense of the Nicobarese sentences in which it occurs becomes clear.

Sample Sentences in the Central Dialect.

1.

ane inôat lamang ten chûa
that knife belong to I
(that knife belongs to me).

2.

inôat ta shong ôt
knife c. i. r. sharp is
(the knife is sharp).

3.

ânre ane nōang shaneh kwômhata ten chûa
both that thing spear give to I
(give me both those spears).

4.

iteah poatôre kâmheng en an
sleep always noon c. i. r. he
(he is always asleep at noon: the Nicobarese idiom is however really "noon (is) always asleep for him").

5.

an chûh harra halau lôe kân de
he go see buy cloth wife own
(he has gone to see about buying cloth for his wife).

6.

leât etohai—chakâ—lêbare chûa oal kaigi de
did greet—face—paper (read aloud) I in road own
(I read it aloud while I was travelling).

7.

etchai—chaka—lēbare chūa tanang ta an
 read—aloud I arrived c. i. r. he
 (he arrived while I was reading aloud).

8.

harra ta chāu de ta fiñowa tai
 see c. i. r. elder-brother own c. i. r. beat by
chāa an kenŷum leāt chīm
 father his child did cry
 (his child cried on seeing its elder brother beaten by its father).

9.

chūx fiñowa tai an ta òng òlhaki
 I beat by he c. i. r. past-of-today morning
 (I was beaten by him this morning).

10.

paitshe shi lōe ôi ta ofē
 some old cloth has c. i. r. they (more than two)
 (they have some old cloth).

11.

katom? yuang kamutoka kakxt ta wahe
 how-many? persons dancers present c. i. r. last-night
 (how many dancers were there last night?)

12.

an hat kōan men
 he not child you
 (he is not your child).

13.

oal hoptēp meñ ta ngong
 in box you c. i. r. nothing
 (there is nothing in your box).

14.

ane kanyūt halau men lōngto-ten chī?
 that coat buy you from who?
 (from whom did you buy that coat?)

15.

chūa olōlōngatō an kdtō ta ñt chūa
 I permit he live c. i. r. hut I
 (I let him live in my hut).

16.

chūa lēap kichal
 I can swim
 (I can swim).

17.

línhen chit lēap okngōk taina tū
 to-day I-not can eat because sick
 (I cannot eat to-day because I am sick).

n. —Bibliography.

Books.

1810. *Lettres Edifiantes*, Vol. XI, Toulouse.
1867. Maurer, *Die Nikobaren* (valuable Bibliography: English, Danish, and German, 1799—1763).
1870. Selections from the Records of the Government of India, No. LXXXVII, Nicobar Islands (valuable Bibliography).
1875. De Roepstorff, *Nicobar Vocabulary*: Calcutta Government (valuable references French, Danish, and German).
1884. De Roepstorff, *Dictionary of the Nancowry Dialect*: Calcutta (valuable references to Danish works).

1883. Man, *Nicobar Vocabulary*: London.
 1889. Man, *Dictionary of the Central Nicobar Language*: London.

Journals.

- Anthropological Institute.* Man (many) Skeat.
Asiatic Researches. Colebrooke (1794): Hamilton, Vol. II (1801).
Asiatic of Bengal. De Roepstorff (1870).
Indian Antiquary. Man (many): Temple (many).
Journal of the Indian Archipelago. Chopard (Vol. III, 1844).
Philological Society. A. J. Ellis (1862).
Straits Branch R. A. S. Blagden.

Pamphlets.

1812. Latrobe, *Letters from the Nicobars*.
 1846. Barbe, *Notice of the Nicobars*.

II. — GRAMMAR.

a. — The Theory of Universal Grammar.

I will now proceed to discuss the Nicobarese Language on the lines of the Theory of Universal Grammar already explained, using the Central Dialect for the purpose, and avoiding diacritical marks, except where necessary to the context. The familiar grammatical terms will be inserted in brackets beside the novel ones used, whenever necessary, in order to make statements clear in a familiar manner.

b. — Example of Sentences of One Word.

The Nicobarese, like all other peoples, can express a complete meaning or sentence by an integer or single word, or by a phrase representing a single word: but they do not use this form of speech to excess. Thus:

ENGLISH.	CENTRAL DIALECT.	ENGLISH.	CENTRAL DIALECT.
oh (astonishment)	weē, oyakarē	lor	tochangtō
alas	aiyakarē	there (annoyance)	bah-ā-a
oh (pain)	arē	what a pity	hōh
dear me (compassion)	ōh	go on (encouragement)	shīal
ah (dislike)	shesh	there's no saying	anyapa
ugh (disgust)	huñh-huñh-huñh	who knows	aiyachū
hush	āh-āh-āh	what's that?	kashī?
tut (rebuke)	eh-eh-eh-eh	thingummy (doubt)	chinda
pooh	hāsh	thingembob (doubt)	chūanda
hurrah, bravo	hā-ha-a-a		

c. — Subject and Predicate.

Nicobarese sentences, when of more than one word, are usually, but not always, clearly divided into subject and predicate, as can be seen from an examination of the sample sentences above given. Thus:

P = predicate: S = subject. The numbers below refer to the sample sentences.

- (1) ane (S) inoat (S) lamang (P) ten (P) chua (P).
- (2) inoat (S) ta (S) shong (S) ot (P).
- (3) anre (P) ane (P) noang (P) shanen (P) kwombata (P) ten (P) chua (P)
 (S not expressed).
- (5) an (S) chuh (P) harra (P) halau (P) loe (P) kan (P) de (P).
- (6) leat (P) etchai-chaka-lebare (P phrase) chua (S) oal (P) kaiyi (P) de (P).
- (7) etchai-chaka-lebare (P phrase) chua (S) tanang (P) ta (P) an (P).
- (8) harra-ta-chan-de-ta-finowa-tai-chia (S phrase) an (S) kenyum (S) leat (P)
 chim (P). (Here "harra — etc. — chia" is a phrase, "see (ing) elder-brother
 beaten by father," in the subject part of the sentence).
- (9) chua (S) finowa (P) tai (P) an (P) ta (P) ong (P) olhaki (P).

- (10) *paitshe* (S) *shi* (S) *loe* (S) *ot* (P) *ta* (P) *ore* (P).
 (11) *katom* (S) *yuang* (S) *kamatoka* (S) *kakar* (P) *ta* (P) *wahe* (P).
 (12) *an* (S) *hat* (P) *koan* (P) *men* (P).
 (14) *ane* (P) *kanyut* (P) *halau* (P) *men* (S) *longtoten* (P) *chi* (P).
 (15) *chua* (S) *oklakngato* (P) *an* (P) *kato* (P) *ta* (P) *ñi* (P) *chua* (P).
 (16) *chua* (S) *leap* (P) *kichal* (P).
 (17) *liuhen* (P) *ehit* (S) *leap* (P) *okngok* (P) *taina* (S) *tu* (P).

Two of the sample sentences present a peculiarity in expressing Subject and Predicate.

- | | | | | | |
|-----|--------------|----------------|----------------|-----------|-----------|
| (4) | <i>iteak</i> | <i>poatôre</i> | <i>kâmheng</i> | <i>en</i> | <i>an</i> |
| | asleep | always | noon | c. i. r. | he |

This can be properly and directly translated, "he is always asleep at noon"; but the Nicobarese idiom runs in English, "noon is always asleep for him," the predicator (verb) "is" being unexpressed. So that the sentence is properly divided thus—*iteak* (P) *poatore* (P) *kâmheng* (S) *en* (P) *an* (P).

- | | | | | | |
|------|------------|---------------|------------|-----------|--------------|
| (13) | <i>oal</i> | <i>hoptep</i> | <i>men</i> | <i>ta</i> | <i>ngong</i> |
| | in | box | you | c. i. r | nothing |

Here we have both Subject and Predicate in an elliptical form, and in English, though translatable at once as "there is nothing in your box," the sentence really runs "(the contents, not expressed) in your box (are, not expressed) as nothing." So that neither the subject nor the Predicator (verb) are expressed, but we have instead merely a phrase explaining the subject placed in apposition to another phrase illustrating the predicate. The sentence, in fact, as it stands, consists of an explicator (adjective) phrase, placed in apposition to an illustrator (adverb) phrase, and is divided elliptically thus—*oal-hoptep-men* (S) *ta-ngong* (P).

d.—Principal and Subordinate Words.

The words in the sample sentences are also clearly, but not readily, divisible into principal and subordinate. Thus:

- (1) *ane* (sub.) *inoat* (prin.) in the subject: *lamang* (prin.) *ten-chua* (sub.) in the predicate.
- (2) *inoat* (prin.) *ta-shang* (sub.) in the subject.
- (3) all the words are sub. to *kwomhata* in the predicate.
- (4) *iteak poatore en-an* are all sub. to a predicator (verb) unexpressed.
- (5) *loe kan de* are all sub. to *chuh-harra-hlau* (prin.) in the predicate.
- (6) *leat* (sub.) *etcha'-chaka-lebare* (prin.) *oal-kaiyi* (sub.)
- (7) here are two separate sentences—the first has one word in each part, and in the second *ta* and *an* are sub. to *tanang* in the predicate. In full analysis the first sentence is an illustrator (adverb) phrase illustrating the predicator (verb) in the second.
- (8) in the subjective part *harra-ta-chau-le-ta-finowa-tat-shia* and *an* are sub. to *kenyum* and so is *leat* to *chim* in the predicate.
- (9) all the words in the predicate are sub. to a predicator (verb) unexpressed.
- (10) *paitshe* and *shi* are sub. to *loe* in the subject and *ta-ufe* to *ot* in the predicate.
- (11) *katom-yuang* are sub. to *kamatoka* in the subject and *ta-wahe* to *kakat* in the predicate.
- (12) all the words in the predicate are sub. to a predicator (verb) unexpressed.
- (13) in this sentence *oal-hoptep-men* are sub. to an indicator (noun) unexpressed in the subject and *ta-ngong* to a predicator (verb) unexpressed in the predicate. The whole of the words actually expressed are thus subordinate.
- (14) all the words in the predicate are sub. to *halau*.
- (15) all the words in the predicate are sub. to *oklakngato*.
- (16) *leap* is sub. to *kichal* in the predicate.
- (17) here again are two sentences joined by *taina*, because. In the first *liuhen* and *leap* are sub. to *okngok* in the predicate. In the second *taina* is sub. to *chua* (I) unexpressed in the subject, and *tu* to a predicator verb unexpressed in the predicate.

e. — Functions of Words.

The next stage in analysis is to examine the functions of the words used in the sample sentences, and for this purpose the following abbreviations will be used :—

Abbreviations Used.

int	integer.	intd	introducer.
in	indicator.	r. c.	referent conjunctive.
e	explicator.	r. s.	referent substitute.
p	predicator.	c. in	complementary indicator.
ill	illustrator.	c. e.	complementary explicator.
c	connector.	c. ill	complementary illustrator.

The sample sentences can then be further analysed thus —

- (1) *ane* (e) *inoat* (in) *lamang* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (r. s. as c. in).
- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) — *shong* (e., the whole an e. phrase) *ot* (p).
- (3) *anre* (c. e.) *ane* (c. e.) *noang* (c. e.) *shanen* (c. in) *kwomhata* (p) *ten* (c) — *chua* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill) *kamheng* (in) *en* (e) *an* (r. s. as in) : *iteak-poatore-en-an* from an ill. phrase).
- (5) *an* (r. s. as in) *chuh* (p) — *harra* (p) — *halau* (p., the whole a p. phrase) *loe* (c. in) *kan* (in) — *de* (e., the whole an e. phrase).
- (6) *leat* (p) — *etchai* (p) — *chaka* (c. in) — *lebare* (c. in., the whole a p. phrase) *chua* (r. s. as in) *oal* (c) — *kaiyi* (in) — *de* (e., the whole an e. phrase).
- (7) *etchai* (p) — *chaka* (c. in) — *lebare* (c. in) — *chua* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase) *tanang* (p) *ta* (ill) *an* (r. s. as in).
- (8) *harra* (p) — *ta* (c) — *chau* (c. in) — *de* (c. e.) — *ta* (c) — *finowa* (e) — *tai* (c) *chia* (in., the whole an e. clause) *an* (e) *kenyum* (in) *leat* (p) — *chim* (p., the whole a p. phrase).
- (9) *chua* (r. s. as in) *finowa* (e) — *tai* (c) — *an* (r. s. as in., the whole an e. phrase) *ta* (c) — *ong* (e) — *olhaki* (in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (10) *paitshe* (e) *shi* (e) *loe* (in) *ot* (p) *ta* (c) — *ofe* (r. s. as in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (11) *katom* (e) — *uang* (e., the whole an e. phrase) *kamatoka* (in) *kakat* (p) *at* (c) — *wahe* (in., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (12) *an* (r. s. as in) *hat* (e) *koan* (c. in) *men* (e).
- (13) *cal* (c) — *hoptep* (in) — *men* (r. s. as e., the whole an e. phrase of subject unexpressed) *ta* (c) — *ngong* (in., the whole an ill. phrase of predicate unexpressed).
- (14) *ane* (c. in) *kanyut* (c. in) *halau* (p) *men* (r. s. as in) *longtoten* (c) — *chi* (r. s., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (15) *chua* (r. s. as in) *oklakngato* (p) *an* (r. s. as in) — *kato* (p., the whole c. in phrase) *ta* (c) — *ni* (in) — *chua* (r. s. as e., the whole an ill. phrase).
- (16) *chua* (r. s. as in) *leap* (p) — *kichal* (p., the whole a p. phrase).
- (17) *linhen* (ill.) *chit* (r. s. as in) *leap* (p) — *okngok* (p., the whole a p. phrase) *taina* (r. c.) *tu* (e).

f. — Purpose of Sentence Indicated by the Position of the Components.

It will be seen that the purposes of the sentences thus analysed are as under —

- | | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| (1) Affirmation — Nos. 1, 2, 15, 16, 17. | (4) Exhortation — No. 3. |
| (2) Denial — Nos. 12, 13. | (5) Information — Nos. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, |
| (3) Interrogation — Nos. 11, 14. | 9, 10. |

The sample sentences cover, therefore, the whole range of all speech as regards purpose, and analysis shows that the Nicobarese rely on the position of the words in the sentence to indicate its purpose, that no special order is observed for differentiating any particular purpose, and that the position of the words is in their language of the greatest importance for the intelligibility of the sentences. That is, Nicobarese is a language that indicates purpose mainly by the position of the components of the sentences.

g. — Order of the Words in the Sentences.

Another analysis of the sample sentences will, therefore, now be made to show what the order of the words in Nicobarese sentences is.

I.

Subject precedes predicate, but for emphasis can follow it :

Preceding :

- (1) *ane-inoat* (S) *lamang-ten-chua* (P)
and so always, except
(6) *leat-etchai-chaka-lebare* (P) *chua-oal-kaiyi-de* (S).
(7) *etchai-chaka-lebare* (P) *chua* (S) *tanang-ta-an* (P)

II.

Subject, predicate, complement (object).

- (1) *ane-inoat* (S) *lamang* (P) *ten-chua* (C).

But the order is reversed for emphasis.

- (3) *anre-ane-noang-shanen* (C) *kwomhata-ten-chua* (P., S. unexpressed).
(14) *ane-kanyut* (C) *halau* (P) *men* (S) *longtoten-chi?* (P).

III.

Explicator (adjective) precedes indicator (noun); or follows it, usually with a connector (preposition), but also without a connector. Thus :

(a) Preceding indicator (noun) :

- (1) *ane* (e) *inoat* (in) *lamang ten chua*.
(3) *anre* (e) *ane* (e) *noang* (e) *shanen* (in) *kwomhata ten chua*.
(4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill.) *kamheng* (in) *en an*.
(5) *paishe* (e) *shi* (e) *loe* (in) *ot ta ofe*.

(b) Following indicator (noun) with connector :

- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) *shong* (e) *ot*.

(c) Following indicator without connector :

- (5) *an chuh harra halau loe kan* (in) *de* (e).
(9) *chua* (in) *finowa* (e) *tai an ta ong olhaki*.
(12) *an* (in) *hat* (e) *koun* (in) *men* (e).
(13) *oal hoptep* (in) *men* (e) *ta ngong*.

(d) Following indicator (noun) with and without connector :

- (8) *harra ta chau* (in) *de* (e. without c.) *ta* (c) *finowa* (e) *tai chia an kenyum leat chim*.

IV.

Illustrators (adverbs) usually follow, but sometimes precede, predicates (verbs).

(a) Follow :

- (3) *anre ane noang shanen kwomhata* (p) *ten-chua* (ill. phrase).
(5) *an chuh-harra-halau* (p) *loe kan-de* (ill. phrase).
(7) *etchai-chaka-lebare-chua* (ill. phrase) *tanang-ta-an* (p. phrase).
(10) *paishe shi loe ot* (p) *ta-ofe* (ill. phrase).
(11) *katom yuang kamatoka kakat* (p) *ta-wake* (ill. phrase).
(14) *ane kanyut halau* (p) *men longtoten-chi* (ill. phrase).

(b) Precede :

- (17) *linhen* (ill.) *chit leat-ðkngok* (p.)

But illustrators (adverbs) follow explicators (adjectives).

- (4) *iteak* (e) *poatore* (ill.) *kamheng en an*.
(9) *chua-finowa-tai-an* (e. phrase) *ta-ong-olhaki* (ill. phrase).
(13) *oal-hoptep-men* (e. phrase) *ta-ngong* (ill. phrase).

V.

Connectors (prepositions) precede the words they connect with preceding words.

(a) Connecting predicator (verb) with complement (object):

- (1) *ane inoat lamang* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (C).
 (3) *anre ane noang shanen kwomhata* (p) *ten* (c) *chua* (C).
 (8) *harra* (p) *ta* (c) *chau* (C) *de ta finowa tai chia an kenyum leat chim.*

(b) Connecting predicator (verb) with illustrator (adverb):

- (4) *iteak poatore kamheng en* (c) *an* (r. s. for ill. phrase). (p. unexpressed).
 (9) *chua finowa tai an ta* (c) *ong-olhaki* (ill. phrase).
 (10) *paishe hi loe ot* (p) *ta* (c) *ofe* (r. s. for ill. phrase).
 (11) *katom yuang kamatoka kakat* (p) *ta* (c) *wahe* (ill).
 (13) *oal hoptep-men ta* (c) *ngong* (in. as an ill. phrase): (here ill. is connected with p. unexpressed).
 (14) *an kanyut halau* (p) *men longtoten* (c) *chi* (r. s. for ill. phrase).
 (15) *chua oklakngato an kato* (p) *ta* (c) *ni-chua* (ill. phrase).

(c) Connecting indicator (noun) with explicator (adjective):

- (2) *inoat* (in) *ta* (c) *shong* (e) *ot.*
 (6) *leat-etchai-chaka-lebare chua* (in) *oal* (c) *kaiyi-de* (e. phrase).
 (8) *harra ta chau-de* (in) *ta* (c) *finowa* (e) *taï chia an kenyum leat chim.*
 (15) *oal* (c) *hoptep-men* (e. phrase connected with in. unexpressed) *ta ngong.*

(d) Connecting explicator (adjective) with illustrator (adverb):

- (8) *harra ta chau de ta finowa* (e) *tai* (c) *chia* (in) *an kenyum leat chim.*
 (9) *chua finowa* (e) *taï* (c) *an* (in) *ta ong olhaki.*

VI.

Referent conjunctors (conjunctions) commence a sentence connected with a previous one.

- (17) *linhen chit leap okngok* (first sentence) *taina* (r. c.) *tu* (second sentence).
paiyüh^{26a} hat dôh katôka hen (r. c.) *mikdsha*
 man not can dance (first sentence) when sing
kôï-halê.

solemn-chaunt (second sentence).

(one may not dance when singing the solemn chaunt).

VII.

Interrogatory Speech.

Introducers (adverbs) commence sentences.

kâhê na itâ?
 when he here? (p. unexpressed),
 (when will he be here?)

chî yô haiyüan?
 who wish pig-hunt?
 (who is going to hunt pigs?)

chun oñthañ ongfwóng en chüa?
 which tree cut-down c. i. r. I?
 (which tree shall I cut down?)

chin lēang an?
 what name he?
 (what is his name?)

chūang lēang an?
 what name it?
 (what is its name?)

^{26a} This is an additional illustrating sentence.

Questions are, however, usually asked by means of an interrogatory prefix, *ka*, *kā*, *kan* meaning "what?" attached to the subject of the sentence. In every such case the usual place of the subject is not changed. *E. g.*

tāu *meñ* *kā—an?*

younger-brother you he?

(is he your younger-brother?)

shwatare *ka—meñ?* *ta* *linheñ*

return you? c. i. r. morning

(will you return this morning?)

mākngayan *ka-en—kōan?* *meñ*

quite-well c. i. r. child? you

(is your child quite well?)

māh *ka—mei?* *hēang* *shuā* *meñ* *Loòng*

ever you-not? one time you Great Nicobar

(have you never once been to Great Nicobar?)

As in many languages, there is an interrogative introducer (adverb) *añ*, which expects an affirmative answer. *E. g.*

añ? *na* *tāu* *meñ*

yes? he younger-brother you

(isn't he your younger-brother?)

añ? *meñ* *ipeakla* *ta* *linheñ*

yes? you drowsy c. i. r. morning

(aren't you drowsy this morning?)

añ? *meñ* *hēang*

yes? you one

(surely you got something?)

The following uses of *ka*, when prefixed to a word, show the system of the Nicobarese language well:—

meñ *itūa* *Loòng* *ka-hañañ?*

you visit Great Nicobar no?

(will you visit Great Nicobar or not?)

meñ *hēu* *ka-añ?* *ka-hañañ?*

you see yes? no?

(you saw it, didn't you?)

añ? *ka-meñ?* *yang* *en* *chūa* *olyōl* *añ* *ka-hañañ?*

yes? you? with c. i. r. I say yes no?

(are you coming with me? say, "yes or no").

ka-shīri? *na* *ka-añ?* ²⁷

fool? he yes?

(what a fool he is!)

ka-shīri? *me* *ka-añ?*

fool? you yes?

(what a fool you are!)

ka-shīri? *cha* *ka-añ?*

fool? I yes?

(what a fool I am!)

²⁷ These three sentences express impatience at anything carelessly done.

VIII.

Referent Substitutes (Pronouns).

Referent substitutes (pronouns) follow the place of their originals—

- (1) *ane inoat lamang ten chua* (r. s. as in).
- (4) *iteak poatore kamheng en an* (r. s. as ill. phrase).
- (5) *an* (r. s. as in) *chuh harra halau loe kan de*.
- (8) *an* (r. s. as e.) *kenyum leat chim*.
- (9) *chua finowa tai an* (r. s. as ill. phrase) *ta ong olhaki*.
- (10) *paishe shi loe ot ta ofe* (r. s. as ill. phrase).
- (12) *an* (r. s. as in) *hat koan men*.
- (13) *oal hoptep men* (r. s. as e.).
- (15) *chuu oklakengato an* (r. s. as in) *kato tu ni chua* (r. s. as e.).
- (16) *chua* (r. s. as in) *leap kichal*.
- (17) *linhen chit* (r. s. as in) *leap okngok taina tu*.

The ordinary referent substitutes (pronouns) are :

Table of "Personal Pronouns."

chüa	I	ina	you-two
meñ	thou (you)	ifē	you
an, na	he, she, it	onâ	they-two
heñ, chaai	we-two	ofē	they
hē, chiōi	we		

Chüa, meñ, an are ordinarily inflected also to *chā, me, eh*. *E. g.*

hendun ta eh

awake e. i. r. he

(awake him).

There is further inflexion of all the "personal pronouns" with *hat*, not, in negative sentences. Thus :

Table of Negative "Personal Pronouns."

chit	I-not
met	thou-not
net (and <i>hat</i>)	he-not
heñ-hat	we-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next)
het	we-not
inât	you-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next)
ifêt	you-not
onât	they-two-not (in full, to distinguish from the next)
ofêt	they-not

Inflection of some of these words appears again in the questions used when startled. Thus :

chüa ? kane ? what ? that ? (what was that ?) (kane ? = ka ? + ane)

chüa ? kinâ ? what ? you-two ? (what was that ?) (kina ? = ka ? + inâ)

chüa ? kifē ? what ? you ? (what was that ?) (kifē ? = ka ? + ifē)

So, too, in greetings : *et-chai-chakâ* (greet-face), greet; then (*et-*) *chai-chachâ-ka* (greet-face-indeed), or (*et-*) *chai-cha-rakat* (greet-face-now). Then further—

met-chai° ? how d'you do ? (met = meñ + 'et)

inât-chai° ? how d'you do, you two ? (inat = na + et)

ifêt-chai° ? how d'you do, all of you ? (ifêt = ifē + et)

Another common inflexion of the same type may be noticed here, though it does not belong to this place : *wôt*, don't, for *wi-hat* (do-not).

h. — Order of Connected Sentences.

Connected sentences are usually joined by referent conjunctors (conjunctions) and in such cases the principal sentence is followed by the subordinate.

(17) *linheñ chit leap okngók* (principal sentence) *taina* (r. c.) *tu* (subordinate sentence).

<i>ata</i>	<i>meñ</i>	<i>milāh</i>	<i>laok</i>	<i>taina</i>	<i>chūa</i>	<i>yó</i>
go	you	play	outside (prin. sentence)	because	I	wish

iteak

sleep (sub. sentence)

(go and play outside, because I want to sleep).

<i>paityūh</i>	<i>hat</i>	<i>dōh</i>	<i>katōka</i>	<i>heñ</i>	<i>mīkāsha</i>
man	not	can	dance (prin. sentence)	when	sing

kōi-haki

solemn-chaunt (sub. sentence).

(one cannot dance, when singing the solemn chaunt).

Referent substitutes (pronouns) are often, though not always, used in both of two consecutive sentences. Thus:

<i>ka</i> , who, which,	} in the prin. sentence with <i>shina</i> , the same, in the sub. sentence.
<i>chīchī</i> , <i>ya</i> , whoever	
<i>kae</i> , whatever	

Except when thus used *shina* should therefore be regarded as a referent conjunctor (conjunction).

i. — Expression of Connected Purposes.

But the tendency of the Nicobarese in indicating connected purposes by speech is to treat the subordinate sentence as an integral part of the principal, and to avoid breaking up speech into separate sentences connected by referent conjunctors (conjunctions). *E. g.*

(6)	<i>leāt</i>	<i>etchai-shaka-lebare</i>	<i>chua</i>	<i>oal</i>	<i>kaiyi</i>	<i>de</i>
	did	read-aloud	I	in	road	own

There are two connected purposes in the sentences of this statement: (1) "I read aloud," (2) "while I was travelling." But the Nicobarese treats them as one by turning the subordinate sentence *oal-kaiyi-de* into an explicator (adjective) phrase attached to the subject "*chua*, I."

(7)	<i>etchai-shaka-lebare</i>	<i>chua</i>	<i>tanang</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>an</i>
	read-aloud	I	arrive	c. i. r.	he

Here the two connected purposes of the statement are more apparent. The information is (1) "I was reading aloud," (2) "he arrived." But the Nicobarese has treated the subordinate sentence *et-chai-shaka-lebare chua* as an illustrator (adverb) phrase of the principal sentence *tanang ta an*.

(8)	<i>harra</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>chua</i>	<i>de</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>finowa</i>	<i>tai</i>	<i>chia</i>
	see	c. i. r.	elder-brother	own	c. i. r.	beat	by	father
	<i>an</i>	<i>kenyum</i>	<i>leat</i>	<i>chim</i>				
	his	child	did	cry				

Here we have (1) "his child cried," (2) "on seeing its elder-brother beaten by its father." But the subordinate sentence *harra ta chau de ta finowa tai chia* is treated by the Nicobarese as an explicator (adjective) phrase of the subject *an kenyum*.

j. — Expression of the Functions and Interrelation of Words.

It will have been observed that the Nicobarese express the interrelation of the components of their sentences by functional connectors (in their case prepositions), which form, therefore, an important part of their speech. Thus :

(1)	<i>lamang</i>	<i>ten</i>	<i>chua</i>				
	belong	to	I				
(2)	<i>inoat</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>shong</i>	<i>ot</i>			
	knife	c. i. r.	sharp	is			
(3)	<i>kwomhata</i>	<i>ten</i>	<i>chua</i>				
	give	to	I				
(4)	<i>iteak</i>	<i>kamheng</i>	<i>en</i>	<i>an</i>			
	asleep	noon	c. i. r.	he (is)			
(6)	<i>leat</i>	<i>etchai-chaka-lebare</i>	<i>chua</i>	<i>oal</i>	<i>kaiyi</i>	<i>de</i>	
	did	read-aloud	I	in	road	own	
(7)	<i>harra</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>chau</i>	<i>de</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>finowa</i>	<i>tai chia</i>
	see	c. i. r.	elder-brother	own	c. i. r.	beat	by father
(8)	<i>chua</i>	<i>finowa</i>	<i>tai</i>	<i>an</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>ong</i>	<i>olhaki</i>
	I	beat	by	he	c. i. r.	past-of-to-day	morning
(9)	<i>paitshé</i>	<i>shi</i>	<i>loe</i>	<i>ot</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>ofe</i>	
	some	old	cloth	possess	c. i. r.	they	
(10)	<i>katom</i>	<i>juang</i>	<i>kamatoka</i>	<i>kakat</i>	<i>ta</i>		<i>wahe</i>
	how-many?	persons	dancers	present	c. i. r.		last-night
(13)	<i>oal</i>	<i>hoptep</i>	<i>men</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>ngong</i>		
	in	box	you	c. i. r.	nothing		
(14)	<i>ane</i>	<i>kanyut</i>	<i>halau</i>	<i>men</i>	<i>longtoten</i>	<i>chi</i>	
	that	coat	buy	you	from	who	
(15)	<i>chua</i>	<i>oklakngato</i>	<i>an</i>	<i>kato</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>ñi</i>	<i>chua</i>
	I	permit	he	live	c. i. r.	hut	I

k. — Connectors (Prepositions).

The functional connectors (prepositions) and connector-phrases are necessarily numerous and their use quite simply expressed. The commonest are :

Table of "Prepositions."

CENTRAL DIALECT.	ENGLISH.	CENTRAL DIALECT.	ENGLISH.
ten, an, ta, tatai	to, at, on (object)	yō	to (place)
tai	by	en, at, kat	at
oal, òl	in	enyâh	after
yôl, yang, hokaio	with	pat, taihit, hatyôl hatyang	} without
lôngto, lôngtoten, ngatai, yang, lôngtota, chakâ, lamôngtotai	} from	kâe	concerning
ngashî	} about, in relation to	yôna-ta-kâe	{ for, account of, sake of
henshât-kâe	for, place of	hēangechuk	among
mongyûangñe	between	talashîak	along-side
tanûak	beneath	harôh-tômtare	except
oyûhta	till, until	tamang	as-far-as
ta-tangtatai, hēangetai; okâlhare	} as-well-as across	tamat	during
		yôhñe	through (a solid)
		ôakñe	through a fluid

A good example of their use is the following :

<i>an</i>	<i>okaihanga</i>	<i>pôwah</i>	<i>lôngto</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>oal</i>	<i>dûe</i>	<i>chûa</i>
he	took-away-south	paddle	from	c. i. r.	in	canoe	I

(he took away to the South the paddle out of (from inside of) my canoe).

1. — Connectors of Intimate Relation.

The only class of connectors (prepositions) that presents any difficulties is that of the connectors of intimate relation. These are *ta*, *en*, *pan* and may be translated "in respect of, as, as for, as to, regarding, as regards, with reference to, concerning, for" according to the context. They are used for connecting :

- (1) indicator (noun) with its explicator (adjective).
- (2) subject and its predicate.
- (3) explicator (adjective) with its illustrator (adverb).
- (4) predicator (verb) and its complement (object).

- (1) indicator (noun) with its explicator (adjective).

inôat ta shong ôt
knife sharp is

(the knife is sharp).

paigyûh ta urûhatshe dâk
man many come

(many men came).

kenyûm tai an ta fînowa
child by he beat

(the child was beaten by him).

- (2) subject and its predicate.

yuchûh pan chûa
go-home I

(I am going home).

paitshê homkwòm en meñ ten chûa
some give thou to I

(give me some).

oal hoptêp meñ ta ngong
in box you nothing

(there is nothing in your box).

- (3) explicator (adjective) with its illustrator (adverb).

iteak kâmheng en an
asleep noon he

(noon is asleep for him, i. e., he sleeps at noon).

chûa fînowa tai an ta ong ôlhaki
I beat by he past-of-to-day morning

(I was beaten by him this morning).

hat ôt lôe ta oal hoptêp an
not is cloth in box he

(there is no cloth in his box).

- (4) predicator (verb) and its complement (object).

harra ta chûu de
see elder-brother own

(seeing the elder brother).

paitshê shî lôe ôt ta ofê
some old cloth have they

(they have some old cloth).

wî an eñ ta linheñ
make it to to-day

(make it to-day).

chît lêap wî an eñ
I-not can make it to

(I cannot make it).

The Nicobarese, however, have no idea of using connectors (conjunctions) merely for joining two words together. They cannot express "and" or "or" without a paraphrase. Thus :

<i>ane</i>	<i>nina</i>	<i>an—diava</i>	<i>an</i>	<i>homkwom</i>
that	this	it—another	he	give

(he gives this and that).

<i>an</i>	<i>dāk</i>	<i>ðhaki</i>	<i>hañan</i>	<i>en</i>	<i>chūa</i>
he	come	morning	no		I

(he will come in the morning : no : (then) I, i. e., he or I will come in the morning).

m. — Order of the Words is the Essence of the Grammar.

But the great point of the speech is the position of the words and that comes out clearly in the following instances from the sample sentences, where the words are simply thrown together.

<i>an</i>	<i>chūh</i>	<i>harra</i>	<i>halau</i>	<i>lōe</i>	<i>kān</i>	<i>de</i>
he	go	see	buy	cloth	wife	own

(he has gone to see about buying cloth for his wife).

<i>an</i>	<i>hat</i>	<i>kōan</i>	<i>meñ</i>
he	not	child	you

(he is not your child).

<i>ane</i>	<i>kanyūt</i>	<i>halau</i>	<i>meñ</i>	<i>lōngtoten</i>	<i>chī?</i>
that	coat	buy	you	from	who?

(from whom did you buy that coat?)

It would be impossible to make such sentences intelligible, except by the order of the words. The same principle of simple collocation in a certain order is adopted in elliptical connected sentences.

<i>oal</i>	<i>hopiēp</i>	<i>meñ</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>ngong</i>
in	box	you	c. i. r.	nothing

(there is nothing in your box).

Simple collocation of words, in a fixed order, determining the functions and classes of each is very common in the language.

<i>chīa</i>	<i>kan</i>	<i>chūa</i>	}	= my wife's father
father	wife	I		
<i>kān</i>	<i>chīa</i>	<i>meñ</i>	}	= your father's wife
wife	father	you		
<i>dūe</i>	<i>chang</i>	<i>chūa</i>	}	= my own canoe
canoe	own	I		
<i>hopiēp</i>	<i>chang</i>	<i>chīa</i>	<i>kān</i>	<i>chūa</i>
box	own	father	wife	I

(my wife's father's own box).

n. — Expression in Phrases.

The habit just explained comes out strongly in the simple collocation of appropriate words to express the various phases of action or condition necessarily connected with predicators (verbs). Thus :

Table of "Auxiliaries" to "Verbs."

<i>orihata</i>	beat
<i>wòt orī</i> ((<i>wòt</i> for <i>wī hat</i> , do not)	don't beat
<i>chūa orī</i>	I beat (I am beating)
<i>chūa yuangshitō orī</i>	I busy beat (I was beating)
<i>chūa leāt yuangshitō yanga orī</i>	I finish busy just-now beat (I had been beating)
<i>chūa yanga orī</i>	I just-now beat (I have just beaten)
<i>chūa leāt orī</i>	I finish beat (I have beaten, I did beat)
<i>chūa orī leātingare</i>	I beat entirely (I had beaten)
<i>chūa yō orī</i>	I wish beat (I will beat)

chüa enyâh orî	I afterwards beat (I shall beat)
chüa alde orî	I just-now beat (I am about to beat)
lâk (and shòk) chüa orî	let I beat (let me beat)
chüa lêap orî	I can beat
chüa dôh orî	I able beat (I may (perhaps) beat)
dôhta chüa orî	duty I beat (I must (ought to) beat)
chüa kaiyâhtashe orî	I permit-from-some-one beat (I may, <i>i. e.</i> , have the power to, beat)
harôh-ta-yande- chüa orî	expect-continue I beat (I might beat)

So with the really ellipsed form *oria*, beaten, where the predicator (verb) is unexpressed.

E. g.

chüa lêât orîa	I finish beaten (I was beaten)
chüa yô orîa	I wish beaten (I shall be beaten)
chüa dôh orîa	I can beaten (I may be beaten)
and so on.	

All this shows that the Nicobarese have no idea of "active" and "passive voices," the expression of the various natural phases of action and condition being merely with them a question of the collocation of certain conventional appropriate words.

c. — Numeral Coefficients.

The habit of collocating conventional words in phrases comes out in another important point in the Nicobarese language. There is, in common with all Far Eastern languages, but carried to a far greater extent than usual, a kind of explicator (adjective) employed in Nicobarese, known to grammarians as the "numeral coefficients," attached with numerals to indicators (nouns), when the numerals themselves are used as explicators (adjective). Thus one cannot say in Nicobarese "one man," but one must say "one fruit man": *i. e.*, one must not say *hëang enkôîña*, but *hëang yûang enkôîña*. The numeral coefficient is always collocated with the words to which it is attached between the numeral and the thing enumerated.

Table of Numeral Coefficients.

CENTRAL.	CAR NICOBAR.
(1) for human beings and spirit-scaring figures (<i>kareau</i>). <i>yûang</i> (fruit) <i>kôî</i> (head) <i>tat, tat-yûang, tat-kôî</i>	<i>taka</i>
(2) for animate moving objects, eggs, parts of the body, domestic and other objects that are round. <i>nôang</i> (cylinder)	<i>nông</i>
(3) for fruit. <i>nôang-yûang</i>	<i>taka</i>
(4) for flat objects, cooking-pots and fishing-nets. <i>tâk</i> (wide)	<i>tâk</i>
(5) for dwellings and buildings. <i>hen</i>	<i>momti</i>
(6) for trees and long things. <i>chanang</i>	<i>mâ</i>
(7) for ships and boats. <i>danî</i>	<i>nông</i>
(8) for bamboos used for keeping shell-lime. <i>hinle</i>	<i>hâhâ</i>
(9) for bunches of fruit, but for single pine-apples or <i>papaya</i> . <i>êôm</i> (bunch)	<i>lamnâha, tum</i>
(10) for bundles of <i>pandanus</i> -paste. <i>manoal, mokônha</i>	

- (11) for bundles of split-cane and wood-chips.
pomāk *chumvi*
- (12) for bundle of cane.
mekūya
- (13) for bundles of firewood.
minōl
- (14) for bundles of tobacco.
lamem *mālima*
- (15) for books.
amoka
- (16) for ladders.
chaminkā
- (17) for pieces of cloth.
shamanap
- (18) for cord and fishing lines.
kamilāng

Another set of numeral coefficients for "pair" is used in the same way.

<i>rafūal</i>	pair	of cocoanuts, rupees, edible birds' nest.
<i>tāk</i>	pair	of bamboos for shell-lime.
<i>amōk</i>	pair	of cooking pots.

This principle is carried rather far in the following instances:—

amok is also used for two pairs of bamboos for shell-lime.

hamintap is a set (4 to 5) of cooking pots.

nōang is a set of ten pieces of tortoise-shell.

EXAMPLE—*lōe nōang okkáp*, three sets of tortoise-shell, i. e., 30 pieces.

Numeral coefficients appear again in yet another way in the following instances:—

tanai shud, five times, but

<i>tanai kotatai</i>	five times	(for hammering and hand work)
<i>ān kochat</i>	two times	(for jumping)
<i>fōm kongalāh</i>	four times	(for going)
<i>lōe kōlēngē</i>	three times	(for talking, singing)
<i>fōun koshōhakā</i>	four times	(for eating, drinking, feeding)
<i>issāt koshūāhha</i>	seven times	(for washing, bathing)

p. — Elliptical Sentences.

Elliptical sentences are very common: the obvious predicate being usually unexpressed.

iteak poātōre kāmheng en an, noon (is) always asleep for him.

an hat kōan meñ, he (is) not your child.

q. — Analytical Nature of the Language.

We can now perceive generally how the Nicobarese mind regards speech. A Nicobarese has no idea of using variation in the external form of words to indicate the functions of the sentences and the interrelation of the component words, but uses position and special additional words (connectors) for those purposes: nor does he use anything but position to indicate the functions of his words. He must consequently, to make himself intelligible, rely mainly on the order of his words, in the sentence, which thus becomes of the greatest importance to him. His language is, therefore, essentially a Syntactical Language of the analytical variety. Briefly it may be described as an Analytical Language.

r. — Order of Speech.

To the Nicobarese instinct the logical order of speech for all purposes is as follows:—

- (1) subject before predicate.
- (2) subject, predicate, complement (object).
- (3) explicator (adjective) before indicator (noun): or with connector (preposition) after indicator,

- (4) illustrator (adverb) after predicator (verb) or explicator (adjective).
- (5) connector (preposition) before the word it connects with another.
- (6) referent conjunctive (conjunction between connected sentences) and introducers (interrogative adverb) before everything.
- (7) referent substitutes (pronouns) follow the position of their originals.
- (8) the principal sentence precedes the subordinate.

The Nicobarese has to adhere strictly to this order, and can only vary it when the inherent qualities of the words used allows him to do so for emphasis or convenience; as when he makes the subject follow the predicate, explicator (adjective) follow indicator (noun) without connector (preposition), illustrator (adverb) precedes predicator (verb) or explicator (adjective). He has very complicated methods, without using functional variation of form, of indicating the *nature* and class of his words, and these necessarily form the chief point for study in the language as regards the structure of its words.

s. — Classification of Words Depends Primarily on Position in the Sentence.

Primarily there is nothing in external form, which necessarily denotes the function or functions of a word in a sentence and, therefore, its class or its inherent qualities, *i. e.*, its nature. Nor is there primarily anything in external form to show that a word has been transferred from one class to another. That is, properly the class of a word is known by its nature or by its position, and its transfer from one class to another is shown by its position.

I have said above "primarily" and "properly," because, like all speakers of highly developed languages, as analytical languages must necessarily be, the Nicobarese follow one principle of language chiefly and others in a minor degree. So, as will be seen later on, it is possible in many, though not in by any means all, cases to classify Nicobarese words by their form.

Examples of the effect of position on the class of a word.

lōa, "quick," explicator (adjective) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "quickly" by position.

mittōi "false," to "falsehood."

chāng, "own," predicator (verb) to "own," explicator (adjective).

hēn, "time" to referent conjunctive "when."

kāpngato, "remember" to "mindful."

pātingato, "forget" to "forgetful."

kedōhnga, "another" to "otherwise (differently)."

loatayan, "punctual" to "early" illustrator (adverb).

hoi, "far" explicator (adjective) to "far" illustrator (adverb).

Words of the same form with totally different meanings according to class are known by position. Thus:—

kātio as explicator (adjective) means "silent": as a predicator (verb) it means "dwell."

tafūal as an indicator (noun) means "pair": as a numeral explicator (adjective) or indicator (noun) it means "six."

tā as an indicator (noun) means "touch": as an explicator (adjective) it means "flat."

kālhē as an indicator (noun) means "moon": as an referent conjunctive it means "when."

yō means "if," "wish" (verb), "to," "thither" according to its position in the sentence. *E. g.*

<i>yō</i>	<i>meñ</i>	<i>yō</i>	<i>yō</i>	<i>Pū</i>
if	you	wish	to	Car Nicobar.
(if you wish to go to Car Nicobar).				

t. — Phrases (Compound Words) Classed as Words.

Phrases (compound words) formed of several words thrown together without connectors are very common. They are treated in the sentence precisely as simple words.

Indicator Phrases (Compound Nouns).

heh-hatòm	time-night, night-time.	âh-chakâ-fòin	life-face-crossbow,
paiyûh-olchûa	man-jungle, jungle-man.	âhha-oal-hindel	bolt of c.
kûi-henyûan	head-hill, hill-top.	moah-toah	contents-gun, cartridge.
			nose-breast, teat.

Explicator Phrases (Compound Adjectives).

karû-fâp	big-side, corpulent.	yô-hnyôie-tai	wish-drunk-make, intoxicating.
yô-hnyôie	wish-drunk, intemperate.	dôh-ehngashe	can-recover, able.

Predicator Phrases (Compound Verbs).

alde-shiang	just-now-sweet, become sweet.	ingâhne-nâng	inform-ear, send word.
		wî-kaiyî-dâk	make-road-water, drain.

The use of such phrases (compound words) as single words is proved by the following examples:—

I. Roots: *rû*, shade; *kôî*, head. Then

- (1) *ha—rû—ngare* go into the shade
pref. shade suff.
(2) *ha—rû—kôî* take shelter
pref. shade head
(3) *ha—rû—ya—kôî—re* shade the head
pref. shade suff. head suff.

In this case we have:

- (1) root + pref. + suff. (simple word).
(2) root 1 + root 2 + pref. (compound word).
(3) root 1 + pref. + suff. = first word (+) root 2 + suff. = second word, the whole being a compound word. The third case shows clearly that the whole compound is looked upon as one word grammatically constructed.

II. Roots: *tum*²⁸ (lost r.), tie; *lâh*, leg. Then

- (1) *tum—a—lâh* tied by the leg (simple word)
tie suff. + leg
(2) *om—tum—lâh* tie the legs (compound word)
pref. tie + leg

III. Roots: *tum* (lost r.), tie; *kodl*, arm.

- (1) *tum—a—kodl* tied by the arms, pinioned (simple word)
tie suff. arm
(2) *om—tum—kodl* tie by the arms, pinion (compound word)
pref. tie + arm

III.—ETYMOLOGY.

a.—Classification of Words Depends Primarily on Their Order in the Sentence.

It has been already noted that the Nicobarese relies mainly on the position and inherent qualities of his words, *i. e.*, on their nature, for a complete expression of his meaning, and that there is nothing in the external form of the words which necessarily indicates their class, or

²⁸ This root is seen again in such words as *tom-ôl*, *tom-môl*, collect, gather: *ha-iôm*, assemble.

whether a word, as used in a sentence, belongs to its original class or has been transferred to another. That is, there is nothing to show that *lēap*, can, and *wī*, do, are predicators (verbs), or that *oyūhta*, till, is a connector (preposition), or that *dūe*, canoe, and *kōi*, head, are indicators (nouns), except their actual meaning.

Again, there is nothing to show when the indicator (noun) *chūa*, I, is transferred to explicator (adjective) "my," or when *lōa*, quick, explicator (adjective) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "quickly," or when *leūt*, did, predicator (verb) is transferred to illustrator (adverb) "already," except their position in the sentence.

b.—Classification of Words Depends Secondarily on Form.

But, nevertheless, the Nicobarese have means of indicating the class to which a word has been transferred, or to which of two or more classes connected words in different classes belong, and of differentiating connected words belonging to the same class. They can thus make their speech clearer than would be possible, if they entirely trusted to the mere collocation of their words.

c.—Form Created by Radical Prefixes, Infixes, and Suffixes.

The Nicobarese manage to differentiate connected words by adding, in various complicated ways, affixes of all the three sorts, — prefixes, infixes, and suffixes, — to simple stems or roots. The affixes are, therefore, none of them functional, but are all radical, and the words consist of simple stems, or of compound stems (stems made up of a root or a simple stem plus radical affixes). The Nicobarese carry this principle through a great part, but not through all of their language, and have by its means built up a complicated but uncertain system of radical and derivative words, and have rendered their language a very difficult one to analyse and to speak, or to understand, correctly.

d.—Use of Radical Affixes: Agglutinated, Changed, and Inflected.

The radical affixes usually employed to indicate transfer of stems from one class to another, *i. e.*, to create words of different classes connected with each other, those to which the affixes are added being necessarily "derivatives" of the others, are as follow. It will be seen, from what follows later, that they are added—

- (1) by mere agglutination, *i. e.*, unchanged form :
- (2) by changed form :
- (3) by clipped form, *i. e.*, by inflexion.

Table of Radical Affixes of Transfer.

(*Mr. Man gives many more.*)

Prefixes.

ka ha na ma men en hen op o la lan lok fnk

Infixes.

ma am an e

Suffixes.

a o yo yan la nga hat

e.—Use of the Radical Affixes of Transfer.

The following examples will exhibit the use of the radical affixes of transfer :—

Abbreviations used in the following tables :

in. class	for nouns (indicators)	ill. class	for adverbs (illustrators)
e. class	for adjectives (explicators)	c. class	for prepositions (connectors)
p. class	for verbs (predicators)		

Radical Affixes of Transfer added by Agglutination.

Prefixes.

	ha				men
c. class	to p. class		in. class	to e. class	
<i>yēl</i> (with)	<i>ha-yōl</i> (mix fluid)		<i>kōan</i> (child)	<i>men-kōan</i> (having many children)	
	na				
in. class	to p. class			la	
<i>wā</i> (blood)	<i>na-wā</i> (bleed)		in. class	to e. class	
	ma		<i>ok</i> (back)	<i>la-ok</i> (behind, following)	
e. class	to in. class			ka	
<i>huyōie</i> (drunk)	<i>ma-huyōie</i> (drunk-ard)		ill. class	to in. class	
	en		<i>yōl</i> (together)	<i>ka-yōl</i> (friend)	
p. class	to in. class			lan	
<i>pōya</i> (sit)	<i>en-pōya</i> (seat)		in. class	to p. class	
p. class	to in. class		<i>dākmāt</i> (tear)	<i>lan-dākmāt</i> (water, of the eyes)	
<i>tōp</i> (cover the shoulders)	<i>op-tōp</i> (shawl)			lōk	
	o		in. class	to p. class	
in. class	to p. class		<i>shamōa</i> (sprout)	<i>lōk-shamōa</i> (to sprout)	
<i>foàng</i> (window)	<i>o-foah</i> (to open)		<i>hoàng</i> (sweat)	<i>lōk-hoàng</i> (to sweat)	
	hen			fuk	
p. class	to in. class		in. class	to p. class	
<i>tainya</i> (to plait)	<i>hen-tain</i> (basket)		<i>dāh</i> (water)	<i>fuk-dāh</i> (draw water)	
<i>lain</i> (revolve)	<i>hen-lain</i> (wheel)				

Infixes.

	ma.				
p. class	to in. class.		p. class	to e. class	
<i>pa-hōa</i> (to fear)	<i>pa-ma-hōa</i> (coward)		<i>l-ēap</i> (can)	<i>l-am-ēap</i> (expert)	
<i>po-mōan</i> (to fight)	<i>pa-ma-mōan</i> (warrior)		in. class	to e. class	
	pa-ma-nāp (corpse)		<i>k-ōan</i> (child)	<i>k-am-ōan</i> (having children)	
<i>pōin-nōp</i> (die)	to in. class		<i>ch-ūaha</i> (property)	<i>ch-am-woahōn</i> (rich)	
e. class.	<i>ka-ma-rū</i> (adult)			an	
<i>ka-rū</i> (large)	to e. class.		p. class	to in. class	
in. class	<i>pa-ma-yōl</i> (hairy)		<i>t-dle</i> (to measure)	<i>t-an-dk-rām</i> (night-measurer, sand-glass)	
<i>pu-yōl</i> (hair)			<i>w-t-nī</i> (make-hut, build)	<i>w-an-e-nī</i> (frame-work of hut-roof)	
p. class	to in. class		<i>ch-iō</i> (to whistle)	<i>ch-an-eō</i> (a whistle)	
<i>d-āk</i> (come)	<i>d-am-āk</i> (guest)		<i>ch-ial</i> (lift by a handle)	<i>ch-am-ōla</i> (strap, handle)	
<i>t-dk</i> (to measure)	<i>t-am-dka</i> (fathom)				
<i>ch-uanga</i> (visit a jungle)	<i>ch-am-uanga</i> (a visitor of a jungle)		e. class	to in. class	
e. class	to in. class		<i>sh-t-tashe</i> (old)	<i>sh-an-t-tashe</i> (age)	
<i>k-oàng</i> (strong)	<i>k-am-oàng</i> (strong man)				

Suffixes.

	a		nga
p. class	to e. class	p. class	to e. class
<i>ngēang</i> (employ)	<i>ngēang-a</i> (employed)	<i>dōh</i> (can)	<i>dōh-nga</i> (suitable)
p. class	to in. class	in. class	to p. class
<i>top</i> (drink)	<i>top-a</i> (beverage)	<i>kaiyī</i> (road)	<i>kaiyī-nga</i> (go away)
e. class	to p. class	(<i>ol</i>) <i>chūa</i> (jungle)	<i>ch-ūa-nga</i> (go into (visit) ²⁹ a jungle)
<i>orēh</i> (first)	<i>orēh-a</i> (begin)		
p. class	to e. class		yan
<i>orī</i> (beat)	<i>orī-a</i> (beaten)	in. class	to e. class
	o	<i>oyāu</i> (cocoanut-tree)	<i>oyāu-yan</i> (lonely)
in. class	to e. class		hat
<i>fāp</i> (side)	<i>fāp-o</i> (fat)	e. class	to in. class
	la	<i>paich</i> (small)	<i>paich-hat</i> (a little)
p. class	to e. class		yo
<i>iteak</i> (sheep)	<i>iteak-la</i> (sleepy)	in. class	to p. class
p. class	to in. class	<i>dūe</i> (canoe)	<i>dūe-yo</i> (travel in a canoe)
<i>leāi</i> (finish)	<i>l-an-eāi-la</i> (final me- morial feast)		

Radical Affixes of Transfer added in Changed Form.

Prefixes.

	change of ma to mo		change of en to an
p. class	to e. class	p. class	to in. class
<i>hēu</i> (see)	<i>mo-hīwa</i> (long- sighted)	(<i>oal</i> -) <i>ōla</i> (bury (in))	<i>an-ūla</i> (grave)
	change of ha to hā		change of en to in
in. class	to p. class	p. class	to in. class
<i>wan</i> (net)	<i>hā-wān</i> (net fish)	(<i>ol</i> -) <i>yōla</i> (speak)	<i>in-ōla</i> (tale)

Infixes.

	change of am to om		change of am to aīm
p. class	to in. class	p. class	to in. class
<i>p-em</i> (drink)	<i>p-om-em</i> (drunkard)	<i>t-op</i> (drink)	<i>t-aīm-op</i> (drunkard)
<i>w-i</i> (make)	<i>w-om-i</i> (maker)		change of an to en
e. class	to in. class	p. class	to in. class
<i>ch-ōngkōi</i> (tall)	<i>ch-om-ōngkōi</i> (tall man)	<i>h-et</i> (to chisel)	<i>h-en-et</i> (a chisel)
			change of an to in
in. class	to p. class	p. class	to in. class.
<i>sh-āyo</i> (sack)	<i>sh-om-yo</i> (fill a sack)	<i>d-tan</i> (run)	<i>d-in-nōnha</i> (winner in a foot race)

Suffixes.

	change of a to wa		change of a to ha
p. class	to in. class	p. class	to in. class
<i>halau</i> (buy)	<i>halau-wa</i> (a purchaser)	<i>dīan</i> (run)	<i>dinnōh-ha</i> (winner in a foot race)
	change of a to ya		change of o to yo
in. class	to e. class	in. class	to e. class
<i>miyai</i> (value)	<i>miyai-ya</i> (costly)	<i>chatai</i> (weapon)	<i>chatai-yo</i> (armed)
		in. class	to p. class
		<i>dūe</i> (canoe)	<i>dūe-yo</i> (travel in a canoe).

²⁹ We have here a very interesting set of words to exhibit word-building: (*ol*)-*chūa*, jungle: *chūa-nga*, visit a jungle: *ch-am-ūa-nga*, visitor of a jungle.

Radical Affixes of Transfer added by Inflexion.

Prefixes.

ha inflected to h			
p. class	to in. class	<i>enlūana</i> (exorcise)	<i>m-enlūana</i> (exorcist)
<i>oknyôk</i> (eat)	<i>h-okngôk</i> (food)	<i>itūa</i> (visit)	<i>m-itūa</i> (visitor)
in. class	to p. class	e. class	to in. class
<i>sukwôm</i> (gift)	<i>h-omkwôm</i> (give)	<i>orêh</i> (first)	<i>m-orêh</i> (first person or living thing)
ma inflected to m		<i>omtôm</i> (all, the whole)	<i>m-ômitôma</i> (flock, crowd)
p. class	to in. class		

f.—Correlated Radical Affixes of Transfer.

The Nicobarese also indicate the classes, to which connected words derived from lost or obscure roots belong, by a system of correlated radical affixes of transfer.

Prefixes.

lost or obscure root	p. class	to in. class
<i>hēat</i>	<i>ha-hēat</i> (to hook up)	<i>hen-hēat</i> (hooked pole)
<i>het</i>	<i>hai-het</i> (to strain)	<i>hen-het</i> (strainer)
<i>ôi</i>	<i>hu-yôie</i> (drunk)	<i>hen-yôiya</i> (drunkard)
<i>shin</i>	<i>ka-shin</i> (to prop)	<i>ken-shin</i> (a prop)
<i>tôk</i>	<i>ka-tôka</i> (to dance)	<i>ken-tôka</i> (a dance)
<i>shâng</i>	<i>ka-shâng</i> (to fish in slack water)	<i>kan-shâng</i> (a weir)
<i>kâk</i>	<i>tom-kâk</i> (pierce)	<i>ten-kâk</i> (lancet)
<i>fūal</i>	<i>tom-fūalhata</i> (tie a pair of cocoanuts)	<i>ta-fūal</i> (a pair)
<i>hôn</i>	<i>kom-hôn</i> (to trap fish)	<i>ken-hôn</i> (a trap)

A good instance of the use and force of correlated radical affixes of transfer is the following:—Obscure or lost root, *tain*; then *tain-ya*, plaiting: *en-tain-ya*, plaited: *ken-tain*, basket: *ha-tain-ya-paiydh*, crosswise.

Instructive examples of the effect of correlated affixes of transfer on the forms of connected words are the following, where a prefix has been added to the lost root of one of two connected words and an infix to the other. Thus:

lost or obscure root	p. class (pref. used)	to in. class (inf. used)
<i>dī</i>	<i>o-dī</i> (beat with stick)	<i>d-an-ī</i> (oudgel)
<i>kâsh</i>	<i>i-kâsha</i> (sing)	<i>k-an-ôishe</i> (song)

That the lost root in the latter case is really *kâsh* in the last case is shown by *momî-kâsha* (maker-song), a singer.

g.—Inflexion of Affixes.

It is probable that there is more inflexion than at first appears in the existing forms of the radical prefixes.³⁰ Thus in the case of the correlated radical prefixes—

hen may be taken to be	ha + en	tom may be taken to be	ta + om (for am)
ken	ka + en	pan	pa + an
ten	ta + en	pen	pa + en (for an)

h.—Duplication of Affixes.

The existence of such inflexion would make one suspect the common existence of duplicated radical affixes, and that this is the case the following instances go to show:—

- (1) *en-lūana* (exorcise): *m-en-lūana* (exorcist). Here the root is *lūan* and the prefix *men* is certainly an inflected form of *ma + en*, two separate prefixes.
- (2) *kāan* (child): *k-am-an-ūana* (a generation). Here the root is *k-ōan*, and the infix *aman* is certainly *am + an*, two separate infixes.
- (3) *h-en-tain* (basket): *m-en-tainy* (basketful). Here the root is *tain* and the prefixes *hen* and *men* are certainly inflected forms of *ha + en* and *ma + en*, respectively.

There is also a prefix of transfer, *kala*, which seems certainly to be made up of *ka + la*. Thus, *hōi* (far): *kala-hōiya* (sky).

³⁰ Here seems to be a strong instance of the inflection to which affixes can be subjected: *wî*, make: *w-om-î*, maker, which also takes the form of *m-om-î* for (?) *m-[w]-om-î* (*ma + w + am + î*).

Duplication of suffixes is very common: *e. g.*,

Lapā-yan (well): *lapā-yantō* (glad). *Di* (bulk): *dī-ngareshe* (all absent from anything, entirely wanting in): here the suffix is double (*ngare + she*) or more probably³¹ treble (*nga + re + she*).

The proof will be seen in the following examples:—

<i>wī-hala</i> (to take out)	<i>owī-la eh</i> (take it out)	<i>owī-hahat</i> (to screw in)	<i>owī-ha eh</i> (screw it in)
<i>kaichuat-hala</i> (to dig up)	<i>kaichuat-la eh</i> (dig it up)	<i>tuak-haiñe</i> (to drag out)	<i>tuak-ñe eh</i> (drag it out)
<i>lenkdh-hanga</i> (to bend)	<i>lenkdh-nga eh</i> (bend it)	<i>tapaih-haiñe</i> (to spit out)	<i>tapaih-ñe eh</i> (spit it out)
		<i>ēp-hashe</i> (to transplant)	<i>ēp-she eh</i> (transplant it)

i. — Connectors of Intimate Relation as Prefixes.

There must of course be a strong tendency in the connectors of intimate relation (prepositions), *ta*, *en*, *pan*, *pen*, to become radical prefixes of transfer, and we accordingly find that in some cases they do so: *e. g.*,

Connectors of Intimate Relation as Radical Prefixes of Transfer.

	<i>ta</i>
p. class	to in. class
<i>kūpāh</i> (die)	<i>ta-kūpāh</i> (carcase)
	<i>pen</i>
e. class	to in. class
<i>teyeh</i> (white)	<i>pen-teyeh-oalmāt</i> (white of the eye)
<i>āl</i> (black)	<i>pen-āl-oalmāt</i> (pupil of the eye)

j. — Nature of Nicobarese Predicators (Verbs).

There is also a use of the duplicated prefix *hen* as an affix of transfer with predicators (verbs), which is of grammatical interest, as showing that the Nicobarese do not separate in their minds predicators (verbs), when they merely assert a fact regarding a subject, from indicators (nouns). They look upon them both as indicating, the first the idea about a thing, and the second the thing itself; and instinctively put the words for both in the same class, indicators (nouns). That is, the Nicobarese look upon "intransitive verbs" as "nouns" and in order to transfer them to the class of real, *i. e.*, "transitive verbs," they add sometimes, but (in obedience to their instinct in such matters) not always, an affix of transfer, the prefix *hen*. Thus:

ENGLISH.	INTRANSITIVE FORM.	TRANSITIVE FORM.
break	<i>tōknga</i>	<i>hen-tōknga</i>
smash	<i>dāhnga</i>	<i>hen-dāhnga</i>
sink	<i>pangshe</i>	<i>hen-panghashe</i>

k. — Expression of "Active" and "Passive."

An important set of correlated suffixes of transfer in daily use are worth noting apart. They are used to transfer explicators (adjective) to predicators (verbs) and have, naturally though erroneously, been taken to indicate the "passive and active voice."

The common explicator (adjective) suffix of transfer is *a*: then very commonly

stem	e. class	to p. class
<i>haròk</i> (burn)	<i>haròk-a</i> (burnt)	<i>haròk-hata</i> (burn)
<i>haril</i> (shoot with gun)	<i>haril-a</i> (shot)	<i>haril-hata</i> (shoot)

That this is the correct way to view this point in Nicobarese Grammar can be shown thus:

(1)	<i>lāk hē haròk ten an</i>	<i>lāk hē orī ten an</i>
	let we burn to it	let we beat to it
(2)	<i>lāk an haròka</i>	<i>lāk an orīa</i>
	let it burnt	let it beaten
(3)	<i>haròk(hata)³² ta eh</i>	<i>orī(hata)³² ta eh</i>
	burn c. i. r. it	beat c. i. r. it

³¹ See below, q, "Groups of Words Round an Idea," II.

³² *Hata* is omitted in the "imperative."

Here we have in (1) the mere stems *haròk*, burn; *orì*, beat. In (2) we have the predicator (be) unexpressed. In (3) we have the subject (thou, you) unexpressed. There is no instinct whatever of an "active" or "passive voice." Of the suffixes, *a* is merely a suffix of transfer indicating the class (e.) to which the stems have been transferred from their original class (p.); and *kata* is really a suffix of differentiation, giving a definite turn to the original sense of the stem.

1.—Use of Radical Affixes of Differentiation.

The Nicobarese differentiate connected words of the same class and derived from the same root (original meaning) by radical affixes, precisely as they indicate transfer of words from class to class. There is no difference in method or form in the affixes thus used. *E g.*

Radical Affixes of Differentiation for Connected Indicators (Nouns).

Prefixes.

hen-tain (basket)	mahen-tainya (basketful)	en-kòina (a male)	men-kòina (a male of a given race)
wétare (goblet)	ta-wétare (gobletful)		
yai (price)	mi-yai (value)	mòngko (cup)	mo-mòngkóa (cupful)

Infixes.

sh-áyo (sack)	sh-am-ayōwa (sackful)	k-âhē (moon)	k-am-ahēwa (lunation)
---------------	-----------------------	--------------	-----------------------

Combined Prefix and Infix.

p-omlē (bottle)	ta-p-ah-ōmlē (bottleful)
-----------------	--------------------------

For Connected Explicators (Adjectives).

Suffixes.

kēh (violent)	kēh-tō (ill-tempered)	kēh-ngayan (difficult)
lapā (good)	lapā-yan (well)	lapā-yantō (glad)
	{ hēang-ashe (alike)	hēang-ayan (equal)
hēang (one)	{ hēang-e (same)	hēang-she (first)
karū (large)	karū-ngashe (extensive)	karū-she (abundant)
	{ yōl-hashe (same kind)	yōl-shī (beside)
yōl (together)	{ yōl-ten (accompanying)	

m.—Working of Correlated Radical Affixes.

In the following instances one can see side by side the working of the correlated radical suffixes both of transfer and differentiation.³³

(1) Lost or obscure root; *tang* (?) arrive.

CLASS.	WORD.	SENSE.
e.	tang-ngashe	complete.
e.	tang-tashe	accurate.
p.	tang-hat	arrive eastwards.
p.	tang-ngato	approve.
p.	tang-ngayan	satisfy (hunger, thirst).

(2) Lost or obscure root; *yāh* (?) attract.

CLASS.	WORD.	SENSE.
e.	yāh-ngamat	pretty
e.	yāh-ngatō	happy
e.	yāh-ngayan	kind
p.	yāh-ngashi	fond of (to be)
p.	ha-yāh-ngashi	love (family)(to)
p.	hen-yāh-ngashe	family love

In the last two instances it will be noticed that correlated prefixes of differentiation have been called in to make the sense clear in the usual way.

n.—In the "Comparative Degrees."

In working out his "comparative degrees" the Nicobarese exhibits the uses of the radical affixes in most of the ways above explained. He adds the suffix *a* and then sometimes the infix *en* or the prefix *en* and *ong*, and sometimes he uses correlated prefixes. This addition he effects by agglutination, change of form, or inflexion.

³³ The mental process observable in these cases becomes quite clear from a reference to the Languages of the Torres Straits, as pointed out to me by Mr. Sydney Ray. Thus:

Palai (intransitive form *pai*) expresses the idea of separation, division into two parts, motion apart. Then
dan-pali (*dan* = eye), to open eye, be awake.
gud-pali (*gud* = mouth), to open (flower, mouth).
poi-pali (*poi* = dust), to shake off.
galu-pali (*galu* = cold), to tremble.
gagai-palai (*gagai* = bow), to shoot.
iadai-palai (*iadai*, plural of *i'a*, word), to cause one to chatter.
kerket-palai (*kerket* = smarting sensation), to cause to smart.

The connection with the root idea in these cases is not always easy for a European to follow.

Table of the "Comparative Degrees."

(Suffix always a.)

Unchanged Form of Suffix.

Infix en.

changed form	<i>ch-òng</i> (high)	<i>ch-in-ònga</i> (higher)
inflected	<i>l-apā</i> (good)	<i>l-en-pāa</i> (better)
inflected	<i>ch-aling</i> (long)	<i>ch-in-linga</i> (longer)
inflected	<i>sh-iang</i> (sweet)	<i>sh-inn-ānga</i> (sweeter)
inflected	<i>p-ōap</i> (poor)	<i>p-enn-ōapa</i> (poorer)
inflected	<i>la-ngan</i> (heavy)	<i>l-en-ngāna</i> (heavier)

Changed Form of Suffix.

inflected	<i>f-uōi</i> (thick)	<i>f-enn-ōiyo</i> (thicker)
inflected	<i>pa-chau</i> (cold)	<i>p-en-chauwa</i> (colder)

Unchanged Form of Suffix.

Prefixes en, ong.

inflected	<i>enh</i> (near)	<i>enn-enhā</i> (nearer)
agglutinated	<i>koāng</i> (strong)	<i>ong-koānga</i> (stronger)

Changed Form of Suffix.

Correlated Prefixes.

<i>mi-tāhto</i> (short)	<i>en-tānta</i> (shorter)
-------------------------	---------------------------

The "superlative" does not come into the argument, as there is, strictly, no such "degree," the illustrator (adverb), *ka*, 'indeed,' following the "comparative" for the purpose. Thus:
chòng (high) *chìnònga* (higher) *chìnònga ka* (highest)

o. — In Expression of "Continuing Action."

So also in working out a plan for expressing "continuing action," the Nicobarese employs the same method. He adds a suffix *yande* to the suffix *a*, and then proceeds as in the former case.

Continuing Action.

 (Suffix always a + *yande*.)

Infix en.

inflected	<i>t-op</i> (drink)	<i>t-enn-opayande</i> (c. drinking)
inflected	<i>(ok)-ng-ōle</i> (eat)	<i>ng-enn-ōkayande</i> (c. eating)
inflected	<i>(i)-k-āsha</i> (sing)	<i>k-enn-ōishayande</i> (c. singing)
inflected	<i>(ong)-sh-òngha</i> (walk)	<i>sh-inn-òngayande</i> (c. walking)

Correlated Prefixes.

<i>i-teak</i> (sleep)	<i>en-teakayande</i> (c. sleeping)
<i>ka-tōka</i> (dance)	<i>ken-tōkayande</i> (c. dancing)
<i>et-ēt</i> (write)	<i>en-ētayande</i> (c. writing)
<i>a-minh</i> (rain)	<i>en-minhayande</i> (c. raining)

p. — In Expression of Naturally Connected Words.

So further in the case of expressing the depth of water, a matter of much consequence to a people constantly navigating canoes and boats along a coral-bound shore.

Water and canoes are measured by the arm-span, which is something over five feet, or roughly a fathom: *hāng tamāka*, one fathom. But for the more commonly used 2 to 10 fathoms there are expressions specially differentiated by means of the prefix or infix *en* and the suffix *o* (for *a*), attached on the principles noted in Appendix A in the case of the numerals.

Root.		Word.	Sense.
<i>ān</i>	two	<i>enn-āy-o</i>	2 fathoms
<i>l-ōe</i>	three	<i>l-enn-ōiy-o</i>	3 fathoms
<i>f-oan</i>	four	<i>h-enn-oan-no</i>	4 fathoms
<i>t-anai</i>	five	<i>t-enn-ēy-o</i>	5 fathoms
<i>t-afual</i>	six	<i>t-en-fūal-o</i>	6 fathoms
<i>issat</i>	seven	<i>en-shāt-o</i>	7 fathoms
<i>enfoan</i>	eight	<i>enfōan-no</i>	8 fathoms
<i>sh-om</i>	ten	<i>sh-inn-am-o</i>	10 fathoms

Sudden emphasis on these terms is very often necessary in navigation, and further differentiation is effected by the attachment of the prefix *ma* or the infix *am*: *e. g.*,

m-enn-āy-o	only 2 fathoms	t-amen-fual-o	only 6 fathoms
l-amen-ōiy-o	only 3 fathoms	m-en-shat-o	only 7 fathoms
ma-h-enn-ōann-o	only 4 fathoms	m-enfoan-no	only 8 fathoms
t-amen-ey-o	only 5 fathoms	sh-aminn-am-o	only 10 fathoms.

q. — In Expression of Groups of Words Round Ideas and Groups of Ideas Round Words.

The Nicobarese carry this plan of differentiating connected words of the same class by radical affixes very far, and manage by this means to create groups of words round one idea or set of ideas, or *vice versa*, groups of ideas round one word or set of words.

Groups of Words Round an Idea Differentiated by Radical Affixes.

I. Idea : " Same Sort. "

(Prefixes or Infixes Employed.)

enkòina	a male	m-enkòina	a male of the same race
enkāna	a female	m-enkāna	a female of the same race
kenyūm	child	k-am-enyūma	child of the same race
paiyūh	a Nicobarese	{ p-en-yūh p-amen-yūh }	a Nicobarese of the same community.
nōt	pig	men-nōta	pig of the same village
ām	dog	enm-āma	dog of the same village
chōng	ship	ch-inm-ōnga	ship of the same rig
mattai	village	m-en-tai	village of the same people
kentōka	dance	k-am-entōka	dance of the same kind
kandishe	song	ka-menn-ōishe	song of the same kind
kaling	foreigner	ka-ma-lenga	foreigner of the same country

This last word is an instance where a foreign word has been subjected to Nicobarese grammatical forms; for Kling, Kaling is an Indian word for the foreigners settled in the Malay countries, from Kalinga, the Northern coasts of Madras.

Example.

<i>hēang</i>	<i>kamennōishe</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>kōisha</i>	<i>ān</i>	<i>kamentōka</i>	<i>ta</i>
one	same kind-of-song	c. i. r.	sing	two	same kind-of-dance	c. i. r.
<i>katōka</i>	<i>tai</i>	<i>chūa</i>	<i>wāhē</i>			
dance	by I		last-night			

(one sort of song was sung and two dances of the same kind were danced by me last night).

II. Idea : " Complete Condition. "

(Suffixes Employed.)

ROOT OR STEM.	CONNECTED WORDS.	SENSE.
dī (bulk)	dī-re	
	dī-ngashe	{ all good (of a hut, goods)
	dī-shire	
	dī-ngare	{ all bad (of a hut or goods)
	dī-ngareshe	
		all absent (of a quality, substance)
hēang (one)	hēang-lare	all good (contents of anything)
	hēang-ngare	all bad (contents of anything)
dūat (length)	dūat-shire	all (of a long object)
hēang-leāt (one-finished)	hēang-leāt-tare	the whole set

Example.

<i>linheh</i>	<i>dingareshe</i>	<i>mattai</i>	<i>nēe</i>	<i>hat</i>	<i>ôt</i>	<i>toak</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>taih</i>
to-day	all-absent	village	this	not	is	toddy	c. i. r.	fermented

(there is no fermented toddy at all in this village to-day).

Groups of Ideas Round a Word Differentiated by Radical Affixes.

Word : *la*, a portion ; then *l-inn-a*, less.

(Suffixes Employed.)

<i>linnâ-ngashe</i>	}	less than—
<i>linnâ-ngayan</i>		
<i>linnâ-hala</i>		less than (a height ; a distance northwards) :
<i>linnâ-hashe</i>		less than (a shortness ; a distance westwards)
<i>linnâ-haiñe</i>		less than (a nearness ; a distance to landing-place)
<i>linnâ-hanga</i>		less than (a distance southwards)
<i>linnâ-hahat</i>		less than (a distance eastwards)

Examples.

<i>an</i>	<i>linnâ-hala</i>	<i>chinônga</i>	<i>kôï</i>	<i>ten</i>	<i>chûa</i>
he	less	taller	head	o	I

(he is not so tall as I am).

<i>an</i>	<i>linnâ-ngayan</i>	<i>ongkoônga</i>	<i>ten</i>	<i>men</i>
he	less	stronger	to	you

(he is not so strong as you are).

r. — Differentiating Radical Suffixes of Direction.

When one comes to consider the suffixes of predicators (verbs), we find the principle of differentiating and grouping connected words by radical affixes carried to an extraordinary extent. Thus, there are sets of suffixes attached to roots or stems indicating motion, which give them a special force, though, when attached, as they frequently are, to other roots or stems, they have no particular force traceable now, whatever might have been possible once.

Differentiating Radical Suffixes of Direction attached to Roots and
Stems Indicating Motion.

<i>hala</i>	<i>lare</i>	<i>le</i>	<i>la</i>	<i>al</i>	northwards, upwards, out of.
<i>hanga</i>	<i>ngare</i>	<i>nge</i>	<i>nga</i>	<i>ang</i>	southwards, from self.
<i>hahat</i>	<i>hare</i>	<i>he</i>	<i>hat</i>	<i>ahat</i>	eastwards, inwards.
<i>hashe</i>	<i>shire</i>	<i>she</i>	<i>she</i>	<i>aich</i>	westwards, downwards.
<i>haiñe</i>	<i>ñire</i>	<i>ñe</i>	<i>ñe</i>	<i>aiñ</i>	towards the landing place, outwards, away.
<i>hata</i>	<i>tare</i>	<i>te</i>	<i>ta</i>	<i>at</i>	towards any direction on same lead, towards self.

As the differentiating radical suffixes of direction play an important part in Nicobarese speech, some examples are given here.

I. Root o, go.

go north	<i>o-le</i>	go up (ascend)	<i>o-le</i>
go south	<i>o-nge</i>		
go east	<i>o-he</i>		
go west	<i>o-she</i>	go down (descend)	<i>o-she</i>
go to landing place	<i>o-ñe</i>		
go anywhere	<i>ote</i>		

II. Root *af*, go.

go north	<i>af-al</i> ³⁴
go south	<i>af-ang</i>
go east	<i>af-ahat</i>
go west	<i>af-aich</i> ³⁴
go to landing place	<i>af-aiñ</i>
go anywhere	<i>af-at</i>

III. Root *tang*, arrive.

arrive northwards	<i>tang-la</i>
arrive southwards	<i>tang-nga</i>
arrive eastwards	<i>tang-hat</i>
arrive westwards	<i>tang-she</i>
arrive at landing place	<i>tang-ñe</i>
arrive somewhere	<i>tang-ta</i>

IV. Root *oid*, hither.

hither northwards	<i>oid-lare</i>
hither southwards	<i>oid-ngare</i>
hither eastwards	<i>oid-hare</i>
hither westwards	<i>oid-shire</i>
hither to landing place	<i>oid-ñire</i>
hither to anywhere	<i>oid-tare</i>

V. Root, *shwâ*, bring back.

bring back northwards	<i>shwâ-hala</i>
bring back southwards	<i>shwâ-hanga</i>
bring back eastwards	<i>shwâ-hahat</i>
bring back westwards	<i>shwâ-hashe</i>
bring back to landing place	<i>shwâ-haiñe</i>
bring back anywhere	<i>shwâ-hata</i>

s. — Extreme Extension of the Use of the Radical Suffixes of Direction.

These suffixes explain a set of illustrators (adverbs) of direction, which are to be explained as consisting of a lost root *nga* + suffix of direction, *e. g.*,

Illustrators (Adverbs) of Direction.

<i>ngâ-le</i>	north, above	<i>nga-iche</i> }	west, below
<i>nga-nge</i>	south down	<i>ngâ-she</i> }	
<i>ngâ-hae</i>	east	<i>nga-iñe</i>	to landing place

Example.

<i>dñe</i>	<i>ngaiñe</i>	<i>chamang</i>	<i>chî ?</i>
canoe	at-landing-place	belong	who ?
(whose is the canoe at the landing place?)			

Transferring these illustrators (adverbs) to indicators (nouns) by means of using the connector of intimate relation, *ta*, as a prefix, we get —

The Four Quarters.

<i>Ta-ngâle</i>	North	<i>Ta-ngange</i>	South
<i>Ta-ngâhae</i>	East	<i>Ta-ngaiiche</i>	West

Transferred to yet another set of illustrators (adverbs), the sense of "ago" is conveyed to predicators (verbs) of motion in the same curious manner.

Illustrators (Adverbs) of Time Past.

<i>hala</i>	ago (of movement, occurrence in the North)
<i>hanga</i>	ago (of movement, occurrence in the South)
<i>hat</i>	ago (of movement, occurrence in the East)
<i>hashe</i>	ago (of movement, occurrence in the West)
<i>hata</i>	ago (of returning)
<i>hashî</i>	ago (of a death)

Example.

<i>tanai</i>	<i>hanga</i>	<i>kamahewa</i>	<i>an</i>	<i>kâpâh</i>
five	ago-to-the South	month	he	died
(five months ago he died in the South).				

³⁴ *Afal*, *afaich*, like *ñle*, *ñshe*, mean also "go up," "go down" (a hill).

The interrogative prefix *ka*, *ká*, *kan*, has been already explained and when attached by inflexion to *ô*, be, together with an inflected suffix of direction, it produces a curious and common set of forms of question and answer.

Interrogatives of Direction.

Root *ô*, be, plus prefix *ka* for the question, plus suffix *ta* of "any direction" inflected with suffix of definite direction.

<i>k-ôd-de?</i>	be ?	<i>k-ô-hare?</i>	be east ?
<i>k-ô-lde?</i>	be north ? be up- stairs ? be above ?	<i>k-ô-ide?</i>	be west ? be downstairs ?
<i>k-ô-ngde?</i>	be south ? be below ?	<i>k-ô-inde?</i>	be at landing place ?

Examples.

- Q. *Kôdde ta ane dâk?* Any water there ? A. *Kakat.* There is.
 Q. *Kôlde ta ane dâk?* Any water up there? up north? A. *Kôlde.* It is up there ; up north. A. *Ngâlde.* It is up here.
 Q. *Kôngde ta ane dâk?* Any water down there? down south? A. *Kôngde.* It is down there ; down south. A. *Ngange.* It is down here ; down south.
 Q. *Kôhare ta ane dâk?* Any water to the east? A. *Kôhare.* There to the east. A. *Ngâhae.* Here to the east.
 Q. *Kôitde ta ane dâk?* Any water downstairs? to the west? A. *Kôitde.* There to the west. A. *Ngashe* (and *ngaiche*). It is down here to the west.
 Q. *Kôinde ta ane dâk?* Any water at the landing-place? A. *Kôinde.* It is there at the landing-place. A. *Ngaiñe.* Here at the landing-place.
 Q. *Kakat?* *enkôina* *enkâna* *ta* *itâ* A. *Kakat.*
 Q. Be ? man woman c. i. r. here A. Be,
 (Q. Are there any men and women here ? A. There are.)

In the above instance *kakat* is a case of a double prefix *ka+ka+(ô) t*.

t. — Use of Terms for Parts of the Human Body as Supplementary Radical Affixes of Differentiation.

Words relating to some parts of the body are used as supplementary radical suffixes both of differentiation and transfer to indicate action or relation naturally referable to those parts. Thus :

-tai (hand) refers to what is done by the hand or by force : *-lâh* (foot, leg), to movement by the foot : *-kô* (head), to anything relating to the head or top : *-nâng* (ear), to what can be heard : *-chakâ* (face), to what is done before one or in the presence : *-ngê* (voice), to speech : *-mat* (surface, eye), and *-ok* (skin, back), to what is outside, on the surface. *E. g.*,

Supplementary Radical Suffixes Derived from the Parts of the Body.

<i>tai</i> (hand)	<i>hôh</i> (starve)- <i>nga-tai</i>	(make to starve)
<i>lâh</i> (foot)	<i>ô</i> (go)- <i>nge-lâh</i>	(to) leave
<i>kô</i> (head)	<i>kenyûa</i> (a leaf ³⁵)- <i>nga-kô</i> (head)	(to) cover a pot
<i>nâng</i> (ear)	<i>hima</i> (bequest)- <i>nga-nang</i>	(advice)
<i>chakâ</i> (face)	<i>oreh</i> (before)- <i>chakâ</i>	(to) advance
<i>ngê</i> (voice)	<i>opyap</i> (overhear)- <i>nga-ngê</i>	(to) eavesdrop
<i>mat</i> (surface)	<i>ettat</i> (polish)- <i>mat</i>	(to) wipe
<i>mat</i> (eye)	<i>dâie</i> (water)- <i>mat</i>	(to) wipe a tear
<i>ok</i> (skin)	<i>ettaich</i> (husk)- <i>nga-ok</i>	(to) flay

(To be continued.)

³⁵ *Kenûya* is the name of the plant which produces the leaves used as the covering of pots for steaming *pandanus* paste.

NOTES ON ANCIENT ADMINISTRATIVE TERMS AND TITLES IN THE PANJAB.

BY H. A. ROSE.

A study of the old designations of officials and administrative divisions in the Pañjāb would undoubtedly throw much light on the ancient system of administration. Unfortunately, the material for such a study is very scanty and is almost confined to the names and titles given incidentally in the copper-plate inscriptions of the Chambā State, some of which were published in the *Archæological Report* for 1903. A full collection is being published by the Pañjāb Government in a separate volume.

The Chambā inscriptions allude to the "eighteen elements of the State," but do not describe what these eighteen elements were. They would appear, indeed, to have been given a more or less conventional number,¹ according to a theoretical system borrowed from the more powerful State of Kashmīr, rather than a description of the indigenous organization of the State in actual force at any period. Besides these so-called eighteen elements, the inscriptions enumerate a horde of officials, whose functions are not described and are not known at all clearly from other sources. From three of the inscriptions a list of no less than thirty-five official, or quasi-official, titles is obtainable, as the following table, which is taken from three Chambā copper-plates of 960—1080 A. D., shows:—

Official Titles in Chambā, circ. 1000 A. D.

Plate II. Text.	Plate IV. Text.	Plate V. Text.
1. rājā.	1. rājā.	1. rājā.
2. rānā (rājāṇaka).	2. rānā.	2. rānā.
3. rājput (rājaputra). ²	3. rājāmātya.	3. rājput.
4. rājāmātya, royal minister.	4. rājā-putra.	4. rājāmātya, royal councillor.
	5. parikara-saunniyuktakaviniyuktaka: ? 'those appointed and commissioned (out of the Rājā's attendants).'	5. brāhmana.
		6. kshatriya.
		7. vaisya.
		8. sūdra.
5. rājasthāniya, chief justice.		9. rājasthāniya.
		10. parikara-samniyuktakaviniyuktaka: cf. No. 5 of Plate IV.
6. pramātar, ? measurer.		
7. sarobhanga.		
8. kumārāmātya, councillor of the prince.		
9. uparika. ³		
10. vishayapati. ⁴		
11. nihelapati.		

¹ It can hardly be more than a coincidence that the well-known Right-hand castes in Madras comprised eighteen sorts of people: cf. Nelson's *Scientific Study of Hindu Law*, pp. 98, 99, and 100. And, according to Dubois (*Hindu Manners, Customs, and Ceremonies*, 6th Ed., p. 15), the Śūdras of Madras comprise eighteen chief sub-castes.

² Rāwat (Guzarāti) and Raut (Marāthī) = horse-soldier, trooper, also appear to be derived from *rājaputra*, *Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum*, III, p. 218.

³ A fiscal term, ? fr. Pr. *uparī*, may denote a tax levied on cultivators who have no proprietary rights in the soil: *C. I. I.*, III, 97, etc.

⁴ Lord or governor of a *vishaya*, probably a sub-division of a *deśa* or *maṇḍala*: *C. I. I.*, p. 327.

- | | | |
|--|---|--|
| 12. kshatrapa (kshetrapa). | | |
| 13. prāntapāla, frontier guard. | | |
| 14. hastyasvostra
balavyāvṛ(ṣṭ)ataka,
those occupied with
elephants, horses, camels,
and the forces. | | |
| 15. dūta. ⁵ | 6. dūta. | 11. dūta. |
| 16. gamāgamika. | 7. gamāgamika. | 12. gamāgamika. |
| 17. abhitvaramāṇa. | 8. abhitvaramāṇa. | 13. bhitvara-śāmāṇa. |
| 18. khasha. | 9. khaśa. | 14. khāśa. |
| 19. kulika. | 10. kulika. | 15. kulika. |
| 20. śaulkika. ⁶ | 11. śaulkika. | 16. śaulmika. |
| 21. gaulmika, inspector of
police, patrol. ⁷ | 12. gaulmika. | 17. gaulmika. |
| 22. khaṇḍaraksha. | 13. khaḍagaraksha. | 18. khaṇḍaraksha. |
| 23. tara patika, ? bridge-
guard. | 14. tarapati. | 19. tarapati. |
| 24. chhatrachhhāyika, um-
brella-bearer. | | |
| 25. vetakila, betel-carrier. | | |
| 26. vīrajyātrika, ? those
belonging to the expedi-
tionary force. | 15. vīrajyātrika. | 20. vīrajyātrika. |
| 27. chauroddharanika, thief-
catcher. | 16. chauroddharanika. | 21. chauroddharanika. |
| 28. daṇḍika, jailor. ⁸ | 17. daṇḍika. | 22. daṇḍika. |
| 29. daṇḍavāsika, executioner. | 18. daṇḍavāsika. | 23. daṇḍavāsika,
'and all others that
constitute the eighteen
elements of the State.' |
| 30. bhogapati. ⁹ | | |
| 31. viniyuktaka. | | |
| 32. bhāgika, land-owners. ¹⁰ | | |
| 33. bhogika, land-holders. | | |
| 34. chāṭa (modern <i>chār</i>), head-
men of a <i>pargana</i> . | | |
| 35. and sevakādūn their subor-
dinates and servants. | | |
| | 19. brāhmaṇa. | |
| | 20. kshatriya. | |
| | 21. viṭ (vaiśya). | |
| | 22. chūdr (śūdra) and all
others that constitute
the eighteen (sic) ele-
ments of the State,
and etc. | |

In Plate III (*Arch. Report*, 1903, pp. 257-258) are mentioned a *mahāmātya*, or chief councillor, and a *mahākshapatalika* or chief record-keeper, who do not appear in Plates II, IV, or V.

⁵ *Lit.*, 'a messenger': cf. Hindi *dūt*, especially in *dūt-bhūt*, evil spirits, and also the messengers of Yama, the god of death. Is P. *ḍaurū*, 'runner' or 'messenger,' a doublet? For an interesting note on *dūtaka* (occasionally *dūta*, e. g., in Nirmand copper-plate), cf. Fleet in *C. I. I.*, II, p. 100⁸.

⁶ Cf. *śulka*, 'superintendent of tolls or customs': *C. I. I.*, III, p. 52⁸.

⁷ But cf. *gulma*, 'superintendent of woods and forests': *C. I. I.*, III, 52.

⁸ *Dāṇḍika*; *lit.*, a punisher: fr. *daṇḍa*, fine or rod: *C. I. I.*, III, p. 218⁸. *Daṇḍ* is still used for 'fine.'

⁹ *Bhoga*, -ika, 'one who enjoys or possesses': *C. I. I.*, III, 100; *bhoga*, 'enjoyment of shares,' p. 120¹.

¹⁰ Cf. the modern Balochi *bhāgyā*, and Pāñjābī *bhāgwān*, 'wealthy.' *Bhāga* is a territorial term, *C. I. I.*, III, p. 248.

Of all the designations given in the above list, only one, *viz.*, *châr*, the Sanskrit *chaṭa*, survives, or can, at least, with any certainty be said to survive in the modern language of the State. Within quite recent times an entirely different set of names was in use, but these are now nearly obsolete in their turn and are being displaced even in popular use by designations borrowed from the British Revenue Codes.

But before describing the more modern or the present official titles it will be best to note the names of the old administrative divisions. The ancient administrative division or unit was the *maṇḍala*,¹¹ which corresponds to the more modern *pargand*. Popular belief holds that Chambâ was once divided into or comprised 84¹² of these *maṇḍalas*, when it was larger than it is now. Even at annexation it contained 72 *pargands*, since reduced by amalgamating the smaller *pargands* to 52. Till recently the Bhaṭṭiyât or Bhaṭṭi *wizârat* contained 12 *pargands* and was accordingly known as the Bârah Bhaṭṭiân. These *pargands* are now grouped into 4 *wizârats*, corresponding to the *tahsils* or sub-collectorates of a British District. The *wizârats* are, as the word itself indicates, of modern origin. It is perhaps worth noting that each *pargand* contained a State granary (*koṭhî*) in which the revenue of the State, collected in kind, was stored, and in which the officials of the *pargand* lived.¹³ As a rule there is only one *koṭhî* in each *pargand*, but when the *pargand* consists of two or more amalgamated smaller *pargands* it possesses two or more *koṭhis*, each with its *pahri*, *hâlî*, and *jhotîdr*.

The officials at the capital were as follows : —

- (1) *Wazîr*, chief minister.
- (2) *Thare*¹⁴ *dâ mahtâ*, chief financial minister.
- (3) *Bakhshî*, who used to keep the military accounts and was responsible for the internal administration of the State forces.¹⁵
- (4) *Hâzrî dâ kotwâl*, magistrate in attendance on the Râjâ.
- (5) *Thare dâ kotwâl*, magistrate who performed miscellaneous duties and disposed of petty cases arising in the town.

For the outlying tracts special officials were appointed — *wazîrs* for Pângî and Barmaur *wizârats*, and elsewhere a *mahtâ* and a *kotwâl* for each *pargand*. The two latter posts were held by men appointed in the capital, whence they transacted all the business of their charges. Not unnaturally these posts became all more or less sinecures.

The chief local officials varied in different parts of the State : —

In Chambâ and Chaurâh *wizârats* each *pargand* was in charge of a *châr*, collector, a *likhnehârâ*, clerk, and a *bhatwâl*, personal assistant called collectively *kârdârs* or *kamdârs*. Of these —

¹¹ *Maṇḍal*, s. m. disk, circle, ring . . . region, country, district, province (extending 20, or, according to some, 40 *yojanas* in every direction); the country over which the 12 princes Chakravartî are supposed to have reigned.

¹² 84 is almost certainly a conventional or auspicious number: cf. *Panjab Notes and Queries*, I, 1884, § 465, for the Tribal Collocations of 12 (Bârah), 22 (Baiyâ), 52 (Bâwani), 84 (Chaurâsî) and 85 (Pachâsî) villages.

¹³ The *koṭhis* varied in size and appearance, but most of them were built on one plan: a square structure, 20 or 30 yards long on each side, consisting of rooms surrounding an open court-yard. The buildings are usually two or three storeys high and divided into rooms and *dâlâns* or halls. There is a principal entrance, and in the court-yard a staircase leading to the upper storeys. Some of the *koṭhis* are very ancient, several dating back even to the times of the Rânâs whose rule preceded the foundation of the State itself.

¹⁴ *Thara*, high place, where justice was administered. Hence *thareth*, an attendant at the *thara*, an official whose functions are not more fully defined.

¹⁵ For the functions of the *Bakhshî*, see Irvine's *Army of the Moghals* in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1896, p. 539.

(i) The *chār* was the collector of revenue and the officer responsible for the internal management of the *parganās*.¹⁶

(ii) The *likhnehārā* kept the revenue accounts and did clerical work.

(iii) The *bhatwāl*¹⁷ carried out their orders and held under them a position analogous to that of the *hāzrī dā kotwāl* at the capital.

The other officials, who were all subordinate to the three *kārdārs*, were—

(iv) The *jhotiār* (from *jhotā*, 'an errand'), a messenger, who was under the immediate orders of the *bhatwāl* and carried out the *kārdār's* orders conveyed through him.

(v) *Ugrākā*,¹⁸ a tax-gatherer, who collected the revenue demand under the *chār*.

(vi) *Jinsālī* (from *jins*, 'grain' or goods, and *āl*, a store), a store-keeper, who was in charge of the storehouse of the *parganā*.

(vii) *Pahrī* (from *pahr*, watch), a record-keeper, who was in charge of the State's *kothī* records, and revenue, both in cash and kind.

(viii) *Bhāṇḍ* (? from *bhāṇḍā*, a vessel), a cook, who cooked the *kārdār's* food and cleaned their utensils.

(ix) *Hālī*, a care-taker, who kept the *kothī* clean and looked after the storage and safe-keeping of the grain.

(x) *Kāgadiārū* (from Persian *kāghaz* and *ārū*, bringing), a letter-carrier.

(xi) *Lakkarhār*, who supplied wood to the *kothī*.

(xii) *Ghiārū*, who collected *ghī* from those who paid their revenue in that commodity.

(xiii) *Dudhiārū*, who similarly collected milk.

In certain *parganās* there used to be a high official called *odhrū*, who was superior to the *kārdārs*, and had under him more than one *parganā*.

In *Barmaur*, the ancient *Brahmapura*, all the above officials are known, but the *ugrākā* is called *durbīāl* or *drubīyāl*, and although the *jhotiār* is not unknown, his duties are performed by a *kothēru*. There is also an official called *ahrū*,¹⁹ below the *durbīyāl*, who collects milk. Neither the *kothēru* nor the *ahrū* are paid servants of the State, but they are allowed certain concessions and privileges in their *wizārat*. Formerly an official called *patwārī*²⁰ had woollen blankets made for the *Rājā* out of the wool collected as revenue.

In the *Bhaṭṭiyāt wizārat* certain *parganās* had an *odhrū* over them and others an *amīn*. Both were superior in rank to the *kārdārs*. There the *bhatwāl* was called *tharētī*;²¹ the *jhotiār*, *bhatwāl*; the *ugrākā*, *muqaddam*; and the *ahrū*, *jhiwar* or *jhar*.

The remote *wizārat* of *Pāngi* used to be under a *wazīr* (who visited it every third year to collect the revenue), and under him was a *pālsrā*. Otherwise *Pāngi* had all the officials except No. xiii, above described, the only difference being that the *ugrākā* was called *muqaddam*.

(To be continued.)

¹⁶ Hence his charge (the *parganā*) was also called *chārī*. Some *parganās* also have a *chhoṭa chār*, whose jurisdiction is separate from that of the *barā chār*.

¹⁷ It is possible, but hardly probable, that the *bhatwāl* is the *bhata* of the copper-plates.

¹⁸ *Ugrākā*, cf. *Pañjābī ugrākā*, a collector or gatherer of tax. The *ugrākā* and *jhotiār* were appointed as occasion required.

¹⁹ Possibly from *ahrū*, beestings, the first milk of a cow after calving. If so, the word is practically synonymous with *dudhiārū*.

²⁰ Probably from *patu*, blanket.

²¹ See *ante*, p. 350, note 14.

BOOK-NOTICE.

ACHYUTARĪVĀHYUDAYAM OF Śrī RĀJANĀTHA, with a commentary by PANDIT R. V. KRISHNAMACHARIAR (ABHINAVA BHATTĀ BANA). Part I, Cantos 1-6. Srirangam : Sri Vani Vilas Press, 1907. Pp. 156.

THIS beautifully printed little volume contains the first half of a hitherto unpublished Sanskrit poem, accompanied by an excellent commentary in the same language. The hero is king Achyuta (A. D. 1530-40) of the second dynasty of Vijayanagara. On this prince a recent historian has justly pronounced the verdict that he "was a craven, and under him the Hindu empire began to fall to pieces."¹ The author of the panegyrical poem of course represents him as a mighty, pious, and warlike sovereign.

As in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, Achyuta is stated to have belonged to the family of the Tuluva kings (*sarga* III, versé 38), and his pedigree is traced from the Moon to the mythical king Turvasu (I, vv. 5-18). To this race-belonged Timma I. (v. 23), whose son Īśvara (v. 25) had by Bukkamā two sons: Nṛsiṃha (v. 27) or Narasa (v. 28) and Timma II. The latter is not mentioned in the Vijayanagara inscriptions. The former took Mānavadurga from a Śaka (*i. e.*, Musalmān) chief (v. 29). As in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, he is reported to have dammed up the Kāvērī and to have stormed Seringapatam (v. 30). He slew the Marava king and took Madhurā (v. 31 f.). He captured Kōṇṭīrāja (v. 33). Vidyāpuri (*i. e.*, Vijayanagara) became his capital (v. 39). His three favourite queens were Tippāmbikā, Nāgamāmbā, and Ōbamāmbā (v. 52). Tippāmbikā's son was Vīraṇṛsiṃharāja, Nāgamāmbikā's Krishnarāja (v. 53), and Ōbamāmbā's Achyuta (II, v. 32), whose chief queen, was Varadāmbikā (III, v. 15), the daughter of the Salaga king (v. 43).

Vīraṇṛsiṃha (v. 17) was succeeded by his brother Krishnarāja, who took Koṇḍavīti and other forts from the Gajapati king and set up a pillar of victory at Puṭuṭṭāṇḍapura (?) (v. 18 f.). Then Achyuta, the third of the brothers, was anointed at Śāśhādri (*i. e.*, Tirupati, v. 23) and entered Vidyānagarī (v. 24). The kings of

Kalinga, Magadha, Śaka, and Śimhala are represented as his servants (v. 46). His son Chinavenkatādri, who is mentioned as Venkatārāja in the Vijayanagara inscriptions, was appointed heir-apparent (v. 51 f.).

Once Achyuta's minister addressed his master in private in the Venkaṭa-vilāsa-maṇḍapa (IV, v. 46). He submitted that the Chōla king had fled to the Chēra kingdom, and that those two kings deserved to be "punished" (v. 56), while the Pāṇḍya king, who had lost his throne, would have to be "protected" (v. 57). Thereupon the king gives the necessary instructions to the commander of his army (v. 58) and starts himself on horseback (V, v. 1). His movements are a little erratic. He enters Chandragiri (v. 22), ascends Śāśhādri (v. 23), worships the god (v. 30), and makes presents to him (vv. 39-42). From Venkaṭagiri he proceeds to Kālabasti (v. 44). At Vishṇukāñchī (v. 47) he performs the *tulāpurusha* ceremony in the Varadarāja temple (v. 49). Then he travels *viā* Aruṇāchala (*i. e.*, Tiruvannāmalai, v. 51) to the Kāvērī (v. 55) and visits Śrīraṅgam (v. 57), whence he sends (his brother-in-law) the Salaga prince to bring the Chōla king from the Chēra country (v. 64).

The Salaga prince marches *viā* Madhurā to the Tāmraparṇī (VI, v. 1). He encamps there and sends his general in advance to meet the enemy (v. 13). Then follows the description of a battle, which is opened by the Tiruvaṭi king (*i. e.*, the king of Travancore, v. 14), and in which the army of the Kērala (v. 25) or Chēra (v. 28) is defeated. The latter delivers the Chōla king Tiruvaṭi into the hands of the Salaga prince (v. 29 f.),² who pardons him, but places the Pāṇḍya king over him (v. 31).

The published portion of the poem closes in the middle of the description of a journey which the king undertakes in order to worship the god at Anantaśayana (Trivandrum, v. 32).

E. HULTZSCH.

Halle, 26th October, 1907.

¹ Mr. R. Sewell's *Forgotten Empire*, p. 165.

² These two verses shew that the author treated "the Chōla king" and "the Travancore king" as synonyms. On Tiruvaṭi see Mr. Venkayya's *Annual Report on Epigraphy for 1899-1900*, p. 28.

A PLAN FOR A UNIFORM SCIENTIFIC RECORD OF THE LANGUAGES OF SAVAGES.

Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese.

BY SIR RICHARD C. TEMPLE.

(Concluded from p. 347.)

IV. — PHONOLOGY.

a. — Mode of Speech.

THE Nicobarese speak in a deep monotonous tone and with open lips, thus adding to the many difficulties presented by their language by giving it an exceedingly indistinct sound. The pronunciation is guttural, nasal, drawled, and indeterminate: *i. e.*, the Nicobarese speak slowly from the throat with the flat of the tongue and open lips. Final consonants are habitually slurred, especially labials, palatals, and gutturals. All this is the result of the habit of betel-chewing till the lips are parted, the teeth greatly encrusted and the gums distended, rendering the articulation of speech most imperfect.

b. — Man's and de Rœpstorff's Enquiries.

Mr. Man was at very great pains to catch the real sound of Nicobarese words, and his reproduction of them on Mr. A. J. Ellis's scheme may be taken as being as near to complete accuracy as one is likely to arrive at. Mr. de Rœpstorff, who was a Dane, used in 1876 his national system of representation, which has been followed by Danish and German writers, but is entirely unsuited to English readers. *E. g.*, he writes *j* for *y*, and the usual Danish and German complications to represent *ch* and *j* and so on. He had also the common Danish and German difficulty in distinguishing surds from sonants, which has made his transliterations puzzling.

c. — Reduction of the Speech to Writing.

There are a great number of vowel sounds in the language, which have been reproduced by Messrs. Man and Ellis as follows:—

The Vowels in the Central Dialect.

ENGLISH.	CENTRAL.	ENGLISH.	CENTRAL.
a <i>idea, cut</i>	yüang (fruit)	ò <i>pot</i>	òmtôm (all)
ā <i>cur</i> ³⁶	dāk (come)	ô <i>awful</i>	lôe (cloth)
à <i>casa</i> (Ital.)	kākātōk (a month ³⁷)	ö <i>könig</i> (Ger.)	hōi (far)
â <i>father</i>	kân (wife)	u <i>influence</i>	puâ (catch)
ä <i>fathom</i>	leät (finished)	ü <i>pool</i>	düen (monkey)
e <i>bed, chaotic</i>	heng (sun)	ü <i>über</i> (Ger.)	düe (canoe)
ē <i>pair</i>	lēang (name)	ai <i>bite</i>	tanai (five)
i <i>lid</i>	kaling (foreigner)	au <i>house</i>	kareau (spirit-scarer)
ī <i>police</i>	wī (make)	àn <i>haus</i> (Ger.)	oàn (vomit)
o <i>indolent</i>	koâl (arm)	ôi <i>boil</i>	enlòin (wallow)
ō <i>pole</i>	enlōin (axe)		

Almost every vowel is nasalised and the following are reproduced in the written form adopted:—

Nasalised Vowels in the Central Dialect.

añ	holiãñ (spinster)	ōñ	kenhōñha (pocket)
añ	miãñ (spear)	òn	òñh (fuel)
ân	ân (two)	ôn	mônñhuyä (albumen)
ân	koyãñwa (guava)	un	chyun (sweet)
en	enñ (near)	ain	mifainya (cloud)
in	aminñh (rain)	auñ	añhauñ (parboil)
in	finñha (hog's head)	oin	omhoin (tobacco)
on	haronñh (stalk game)		

³⁶ With untrilled r.

³⁷ The name of the first month of the North-East monsoon.

The consonants do not require much explanation, but the following may be noticed : —

ENGLISH.	CENTRAL.	ENGLISH.	CENTRAL.
ch chain	chakâ (face)	ñg springiest	iñgol (nearly ripe)
hw what (Scotch)	benhwâva (ashes)	r rest (Eng. r)	karû (large)
ñ gagner (Fr.)	enkôina (man)	sh she	shohông (south-west monsoon)
ng singer	yangtare (follow)		

d. — Stress.

Stress is on the root or stem, or on what is now thought by the Nicobarese to be so. These can to a great extent be separated out from the affixes by the stress. In stems of two syllables the stress is on the second syllable, unless the first contains a long vowel.

V. — COMPARISON OF DIALECTS.

a. — Man's Enquiries.

Mr. Man gives a long list of words in the dialects, and when considering the currency of the people in Appendix A the comparative terms for the numerals and words connected with enumeration have also been given. From these last the deduction seemed to be clear, that the six dialects of the Nicobarese are variants of the same fundamental tongue. The same inference seems inevitable from the following examination of a selection of words from Mr. Man's *Dictionary*.

b. — Comparison of Words.

Roots will be separated out of the words by placing the affixes in italics. This separation of the roots is of course, at present, tentative, as roots can only be ascertained beyond doubt by a comparison with other connected languages in the Far East. The present attempt will, however, be useful to students.

The following abbreviations will be used in the accompanying tables : —

C. N. = Car Nicobar
T. = Teressa
S. = Southern

Ch. = Chowra
C. = Central
S. P. = Shom Pen

Words in the Six Dialects Compared.

ENGLISH.	C. N.	CH.	T.	C.	S.	S. P.
bachelor	<i>lámòk</i>	<i>maiâl</i>	<i>mai-yòh</i>	<i>ilû</i>	<i>ilû</i>	<i>hakâdît</i>
maiden	<i>dêla</i>	<i>lámòk</i>	<i>lámòk</i>	{ <i>holian-</i> (<i>wihla</i>)	<i>penhôn-</i> (<i>wihla</i>)	
child	<i>nîa</i>	<i>ken-yûm</i>	<i>ken-yûm</i>	<i>ken-yûm</i>	<i>pin-îeñ</i>	<i>akau</i>
female	<i>kikâna</i>	<i>enkâna</i>	<i>enkêäna</i>	<i>enkâna</i>	<i>oyûha</i>	<i>apâu</i>
male	<i>kikôña</i>	<i>mohêo</i>	<i>maioh</i>	<i>enkôina</i>	<i>otâha</i>	<i>akôit</i>
man	{ <i>tâa</i> <i>târik</i> <i>tâdîn</i> }	<i>pâeh</i>	<i>pai</i>	<i>paigûh</i>	<i>pôh</i>	<i>akôit</i>
back (the)	<i>ok</i>	<i>ok</i>	<i>ok</i>	<i>ok</i>	<i>tomnôit</i>	<i>hokôa</i>
blood	<i>mâm</i>	<i>pâhêdît</i>	<i>vâ</i>	<i>wâ</i>	<i>wâ</i>	<i>dôb</i>
breast	<i>tâh</i>	<i>tòh</i>	<i>tòh</i>	<i>toah</i>	<i>toâh</i>	<i>tôa</i>
ear	<i>nâng</i>	<i>nâng</i>	<i>anang</i>	<i>nâng</i>	<i>nâng</i>	<i>nâng</i>
finger	<i>kuntî</i>	<i>kenûshnôi</i>	<i>môhtî</i>	<i>kanetai</i>	<i>kewêt</i>	<i>noai-tî</i>
hair	<i>kûya</i>	<i>hêok</i>	<i>hêok</i>	<i>yôk</i>	<i>yôk</i>	<i>jûo, jôa</i>
hand	<i>eltî</i>	<i>nôi</i>	<i>môhtî</i>	<i>kanetai</i>	<i>kewêt</i>	<i>noai-tî</i>

ENGLISH.	C. N.	CH.	T.	C.	S.	S. P.
head	kūi	kōi	kōi	kōi	kōi	kōi
leg	kaldrān	lāah	lāh	lāh	lāh	lāu
nose	elmenh	mōnh	mōnh	moanh	moanh	mahūn
stomach	ellōan	wiang	vīang	wiang	wiang	kāu, kànal

bird	chechōn	shichūa	shichūa	shichūa	shichūa	sichūa
canoe	āp	dūe	rōe	dūe	henhōat	dōat, hōa
cocoanut-tree	taōka	owēau	ovēau	oyau	gāu	kālēal
dog	am	òm	òm	ām	ām	kab
fire	tāmōya	palō	heōe	heōe	hentōnha	yōp
fruit	rong	eang	āng	yūang	oag	
hut	pdtī	nī	nī	nī	ēn, nī	{ nī-yāng nī-ngām
meat	alāhah	ehā	ehā	ānhā	ehā	ehā
moon	chi-geāt	manēana	ka-hai	kā-hē	kā-hē	hawōp

name	minaiña	lēang	lēang	lēang	lē	lēd
North	lāōla	lāōl	lāō	tangāle	laōl	
north-wind ³³	kofat-kapā	fāh-kapā	hānsh-kapā	hānsh-kapā	hānsh-kapā	
paddle	paiyūah	kāhēal	kāhēa	pōwah	pāūah	kākal
pig	hāun	nōt	nōt	nōt	pakōit	mēn
pig (wild)	hāun-chōn	milīah	eū-hā	sharndl	chūam	nōng
place	chiuk	chuk	chuk	chuk	chū	lōichau
village	pāndm	pānam	matiai	matiai	pattai	
sea	mai	shamarāu	enliang	kamalē	ō	hēda
seed	kōlal	enshūng	enshūng	opēp	opēp	kēap
storm	rashat	fēh	hurāsha	hurāsha	oriasha	
tabu	tākōya	kāl	yedich	chij	yīi	yūid
to-morrow	hurēch	tāha-kōi	hōdich	hakī	hakī	yābō
year	sōmyūhu	samāiha	samenēoh	shomenyūh	shāū	ānhōi
yes	hañ, hòu	añ	añ	añ	hañ	

all	rōkhare	chiōi	chiōi	ōmtōm	hē	kāapōi
bad ³⁴	at-lāk	hat-lu	hat-lapā	hat-lapā	ngā-kō	wu-ūhu
good	lāk	lu	lapā	lapā	kō	ūukō
not	{ ar, at dran }	hat	hat	hat	ngā	wu
hear	hang	hēang	hēang	yāng	hāng	hāng
see	māk	harra	ha	harra	haka	tāa
say	rō	kānyūa	ennēola	olyōla	hāhal	tēit
steal	olāya	malānga	kalōhanga	kalōhanga	palait	

he	ngōa	ān	ān	an, na	an	nhō
I	{ chyūa chiān }	chiā	chiā	chūa	echiāhañ	chiāu

³³ The first of the conjoined words signifies "wind."³⁴ The first syllable of the word means "not"; "bad" = "not good."

ENGLISH.	C. N.	CH.	T.	C.	S.	S. P.
we-two	hôi-chyū	chīa-hân	haih-hâ	heñ	hân̄a	â-mô
we	īha	hē	hē	hē	hēi	fūehōe-mô
you-two	nāa	inā	inā	inā	ñāō	
you	yīa	ehē	īhe	ifē	hēe	

c. — Comparison of Roots.

We can now compare the above words by roots, so far as these are at present apparent, which will sufficiently show the unity of origin of all the dialects, and should help to fix the identity of the general Nicobarese Language with that of the tongue of some definite group of speakers in the Far East.

Roots in the Six Dialects Compared.

ENGLISH.	C. N.	CH.	T.	C.	S.	S. P.
bachelor	mòk	âl	yèh	lū	lū	kâ
maiden	dē	mòk	mòk	ho	hōn	
child	ī	ken-yū	ken-yū	ken-yū	pin-ī	ak
female	kân	kân	kēān	kân	yū	ap
male	kōñ	hē	o	kōñ	tā	ak
man	tā	pā	pai	pai	pô	ak
back (the)	ok	ok	ok	ok	nô	kō
blood	mām	pāh	vā	wā	wā	dōb
breast	tāh	tòh	tòh	toah	toāh	tō
ear	nāng	nāng	nang	nāng	nāng	nāng
finger	tī	nòì	tī	taì	wēt	noai-tī
hair	kū	hēòk	hēòk	ōk	ōk	jū, jo
hand	tī	nòì	tī	taì	wet	noai-tī
head	kūi	kōi	kōi	kōi	kōi	kōi
leg	kal	lāsh	lāh	lāh	lāh	lāu
nose	meñh	mòñh	mòñh	moañh	moañh	hūñ
stomach	lōan	wīang	vīang	wīang	wīang	kāu, kâ
bird	chechō	shiehū	shiehū	shiehū	shiehū	sichū
canoe	āp	dū	rō	dū	hō	dō, hō
cocoanut-tree	ô	wēāu	vēāu	yāu	gāu	lē
dog	am	òm	òm	ām	ām	kab
fire	tō	pō	heō	heō	tōn	yō
fruit	rong	eang	āng	yūang	oag	
hut	tī	ñī	ñī	ñī	en, ñi	{ ñī-yang ñī-ngām
meat	lā	eñ	eñ	ân	eñ	eñ
moon	chi-ngeā	nēa	ka-hai	kā-hē	kā-hē	ha
name	nañ	lē	lē	lē	lē	lē
North	ô	ô	ō	ngā	ô	
N.-wind	fat-pā	fāh-pā	hāñsh-pā	hāñsh-pā	hāñsh-pā	
paddle	paiyū	kāhē	kāhē	pō	pāu	kāk
pig	hāun	nōt	nōt	nōt	pak	mēn
pig (wild)	hāun-chō	lī	ēu	shu	chū	nōng
place	chīu	chu	chu	chu	chū	chau
village	pān	pān	mat	mat	pat	
sea	mai	shāu	lī	lē	ô	ô
seed	kōl	shūng	shūng	ēp	ēp	ēap
storm	rash	fēh	rāsh	rāsh	riash	
tabu	kō	kā	ye	chi	yī	yū

ENGLISH.	C. N.	CH.	T.	C.	S.	S. P.
to-morrow	rēch	táh-kōi	ròich	kī	kī	yáb
year	syüh	saih	sēoh	shyüh	sháu	hō
yes	hañ, hòñ	añ	añ	añ	hañ	
all	ròk	chiō	chiō	tōm	hē	pōi
bad	at-lāk	hat-lu	hat-lapā	hat-lapā	ngā-kō	wu-hu
good	lāk	lu	lapā	lapā	kō	kō
not	{ ar, at } { dran }	hat	hat	hat	ngā	wu
hear	hang	hēang	heäng	yâng	hâng	hâng
see	māk	har	ha	har	ha	tā
say	rô	yu	eo	yo	hâh	tē
steal	lâ	lā	lô	lô	la	
he	ngô	ăn	ăn	an, na	an	nhô
I	chyū, chi	chi	chi	chū	chī	chi
we-two	hōl-chyū	chī-hân	haiñ-hâ	heñ	hân	â-mô
we	ih	hē	he	hē	hē	hōe-mô
you-two	nâ	nâ	nâ	nâ	ñâ	
you	yī	hē	he	fē	hē	

VI. — COMPARATIVE PHILOLOGY.

a. — Comparison with the Indo-Chinese Languages.

I am able to compare some of the Nicobarese roots with those of corresponding sense in the Indo-Chinese Languages, civilised and uncivilised, — of which Mon (Peguan) and Khmer (Cambodian) form the civilised group, — and in the aboriginal dialects of the Malay Peninsula as contained in Mr. Otto Blagden's paper on the *Early Indo-Chinese Influence in the Malay Peninsula*.

b. — Elements of Uncertainty in the Comparison.

In making the comparison, the elements of uncertainty are these. In Nicobarese a root is nowadays surrounded and obscured by a long growth of affixes (prefixes, infixes, and suffixes) attached by agglutination, phonic change of form, inflexion and duplication, the effect of the affixes being often to induce phonic change in the root itself. So patience and a knowledge of the affixes and their effect is necessary to separate the root correctly from its surroundings. In the Far Eastern words treated by Mr. Blagden there is the uncertain element of misapprehension in the original reporters. However, Mr. Blagden put his words together with great care and personal knowledge, and my specimens are based on the exceedingly accurate reporting of Mr. Man: so that results may be looked on to be as accurate as is possible in the present stage of the enquiry.

I.

Table of Comparative Roots and Words Relating to the Human Sexes.

ENGLISH.	NICOBARESE.	MALAYAN ABORIGINES.	INDO-CHINESE.
father	tâ (man), otā (male)	ita	ta (grandf.)
	pâ, pô, pai, ap (woman)		
	ak (man), ku, ika (man)	iku, ikun	kunh, kuñ, konh
	kân (woman), kôñ, kôññ		
	(male)		
child	dòin		
	chīa		
	kōan, kūan, kōat	k'non, kenod	kon
	ken-yū		
son	(yu, male and female)		
	kôññ, kân (daughter)	kon	ken

ENGLISH.	NICOBARESE.	MALAYAN ABORIGINES.	INDO-CHINESE.
eat	shâ	chi, cha, cha', chioh ehacha, inchî, inchih nacha, nachî	cha, chha, si
	kâ, kô ña, ngâ, ngô pūah, hām		
sleep	teak, tiak	teik, tiok tag, taig jetek, jettik, ietek letik	theak, tep dek takla
	ngā, ngōi harrôh		
stand	shôk, shiak, kēag chôl, ô	jög	chho
cry	chīm, chīam puin, hēa	j'm	jom

c. — Nicobarese Radically an Indo-Chinese Language.

Now, the Nicobarese have been on the same ground for at least 2000 years, and they have a tradition of migration from the Pegu-Tenasserim Coast. They have been quite isolated from the coast people, except for trade, for all that period. Their language has been affected by outside influences almost entirely only in trade directions, and then not to a great degree. It has been subjected to internal change to a certain degree by the effects of tabu. Yet we find roots in the language, of the kind that remain unchanged in all speech, to be apparently beyond question identical with those that have remained unchanged in the dialects of the wild tribes of the Malay Peninsula; these very roots owe their existence among the wild tribes to the effect on them of the influence of the Indo-Chinese Languages, civilised and uncivilised.

Considering, then, the long isolation of the Nicobarese, it is a fair inference that these islanders probably preserve a form of the general Indo-Chinese speech that is truer to its original forms than that of any existing people on the Continent. We may, therefore, find in the Nicobarese speech the real foundation on which to build up the philology of the whole Indo-Chinese Group of Languages. In this view the Nicobarese dialects are of great scientific value and well worth a thorough investigation.

APPENDIX A.

Nicobarese Reckoning.

a. — System.

Like most half-civilised people the Nicobarese have evolved an elaborate and clumsy method of enumeration, in their case [as in that of the Kafirs of Kafirstan whose *hazār* (1,000) = 20×20 or 400] based on tallying by the score. And in order to project oneself into their minds and to grasp numbers as they present themselves to the Nicobarese, one has to set aside preconceived ideas on the subject dependent on the European decimal notation. The old English tally by the dozen and the gross (which still survives commercially mixed up in the higher figures with the general decimal system) for small articles made and sold in very large quantities, forms an almost exact parallel.

The Nicobarese have not much use for large numbers, except for their currency and export article of commerce, the cocoanut, and hence they have, except the Shom Peñ, evolved two concurrent systems of enumeration, viz., one for ordinary objects, and one for cocoanuts.

In applying terms for numbers to objects and things they use special **numeral co-efficients**, as do all the Far Eastern races, the explanation of which will be found, *ante*, II (Grammar), *o* (Numeral co-efficients).

b.—The Numerals.

For ordinary objects the Nicobarese enumerate by a curiously isolated set of terms up to half a score (ten) by separate words — thus in all the dialects:—

Comparative Table of Numerals.

CAR NICOBAR.	CHOWRA.	TERESSA AND BOMPOKA.	CENTRAL GROUP.	SOUTHERN GROUP.	SHOM PEŃ.
1. kahōk (heng ⁴⁴)	hēang	hēang	hēang	heg	heng
2. neāt	ān	ān	ān	ān	āu
3. lūe	lūe	lūe	lōe, lūe	lūe	luge
4. fān	foñ	foñ	fōan	fōat	fuat
5. tanī	tanī	tanī	tanai	tanī	tain ⁴⁵
6. tafūal	tafūal	tafūa	tafūal	takōal	lagāu
7. sāt	ishāt	isseāt	issāt	ishāt	ain
8. hāo-hare	enfān	enfoñ	enfōan ⁴⁶	enfōan	towe
9. maichūa-tare	kalafān	rōe-hata	heāng-hata	hāch-hata	lungi
10. sam	shòm	shòm	shòm	shab	teya

After the half score and up to nineteen the enumeration is ten — one and so on for all the dialects, except Car Nicobar where they count one — ten and so on, using then *sian* for *sam*. Among the Shom Peñ, the inland tribe, who have no export commerce, there are no such special systems of enumeration as the other people have, but in addition to direct reckoning they count by pairs, a point of some interest as will be seen hereafter. Thus *āu*, two, becomes *ta-āu*, a pair. Then 2 = *heng ta-āu*, one pair; 3 = *heng ta-āu heng*, one pair one; 4 = *āu ta-āu*, two pair, and so on. For numerals beyond ten the Shom Peñ have an expression for half-a-pair *mahāukod*, which again will be found later on to explain a point in the system of the other tribes, and count thus up to 19; *heng mahāukod teya*, one half-pair (and) ten = 11, and so on.

When approaching the first or any score, all the dialects use a plan, in common with many other people, of counting "more reach a score." *E. g.*, in the Central dialect *lōe tare tangla hēang momchīama*, 3 more reach one score = 17: *ān tare tangla fōan momchīama*, 2 more reach four score = 78.

A score in all the dialects is named as follows:—

CAR NICOBAR.	CHOWRA.	TERESSA AND BOMPOKA.	CENTRAL GROUP.	SOUTHERN GROUP.	SHOM PEŃ.
michāma ⁴⁷	noòng	momchīama	momchīama	pomchīama	} inai
anai ⁴⁸	tom	tom	inai	inai	

And after the score the Central and Southern Groups have a term for half-a-score (*dōktai*), just as the Shom Peñ have, as we have seen, one for half-a-pair. Thus in these two dialects 30 is respectively *hēang momchīama dōktai* and *heg-pomchīama-dōktai* one score (and) half-a-score.

Between the scores the numerals otherwise run as above explained — "one score one" and so on.

⁴⁴ For cocoanuts and money.

⁴⁵ *tī*, *tai*, hand: then with infix *an*, *t-an-ī*, *t-an-ai* five; and with suffix *ā*, *tai-ā*, five.

⁴⁶ *ān*, two; *fōan*, *foñ*, four; then *en-fōan*, *en-foñ*, eight.

⁴⁷ Of general objects.

⁴⁸ Of cocoanuts and money.

The large figures 100 and so on are merely 5, 10, 15, 19 scores up to 400, which is a **score-of-scores** in all the dialects, except Shom Peñ which says *heng-tēo*, i.e., one *tēo*, or score-of-scores, another point of importance in reckoning, as will be presently seen. For expressing score-of-scores the other dialects use the alternative term for the first score, also a point of interest later on, e. g., in Central dialect *hēung inai momohiama*, one score (of) scores.

The numeral we call 500 all the Nicobarese dialects call "one score (of scores and) five scores," except Shom Peñ which says "one-*tēo* (score of scores) five (scores)." So 600 is in the Central and Southern dialects "one score (and a) half (score of) scores": in Shom Peñ it is "one *tēo* (and) ten score": in Teressa it is "a score (and) ten (of) scores": in Chowra and Car Nicobar it is "a score (and) five pairs (of) scores." So also 700 in the Central and Southern dialects is "one score (and) half (score and) five (of) scores": in all the rest it is one score (and) fifteen scores." Beyond 600 the Shom Peñ and beyond 700 the other dialects, except Car Nicobar, do not ordinarily reckon. For 1,000 the Car Nicobarese say "two score (and) five pairs (of) scores": for 2,000 they say "five score scores." Beyond 2,000 they do not ordinarily have to reckon.

c. — Reckoning by Tally.

We are now in a position to reckon according to the Nicobarese fashion, supposing ourselves to tally as we go along.

Tally by the Score (1 to 20).

(All dialects) one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, ten.

(All dialects but Shom Peñ and Car Nicobar) ten-one, ten-two, ten-three, ten-four, ten-five, ten-six, ten-seven, ten-eight, ten-nine, or, sometimes, for 17, three-more-one-score, for 18, two-more-one-score, for 19, one-more-one-score. Tally.

(All dialects but Central and Southern) (20 to 40) score-one, score-two . . . one-more-two-score, two score. Tally.

Tally by Score of Scores (20 to 400).

(All dialects but Shom Peñ) one-score, two-score, three-score . . . one-more-one-score (of) scores, one-score (of) scores. Tally.

Further Tally by Score of Scores (500-700-2,000).

All dialects except Shom Peñ by varying expressions, meaning, one-score (and) five (of) scores, one-score (and) ten (of) scores, one-score and fifteen (of) scores . . . two score (and) five (of) scores . . . five score scores.

The Shom Peñ stop tallying altogether at 600: and the others, the Car Nicobarese excepted, at 700, and the Car Nicobarese themselves at 2,000, except for cocoanuts, for which there is a separate system.

Tally is usually kept by nicks with the thumb-nail on strips of cane or bamboo, and in Car Nicobar by notches cut in sets of five on a stick. Each nick or notch represents a score of whatever is being enumerated.

d. — Reckoning by the Score.

As regards the exceptions above noted. For tally up to a score, beyond ten, the Car Nicobarese say "one-ten" and so on, to nineteen. For even numbers the Shom Peñ use besides direct numerals, "one-pair, two-pair," etc.: and for odd numbers "one-pair-one," and so on: and beyond ten to nineteen they say "one half-pair (and) ten" and so on.

For tally beyond a score the Central and Southern people use a term, *dòhtai*, for "half-score" in the same way as the Shom Peñ use "half-pair." This word is of great interest, as it is a lost stem, meaning "(waning to) half," which can be shown to be the case by the term for

5,000 pairs in Car Nicobarese, *dròngte lálk*, half *lálk*, i.e., half 10,000 pairs. Here *lálk* is borrowed from the Far Eastern *laksa*, *lak*, 10,000 (one form of the Sanskrit *laksha*, just as *lálk* for 100,000 is another in modern India), and *dròngte* (*dòktai*) is not otherwise found in Car Nicobarese. This term *dròngte* is applied also to the "half (waned) moon" while *drònga* means "waning."

It will have been noticed that there are alternative terms for "score"; one *olò* one, as shown by the Shom Peù form, and one newer: the newer term being now used for "score" and the old one to tell or multiply it by the score. In going into the cocoanut-counting system these alternative terms will be found put to yet another use. Again, the Shom Peù have a special term for score-of-scores, *təo*: and can tally up to large figures by scores: one score, two scores, three scores, one more one *təo*, one *təo*. This idea, too, will be found to be of value when going into the system of counting cocoanuts.

Another subversion of inter-island custom is to be noticed in Car Nicobar, where one is ordinarily *kahòk*, but for cocoanuts one is the universal *heng*.

Beyond the score-of-scores (400) the Nicobarese have so seldom to enumerate ordinary objects that their nomenclature for the numerals then becomes, though clear, uncertain, as will be seen from the different method by which the various islanders arrive at the same sum. At the same time the fact that the Shom Peù stop at 600, the others, except the Car Nicobarese, at 700, and the Car Nicobarese themselves at 2,000, is not due to want of intelligence, but to want of practical use: just as we stop practically at a million and most people are uncertain as to whether a billion is 10 or 100 or 1,000 or even a million millions, and as beyond the billion the terms become academic.

e. — The Small Numbers.

As regards the smaller simple numbers, the terms for them have got quite away from any idea now of connection with the hand or multiplication of each other, though both can be seen after examination to be present. The word for hand, *tai*, in Nicobarese is a "lost root" and now only exists for parts of the hand, thus — *ok-tai*, back (of the) hand; *oai-tai* (in-hand) palm; *kane-tai* (stick-hand) and even *tai*, finger. So *tanai* is certainly a derivative of *tai*, formed with the differentiating infix *an*, thus — *tai*, hand, fingers, *t-an-ai*, five. Next we find clear roots *d* (*àu*, *añ*, *dh*) two and *fū* (*kó*) pair: whence in various forms, *dh*, two; *fōan*, four (two pair); *en-fōan*, eight (twice two-pair). So in Shom Peù three, six and nine (*luge*, *lagàu*, *lungi*) are clearly the inflected remains of some such connected multiples, and in the other dialects "six" is three pair; *lue*, three, (*ta*)-*fū-al*, six, a pair of three (*ta* is a common radical prefix in the language). *Tafūal* (*tafūal*, *takòal*, *tahòl*), which in that case is really a numerical coefficient, also means a pair in all the dialects except Shom Peù, and is built up etymologically in the same way as the homonym for six quite legitimately, thus — *ta-fū-a*, prefix-root-suffix; while we see the root again in Shom Peù in the (probably mixed) compound term for "half-a-pair" *ma-haù-kod* (?) two-pair. The term *heñg-hata* for nine is an elliptical phrase *heñg hata* (*shòm*), one less (ten), as will be seen later on.

f. — Commercial Reckoning.

Turning now to the second system—the Nicobarese method of reckoning cocoanuts for commerce and currency, and from cocoanuts money, which they do not possess themselves, carries them into large figures. It is still a tally system, adopted for commercial purposes by all except the Shom Peù, from the system of tallying by the score.

Cocoanuts as currency are seldom used in small quantities and the Nicobarese get quickly to the score by counting the nuts in pairs—thus, one, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine pairs, one score. Tally.

The term used for "score" in this case is *inai* (*tom*), the alternative already noted, and not *momchiama* (*pomehtama*, *michāma*, *noṅg*) as in the case of ordinary articles, *momchiama* being adopted, *quā* cocoanuts, for "score-of-scores."

It must be remembered that cocoanuts, except when stated in scores or multiples of scores, are always stated in pairs (*tafua*, *tajūal*, *tahāal*), the term for which is omitted in reckoning, unless it is necessary to express it for very small quantities, or in the case of odd numbers, when 3 becomes "one-pair-one, *hēang-la jūal-hēang*," and so on.

In tallying cocoanuts by the score, the various islands have set up different standards of tally, which are complicated and in many cases in alternative use. The number of standards in fact indicates the trade, where trade is brisker, the standards are most numerous. It may be noted that in counting cocoanuts "ten pair" may be substituted for "one score" in the lower tally everywhere, except in Chowra, where "one score" is used without an alternative.

g. — Commercial Tally by the Score.

It is now necessary to use some abbreviations — C. = Central, S. = Southern, T. = Teressa, C. N. = Car Nicobar, and Ch. = Chowra.

The least developed method of tallying by the score is in C. and S., where there are only two standards, *inai* score (20) and *momchiama* score-of-scores (400). There the counting by the score is — one, two, three . . . score, one *momchiama* (score-of-scores); then one two, three . . . up to any number of *momchiama*. This method is very awkward in the higher figures, thus—

500	1	<i>momchiama</i>	5 (score)	[400 + 5 (20)]
600	1	"	and-a-half (<i>dōktat</i>)	(400 + 200)
700	1	"	and-a-half 5 (score)	[400 + 200 + 5 (20)]
1,000	2	"	and-a-half	[(2 × 400) + 200]
3,000	7	"	and-a-half	[(7 × 400) + 200]
10,000	1	score 5	<i>momchiama</i>	[(20 + 5) × 400]
20,000	2	"	5 pair <i>momchiama</i>	[(40 + 5 [2] × 400)]
100,000	10	"	5 <i>momchiama</i>	[10 × (20 + 5) × 400]
200,000	1	"	5 (of) score (of) <i>momchiama</i>	[(20 + 5) × 20 × 400]

Car Nicobar adopts the score and score-of-scores (*inai-momchiama*) standard, but only alternatively and only as far as the higher of the two (400). T. and Ch. will talk about 11, etc., score, but as far as 15 score only.

h. — Standards of Ten and One Hundred Score.

All these three islands, Car Nicobar, Teressa, and Chowra, have a third standard of ten score (200), which is in these dialects called

C. N.	T.	Ch.
'òng ⁴⁹	nòng	lâ

Then alternatively Ch. and C. N. will reckon by the *lâ* or 'òng up to 15 score, and C. N. alternatively up to 20 score. Beyond the *nòng*, T. always reckons by the *nòng* thus⁵⁰ :—

200	1	'òng (nòng, lâ)
400	2	'òng (nòng, lâ)
500	2	'òng (nòng, lâ), 5 score (tom),

The standard of ten score (200) is carried by all the three islands C. N., T., Ch., up to 2,000, i. e., 10 'òng (*nòng, lâ*), when alternatively a new standard of hundred scores commences in C. N. called *kaiñe*, in T. and Ch., *mamila*. Thus—

2,000	1	<i>kaiñe</i> (<i>mamila</i>)
3,000	1	<i>kaiñe</i> (<i>mamila</i>), 5 òng (<i>nòng, lâ</i>).

⁴⁹ Inflectionally (1) *nòng*, (2) *tòng*, (3) *yòng*, (10) *mòng* according to the terminal of the previous numeral.

⁵⁰ Except in case of 300 which is 15 score.

i. — The Higher Numbers.

After this the islands break off on their own lines. Thus T. carries on the standard of ten score (*mamila*) for all the higher figures: 200,000 being in that dialect simply 5 score *mamila* ($5 \times 20 \times 2,000$). C. N. and Ch. do so also as far as 100,000, which is in all the three dialects 2 score 5 pairs *mamila* (*kaiñe*) or $[2 \times 20 + 5 (2)] \times 2,000$; but Ch. alternatively commences a new standard at two *mamila* or two hundred score (4,000) called *metñēṭchya* and carries that on to all figures. Thus for Ch. —

20,000	is alternatively 5 <i>metñēṭchya</i> ($5 \times 4,000$)
100,000	is 1 score 5 <i>metñēṭchya</i> $[(20 + 5) \times 4,000]$
200,000	is 2 score 10 <i>metñēṭchya</i> $[(40 + 10) \times 4,000]$

At 10 *kaiñe* ($10 \times 2,000 = 20,000$) C. N. commences a new alternative standard, *lāk* (borrowed from the Malay and Far Eastern *laksa* 10,000⁵¹), meaning 10,000 pairs (= 20,000) cocoanuts. This is carried on to all the high figures. Thus—

20,000	is 1 <i>lāk</i>
100,000	is 5 <i>lāk</i>
200,000	is 10 <i>lāk</i>

By an interesting expression C. N. says *drōngte lāk*, half *lāk*, for 10,000. This proves that *dòktai*, “and-a-half” (scores) of C. and S. really contains a lost root for “half.” Also it is to be noticed that when C. and S. get into large figures they have borrowed the T. Ch. alternative term for score. Thus—

200,000 in C. and S. is *hēang inai tanai tom momchāma*, one score (and) five score (of) score-of-scores ($20 + 5 \times 20 \times 20 \times 20$).

j. — Coconut Reckoning Standards.

The following table will show briefly the standards for reckoning cocoanuts:—

I.	pair	...	all islands	1	tafūa (tafūal, takōal, tahòl)	...	2
II.	10 pairs or score	...	all islands	1	inai (tom)	...	20
III.	10 score	...	Ch. T., C. N.	1	lā (nòng, 'òng)	...	200
IV.	score of scores	...	C., S., C. N.	1	momchāma (pomchīāma, michāma)	...	400
V.	10 ten-scores	...	Ch., T., C. N.	1	mamīla (kaiñe)	...	2,000
VI.	score of ten-scores	...	Ch.	1	metñēṭchya	...	4,000
VII.	10,000 pairs	...	C. N.	1	lāk (borrowed trade term)	...	20,000

C. N. and Ch. have thus six standards and Car Nicobar has the highest: T. has four standards: C. and S. have three. These standards exactly indicate the relative trading opportunity of the various islanders.

The Shom Peñ have no trade, but they can easily reckon up to 80,000, thus *teya inai tēo* 10 score (of) *tēo* $[(10 \times 20) \times 400 = 80,000]$. They have three standards — I, pair, 1 *ta-ūu*, 2: II, score, 1 *inai*, 20: III, score of scores, 1 *tēo* 400. They do not, in fact, fall behind the other islanders in the capacity for grasping and reckoning in abstract figures.

⁵¹ Not from the Indian *lākṣ* 100,000. Both *laksa* (10,000) and *lākṣ* (100,000) are from the same root as the Sanskrit *lakṣa*.

k. — Scales for Reckoning Coconuts.

For European trade the table of scales would be as follows :—

I.

For all islands.

10 tafūa or takôal or tahòl (pair) make 1 inai or tom (score), (20)

II.

C., S., C. N.

10 tafūal or tahòl make 1 inai (20)
20 inai „ 1 momchiamā or michāma (400)

III.

Ch., T., C. N.

10 tafūal or takôal or tahòl (pair) make 1 inai or tom (score), (20)
10 inai or tom (score) „ 1 lâ, nòng, or 'òng (200)
10 lâ, nòng, or 'òng „ 1 mamīla (kaiñe) (2,000)

IV.

Ch.

10 takôal make 1 tom (20)
10 tom „ 1 lâ (200)
10 lâ „ 1 mamīla (2,000)
2 mamīla „ 1 metñēṭchya (4,000)

V.

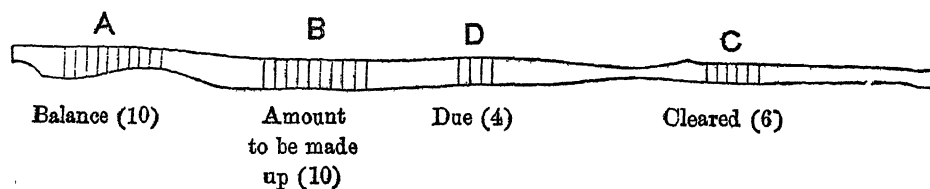
C. N.

10 tahòl make 1 inai (20)
10 inai „ 1 'òng (200)
10 'òng „ 1 kaiñe (2,000)
10 kaiñe „ 1 lâk (20,000)

One can see, when put in this way, which is, of course, distinctly not Nicobarese, where trade has sharpened wits.

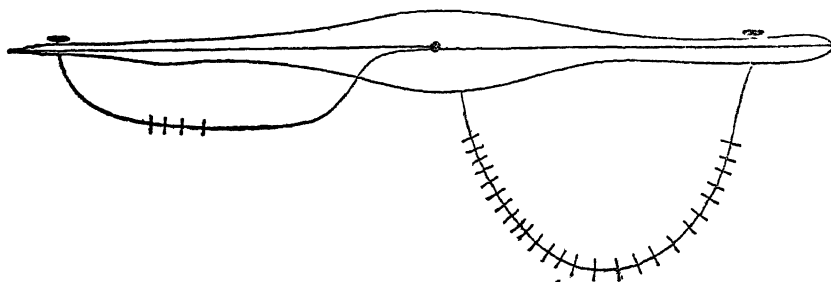
1. — Tallies.

In a Car Nicobar tally stick, *kenrāta-kòk*, in my possession, unfortunately already dry-rotted in the notches, which are thus lost for the future, a running account of coconuts with a trader who has advanced rice for coconuts, is shown. The balance due on the rice was 2,000 coconuts, *i. e.*, 10 'òng or 1 kaiñe denoted by the 10 notches at A. The 10 notches at B represent the total sum 10 'òng to be made up. The 6 notches at C denote that the owner has cleared 6 'òng (1,200, the 4 notches at D that 4 'òng (800) are still due.

Kenrāta-Kòk.

I have another tally of beads on a string from Car Nicobar (*kenrāta-ngīji*) which shows that 26 *michāma* ($400 \times 26 = 10,400$) of cocoanuts are due out of a sum and that 4 *michāma* (1,600) have been paid. The original debt was therefore 30 *michāma*, i.e., 12,000 cocoanuts, or as a Car Nicobarese would say, 6 *kaiñe* or *dròngtē lāk heng kaiñe* [half *lāk* (and) one *kaiñe*].

Kenrāta-ngīji.



APPENDIX B.

a. — Reckoning of the Days of the Months.

Each "moon" is divided into phases and divisions in all the islands on the same system, except Car Nicobar, which has a differing one. There is for descriptive purposes a waxing and a waning moon; dividing the "moon" into halves. There are also a descriptive First Phase (*Hēang Lā*, one piece): Full Moon (whole or swollen moon): Last Phase (*Kanēul*, Boar's tusk). For reckoning, the month is divided into 30 days and four phases — I (*she*), 1st to 10th (10 days); II (*yām*), 11th to 20th (10 days); III (*tailānga*) 21st to 25th (5 days); IV, 26th to 30th (5 days). In the fourth phase the days are not counted, but separately named.

In Car Nicobar the following descriptive phases are recognised:—(a) First Phase (*Kānel-hām*, Boar's tusk), 2nd day: Second Phase (*Tutlaal*), 8th day (First Quarter): Third Phase (*Chavī Chingēāt*), 14th day (Full Moon): Fourth Phase (*Dròngtē Chingēāt*), 22nd day (Last Quarter); and (b) Waxing moon, 1st to 10th (10 days): whole moon, 11th to 16th (6 days): waning moon, 17th to 26th (10 days): disappearing moon, 27th to 30th (4 days): total, 30 days. In Car Nicobar also the full moon, and the day before and the two days after, are all recognised by separate terms. For reckoning, the month is divided into 30 days and 3 phases: waxing moon, 1st to 16th (16 days): waning moon, 17th to 26th (10 days): disappearing moon, 27th to 30th (4 days): total, 30 days.

In reckoning the month the Car Nicobarese reckon straight through the waxing moon from 1 to 16 and simply say "*kāhōk chingēāt*, one moon . . . *tafūal sian chingēāt*, sixteen moon." They then go straight through the waning moon from 1 to 10 and say "*kāhōk drònga chingēāt*, one waning moon," and so on. Lastly they run through the disappearing moon from 1 to 4, "*kāhōk sālnōwa chingēāt*, one disappearing moon," etc. If intercalary days then ensue, they are all called *aiya āp-chingēāt*.

In the other islands the plan of counting the days is the same, but the method differs and is more complicated. They count 1 to 10 (*she* moon); thus "*hēang she kāhē*, one *she* moon . . . *shòm she kāhē*, ten *she* moon." Then 1 to 9 (*yām*, whole); thus "*hēang yām kāhē*, one *yām* moon . . . *hēang hata yām kāhē*, nine *yām* moon." But the 20th is "*hēang*

momchiana yām kāhē, one score *yām* moon," to finish the reckoning, because it now takes on a new phase. The 21st to 25th are reckoned backwards thus—

21st	enfōan	tatlānga	8	<i>tatlānga</i> .
22nd	issât	"	7	
23rd	tafūal	"	6	
24th	tanai	"	5	
25th	fōan	"	4	

After this they reckon by separate names :

26th	ongāwa
27th	hinai
28th	hinlain
29th	manūt
30th	kanat

Any following intercalary days are all called *kanat*.

b. — Explanation of Terms for Numerals.

There is a term for the 19th in the Central Group, which explains the curious form *heāng-hata* for nine. The ordinary term for the 19th day is *heāng-hata yām kāhē*, nine *yām* moon : but *shòm heāng hata tom yām*, which is obviously "ten one less score *yām*," is also used, because the 20th is *hēang momchiana yām kāhē*, one score *yām* moon. *Hat* means "not" and *hata* here is clearly "less" and so *heāng-hata*, nine, is an elliptic phrase for *hēang hata shòm*, one less ten.

Another pair of expressions is *drōnga chingeit*, waning moon, and *drōngte chingeūt*, half moon, which explains *drōngte lāk*, half *lak* (20,000), and *dōktai* "and-a-half (score)." Here is a "lost root" *drōng*, *dōk*, "lessen," which when combined with (*te*, *ta*) *tai* "lost root" for "hand," means "the lessened hand" or "half."

The only other term which might be disputed is *chamānga chingeūt*, ten moon, the word for ten in Car Nicobar being *sam*, but it is quite a legitimate extension for differentiation by infix and suffix, thus; *ch-am-āng-a* (for *s-am-ām-a*), or according to root forms, *chang* for *sam*.

c. — Calendar Tallies.

In a Car Nicobar Calendar (*kenrāta*) in my possession the days are notched as follows to indicate a monsoon. It is in the form of a sword-blade.

The first month	notches	31	days
The second	"	29	"
The third	"	26	"
The fourth	"	28	"
The fifth	"	26	"
The sixth	"	29	"
The seventh	"	28	"

197 days

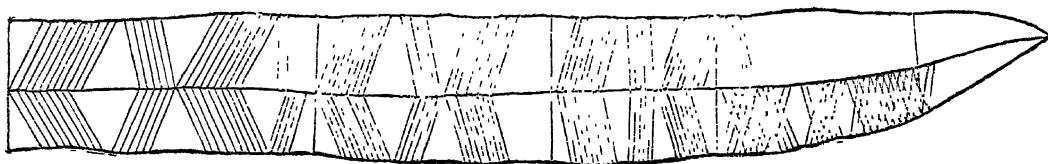
or well over half the year, which would require readjustment during the next monsoon.

It will be observed that the notches are meant to go 10, 6, 10, 4=30.

That is, in this *kenrāta* the Car Nicobarese four phase system is taken in calendaring the months, *i. e.*, the months are divided into waxing, full, waning, and disappearing moon.

When the notches fill one side of the *kenrāta*, they commence on the other, and are thus able to keep tally of time for a short while.

Car Nicobar Calendar.
(*Kenrāta*.)



Note.

Mr. de Rœpstorff's Calendar.

In Mr. de Rœpstorff's posthumous *Dictionary of the Nancoury (Central) Dialect*, of 1884, is given a complete and most interesting Calendar, found among his papers, for the year 1883 day by day, but unfortunately there is something wrong about it. He has given *Danāh-kapā* and *Kabā-chuij* as two separate solar months, whereas they are duplicate names for the closing month of the N.-E. Monsoon, and thus gives 13 and not 12 solar months to the year. He has also got the months *Channi* and *Hammua* in the reverse order. Further, his months work out thus for the solar year, giving an intercalary day each to (7) *Hammua* (May-June) and (9) *Manākngapoah* (August-September).

Month	1.	9th January	to	7th February	30 days.
"	2.	8th February	to	8th March	29 "
"	3.	9th March	to	6th April	29 "
"	4.	7th April	to	6th May	30 "
"	5.	7th May	to	5th June	29 "
"	6.	6th June	to	3rd July	29 "
"	7.	4th July	to	3rd August	31 "
"	8.	4th August	to	31st August	28 "
"	9.	1st September	to	1st October	31 "
"	10.	2nd October	to	30th October	29 "
"	11.	31st October	to	29th November	30 "
"	12.	30th November	to	28th December	29 "
"	13.	29th December	to	8th January	11 "

365 days

This would have resulted in the Nicobarese full year of two monsoons being completed in 383 days, and this reckoning would have brought about a muddle in the ensuing year, 1884, which does not as matter of fact occur.

It is to be observed that the S.-W. Monsoon was taken in that year as commencing on 7th May and the N.-W. on 1st November, so that the S.-W. Monsoon half year lasted 177 days and the N.-W. about 188.

It is to be noted also that in Mr. de Rœpstorff's calendar the *She* days are 10, the *Yām* days 10, and the *Tatlānga* days 5 in each month, while the odd dark nights run thus: for 1 month none, for 1 month 3, for 6 months 4, for 3 months 5, for 2 months 6 in the month.

A REPORT ON THE PANJAB HILL TRIBES.

From the Native point of view.

BY MIAN DURGA SINGH.

*(Communicated by H. A. Rose.)**(Concluded from page 315.)*

LXXVIII. — Social Customs.

263. Methods of salutation among different tribes are : —

(1) Brāhmins salute one another, as *pairī pōnd*; *namaskār*. They salute Rājputs with *asīrbād*, *sri bachan*, *Rājā kō sri Raghu Nāth sahāi* (God be with the Rāja). Other tribes, except the low castes, with *kalyān* or *asīrbād*. Low tribes with "May you long live or flourish."

(2) Rājputs say to the Brāhmins, *matthā tēknā*, *pālag*, *pairī pōnd* (I fall at your feet); to others, except low castes, *Rām Rām*, and to low castes, "May you long live or flourish."

(3) Bōhrās, Baniās, Bhābrās, Sūds, Kshatriyās, say *Rām Rām* to one another, or *bandagī* or *matthā tēknā* or *pairī pōnd*; to Brāhmins, *pālag*, *pāirī pōnd*, or *matthā tēknā*; to Rājputs, *mahārāj jaidēd* or *jaidēd mahārāj* or *jaidēd*.

(4) Kanaits, goldsmiths, Jats, barbers, gardeners, milkmen, potters, masons, say *Rām Rām*, *dhāl*, *bandagī* and *jai Sītā Rām*; to Bōhrās, as above, *bandagī* or *Rām Rām*; to Rājputs, *mahārāj jaidēd* or *jaidēd* or *dhāl*.

(5) Washermen, dye-sinkers, carpenters, smiths, Thathērās, Dhagīs, Chanāls, Kōlīs, Rēhṛs, sweepers, cobblers, boatmen, weavers, say to one another, *Rām Rām* or *dhāl*; *dhāl* or *pairī pōnd* to Kanaits; *dhāl* or *pairī pōnd* to Bōhrās, etc.; *mahārāj jaidēd* or *jaidēd*, or *jai*, to Rājputs; and *pairī pōnd* or *matthā tēknā* to Brāhmins.

(6) The women of Brāhmins, Rājputs and Bōhrās, etc., say *matthā tēknā* or *pairī pōnd* to one another. The women of Kanaits, etc., say *dhāl* or *sūi* to one another, and those of low castes say *dhāl* to one another.

(7) The above-mentioned tribes say *namō Nārāin* (reverence be to God) to the Sanyāsi mendicants or make *dandāvat* (going round the person) to them, who in answer say *Nārāin*. Bairāgīs are addressed with *jai mahārāj dandaut*, who reply *jai Rāmji* or *jai Sītā Rāmji*. *Adēs* is said to a Jogī, who replies *Ad purush* (the First Cause). *Adāsīs* are made a *dandaut* and they reply *chiranjiv* (long live).

264. Modes of salutation by relatives : —

(1) Brāhmins. A son, son-in-law, nephew, etc., says *matthā tēknā* and *pairī bandan*, to a father, mother, maternal uncle and wife, maternal grandfather and grandmother, father-in-law and mother-in-law. Women say *pairī bandan* to their relatives. The elders in reply say *chiranjiv* to a man, and *suhāgan sanpati* (may your husband live long) to a woman.

(2) Rājputs, Bhābrās, Baniās, etc. To the above-mentioned relations, if males, they say *jaidēd* or *dhāl*, and if females, *pairī pōnd* or *matthā tēknā*. The elders, in reply, say *chiranjiv* to a man, and *suhāgan sanpati* to a woman.

(3) Kanaits. Younger males say *dhāl*, *Rām Rām* or *bandagī* to an elder relation, who in reply says "long live" or "flourish" *chiranjiv*. Women say *sūi*, and receive in reply *sadd*, *suhāgan*.

(4) Low castes. Both males and females, if the younger say *dhāl* to elders, who in reply say "be happy," or *dhāl*.

(5) Rājās or Rānās. Brāhmins say to a Rājā or Rānā *asīrbād*, *sri Gōpāl sahāi* or *sri Raghunāth sahāi* (may God help you). Other tribes say *jaidēd* to them. They reply *pālag* to Brāhmins and *Rām Rām* to others, *jai* to Rājputs and "be happy" to low persons.

(6) Miâns (Râjâ's younger sons). — Brâhmans say to a Miân *asîrbâd* or *sîrî bachan*; others say *jai*, *jaidêâ*, or *dhâl*. They reply *pâlag* or *matthâ tēknû* to a Brâhman; *Râm Râm*, *jai*, *jaidêâ* or *dhâl* to the Râjpûts; *Râm Râm* to others, and "be happy" to low persons.

(7) Baniâs. — They say *bandagî* and *Râm Râm* to merchants. Brâhmans say *asîrbâd* or *sîrî bachan* to them. Low persons say to them *dhâl* or *pairî pônâ*.

(8) Nêgis, Mehtâs, Wazîrs, Mukhiâs, etc., say *bandagî* or *salâm* or *Râm Râm*.

(9) If a man belongs to any other tribe, then he is saluted with the words fixed for his tribe.

265. The methods of greeting among the members of a family, friends, relations, and strangers are given below : —

(1) **Members of a family.** — The younger places his head on the feet of the elder, and then says *jaidêâ*, *dhâl*, *bandagî*, or *Râm Râm*, according to the fixed custom, with both the hands brought together. The elder places his hand on the back of the younger, accepts the salutation asks after his health, and places him near himself with a great show of love.

(2) **Friends.** — Friends shake hands. The younger in age or rank says *bandagî*, *jaidêâ*, *dhâl* or *Râm Râm*, after which the elder takes hold of the hand of the younger, accepts the salutation, asks after his health, and gives him a seat near himself.

(3) **Relations.** — The younger honours the elder, and puts his head on the feet of the latter. If the relation be that of an equal position, or if the introduction be effected through a near relative, then after *pairî bandnâ* they embrace each other, or say *dhâl bandagî*, *jai*, *jaidêâ*, etc., to each other. The younger leaves his seat and offers it to the elder, and himself sits lower on the floor.

(4) **Strangers.** — Men prepare good food for their guests according to their capacity. If a guest comes to the house of a Chief, Râjâ, or Nawâb, then in addition to the feast he gets presents, and even money, in proportion to the rank of the guest and host. Chiefs generally give presents to their neighbours and relations.

266. There are no special rules for salutation, greeting or address.

267. There is no particular rule about treatment of guests, women, old men, and invalids.

268. Relations and neighbours entertain one another mutually.

269. No special language is used. The guests are politely spoken to. The host, of whatever rank or capacity, will treat the guest respectfully. If the guest be one belonging to the family of the host's wife, then he is ridiculed. Brothers-in-law call each other names and mimic one another. Their servants also will behave in the same way.

270. The brothers-in-law or men of their respective families make jokes with each other, and also abuse each other through mother, or daughter, or sister. They call one another a thief, a rogue, a cobbler, a shoemaker, sweeper, etc. But no one may assail the religion of another.

LXXIX. — Social Intercourse.

271. Customs of social intercourse among Kanaitis, goldsmiths, barber, potters, Jâts, gardeners, and masons : —

(a) The Brâhmans can eat flour, rice or fried grain from the hands of the above-named clans. They have no scruple to use *pârî*, *kachêrî*, and everything fried in oil or *ghî* that has been touched by the latter.

(b) The high castes do not use the food cooked only in water (not fried in oil, etc.) by these sects, but low castes do not observe such restrictions.

(c) Water touched by them is drunk by everybody.

(d) The people do not smoke the same pipe with them.

The high castes do not eat food touched by low castes, such as Kôlis, shepherds, cobblers, etc., nor do the former drink water touched by the latter, nor do they smoke the same pipe with them. The low castes can eat food prepared by anybody. But every tribe, even among themselves, have some restrictions concerning diet.

272. Members of all tribes can eat the food, whether fried or unfried, prepared by a Brâhman, but they do not smoke pipes together. Every tribe — nay, even every sub-division — has its own pipe. The same rule holds in the case of fried food. The people do not take fried food with persons not of their own blood, and this custom holds particularly among Brâhmanas, Râjpûts, and Baniâs.

LXXX. — Clothing and Ornaments.

273. (1) **Garments** generally differ in fashion, and a distinction between the Hindus and Muhammadans can be made so that the Hindus keep their buttons to the right, while the Muhammadans keep them to the left. Hindus do not use black cloth, except for trousers, but the Muhammadans use it freely. And the Hindus do not use blue cloth, while Muhammadans do. The Hindus do not shave their heads, while Muhammadans shave their heads clear. The Muhammadans cook big cakes and Hindus small ones.

The names of men's garments are : — *Chôbaghlâ, kurtâ, kamîz* (shirt), *sadrî* (vest), *pâjâmâ* (drawers or trousers), *suthan, salâr, gâchî, tôpi* (cap), *futûhî, kôti* (coat), *chôgâ, châdar* (blanket or sheet), *doshlâ* (shawl), turban, *kamarband* (belt).⁹

The names of women's garments are : — *Dhâtî, gâchî, dôrd, chôltî, tamâd, suthan, lôiyâ, lôôtâ, ghôndî, chadar* (blanket), *kurtâ sadrî* (vest), *kamîz* (shirt), *choltâ* (coat), *chabaghilâ* and *kamarband* (belt).

(2) The following are some of the **ornaments for women** : — *Karâ* (arm-rings) of gold and silver, *kangan* (arm-rings) of gold and silver, *ponchî, marêdru, chûrî* (arm-rings), *môndî, ârsî, dôrd, chandarmân, chak, kanbâlî, mongrê, sêdû, kanphul, tanôrê*, chains for *sêdûs* or *kanphuls* or *tanôrês, jhômak, nath* (nose-ring), *bulâk, bêsar, pîpal pattâ, lông, phâl* and *thûthî* (?), *kâch* and *chhâta, kanthî, jômldâ, chandarmani har, dasrî, dolrî, chaup kâlî, indarsênî har, kônvarû dôdd, tavîz, mâlâ, bâzûband, tôrd, paizeb, pêchâtî, chôkhûltî, gûnthrê, hanalî, jhanjâr*.

Ornaments for men are — *Zîga, chandarmân, gôkhrû, murkî, drôtu, bâli* or *kunbâl; kantha*, gold and silver; *kara*, gold or silver; *môndî*, gold or silver; *tavîz, mâlâ*, and *bâzûband*.

LXXXI. — Dancing and Singing.

274. The women of all the tribes, except those of the Brâhmanas and Râjpûts, can dance. They dance among men in their villages at night. The women of Brâhmanas and Râjpûts do not dance, except at marriages, when they also sing. The *tûris* (minstrels) are, by profession, dancers and singers.

LXXXII. — Table of Occupation.

No.	Name of Tribe.	Occupation.
1	Kshatriyas or Râjpûts	Military service.
2	Brâhmanas	Teachers of the <i>Vêdas</i> and Scriptures; receivers of gifts and alms.
3	Sûds	Merchants and agriculturists.
4	Baniâs	Merchants.
5	Bôhrâs	Do.
6	Kanaitas	Agriculturists; servants of Brâhmanas and Râjpûts.

⁹ [It is to be observed that one Portuguese word *kanâz* and one English word *koç* occur in these lists. — ED.]

No	Name of Tribe.	Occupation.
7	Khatriis	Like Rājputis; merchants and servants.
8	Kayasths	Clerks and merchants.
9	Goldsmiths	Makers of gold or silver ornaments.
10	Barbers	Shaving.
11	Potters	Make earthenware vessels; keep beasts of burden, such as mules, camels, etc.
12	Washermen	Washing of clothes.
13	Chhimbās	Dyeing and washing of clothes.
14	Carpenters	Build houses; carve wood and sculpture; and do all kinds of work in wood and stone.
15	Blacksmiths	Make instruments and vessels of iron.
16	Thathêrâ or Bharêrâ	Make instruments and vessels of brass, copper, and spelter.
17	Tûris, Dhâkis, and Dhâdis	Play upon instruments, sing and dance.
18	Kôlis or Dums	Agriculturists and menials to others.
19	Rêhrs or Nagâlûs	Do. and graze the farmers' cattle; shepherds.
20	Sweepers	Do. do. do.
21	Cobblers and shoemakers	Do. make shoes and other things of leather.
22	Chanâls	Do. and make bows and arrows.
23	Boatmen	Do. and help people in crossing rivers.
24	Weavers	Do. weave woollen cloth.
25	Bairâgis	Beggars.
26	Sanyâsis	Do.
27	Udâsis	Do.
28	Jôgis	Do.

LXXXIII. — Professions and Occupations.

275. The Brâhmanis, Rājputis, Kshatriyas, and Sûdis have adopted the profession of commerce and agriculture in modern times. The Brâhmanis and Rājputis are also given to private service. No tribe, except in the case of individuals, sticks to its original occupation.

276. Different tribes have different occupations. No tribe sticks to one occupation as a whole. People earn their livelihood by different pursuits. The women of Brâhmanis and Rājputis do no work, but make silk embroidery, sew clothes, knit socks, and so on.

277. No particular profession deserves mention.

278. There is nothing particular to say as to instruments.

279. The Tûris, Dhâkis, and Dhâdis allow their women to practise prostitution, whether they be maids or married, and live upon their earnings.

280. The change of religion is necessarily accompanied with change of profession. The convert adopts the calling of his new religion.

281. Persons changing their profession do not necessarily change the name of their tribe, nor is their connection with it slackened, nor does it pervert their religion or sect. However, if a person adopts a profession forbidden by either the Hindu or Muhammadan religion, then his religion is degraded and he is excommunicated. For instance, a person whose food and water can be taken by Brāhmins and Rājputs becomes, on adopting a low profession, degraded and is excommunicated.

LXXXIV. — Agriculture.

282. The conditions of land cultivation are:—

(1) Agriculturists are to be found in every tribe. However, the high castes of Brahman and Rājputs do not cultivate the land themselves, but by their servants.

(2) The Kanais and Kôlis are the best cultivators. Their men and women live by cultivation. Cultivators are generally Kanais, Kôlis, Rêhys (shepherds), who are tenants-at-will. Generally the tenants are without rights of occupancy. Occupancy tenants are very few.

(3) (a) Some tenants serve the landlords and do not pay any rent. They serve him daily.

(b) Some tenants pay rent in cash, together with *malikānā*. Some pay in kind as much as half the produce.

(c) They pay, in addition to the fixed rent, expenses of deaths and marriages to the landlord. Also they serve him now and then. No portion of the chaff is given to the landlord. At the time of division of produce, in some places, a quantity equal to the seed is deducted and the remainder is divided into halves, while in other places the whole of the produce is divided.

(d) There are no wandering tenants in the hills.

(e) Daily wages are seldom paid. But when well-to-do people engage poor men on wages at the harvest time, they give to the latter $2\frac{1}{2}$ seers of grain daily, *i.e.*, cakes weighing one seer in the morning, as much in the evening, and half a seer of cakes at noon. Such labourers are called *burwārā*, and the wages are known as *chhāk*. If the wages are to be paid in cash, three annas a day is given.

283. There is no tradition regarding the cultivators.

LXXXV. — Rights in the Land and its Products.

284. Following is the detail of the rights of a tribe in the land:—

(a) No one has any right to have land on a rent less than that paid by his neighbours.

(b) Rêhys and Kôlis cultivate the common land of the village without paying any rent, and this is for their serving the *shāmlāt* (community). Sometimes they graze cattle as remuneration for this.

(c) Every one gives some grain (the quantity is not fixed) at the time of harvest to the Brāhmins, the goldsmith, the barber, the Tûrî, the Kôli, the cobbler, the washerman, the smith, and the shepherd, who in return serve the landlords. The shepherd is also given some corn. Each of these can receive from each family not more than four maunds and not less than two seers. These people go from village to village at the time of harvest and collect corn from all the persons with whom they are connected.

285. There is no contract, but the customs are fixed. As the land is divided into portions, so is the *ôirt* (custom). If any person, who has been giving corn to one man for a long time does not give it to him but to another man, a severe quarrel arises.

286. This they do not receive by right of superiority, but by right of service. Six monthly grants are fixed as remuneration for their services.

287. This is only the reward of service.

288. The Brāhmans, barbers, Tūris, Kōlis, and Rēhys have hereditary rights. Other menials can be dismissed or re-employed. This right is termed *shikōthū*.

LXXXVI. — Increase of Agriculture.

289. There is no reason to believe that the forefathers of the agriculturists were of the same caste or tribe as themselves. Neither can this be admitted nor denied. Only so much is certain that in ancient times agriculturists were very few.

290. No such marks are to be found in any tribe or caste as to show likeness between villages or villagers. Distinction between cultivators is necessary. It is not to be found among the followers of any other profession.

291. No tradition worthy of mention is available.

292. Agriculture is increasing day by day, and every tribe is taking to it. Even the Rājputs, Brāhmans, goldsmiths and barbers, who shrank from cultivating land, have adopted agriculture and are trying hard to improve their lands.

293. Want is not the reason.

LXXXVII. — Pasture.

294. This is a general custom in the hills. The culturable land situated near the village is either divided and cultivated or is possessed separately. In villages where pasture grounds to graze cattle are scarce the *banjar* (barren land) is neither divided nor cultivated, for the want of pasture injures the increasing value of land. But this custom is going out of use nowadays, for the agriculturists have been declared the owners of culturable lands, while the Chief or the British Government owns the unculturable lands. However, the *shāmlāt* (common land) is in possession of the villagers.

295. All the pasture lands of the hills belong to the Chief of the place. But the inhabitants of villages are privileged to graze their cattle in pastures situated within the boundary of their respective villages. None have such a right except the natives of the villages. If the Chief thinks any area to be more than sufficient for the purposes of pasturage, and wants to improve it, then he can give it to any one of the natives of the village for improvement on a fixed rent. The farmers can sell or mortgage the land which they own as the *maliks*, but they cannot do so with the pasture lands, and can use them only for private purposes.

LXXXVIII. — Distribution of Land.

296. There is no arrangement for social communion of tribes. However, the subdivisions of a tribe have social intercourse with one another. No custom prevails as to the redistribution of a tribe or religion. The distribution already effected cannot be cancelled.

297. Portions of land are fixed for sowing particular grains for particular crops. For instance, wheat is sown for the *rabī* crops, and rice, etc., for the *khariḥ*, and a limited area of land is set aside for each crop.

LXXXIX. — Water.

298. Divisions of watering-places and habitations in a village are according to the tribes. High castes have their houses, watering-places, and cremation-grounds in one part of the village, and in the same manner every tribe or sub-division thereof has its separate places. Every tribe has also a fixed place in the village to be used at times of marriages and deaths. This partition of the villages by tribes is of long standing, but it has no concern with partition of land. The land is divided into fields.

299. The partition into fields effects all kinds of land, whether it be the individual property of any person or the common land of the village.

श्रीरस्तु.

RUKMINI KALYANAM.

BY G. R. SUBRAMIAH PANTULU.

(An Episode in the *Śrīmat Bhagavata* from the text of Bammara Potanna.—The Telugu Poet.)

You have heard from me, O Parīkshit, some time ago that under the commands of Brahmā, Rīvata bestowed the hand of his daughter Rāvati on Balarāma. Afterwards, Kṛishṇa married the sweet-scented Rukmini, an incarnation of Lakshmi and the daughter of Bhīshmaka, after gaining a victory over Salva and others who came to aid Śiśupāla, as Garutmanta took possession of the nectar, overthrowing Indra in days of yore.

Then, Parīkshit questioned Sūka, the narrator of the story, to furnish him with a satisfactory explanation of the state of affairs which lead Kṛishṇa, who came to Bhīshmaka's court on account of a *swayamvara*, to carry off Rukmini and marry her in the *rākshasa* form, after overthrowing a host of powerful kings single-handed.¹

"Exalted Brāhman, Sūka, a person who hears the stories of Viṣṇu, the hearing of which is the best road to salvation, would not be satisfied even after a certain stage is attained, as hearing them afresh imparts fresh pleasure to the hearer. As these stories appear fresh every time they are heard, kindly narrate to me the *Rukmini Kalyānam*, as my mind is at present bent upon hearing it. O sage, the words which narrate the characteristics of Viṣṇu are ornaments to the ears of the hearers, are pleasure-giving to the *paṇḍits*, are destroyers of sins committed in various lives² and contain soul-stirring words."

After hearing these words from the king, Sūka spoke thus:—"O Parīkshit, there lived a king, Bhīshmaka by name, ruler of Kundina in Vidarbha. He had five sons, of which the eldest, Rukmi by name, was a spotless person. The last and most beloved of the lot was a daughter Rukmini by name.

"The house of Bhīshmaka glowed with the growth of his daughter Rukmini, as the western horizon glows with the rising of the moon. She, growing day by day, indulged herself in

¹ There are eight different sorts of marriage — (1) *brahmya*, in which a girl of noble descent is married to one of the same order who is also a good Vedic scholar, after adorning the girl in the best jewels possible; (2) *dairam*, in which a girl adorned with the most fashionable and valuable jewels possible is married to a *rītika* at the beginning of a *yajna*, or sacrifice, after worshipping him; (3) *arsham*, in which a girl is married to one after accepting from him the gift of a cow for the propagation of *dharma*; (4) *prajāpatyam*, in which a girl is given to a person after telling him that they should jointly propagate *dharma*; (5) *rākshasa*, where the girl is carried off by force without the consent of the girl's party; (6) *gandharvam*, where clandestine marriage is done by mutual consent; (7) *asuram*, where money is paid for the girl for marriage; and (8) *pisacha*, where a person marries a girl who is not able to maintain her virtue on account of administering to herself soporific drugs. There is yet another kind of marriage called *atira*, where the parents marry the two people after noticing strong signs of love in both.

² The five excrementitious products: (1) *Anayamala* — where *Satyaguna* preponderates, although at times the thought of "I am Brahmā" is presented to the mind to be soon forgotten. (2) *Karmikamala* — in which a person gives a deaf ear to the Vedantic teachings of his best *gurus*. (3) *Mayikamala* — in which the thought about Brahmā does not strike the mind at all. (4) *Mayayamala* — where the mind is led to the performance of sinful deeds of whatever kind. (5) *Tirotanamala* — in which a person after knowing all about Parabrahmā is led to the belief that there is something other than that Being and in consequence suffers eternal damnation and undergoes a series of rebirths.

performing make-belief marriages ; in serving sweet-flavoured food to other girls of her own age, which pleased them very much ; in the growth of creepers and flowers in the park adjacent ; in rocking herself in golden cradles, in houses set with diamonds and other precious stones ; in playing at ball very elegantly with other girls of her own age ; in teaching parrots ; in teaching methods of walking to peahens and slowness of pace to fresh-bloomed swans. The growth of Rukminî's body varied with the growth of Kṛishṇa's love towards her ; her lotus-face varied with the lotus of Kṛishṇa's mind ; her breasts with Cupid's finely-pointed darts varied with Kṛishṇa's growth ; her loins waved with the waving of Kṛishṇa's patience ; her braided tresses increased with the increase of Kṛishṇa's love-chord towards her, so that her growth might keep pace with Kṛishṇa's pleasures. Thus Rukminî, the sister of Rukmi, Rukmaratha, Rukmabâhu, Rukmakeśa and Rukmanêtra, being in her teens, heard of the accomplishments of Śrî-Kṛishṇa from the hosts who came to her house, and came to a resolution in her mind that Kṛishṇa would be the fittest man for her to take as her husband.

“Śrî-Kṛishṇa, also after hearing of the beauty, intelligence, character, and general accomplishments of Rukminî, and being satisfied on every item, thought that she would be the fittest woman for him to take as his wife. While all his relatives were holding consultations with the wise about giving Rukminî in marriage to Kṛishṇa, the foolish Rukmi came to a different conclusion and wanted her to be given to Śiśupâla. Rukminî, after having ascertained her brother's intentions, sighed in heart, called in a confidential Brâhman and told him that her hot-headed brother had come to a firm resolve to give her in marriage to Śiśupâla somehow, and that she wanted him to go to Dvâraka and inform Kṛishṇa of the affair. ‘Best of Brâhmins, as my father, too, cannot set aside the firm resolve of my brother, kindly go on this mission to Dvâraka, inform Kṛishṇa of the whole affair, and fetch him hither as soon as possible and thus baffle the endeavours of my brother.’

“The Brâhman, after hearing these and some other secret words, proceeded to Dvâraka, informed Kṛishṇa of his coming through the guards stationed outside, received Kṛishṇa's orders, entered the palace, saw Kṛishṇa seated on a seat of gold, and blessed him to become a bridegroom. Whereupon Kṛishṇa, ever bent upon observing Vedic ritual, vacated his seat smiling, requested the Brâhman to sit on the same seat and worshipped him, as he is himself worshipped by the angels, fed him sumptuously, approached him most heartily and slowly, and with his hands, which wield sway over the whole world, pressed his legs and addressed him thus :—

“‘Best of Brâhmins, I see you are always contented. Such a state is attained very happily. This *dharma* is acceptable to the elders. A Brâhman, however wealthy he may be, should be contented and happy and should not be swayed by a feeling of pride. Whoever does not quit this *swatharma*, would have all his desires satisfied. Whoever is not content with the little that he gets would always be crushed, even though he gets Indra's riches. Whoever is content with the little that he gets would be quite happy, even though he be a pauper. Therefore, I would prostrate before those who show signs of friendship to all beings, who are content with the little they get, who are patient, who are good and not proud. O intelligent and best of Brâhmins, I like that king, under whose sway all the people live comfortably, in whose kingdom you are, and by whom you are protected. Kindly let me know what induced you to enter this impenetrable island-home at this unusual hour. I promise to satisfy your desire and you may depend upon it.’

“Having heard these words from Kṛishṇa, the divine being in human form, the Brâhman replied thus :—‘Lord, there lives a king in Vidarbha, Bhîshmaka by name. He has a daughter whose name is Rukminî. She, being intent on serving you, requests you to marry her, and has sent

some news to you through me which, if you be pleased to hear, I am ready to narrate in her own words:—O killer of Kamsa, punisher of the vicious, plunderer of the wealth of beauty, robber of women's hearts. Kṛishṇa, by hearing whose name all the *tapās* (*adhyatmika*, *adhidairvika*, *adhibhautika*) would vanish; by seeing whose frame, the eye would derive the pleasure of seeing every thing in the Universe; by alway serving whom a man can attain eminence; by repeating whose name a man is freed from the trammels of *sansār*—to such a man is my mind united. You are the best witness to all this. Although the members of my sex feel generally shy of expressing such secrets, I, quitting aside all sense of shame, speak my heart before you, as the feeling of *bhakti* preponderates in me, for which I beg to be excused. Kṛishṇa, to your enemies as a lion to fattened elephants, the pleasure of the whole world, illuminated by family, education, beauty, age, wealth, health, strength, charity, bravery, and mercy—is there anyone among women that does not love you? Even Lakshmi, the best among women, has loved you. Say, has this love emanated from me alone?

“‘Purnshottama, you who have Lakshmi in your breast, the proud Śiśupāla, king of Chedi, intends to carry me off soon,—me who always thinks of you and you alone, as the fox desires the food best adapted for the lion. The meanest of mortals knows not your wondrous valour. If, in my previous births, I had worshipped angels, Brāhmans, *gurūs*, *paṇḍits*, and others, and if I had given gifts to the entire satisfaction of Viṣṇu, Kṛishṇa would now carry me off and marry me after slaying in battle Śiśupāla and other such meanest of kings. Kṛishṇa, who have in your navel the lotus which is the birthplace of Brahmā, you who are the best of *puruṣhas*, you have no reason to find a pretext. If, to-morrow, you come with your armies and slay Jarāsandha, Śiśupāla, and others in battle and carry me off with your valour, I am ready to accompany you and marry you in the *rākṣasa* form. Kṛishṇa, if you should think as to how best you can take me off from the palace,—for you will be labouring under the impression that in carrying me off you will be obliged to shed, unnecessarily, the blood of so many relatives, friends, and servants, who would offer resistance to you—I have devised a measure, which I shall carefully suggest to you if you be pleased to hear. My people are accustomed to send the bride, previous to the marriage proper, to worship the tutelary deities outside the town. I shall be sent on this occasion outside the town to worship Pārvatī according to custom, and that will be the most opportune moment when you can come and carry me off. Kṛishṇa, my protector, if you think I am not fit to receive your mercy, the receiving of which is the goal of the learned and the old by dispelling their ignorance, and if in consequence you do not choose to take me to wife, I shall assume at the least one hundred rebirths, perform *vratas* in the meanwhile, always think about you and attain your mercy and then marry you. You may rest assured that this is truth and nothing but the truth. Do not, therefore, give a deaf ear to my entreaties but carry me off soon. My protector, the ears that do not hear your soothing words; the beautiful frame which cannot enjoy with you—the best of beings; the eyes that cannot see you that are beloved by the world at large; the tongue that cannot drink the nectar which emanates from your lips; the nose that cannot smell the fragrance of your beautiful bunch of flowers; the life that cannot serve you, the best type of mankind—all these are next to useless, even though they live. They should be considered as dead rather than living. All the *jñānarthīs* (seekers of wisdom), if they should live at all, should serve you and you alone and any other form of servitude is next to useless.’

“The Brāhman, sent by Rukmini, having fulfilled his mission to her entire satisfaction, told Kṛishṇa of her exceeding beauty, and wanted him to do the best he could under the circumstances and told him that she was the best object for his love. ‘O Kṛishṇa, Rukmini’s feet are the best resorts for all tendrils; her thighs laugh at golden plantain trees; her hands are beautiful with a coating of redness; her neck is exceedingly beautiful, being turned a little and being as white as a conch. There is a suspicion whether she possesses a waist or not. Her breasts give pleasure to

the eye ; her forehead laughs at the semi-circular moon ; her braided tresses laugh at black wild bees ; her sight resembles the finely-pointed darts of Cupid ; her eye-brows resemble the branches of Cupid arrows ; her words invigorate the mind ; her face resembles the moon. Kṛishṇa, you are the best person fitted for her and she for you. All others are useless to both. I tell you, on my *gurū*, you should be married. Why do you make unnecessary delays ? Take all people by whom you wish to be accompanied and come with me to fetch Rukmini. Slay your enemies, do good to the world and obtain fame.'

"When Kṛishṇa heard all that the Brāhman had said, he took hold of the Brāhman's hand, and, laughing, spoke to him thus :— 'O Brāhman, my thoughts are fully centred on Rukmini and that is why my nights are always sleepless. I knew already of Rukmini's hindrance to this marriage. Therefore as fire is taken out by the contact of wood with wood, so I shall bring Rukmini after slaying the armies of my enemies. I shall immediately go to Vidarbha, enter Bhīshmaka's territory in a fitting manner and slay all my enemies who come across my path and tear open their bodies.'

"Kṛishṇa ascertained from the Brāhman the auspicious moment of Rukmini's marriage and ascended with him the chariot drawn by four of his best horses harnessed to it by the charioteer under his own instructions, and reached Vidarbha in a single night. There Bhīshmaka, king of Kundina, who could not set his son aside, had resolved to marry his daughter to Śiśupāla and had made the necessary preparations for its performance. At this juncture the public streets, lanes, and thoroughfares of the city were swept and kept scrupulously clean, excellent sandalwood water was sprinkled in them, they were adorned with beautiful flowers of various kind ; all houses were repaired and kept in good order, incense and camphor were burnt ; all the men and women were in their best and appropriate attire, were adorned with beautiful flowers, the best jewels and excellent scents ; drums and instruments of all sorts were beaten and played. Thus the whole city presented a gay and lively appearance. Then Mahārāja Bhīshmaka first propitiated the *pīṭris*, fed the Brāhmins, purified the city, had Rukmini bathed, adorned her with the best jewels and in the best attire possible, performed all observances in accordance with the strict injunctions of the *Vedas*, engaged Brāhmins to chant the various *mantras*, and the *purohit* to perform *navagraha homa* and to give away gifts of sesamum seeds, cows, silver, gold, and cloths.

"At this juncture the proud Śiśupāla came to the city with the object of marrying Rukmini, accompanied by various armies under his command, his innumerable relatives, friends, and others. Jarāsandha, Dantavakra, Salva, Biduratha, Paundraka, Vasudeva, and other kings came to the firm resolution that they would defend Śiśupāla against Kṛishṇa and Balarāma and all their innumerable armies, relatives, and friends and drive them off the field, and overcome any objection to making Śiśupāla marry Rukmini. Very many other *rājās* came to witness the marriage. Of these Śiśupāla was lodged by Bhīshmaka in the best lodgings possible, and when Balarāma heard this, he went to the place with a host, all the while thinking that Kṛishṇa went there single-handed, and that very many kings were there to help Śiśupāla, and that when the girl was to be brought, a fight would necessarily ensue and that at that juncture Kṛishṇa would need assistance.

"At that time when the host of *rājās* were approaching the town, Rukmini entertained grave doubts about Kṛishṇa's coming thither. 'To-morrow is the auspicious moment ; the marriage is fast approaching ; my mind is wavering as to why Kṛishṇa has not come as yet ; whether Kṛishṇa has given a deaf ear to my news ; why it is that the Brāhman resembling the fire has not come here as yet ; whether my attempts to marry Kṛishṇa are to be fulfilled or frustrated ; whether Brahṁa has thought otherwise' — such were the thoughts passing in the mind of Rukmini at this moment.

'Whether the enlightened and best of Brāhmans did repair to Kṛishṇa or no; whether he was fatigued on the way or reached the place safely; whether he found fault with me for having given unnecessary trouble to the Brāhman or accepted my entreaty; whether the Almighty will help me in my undertakings or baffle my endeavours; whether my tutelary deity, Pārvatī, will protect me or otherwise, and after all whether my fortune is favourable or the reverse. I am at a loss to know all this'—such were the thoughts that she entertained at this moment. 'The Brāhman may not have gone to Dvāraka and therefore Kṛishṇa has not been able to come here. There is no confidential person whom I could hereafter send to fetch Kṛishṇa thither. There is not an atom of justice to be got from my brother Rukmi. He intends to give me to Śiśupāla, the staunchest enemy of my lover, Kṛishṇa. Even my Pārvatī has lost her pity for me.' The above were her thoughts at that time.

"She would not communicate her thoughts even to her mother. Her face had turned very pale. She would not even smile, nor would she try to remove the wild bees which used to sit on her face, thinking it to be a lotus. She would not unwind the twisted pearl necklaces on her breast. She would ever be bent on eagerly looking at Kṛishṇa's arrival. She would weep, thinking she was not to be blessed by marrying Śrī-Kṛishṇa; she would not braid her tresses; would not talk even to her favourite maids; she would not take food, nor drink water. She would not teach her pet parrot a song. She would not play on the lyre and would shun society as much as possible. As sorrow was great at her heart on account of Kṛishṇa not having come to marry her as yet, as he was in justice bound to do, Rukminī, — the lion-waisted, lotus-scented, mirror-faced, flower-bodied, lotus-eyed, swan-gaited, creeper-framed, the jewel of jewels, the flower of all women, with hands formed after the lotus, — would not daub her body with musk, would not bathe, would not see a looking-glass, nor wear flowers, nor resort to parks, nor tame swans, nor grow creepers, nor wear jewels, nor wear marks on the forehead, nor swim in water; she, being unable to bear the finely pointed darts of Cupid, would shiver at sweet soft winds, would be terrified at the noise of the wild bees, would be struck with horror at the song of nightingale, would be annoyed at the noise of parrots and run away from them, would not bear the heat of moonlight and would stand aloof from the shade of the sweet mango-tree. While thus eagerly waiting for the coming of Hari and looking carelessly at all other business, and being scorched by Cupid's arrows, there occurred a tremor of her left eye and left shoulder, which foreboded something good. Then the Brāhman, being sent by Śrī-Kṛishṇa, arrived, when Rukminī went and stood before him with a glowing face and smiling, then the Brāhman told her:— 'O Rukminī, Śrī-Kṛishṇa was exceedingly pleased at your good character, has given me immense wealth, has also himself arrived here. He is at present outside the town. He would marry you in the *rākshasa* form, even though the whole host of angels and *rākshasas* come and oppose him. You have this day reaped the fruit of your labours.' Afterwards Rukminī replied thus:— 'You have protected me by carrying my news to Kṛishṇa and bringing him here. I live by your mercy. There is in the whole world none other like you. I cannot repay the good you have done me except by a prostration before you.' Thus saying, she prostrated before him and dismissed him.

"Afterwards Bhīshmaka, having heard of the arrival of Balarāma and Kṛishṇa at his daughter's marriage, went to meet them with beating of drums, received them kindly, presented them with cloths and ornaments, showed resting-places for their armies, friends, and relatives, showed hospitality to all the other kings as became each of them, and supplied them with all necessaries. Then the townsfolk, having heard of the arrival of Śrī-Kṛishṇa at Rukminī's marriage, came and saw him and soliloquised thus:— 'This Kṛishṇa must be the fittest man for that Rukminī and she for him. Brāhmā can be called intelligent only when such a pair are brought into unison with each other. What matters it if only by the good deeds that we have done in our previous births, Kṛishṇa becomes the husband of Rukminī after slaying all those who offer resistance to him in battle.'

“At this juncture, while the soldiers fully armed were accompanying the dancing-women and were advancing with offerings for the god, the Brāhman women wearing flowers, fruits, sandalwood, cloths, and jewels, were proceeding singing, while there was a tremendous noise caused by the beating of drums, the playing of different kinds of music, and while damsels were following, Rukminī, with the utmost feminine modesty, with ringlets falling on her forehead, proceeded from the palace to worship Pārvatī. While a host of people of various sorts were accompanying her, she was all the while thinking of Kṛishṇa in her mind, and went to the temple of Gaurī, washed her hands and feet, sipped water thrice, and with a pure heart approached and stood before her. Then the Brāhman women bathed Gaurī and Śiva, applied sandalwood, worshipped them with flowers, offered various offerings which were brought for the purpose, and made Rukmini prostrate. Then Rukminī said : — ‘I fully believe in my mind the everlasting, time-honoured couple of Pārvatī and Mahēśvara. I pray you to bless me. You are the chiefest and oldest of all mothers. You are the ocean of mercy. Whoever conscientiously and firmly believes in you will not suffer. Kindly, therefore, have mercy on me and bless me that I may have Kṛishṇa as my husband.’

“Rukminī then worshipped the Brāhman couples with *pān-supāri*, salted cakes, fruits, and sugar-canes, upon which they were exceedingly delighted and blessed Rukminī when she again prostrated before Pārvatī, and quitted the temple and came out. As a spark of lightning in the wintry sky, as the animal in the orbit of the moon, as the *mohinī* which appears on the scene when the curtain is drawn by Brahmā, as Lakshmi who came out from the milky sky when it was churned by the angels and *rākshasas*, using Mount Manthara as the churning staff and Vasuki as the chord, glittering with the rays of the finest ornaments, Rukminī came out of the temple of Gaurī with the pace of the fattened swan that lives in the golden lotuses of Mānasasarovara, with the waist which is troubled by the weight of her heavy breasts which resembled a pair of golden pots, with her diamond-ringed hands twisted round the hands of a maiden, with chins sparkling with the lustre of diamond ear-rings, with ringlets which cover the round forehead like fattened wild bees which encircle sweet-scented lotuses, with beautiful smiles which shed a lustre of moonlight at an unseasonable moment, with lips red as ruby which shed a ruddy lustre to the rows of teeth white as jasmine, with the upper garment resembling the flag of Cupid, with precious stones glittering in the gold belt as rainbow out of season, with sight resembling the glitter of arrows drawn by Cupid from his sheath which broke open the hearts of valorous kings, with measured step and slow eagerly waiting for the arrival of Kṛishṇa and attracting the hearts of all brave *rājās*. With ringlets black as wild bees, with face resembling the full moon, with the eyes of the hare with coral lips, with the voice of the nightingale, with feet soft as tendrils, with breasts resembling the frontal lobes of the fattened elephants, with sand-heaped buttocks, with the best elephant gait, with red lotus hands, with rose-scented body, with lion's waist, Rukminī came and was seen by all the brave *rājās*, who were troubled in their hearts very much.

“Rukminī passed by the post of kings who were confused when the smiling look, indicative of feminine bashfulness, fell upon them. They lost their valour, nobility, and honour, lost their senses, let slip the weapons from their hands. They were not able to mount their elephants, horses, or chariots. They were so much bewildered that they leaned towards the ground. Rukminī removed the ringlets from the forehead with the nails of her left hand, and, looking askance at this host, saw Śrī-Kṛishṇa, with face resembling the rays of the full moon, with waist resembling that of the lion, with eyes broad as the lotus, with a beautiful chest, with body shining as a newly-formed cloud, with shoulders resembling the trunk of Airāvata, with cloths of gold and best ornaments, and with neck turned like a conch. Rukminī saw this world-enchancer and was delighted with the beauty, age, character, nobility, valour, and glitter of Kṛishṇa, and being enraptured with love she intended to climb his chariot when he saw her and with the face of fattened elephant approached and lifted her up and placed her in his chariot, not caring a straw for the host of kings who were

viewing, as the lion carries off the piece of flesh lying amidst foxes. He then blew his conch and proceeded towards Dvāraka, while Balarāma and others were following him with their armies. Jarāsandha and others of his host were not able to brook this and questioned each other as to why they were seeing all this, so much perplexed. A crew of shepherds are robbing us of our honour and are carrying off the girl as the low animals rob the honour of the lion. When else can we show our valour if we cannot show it on this occasion? Are our bows and arrows fit to be thrown away into fire if we cannot use them now? Would the people of the world fail to laugh if we let slip this opportunity and let go the girl? Jarāsandha and others having thus reasoned with one another, became exceedingly angry, put on mail armours, bore arrows and bows, and began bragging to one another, and being joined by the charioteers, infantry, and cavalry, went in pursuit of the Jādava forces, telling them to stop. This increased their valour and they showered a volley of arrows on them when these were returned by a similar shower from the Jādava leaders.

“While the troops of the enemy showered a volley of arrows and encircled Kṛishṇa and his armies, Rukminī, with a look, indicative of extreme terror and shame, saw the face of Kṛishṇa, when he told her: ‘My dear girl,’ you may in a moment witness Jādava warriors opposing the enemy and they will be very much troubled and would either run away or die.’ Thus did Kṛishṇa console Rukminī when Balarāma and others of Jādava warriors showered a host of arrows, which resembled the heavy thunder and clouds that spread over the whole sky at the time of the deluge, over Jarāsandha and others, the enemy’s camp presented an appearance of pieces of horses, chariots, and foot-soldiers, of head-severed *mahāwats*, charioteers and horsemen of powdered chests, hands, legs, of broken skulls, of extensive hair, of severed feet, knees, calves of the legs, of powdered teeth, of thrown-off ornaments and other similar ones worn by the brave at the battle-field, of the weepings of the valiant, of broken pieces of instruments of war, of umbrellas, of tattered armour, of dust raised to the skies caused by the trampling of horses, of motionless chariots, of the low cries of horses and elephants, of the sounds of battle-drums, of tattered host of kings, of rivers of flood, of the noises of devils, of foxes and other animals eating the flesh and drinking the blood of corpses, of she-devils feasting on skulls and flesh of carcasses.

“Jarāsandha and others, the enemies of Kṛishṇa, being unable to bear his attack, turned their backs and fled, assembled at a certain spot, wept and soothed Śiśupāla, who was before them pale-faced and as one who lost his wife, emitting hot breath by asking him whether he is alive after being relieved from the hands of the enemy. Jarāsandha and others said to Śiśupāla: ‘Man can live anywhere, provided there is life in the body. If a man lives, a wife will somehow come of her own accord. You are now alive and therefore a wife can be secured from somewhere. Do not, therefore, weep over this affair very often.’ Jarāsandha again said to Śiśupāla, ‘Sisupala, hear me. Man is not the agent of any deed. He would do a deed being held tight by the Almighty, as the puppet plays being led by the leading strings of the man in a pantomime. I invaded Mathurā seventeen times, when my whole army was reduced to nothing by Kṛishṇa and I was captured by Balarāma, whereupon Kṛishṇa, out of mercy, released me. I again invaded Mathurā the eighteenth time with twenty-three *akshauhīnis*, when I drove out my enemies, Kṛishṇa and Balarāma, and gained a complete victory. I neither felt sorrow over a defeat, nor joy over a victory. If we should enquire carefully into this day’s proceedings we cannot vanquish Kṛishṇa, even though we join Śiva and wage a war against him. Nor is this all. The whole world is pervaded by omnipotent time. As this was a good day for the Jādavas, they overcame us with the bravery of Kṛishṇa — us, whose valour is recognized in the three worlds. We, too, can gain victories over our enemy if fortune be in our favour. Weep not, therefore, for this trifle.’

“Jarāsandha and others thus consoled Sīsupāla and went each his own way to his own country. Sīsupāla, too, went home with his armies. Then Rukmi, the brother of Rukmini, not agreeing to the carrying off of his sister by Kṛishṇa and not reconciling himself with the state of affairs, pursued him with an *akshauhini* and spoke thus to his charioteer:— ‘This shepherd boy has slighted me and carried off my sister Rukmiṇī, as if he were a daring valiant soldier. He knows not my prowess and descent. I must chase him swiftly, drive on the chariot so as to overtake him. I will, with my glittering arrows, put him down and show my valour.’ Having thus addressed the charioters, Rukmi, not knowing Kṛishṇa’s prowess, drove near him and said:— ‘Stop a little, you butter-stealing shepherd boy. You shall very soon see your fate.’ Having thus slighted him, he aimed three sharp arrows at him and spoke to him in a manner which irritated Kṛishṇa very much:— ‘Thou shepherd, you are not our compeer to carry off our child. What *dharma* do you follow? What caste do you belong to? Of what family are you? Where were you born? Where brought up? What is your calling? What is your *gōtra*? Who knows you? You have no sense of shame or honour. Wherever you come you assume a disguise and do not appear at all in your true colours before your enemies. Moreover, you are no king. You are not tied to the world. Therefore leave our child and depart, otherwise I will put down your pride in battle by steel-pointed arrows which appear as flames of fire at the time of *pralaya*.’

“Śrī-Kṛishṇa laughed at Rukmi, tore asunder his bow with one arrow, with six others his body, with eight others his chariot horses, with two more his charioteer, with three pointed ones his banner, he broke another of his bows and arrows and reduced to pieces all his other weapons. Rukmi not being pleased at this state of affairs, descended from his chariot, held a knife in his hand and came upon Kṛishṇa once more, when the latter powdered his knife and armour. Then Kṛishṇa grew exceedingly angry at the conduct of Rukmi and drew his knife from his sheath and was about to cut off his head, when Rukmiṇī interfered and fell upon her knees before Kṛishṇa and said: ‘Enlightened and honourable being, seat of mercy incarnate, angelic god, my brother, not knowing your omniscience and omnipresence, has committed a grievous fault, for which I intercede on his behalf and request you to excuse him. My preserver, I am not come here to say that my brother has committed no fault. Whatever may be the heinous nature of the crime he has committed, if you should kill him, my parents would weep over the death of their son and pine away instead of feeling glad at their being able to secure Viṣṇu as their son-in-law, and therefore you should excuse him.’ Thus, with a shivering tone, in extreme terror, a convulsed frame, a great fallen countenance, dishevelled hair and ever-weeping eyes, Rukmiṇī prayed to Kṛishṇa, when he desisted from murdering Rukmi and went back intent on punishing him differently. He then tied him to his chariot and shaved him in the most awkward way possible. Meanwhile, the Jādava leaders drove the enemy’s troops off the field and came near Kṛishṇa. Then Balarāma, seeing the almost lifeless frame of Rukmi and being very much moved, untied the strings, liberated him, approached Kṛishṇa, and said:— ‘O Kṛishṇa, it is not proper for you to shave the head and face of a relative like Rukmi. If a relative should come to battle knowingly or unknowingly, instead of telling him to go away, committing such a deed is more shameful than severing the head off the body. O Kṛishṇa, you make no difference between a friend and a foe. You neither show favour to one, nor disfavour to another. You treat all men equally. That you should now have thought otherwise and offered such a treatment to a relative is exceedingly bad in you.’

“He then turned round to Rukmiṇī and said:— ‘Blame not our Kṛishṇa for the deed he has committed. We should not think that one ought to protect another for the good he has done and punish him for the evil committed. This depends entirely on the *karma* of our previous existence.

Karmic law pervades through the whole universe. Therefore your brother has but suffered for the deed he has committed in a previous existence. We should not kill a relative, though he deserves death. To him a sense of shame should be more than death. When Brahmā created the four castes and defined the Varnaśrāma *dharma* of each, he said that it is but proper to kill any person in battle, be he a brother, father, or son. That is why kings in their thirst for dominion slay any person in battle, irrespective of the relationship they bear. Those kings who want to earn a reputation of being great, being desirous of dominion, wealth, sustenance, women or honour, and not for a moment thinking of the troubles they would endure in the other world, always drag other people to quarrel for one reason or another. O Rukminī, hear me. To the ignorant one that makes a difference between God and man, being surrounded by the *mayā* of Viṣṇu ; to those that draw a distinction between *sthūla*, *sūkṣma*, and *kāraṇa śāstras*, and between *jñānendriyas* and *karmendriyas*, there exists a difference between friend, foe, and acquaintance. As the sun, moon, and stars appear in mirrors, waters, and precious stones, as the horizon presents various shapes in the waters of pots, ponds, lakes, wells, and rivers, so the all-pervading Universal Soul (God) appears differently to different living beings. This *sthūla śāstra*, capable of undergoing life and death, assumes the form of the five elements and makes the *jīva* wander in this miserable *samsār* and undergo life and death in utter ignorance. As the eye and the objects of vision appear bright when sun is shining, the *jñānendriyas* and *karmendriyas* follow their own calling when the soul is shining. As there is no relation between the sun and the objects of vision, so no relation exists between the soul and the body. As waxing and waning disturb only the fifteen phases of the moon and not the nectar-phased moon itself, so birth and death disturb the body and not the soul. As the sleeping person enjoys the appearances presented to him in a dream, so the person who has no knowledge of the soul thinks the transient pleasures of this world to be immortal. Therefore, think not that Kṛiṣṇa has put your brother to shame and that he has suffered from it. Put off, therefore, all sorrow from your heart. O Rukminī, put off all your sorrow which arises out of ignorance by your knowledge of self. It is not proper for you, who knows the self, to weep like the ignorant.'

"When Rukminī was thus taught by Balarāma, she learnt fully of the soul and left off weeping. Rukmi, who was put to shame by Kṛiṣṇa, suffered like one under the pangs of death, sobbed in his fulness of heart over his disfigured frame and resolved that he would not enter Kundināgara, without defeating Kṛiṣṇa. He therefore stayed outside the town. Thus did Kṛiṣṇa take Rukminī to his abode after slaying all his enemies. Preparations for marriage were being made throughout the town. There were dances, songs, and the beating of drums. Men and women put on their best attire. Public thoroughfares became damp from the perspirations of the elephants of the kings who came to witness the marriage. Plantain and areca trees were tied at the front of every house. Camphor and incense were burnt. The walls, terraces, doorways, doors, and pillars of every house were beautifully adorned. Festoons and cloths, flowers, and precious stones were tied, and standards were raised everywhere.

"On this occasion Śrī-Kṛiṣṇa married Rukminī (Lakṣmī), a woman best adapted to his tastes, possessing an extreme sense of honour, capable of making others exceedingly rich, honored by her relatives, and in turn honouring them, of good character, capable of removing immense poverty, and wearing the best jewels and putting on the best cloths. By such a marriage Kṛiṣṇa obtained an everlasting fame. Then the townsfolk, wishing for their welfare, came to see the newly-married pair and gave them valuable offerings. The kings of the various kingdoms of the world were delighted and wondered at hearing of the marriage of Rukminī and Kṛiṣṇa. O Parīkṣhit, the people of the city were overjoyed to the happy union of Rukminī and Kṛiṣṇa."

INDEX.

- Abasses, Abassi, coin 127 and n.
 Abdullah Khân, Âsi; Nawâb; brother of
 Sa'dullah Khân 69 and n., 70
 Abd-us-şamad Khân, a commander 48 f.
 Abhai Singh, Rajah of Jodhpur 11 n.
abîr, red powder... .. 316
 aborigines of India 269 f.
 Âbû, Arbuda, mt. 162 n., 166
 Abu'l-Fazl and the Gakkhars 8 n.
 'Abu-us-şamad Khân, a commander... .. 61
 Achalgaḡh, fort on Mt. Abû 166
 Achâraj, one who officiates at a funeral,
 283 f., 297, 305
 Achyuta, k., of Vijayanagara 352
 Achyutarâyâbhyudayam of Śrî Râjanâtha,
 with a commentary by Pandit R. V.
 Krishnamachariar, book-notice 352
 Adam, among the Chuhṛas 114, 143 f.
 Âdam, Sultân 8 n., 9
adhîbhautika, natural 378
adhîdâivika, spiritual 378
 Adhokshaya=Vishnu 164
âdhyâtmika, relating to the soul or supreme
 spirit 378
 Âdikavi, the first poet; an epithet of Vâlmiki,
 159 and n.
 adoption, among Pañjâb Hill Tribes... .. 281
 Aetas of the Philippine Archipelago, congen-
 ers of the Andamanese 217, 246
 Afghânistân 3
 Afghâns in India 9, 14 f., 50, 61, 67, 70
afîm, opium 20
 Afrâsiâb, Beorâsâhsâ, k., of Persia 1 n.
 Afzal Khân, a commander 58 f.
 Aggarwâls, Baniâ section 268
 Aghâjî, Augugee, Governor of Larr... .. 104
 Aghâ Mirzâ Muḡammad Sâdiq 68
 Aghâ Rizâ Khân, envoy to Aḡmad Shâh 70
 Agnikulas, race or dynasty 162 n.
 Agnikuṇḡa, sacred place on Mt. Abû, 162 n., 166
 Agra, tn. 100 n., 101 n.
 agriculture, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes... .. 374
 Aḡmadâbâd in Gujarât... .. 11 n.
 Aḡmad Khân, Bangash, ruler of Farrukhâbâd,
 or Nawâb Ghazânfâr Jang 11 ff., 50,
 60 f., 64 ff.
 Aḡmad Shâh, Abdâlî, and the Indian Wazîr
 'Imâd-ul-Mulk (1756-7). Contributed by
 W. Irvine, late of the Bengal Civil Ser-
 vice 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff.
ahqî, beestings 351 n.
ahqî, *jhiwar* or *jhar*, milk collector 351
 Aibak Bâh, a chief 4
 Airâvata, elephant of Indra 381
 Ajûdhan, modern Pâkpattan 5 and n.
 Akâlavarsha, Râshṭrakûṭa, K., 287; Kṛishṇa
 II. 287 f.
 Akâlgaḡhâ, tn. 4
 Akbar, emp., the Khôkhars of his time 3 n.,
 8; the Gakkhars, 9; in Chuhṛa legends,
 73 f., 107
 Akbarâbâd and Aḡmad Shâh 51, 60, 63, 65
akshauhînis, army of 10 *anîkinîs* 392 f.
 'Âlamgîr II., Aziz-ad-din Emp. 11, 64, 68 n.
Alamkîravimarîṣinî, a work by Jayaratha 153
 Alchi, in W. Tibet, *mchodrtên* at, 88 f.;
 monastery, 148; or Alchi-mkhar-gog. 95 f.
 Aleppo, tn. 176 n.
 Alexander the Great in Pañjâb 2
 Alexandretta, Scanderoon, port of Aleppo 176 n.
 Algiers, Argeer 176 and n.
 Alif Ohela, Chuhṛa priest 29, 31
 Aligarḡ, Kol 70
 'Alî Qulî Khân, Dâghistânî, nicknamed the
 'Six-fingered', 11; whose daughter was be-
 trothed to 'Imâd-ul-Mulk, 14, 18, 48 ff., 49,
 125; or Hâlî-Kouli-Kaan 125 n.
 Alî Shâh of Kâshmîr 7 n.
 Allahâbâd and Capt. Jonathan Scott, 11; 67,
 68 and n.; or Halloe, and Richard Bell, 99,
 100 n.; ancient Prâg, capital of the Solar
 Dynasty 266 f.
 Aleppo, tn., and Richard Bell, 103 n., 130,
 133, 134 and n.
Al-lukandatu't-tujjâr, an inn near Nazareth, 178
 Alsopp, Mr., Alsop, the king's brewer, 174 and n.
 Am (Toda) for Yama 84
 Amarasiṇha, and other forms 167
amâvas, last day of the lunar month, 255,
 289, 301, 303, 312
 Ambâlâ, totemism in 52
 Ambikâ=Pârvatî 164 f., 170
amin, an official 351
amîrash, ornaments 308
 Amîrpur, vil. in the Pañjâb 2
 Amitagati, author of the *Subhâshitaratna-*
 sandôha 170
 Amôghavarsha or Vakpatirâja II., Râshṭra-
 kûṭa 165 ff., 287
 Anah or Hanna, tn., and Richard Bell 130, 133

- Anahilapattana, the Chaulukya Dynasty of, 151
 Anandpāl, resisted Mahmud's sixth invasion of India ... 4
 Ānandrāo, Maharāja ... 166 n.
anāṅgalekha, a love-letter of Mālagavati ... 153
 Anangaviti, character in the *Navasāhasāṅka-churita* ... 154, 156
 Anant, g. ... 301
 Anantaśayana, tn., Trivandrum ... 352
 Anapāya—Chōla, k., identified with Kulōtunga I ... 228 and n.
 Anavamala, an excrementitious product ... 376 n.
 ancestor worship, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 305
 Andamanese languages, 181 f.; are agglutinative, Grammar of, 183 ff.; the Theory of Universal Grammar applied to them, 217 ff., 317 ff., 353 ff.
 Andherī, in the Pañjāb ... 3
 Angkor, in Siam, temples in ... 284
 Anglo-Indian commercial terms, old ... 252
 Anhilvād, Chaulukya territory ... 166, 167 n., 171
 animal worship, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 306
 Animism, among the Turanian races, 204; among the Chins, 211; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 303
 Antā Mānkher, a Marhāṭṭah and Āḥmad Shāh ... 48, 55, 58 f.
anujanman, a younger brother ... 150
 Anūpshahr, tn. on the Ganges ... 15 f., 69
 Anwalah, tn., and Āḥmad Shāh ... 66, 69
 Apyi-Tomo-rDorje, an image at Nyemo ... 88
 Apostates to Hinduism ... 297
 Arabs seized Diu, 101 and n., 102; in Nazereth ... 177 and n., 178, 179 and n.
 Arakan, and Thos. Pratt ... 174
 Arbuda, mt., 157; or Ābū ... 162 and n., 166
 Archaeological Société D'Angkor, The French, 284
 Archaeology in W. Tibet, by the Rev. A. H. Francke, contd. from Vol. XXXV, p. 333
 — III—Inscriptions at Basgo and Nyemo: (a) The Fortress of Basgo, 85; (b) Hymn in honour of Seṅggernam-rgyal, 86; (c) Ancient ruined Monastery of Basgo, 87; (d) ruined Nunnery at Nyemo, 88; IV—Inscriptions at Daru (a) of King Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal, 89 ff.; (b) passage from a Votive Tablet of King bDeldan and Prince (or king) bDe-legs; (c) Sanskrit—Tibetan Votive Inscription by the Minister Thse-dbang-dongrub, c. 1800 A. D., 92; V—The Rock Inscriptions at Sheb, 93 ff.; Appendix—The Age of the Buddhist Stone Images at Ladākh, 97 f.; Supplementary Note ... 148
 Arjuna, the hero ... 162
 Arrabia, wilderness of ... 130 f.
arsham, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
ārśī, a ceremony ... 296
 artizans among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 274
 Arubar, Rupa, q. v. ... 6 f.
 Arunāchala, Tiruvannāmalai, tn. ... 352
 Arundhati, the wife of Vasishṭha ... 162
 Āryā stanza, suggested as appearing in the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 124
 Aryas, home of ... 264
āry-begī, chamberlain ... 66
āsān, sitting place ... 39
ashun, the king-crow, among the Chins ... 204
 Āst, Abdullah Khan ... 69 and n., 70
 Asia, Central, home of the Aryas ... 264
asinego, assenegers, young asses ... 133 and n.
a'so, Chin clans ... 206
 Asōka, and the Buddha *stūpas* ... 118, 121, 124
 assemblies, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 273
aṣṭhāpan, to place ... 43
 Aśugā or Saśiprabhā ... 155
asuram, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
 Atāipur, 'Atāipur, tn. in the Pañjāb ... 15 and n.
 Atāwā, tn. ... 109
Atharva Vēdā, recited ... 264
 Ath-bhōjā, goddess of Dharēch ... 42
āṭh-bhōjāwālī, eight-handed image of Dēvi. 35
āṭhī, Chuhṛa labourer ... 21
ātrā, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
 Atri, a Maharshi ... 164
Auchityālamkāra, a work by Kshemendra, 149 n.
 Audh, and Āḥmad Khan ... 61, 64
 Anliapur, in Siālkoṭ ... 3
 Avalokitesvara, Bodhissatwa sPyan-ras-zyigs, 86
 Avanti, co. ... 149
 Avantipati, K. Sindhurāja ... 150
 Avantisvara, K. Sindhurāja ... 155
avatār ... 262
 Aw, a Chin spirit ... 204
 Aydahā, or Mārān, nicknames of Beorāsāhsā, 1
ayōdaung, Chin cemetery ... 215
ayushmat, a salutation ... 119
 Āzīmābād, tn. ... 67
 Aziz-ud-din, Emperor Ālangtr II ... 11, 64
 Bābar, emp., during whose reign the Gakhars are first mentioned ... 8 f.
 Bābā Khan, a chief ... 8
 Babylon, visited by R. Bell ... 130 ff.
 Bādāl, a Kohrāna Rājā ... 2 and n.
 Bādālgarh, fort in the Pañjāb ... 2
 Bādī, caste ... 271, 274, 310
 Bādli, tn. ... 46, 49, 70
 Bādmti, g., in Keonjhal, or Biru dēotā ... 42
bād nār, evil-eyed ... 20
 Badrī Kasharam, in the Himalayas ... 253
 Badrī Nath, hills ... 35, 253

- Bagdad recaptured by Murad IV, 126 n.; Bagdatt (Tauris, Tabriz) visited by R. Bell, 128 ff.
- Baggá, sub-division of the Mair Sunâr ... 51
- Bagganogare, Bhágnagar, *q. v.* ... 128
- Bágh Subahdâr, grove in Allahabad ... 68 n.
- Baháwalpur, home of the Kahal sept ... 51
- Bahlol Khân, a chief ... 8
- Bahra (Bherá) in the Pañjáb ... 8 f.
- Bahrám, Rájá of Ghor ... 2
- Bairági, caste originally faqirs, 270 f., 279; bury their dead 283; 290; 304; salutation 370; occupations ... 373
- Baisákhí, a festival ... 302 f.
- Bakhshí, state official ... 350 and n.
- Bakhtiar Khiljí, attacked Bengal ... 266
- Bálá, son of Sânda ... 2
- Bálá, the Chuhra priest, 19, 26, 71 ff., 83, 107 f., 111, 114 ff., 135 f., 138 ff., 145 ff.
- Balala, Bankála, in the Pañjáb ... 5 and n.
- Balarâma, brother of Krishṇa, 376, 379 f., 382 ff.
- Balawa, S. Andamanese tribe ... 217, 221
- Bal Deo, a *fiká* of Jungá ... 34
- Balkh, tn. ... 46, 49
- Ball (V.) on the Nicobarese language ... 317
- Ballamgaḍh, fort, and Aḥmad Sháh, 48 f., 55 f., 58 ff.
- Bálmik's Daughter, Chuhra legend, 23 ff., 115, 136
- Baloches in India ... 9
- Balráam, g. ... 298
- Balrámi, Bráhmans, the Sârsut ... 266
- Balrámi Balarâma massacred the Kshatriyas 265 f.
- Balsan, Pañjáb State ... 296
- Baltí inscriptions ... 95
- Baltis in Ladákh ... 91, 93
- Balu-mkhar inscriptions ... 96
- Bammara Potanna, Telugu poet ... 376
- Bâna, poet ... 151
- Bânâ Sur ... 235
- Banâr, g. ... 255 f., 261 f.
- Bangálah and Aḥmad Sháh ... 61, 64
- Bangkok, Piprahwa Vase relics at ... 124
- Banglah, Faizábád ... 67
- Baniás, converted Kshatriyas, 265; sects, 268; 271 f.; marriage rules, 275 ff.; 279 ff.; 289; eating customs, 311; titles, 312; salutation, 370 f.; occupations ... 372
- banjar*, barren land ... 375
- Bannu, home of the Mandâr Afghâns ... 3
- Banshir spirits ... 303
- banyan tree worshipped ... 272
- Banyânt, sub-section of the Ghirths ... 52
- báolís, brooks, springs ... 272, 303
- Baoni, betrothal ... 282
- barágar, ornaments ... 303
- Baran, or Ūnchah-ganw, or Buland-Shahr and Aḥmad Sháh ... 15 and n.
- Barapa, a general ... 151
- Bárapa dynasty of Lâta ... 171
- Barbe, Father, and the Nicobarese language, 317, 322
- Barber caste, 371, 375; mediums at marriages ... 277, 282; 279, 311
- Bardani, a form of marriage ... 282
- Bareli, tn., and Aḥmad Sháh ... 66, 69
- Bâri of Kongo, temple of Deo Mata ... 255
- Barmaur, 350; ancient Brahmapura ... 351
- Barni, form of betrothal ... 282
- Basant Panchamí, a festival ... 302
- Basgo, fort in Western Tibet, inscriptions, 85 ff., 92
- Bashâhir, in the Himalayas ... 37
- Bashahr, valley, in the Himalayas ... 261
- Bâshuk, or Châldâ, g. ... 255 and n., 261
- Basi, home of the Muhammadans ... 270
- Basra, Bössara, Busara, port ... 103 and n., 130
- Batehru, (Pakká and Kachchhâ) Bráhmaṇ sept ... 52
- Bates, Capt. Dyer or Dier Roles, 174 and n., 175 ff.
- Bathsheba, Barsheba ... 179
- batrí* or *karáli*, music ... 302
- Battambang, in Siam, now French territory, has famous monuments ... 284
- Báwar territory ... 261
- Bay Wagers, see Oeiros ... 174 and n.
- Bêa, S. Andaman tribe ... 217, 219 ff., 238
- Béber, French Ambassador at the Magull Court, 1667 ... 100 n.
- Bêdâ tribe and sacrifices ... 298 f.
- bedhi*, an ewe ... 52
- Bêd-lagan*, matrimonial ceremony ... 292
- Bell, Richard, Travels of ... 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff.
- Bel Pâshi, in the Himalayas ... 261 n.
- Benares, tn. ... 67, 171
- Bengal and Aḥmad Sháh, 61, 64, 67; Bengalla, 101 and n., 174; and the Rájputts, 265, 267; attacked by Bakhtiar Khiljí ... 266, 270
- Beorâshâhsâ, Afrâsiâb, k. of Persia ... 1 and n.
- Bernier, on Tibetan dates ... 85 n.
- betrothal, among the Pañjáb Hill Tribes ... 282
- Bezhan, see Khawâs Khân ... 63
- Bhábrâs, caste ... 268, 312, 370
- bhadronjá*, a feast ... 313
- Bhâgal, State in the Himalayas ... 37
- Bhagavat Gîtâ* and the Rájputts ... 263
- bhagini*, sister ... 119
- Bhâgnagar, Bagganogare, in the Deccan, visited by R. Bell ... 123
- bhâgyá* (Bałoch), wealthy ... 349 n.
- Bhairôn, g. ... 298
- Bhaji, in the Himalayas ... 42
- bhakti*, faith ... 378
- Bhalâwag, in Keonṭhal, Jât Fair at ... 37 f.
- Bhalêr tribe ... 36

- Bhānd* (?) a cook 351
Bhāṇḍārkar, Dr. R. G., on the Vikrama era 170 n.
bhāṅg, intoxicant, 20; *bangg*... 105 and n., 175 n., 315
Bhāṅgwarīa, Brāhman sept 52
bhānwar, marriage service 282
Bhao, a Mahratta defeated by Aḥmad Shāh ... 12
Bharad [v] ayasa, a word in the Dogra inscription 148
Bharata, k., son of Dukshyanta 165
Bhardwājs, Brāhman caste 266
Bharēras, 308; or Thathērā caste 314
Bhārōwāl, c. in the Pañjāb, 3 f.
Bharth, a Kohrānā 2 and n.
bhata or *bhatwāl* 351 and n.
bhati (Prākṛit), brother 119
Bhāṭs, Brāhman caste 266, 297
bhattā, marriage fee 278
*Bhaṭṭī Rājput*s 3
Bhattiprōlu relics 121
Bhaṭṭipāt, *wizarat* 351
bhatwāl, *bhata*, 350 f.; or *tharēth* ... 351 n.
Bhāva, g. 263
Bherā, tn. in the Pañjāb, 2; or *Bhira* ... 9
Bherū, Mahājan sub-section 52
bhētīnit, scape-goat 39
Bhikhās, sub-section of the Rihāns ... 3 and n.
Bhills, aborigines of India 269
Bhīm Deo, Rājā of Jammā 8
Bhīma Kālī, goddess 298
Bhindrā, g. 261
Bhira for *Bherā* in the Pañjāb 9
Bhishmaka, k. of Kudina ... 376 f., 379 f.
Bhiyār, in the Pañjāb 37
Bhōa, in the Hill States... .. 271, 284
bhōg 41
bhoga, one who enjoys, etc. 349 n.
Bhogavati, snake-town in the under-world, 156 f., 158 and n.
Bhoh, possibly *Bhowa*, in the Pañjāb ... 7 and n.
Bhoja of Dhārā, son of Sindhurāja ... 150 n., 153; 159; legend, 163 n.; 165 and n.; 166 n., 167, 169 f.; date of 172 and n.
Bhojadeva, author of the *Sarāsvatikāṇṭhābharaṇa* 153
Bhowa, *Bhoh* 7 and n.
*Bhākya*l (Bhūgiā), a tribe 8
Bhundā, sacrifice 298 f.
bhūts, ghost, 296, or *bhūta* 318 n.
Biās, riv. 3 ff.
Bibliography, Andamanese, 220; Nicobarese, 321
Biduratha, k. 379
Bijlëshwar Mahādéo, the Lightning God, *Bijā* 37
Bijā, a *śikā* of Jungā, 34; cult of 37
Bilhana, author of the *Vikramāṇkadevacharita* 171
Bilo, in the Himalayas 261
Bimlinuts, old Anglo-Indian term 252
Bindrāban, on the Jumna, sacked by Aḥmad *Khān* 60, 62
Bīr, a noble of Ghazni 8 n.
Bīr Bhairōn, g. 311
birt, custom 374
Biru dēotā or *Baḍmān*, g. 42
Bisaulī, tn. 15
Bishan, g. 24
Bishnū Nand Gopāl=*Krishṇa*... .. 254
bishtā, adoption fee 281
Bithūr, *Brahmāvartta*, in Cawnpur Dist., reputed find of prehistoric implements at, 53
bkā blon, Tibetan ministers 89 f.
Blagden, Mr. O., 108; on the Nicobarese language, 322; 357
Blake, Mr., E. I. Co.'s Agent at Hugli ... 174
Bôhrās, *Vaiśya* section, 268, 271; marriage rules of, 275; 277; 279 ff.; death customs, 288; 289; 311; 314; 370; 372
Bojigngtiji, S. Andamanese, 217; identity of their language with that of the N. Group, 238, 245
Bojigyāb, S. Andamanese Tribe, 217, 221, 238
Bombay ceded to Britain 103 n.
Bompoka, Nicobarese Is., 318; numerals ... 361
Bonig's, Mr. M., vocabulary of Ōnge-Jārawa, 239 f., 243, 246 ff., 249 ff.
Bonnet, Father, on the Nicobarese language, 317
Bossara, Basra, 103; or *Bussera*, 127 n., 130, 132
Bothā, *Māhast*, g. 259 ff.
Bouillaye Le Gouz, De la, French Ambassador in India... .. 100 n.
boulder, bearing sculptures, at Daru ... 89 f.
Bradfield, near Sheffield, copper celts found at 55
Brahmā, g. ... 53, 263, 267, 376 and n., 378 f., 381, 384
Brāhman, a, in *Chuhra* legend, 23 ff., 139 ff.; and *Rukmini* 377 ff.
Brāhman sections, 52; or *Brammonists*, in Muscat, 98; women, 102; sub-division by occupation, 264 f.; migrations, 266; 269; 271 f.; marriages, 273, 275; 277; tribal details, 279 ff.; propitiation of the dead, 283 f.; purification, 289 f.; sects, 297; ceremonies, 300 f., 303 f., 309; titles, etc., 312 f., 370, 372 ff.
Brahmapura, tn., the modern *Barmaur* ... 351
Brahmāvartta, *Bithūr* 53
brahmcharj, celibacy 297
Brahmī characters in Dogra inscription ... 148
brahmya, form of marriage 376 n.
Brammonists, *Brāhmans* 98, 102
Brampoore, *Burhāmpur* 99 ff.
brihatprayoga, renowned example ... 152 and n.

- bronze implements of India ... 53 f.
- dBu-can characters in W. Tibetan inscriptions ... 85 f., 89, 95
- Buddha (*read* Rudder), Śiva ... 257
- Buddha, his doctrines in Tibet, 86; relics and the Piprahwa Vase, 117 ff.; 180; Sakya-muni ... 268 n.
- Buddhism, Kashmiri, in Ladākh, 88; among the Chins 211, f.; introduced into the Pañjāb Hills ... 268; 290
- Buddhist stone images of Ladākh, the age of, 97; in Gilgit ... 98
- Bühler, the late Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 117 f., 122
- Bukkamā, wife of Išvara ... 352
- Bombay, Bombay and R. Bell ... 102 f.
- dBu-med characters, modern, in Tibetan inscriptions ... 85
- ‘aBumde, k. of Ladākh ... 85
- Bundelkhand, and the Puars ... 166 n.
- Burgā Hill, near the Pabar riv. ... 262 and n.
- Burhānpur, Brampoore and R. Bell, 99, 100 and n.
- Burial customs among the Chins ... 214
- Burma ... 204
- Burmans and the Chins... 205, 210, 211 and n.
- Burmese language in the Nicobars ... 319
- Busée, Jesuit, in India ... 100 n.
- Bustām Rājā, Governor of the Pañjāb ... 1 f.
- Button-lac, shellac, old Anglo-Indian term... 252
- bunārd*, day-labourer ... 374
- Calendar tallies, Nicobarese ... 368 f.
- Callabria coast ... 175
- Camorta, isl., C. Nicobars ... 318
- Campbell, J. and R. Bell, Travels of, *q. v.* 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff.
- Cana in Galilee ... 177 f.
- Candia, 174; besieged by the Turks ... 175 and n.; 176
- Cannabis sativa*, hemp plant ... 175 n.
- Cannary, for Kanarese ... 98
- Car Nicobar, dialect, 317 ff., 354 ff.; numerals, 361 ff.; cocoanut reckoning, 365 f.; calendar ... 369
- Cashmeer, Ismīr (Smyrna) ... 128 f.
- Caste, distinctions, in the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 265, 275 ff.; Right-hand, of Madras 348 n.
- Catania, Cattenia in Sicily ... 175 f.
- Catherine of Braganza ... 174 n.
- Cawnpore ... 279
- Ceremonies, propitiatory, among the Chins, 207; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes... 289, 297
- Ceres, Pók Klai, among the Chins ... 207
- Cesaria Phillippi... 179
- Ceylon and Rām Chandar ... 41 f., 75, 136
- Chabord, Father, and the Nicobarese language 317
- Chadei, a *ṭiki* of Jungā, 34; cult of ... 36
- chadrās*, spirits ... 296
- chāgal*, leather bottle ... 56
- Chāirār, N. Andamanese tribe ... 217; 283
- Chakravarti princes ... 350 n.
- Chālāḍa, g, Bāshuk ... 255 and n.; 257 ff.
- Chāliā Khokharān, tract of forty village in the Pañjāb ... 4
- Chamba (a’Byamspa) Monastery in W. Tibet ... 85, 97
- Chambā State copper-plate inscriptions and official titles ... 348 ff.
- Champānir, c. in N. Gujarāt ... 166 n.
- Chāmūṇḍa, a Paramāra k. ... 167 n., 171
- Chanāls, a caste... 314, 370
- Chānanā, a *ṭiki* of Jungā, 34; or Chānanna .. 37
- Chandaladevī, Vidyādhari, a Silāhāra princess, wife of Vikramāditya ... 172
- Chandar, a Khōkhar chief, 5; or Haidar ... 5 n.
- Chandar Banśi, Lunar Rājput dynasty, 264, 267
- Chandniot, now Chiniot ... 3
- Chandragiri, tn. ... 352
- Chandrāvati ... 162 n., 166
- chandu*, hemp drug ... 315
- Changar, a caste ... 21
- Chappal, Brāhman sept ... 52
- chāp*, Sk. *chaṭa*, headman of a *parganā*. ... 349 ff.
- charas*, hemp drug ... 20, 315
- Charḍin, traveller. 125 n., 126 n., 127 n., 128 n.
- chāṛi*, district ... 351 n.
- charms and magic, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 309 f.
- charnamrūt*, water in which an idol’s feet have been washed ... 41
- Charōl, in the Himalayas ... 36
- chārpāl*, a couch... 283
- charvā*, food provided for a trade council in Tibet ... 274
- chaṭa*, *chāp*, *q. v.* ... 349 ff.
- Chauhāns, tribe ... 37
- Chaulukya inscription ... 170
- Chaulukyas of Anahilapattana... 151, 166, 171
- Chaurāh, *wizārat* ... 350
- chauri* or *ihāri*, tribal head-quarters... 270
- Checacull, Chicacol ... 101
- Chedi, co... 378
- chēlā*, disciple ... 296
- Chenāb, riv. ... 5
- chhāk*, daily wages ... 374
- chhatā* or *masān*, burning place ... 52
- Chhatrī tribe, 265; Rājputa, 271; marriages 275
- Chhimbās of Māler Kotla, and totemism, 52; 373
- Chicacol, Checacull, in the Ganjam district and R. Bell ... 101
- Chigtan Monastery in W. Tibet ... 88
- Child-birth customs among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 280

chillah, bow-string 58
 Chinavēṇkaṭādri, or Veṇkaṭārāya, son of
 Achyuta 352
 Chindwin, riv. in Burma 205
 Chinese language in the Nicobars 319
 Chingiz *Khān*, the, and the Sultān Jalālu'd-
 Dīn 5
 Chiniot, 2; or Chandniot 3 and n.
 Chins of Burma, Notes on, *q. v.* 204 ff.
chīrab, turban 18
 Chishtīs, tribe 51
 Chobhāe qaiñchī, triangle for punishment 47
 Chopard, Mr., and the Nicobarese language. 322
 Chowra, Nicobarese dialect, 317 ff.; words in,
 354 ff.; numerals, 361 f., 364; coconut
 reckoning 365 f.
chugās, dresses 308
 Chuhṛas, The, by the Revd. J. W. Young-
 son, Sialkot (continued from Vol. XXXV.,
 p. 336). V. — Superstitions, 19; VI. —
 Occupation, 20; VII. — Relations to Land;
 VIII. — Legendary Lore (1) Legend of
 Rāmsar, 21 f.; (2) Legend of the Marriage
 of Balmik's Daughter, 23 ff.; IX. — Tradi-
 tions (1) Bālā, The Priest of God, 26 ff.; (2)
 The One True God, 30 f.; (3) The Creation,
 71 f.; (4) The Story of Dhagānā, 73 ff.;
 (5) The Story of Dānā, ... 80 ff.; 106 ff., 135 ff.
chungam, custom, poll-tax 98
 Chung-mkhar, ruins of a castle at Nyemo 88
 Chūr, peak near Simla 261
 Chūrīshwar, Mahāsū, g. 261
 Cissera, Bible character 178
 Clothing among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 372
 Cobblers, shoemaker caste 271, 274
 Coconut reckoning among the Nicobarese,
 360 ff.
cofila, caravan, 128; or *kāfila*, 129; *coffelo*,
 130 f.; *caffeloe*... .. 133
 Coir, fibre, old Anglo-Indian term 252
 Colebrook, Jārawa Vocabulary, 217; 220;
 239 ff.; recovery of... .. 242, 322
 Commerroone or Gombroon, 102 and n.;
 Commarron, 103 ff.; Cammeroon 127
 Conge, Kung 101 f., 103 n., 105
 Cooke, Sir Humphrey, Governor of Bombay,
 1665-66... .. 103 and n., 123 and n.
 Copher, 179; *Khafārah*, *q. v.* 179 n.
 Copper-Age and Prehistoric Bronze Imple-
 ments of India by V. A. Smith, (continued
 from Vol. XXXIV., p. 244); Supplement... 53 f.
 Cornway, tn. visited by R. Bell 129
 Cows worshipped 304, 306
 Cremation, among the Todas, 84; Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes 270, 272, 283
 Cunningham, Sir Alex. 54

Customs, among the Chins—marriage, 212 f.;
 burial, 214; among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes—marriage, 275; sumptuary and
 naming, 308; eating, 311, 314; social ... 370
 Cyprus, Cypris... .. 176 and n.

dā, a chopper 210
dābāns, halls 350 n.
 Dacca, and Thos. Pratt... .. 173 f.
 Dachhā, ancestor of the Sūraj Bansi 267
dachhnā, *dakhna*, fee for spiritual service 41
dād, disciple 310
 Daddā, sub-section of the Ghirths 52
 Daddā, Chhimbā sub-section 52
dādhi, word of summons 273
 Dagōn, vil. in Keōṇthal 36
dāgs, demons 304
 Dahāk = Ten Calamities, title of Beorāsāhsā. 1
 Daityas, Titans, fiends 162 and n.
daivam, a form of marriage 376 n.
 Dakshmārag, faith of the Vaishnavas 272
dāl, a word of summons 273
 Dal, doll, old Anglo-Indian term 252
 Damaskus 178, f.
 Dānā, The Priest of God, Chuhṛa 80, 83,
 106 ff.; 137, 143 ff.
 dancing, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 372
dāndika, a punisher 349 n.
dāngṛā, an axe 38
 Danish language in the Nicobars 319
 Dankaur, tn., S.-E. of Delhi 16
 Dantavakra, a Dānava k. 379
Darikhānah, office tents in a camp 17, 58
 Darius Hystaspes 2
 Daru, in W. Tibet, inscriptions at, 89 f.,
 92; images, 97 f.
Dasarūpa, a work by Dhanainjaya 169 and n.
 Dasēhṛā, festival... .. 301 f.
 Dashāls, Pañjāb Hill Tribe 272
dasōthan, a puberty custom 281
 Datta Nagar, inscriptions 270
 Dāūd *Khān*, Dowd Caune, probably Dāūd
 Khān Qurēshī, Governor of Allahabad
 in 1670... .. 100 and n.
 Dāūd *Khān* Qureshī, 101 and n.; Governor of
 Dacca 174
 Daulat *Khān*, Governor of the Pañjāb 8
 David's Tower 179 and n.
 Davids, Rhys, Prof. and the Piprahwa Vase
 inscription 118 f., 122 f.
 Dawān, vil. in the Himalayas 34
 Dāwar, tn. in the Pañjāb, founded by Zamīn
 Dāwar of Ghor 2
 days of the month, Nicobarese reckoning of, 367
 dead, propitiation of, among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes 283; 305

- Debora, vil. in Palestine 178
 Deccan, home of the Sârsut Brâhmans, 266 f., 270
 bDechen-bZodpa, Tibetan copyist 93
 Deities of the Pañjâb Hill Tribes 273
 (n)Deks'an'put, spirit of the ground—Chin, 208
 bDeldan, k. of Leh, votive tablet to 92
 bDe-ldan-rnam-rgyal, prince of Ladâkh, 87; k. 97
 bDe-legs, prince or k. of Leh 92
 Delhi and the Khôkhars, 5 f., 8, 37; or Dih-
 li, and 'Imâd-ul-mulk, 43, 44 and n., 45 f.,
 49, 66, 70, 73, 75, 107, 109; conquered
 by Shahâ-bu'd-dîn Ghôri, 266, 267, ... 270
 Delmerick's, Mr. J. G., *History of the*
Gakk'hars 1
 Deobalpur, modern Dipâlpur, Debâlpur ... 5 n.
 Dêo Chand, a *ṣikâ* of Jungâ, 34; cult of ... 36
 Dêo Lârî, mother, goddess 255 f.
 Dêo Mata temple=Bari of Kongo 256
dêotâ 33 ff., 43, 253 ff.
dêsa, *manḍala*, q. v. 348 n.
 bDe-skyong-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladâkh, hymn
 to 86
 Dêvâllî, festival 108
 Dev Banâr, Dev-ka-Khâtal, in the Himalayas, 258
 Dêvî, goddess in Ratôsh, Kêonthal ... 35, 38;
 298; 300
 Dêvî Dhâr 35
dêvî-dvâlâ, a temple 298
 Dêvî Târâ, of Târâb, family god of the Kêon-
 thal Râjâs 33, 39 f.
 Dew, Deu, for Diu 101 and n., 102
 Dhâdi tribe 271, 314, 373
 Dhagâñâ, Story of, Chuhra legend ... 73 ff.
 Dhagî tribe 370
dhâk tree 52
 Dhaki tribe 271, 273.
 Dhanamjaya, author of the *Daśarûpa*, patro-
 nised by Vâkpatirâja II 169
 Dhanapâla, author of the *Pañyalachchhi*, con-
 temporary of Padmagupta 150 n.; 169
 Dhandhuka, a Paramâra 166
 Dhanesar, tn. 137
 Dhanika, 152; mentions Vakpatirâja... 168 f.
 Dhankar, vil. in the Pañjâb 3
 Dhânûn, from *dhân*, rice, a *ṣikâ* of Jungâ, 34; 37
 Dhar, vil. in the Himalayas 43
 Dhârâ, tn., 155; *Kulargâdhânî*, 155 and n.;
 159; 165, 166 and n., 169
 Dhârâvarsha, a Paramâra 166
 Dharêch, a hill *paragana* 33
dharma, ritual 376 n., 377, 383
 Dharto, g. 35
dhanûlar (Pañjâbî) = palace 3 and n.
 Dhault, g. 261
 Dhawar in the Himalayas 35
 Dheri Shâhân, ancient Taxila 2
 Dholkâ, tn. in Gujarat 172
dhôri = bride's value 278
 Dhûmarâja, a Paramâra 166
dhûnd, fire 39
dhûp, incense 42, 296
 Dhûrî, a *ṣikâ* of Jungâ, 34; cult of ... 36
 Dibâlpur, the ancient Deobâlpur and modern
 Dipâlpur 5 and n., 7 f.
 Dig, fort attacked by Ahmad Shâh 58
digvijayayâtra, march of conquest 171
 Dilîpa, an ancestor of Râma 164
dingî, stick used at adoption ceremony ... 281
 Dinkot, tn. on the Indus 9
 Dipâlpur, Dibâlpur, q. v. 5 and n., 7 f.
 Diu, Dew, Dio, attacked by the Arabs 1668
 or 1669 101 and n., 102
 divorce among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes. 277 f.
 Diwâli, festival 43, 302
 Diwân Rûp Lâl Bôhrâ, minister of Kângra... 268
 Dôdra, vil. in the Himalayas 35 f.
 Dogras in Tibet, 85, 91, 93; fort of ... 148
 Dôll, dal, split peas, old Anglo-Indian term, 252
 Dollers, Dutch coin 178 f.
 Domkhar in W. Tibet, tablet at 92
 Donde *Khân*, founder of Bisauli ... 15, 66 f.
 Dowd Caune, Dâud *Khân* Qurêshî, q. v.
 100 and n., 174
 Dowie, dagger or sword 54
 Dragspa'abum, k. of Lâdakh 85
 Drâs, in W. Tibet, images at 97 f.
 dreams among the Chuhras, 20; the Pañjâb
 Hill Tribes 309
 Druvabhata, a Paramâra k. 166
ḍûb, turf 281
Dudhiârâ, milk collector 351
 Duhshyata, k., husband of Sakuntalâ ... 165
 Dûm, a *ṣikâ* of Jungâ, 34; cult of ... 37
 Dûm, g. 261
 Dûm or Khumâli, the panchâyat 273
dumbah, fat-tailed sheep 17
durbâl or *drubiyâl*, see *ugrâkâ* 351
 Durgâ, goddess 40, 253
durj, a casket 59
 Durlabha of Aphilvâd 167 n.
Durrânî = the pearl-wearers, slaves of
 Ahmad Shâh 55
 Durr-i-Durrânî = Pearl of Pearls, title of
 Ahmad Shâh, 63 and n.; or Durrânî ... 70
dûshnâ, a cow's death 21
dût-bhût, evil spirits 349 n.
 Dvâraka, in Gujarât, home of Kṛishṇa, 377
 380, 382
Dvyâśrayakosha, a work by Hemachandra ... 172
 Dwâpar Yug 253
 East Indies, Travels of R. Bell in q. v.,
 98 ff., 125 ff., 173 ff.
 edolius, a bird venerated by the Chins ... 205

- ekādashi*, eleventh day of the moon ... 312
 Ekita Bay, in the Andamans ... 246
 elephants worshipped ... 304, 306
 Ellis, the late Mr. A. J., on the grammar of
 'savage' languages, 183; on the Andama-
 nese, 220; 237; on the Nicobarese, 317; 322; 353
 Ender, c. in Palestine ... 178
 Endere and Ladākhī inscriptions compared... 94 f.
 English spoken in the Nicobars ... 319
 enumeration, Nicobarese methods of... 360 ff.
ēremtāga, forest-man ... 219
 Esdraelon, plain of ... 178
 Etna, mt., Monte Bella ... 175 and n.
eugenia, a plant ... 208, 210
 Euphrates, riv. ... 130
 Europe, W. and the bronze cultivation ... 54
 Evil Eye, among the Chuhṛas, 20; the Pañ-
 jāb Hill Tribes ... 309
 excommunication, among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 297; 374
 exorcism, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 309

 Fāgū, hill *parganā* ... 33
 Fa-hian and the Śākya relics ... 118; 121 f.
 Fairs, in Keōñthal ... 37 ff.
 Faizābād or Banglah ... 67
 Faridābād and Ahmad Shāh ... 16, 48 f., 55,
 58, 70
 Faridūn, k. of Persia ... 1
 Farishta ... 5 n.
 Farrukhābād and Ahmad Shāh, 11 ff., 60,
 65 f., 68, 69 and n., 70
 Farrukh-nāmah, a Persian work ... 10
farsakh, three miles ... 67
 Fathgadh, tn. ... 66
 Fath Khān, a chief ... 66
 Faure, Father, on the Nicobarese language... 317
 Felucca, ffeluke, a small vessel ... 175 and n.
 festivals of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, table of,
 300 f.; details... 302
fallodoes, 179; possibly the Spanish *foldados*,
 a kind of trousers; or the Turkish *ferdže*,
 an outdoor cloak for women ... 179 n.
 Fleet, Dr. F., on the Piprahwa Vase inscrip-
 tion, 117, 119, 122, 123 and n., 124; on the
 Satāra inscription ... 165 n.
 Flower, Stephen, and the storming of Diu,
 101 n.; or John, 103 and n., 134 and n.,
 104 and n., 125, 127 and n., 128 and n.,
 131 n.
 Fontana, Surgeon, and the Nicobarese lan-
 guage ... 317
 fortune-telling among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 310
 Fraxington, Rob., Chaplain at Aleppo, 1665-70.
 134 and n.
 Francis Xavier's St., shrine at Goa ... 102 n.

 French, the, at the Magull Court, 1667
 100 and n., 101 and n.
 Führer, Dr., on prehistoric implements, 53;
 on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 117, 121,
 122 n.

 Gabriel, angel, among the Chuhṛas ... 75 f.
 Gādar or Jhājra, *q. v.* ... 282
 Gādhi, father of Viśvāmitra ... 162
Gadyachintāmanī, a work by Vādibhasinīha,
 deals with the life of Jivaka ... 285 ff.
 Gakkhars, and the Khōkhars, *q. v.* ... 1 ff.
 Gallile, Sea of ... 177 f.
 gambling at marriages, among the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes ... 276
gandharvam, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
 Ganēsh, g., in Keōñthal... 41, 282, 298, 304, 306
 Gaṅgā, riv., the Trimārgaga ... 158
 Gangaikonda-Chōla or Rājendra-Chōla I ... 288 n.
 Gaṅgaikondachōlēsvara temple ... 288 n.
 Ganges, riv. ... 53, 67, 70, 254, 271, 283, 303
ganja, hemp-drug ... 315
 Gannā Begam, wife of 'Imād-ul-Mulk ... 44 n.
gao-taktyah, bolster ... 18
 Garen in Keōñthal, fair at ... 37 f.
 Garh Kohranā, modern Kadyānā ... 2 n.
 Garhwāl, pass into Tibet ... 274
 garnet, button lac, shellac, old Anglo-Indian
 term ... 252
garur, a large heron ... 306
Garur Purāṇas, among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 284
 Garutmanta = Garuḍa ... 376
 Gary or Gayrey, Mr. H., acting Governor of
 Bombay, 1667 ... 103 and n.
 Gatty, Mr., on celts ... 55
 Gāun, a *fiškā* of Jungā, 34; cult of ... 37
gauntralā, natal ceremonies ... 281
 Gauṛ, original home of the Keōñthal rājās ... 42;
 266
 Gauṛ Brāhmins ... 266, 273, 279
 Gaurī, goddess ... 381
 Genazareth, lake ... 177
 genital organs worshipped by the Vam
 Mārgis ... 296
 German language in the Nicobars ... 319
 Ghābrū, Brāhman sept ... 52
gh'arā, earthen jar ... 19
 Gharāj, in the Simla Hill States ... 35
gharīdā, a gong ... 19 and n.
 Ghasṭṭā, a Chuhṛa name ... 19
ghazals, Persian odes ... 57
 Ghazanfar Jang or Ahmad Khān, *q. v.*... 11 ff.,
 50, 60 f., 64 ff.
 Ghīārā, ghī collector ... 351
 Ghirths, Kāngra sept ... 52

- Ghiyāsu'd-Dīn Balban, Sultān, and the Khô-khars ... 5
 Ghiyāz-ud-dīn, or 'Imād-ul-Mulk, *q. v.*, 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff.
 Ghorqā, *g.* ... 261
 Ghorī, Ghorīā, the descendants of Dahāk, inhabited the Ghor Hill ... 1
 ghosts, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes. 303; 309
 Ghulām 'Alī Azād, author of the *Ma'āṣir-ul-kirām fi tārikh-i-Bilgrām* ... 10
 Ghulām Ḥasan, Ṣamīn, author of the *Sharāif-i-ʿusmānī* ... 10 f., 49 n.
 Ghurī, sub-section of the Girths ... 52
 Gibello, Monte Bello, for Mount Etna. 175 and n.
 Gidar Khāl, Wazir sub-section ... 52
 Gilboa, mt. ... 178
 Gilgit, Buddhist images at ... 98
 gingerly, jinjeli, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Giridhar Sadhu, The Seasons of, *q. v.* ... 315 f.
 Girisha, *g.* ... 263
 (n)Glet, a Chin spirit ... 209
 Goa, visited by R. Bell ... 101, 102 and n.
 Gôdāvari, scene of *shrādhs* ... 305
 Gôdāwari ... 271
 Gods of the Hill Tracts, 290 ff.; origin of ... 296
 golah, store-house, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Goleonda, Guleander, diamond mines ... 101
 Goldsmiths, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 271, 275, 279, 311
 Gombroon or Commerroone, etc., E. I. Co.'s Factory .. 103 n., 104 n., 127, 128 n.
 Gonds, aborigines of India ... 269
 Gôpālji, *g.* ... 298
 Gorakh, character in Chuhra legend... 24
 Gorā, Kohrānā Rājā of Sharāb ... 2
 Gotamputa Sātakaṁni I., Andhra k. ... 172
 gram, chick peas, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Great Parent, The, Mother 'Li, worshipped by the Chins ... 204, 212, 216
 Greenwell, Canon, on prehistoric implements in India ... 54
 greetings, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 371
 Gujarāt and Tailapa, 151; and Sindhurāja ... 171
 Gujars, a tribe ... 8
 Gujrānwāl, tn. ... 82, 109
 Gujrāt ... 81
 gulāl used to paint the forehead ... 316
 gulbadan, silken cloth ... 308
 gulma, superintendent of woods ... 349 n.
 Gunabhadra-chārya, disciple of Jinasēnā-chārya, completed the *Mahāpurāna*. 287 f.
 Guṇādhyā, author of the *Brihatkathā* ... 151
 Gānd, Hill State, feudatory of Keonthal. ... 33
 Gundeman, tn. near Bussara ... 127 n.
 Gungeria, copper implements from ... 54
 gunny, jute cloth, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Gurū Nānak, Sikh reformer, 24; Bābā Nānak. 29 f.
 Guzzuratt visited by R. Bell ... 98 f.
 Gwalior, probably Kahlūr of the Hills ... 9
 Gyā and the Kshatriyas, 267, 270; scene of *shrādhs* ... 305
 rGyal-rabs, the, and Tibetan history... 87, 90 ff., 94, 96
 gyin-yè or yang-lai, bush ... 204
 Hadīqat-ul-aqdām, a work by Shekh Murtaẓā Ḥusain ... 10
 Hāfiẓ Rahmat Khān, a chief ... 66 f.
 hājib, door-keeper ... 18
 hak-kyi, a vulture of vengeance ... 216
 Hāla, 164; or Sātavāhana ... 165 and n.
 Halabas, Halloe for Allahabad ... 99
 halan, a feast ... 313
 Halāyudha, writer, lived under Vākpa-tirāja II ... 169
 Hālī, a care-taker ... 350 f.
 Hali-Kouli-Kaan, 'Alī Qulī Khān ... 125 n.
 Hamilton, G., and the Nicobarese language, 317, 322
 Hanna, tn. Anah ... 130, 133
 Hanol, in the Himalayas. 253, 255, 258 f., 262 f.
 Hanūmān, *g.*, temple at Mundā. 35; 41; 163; 298; 304; 306; 311
 haq-i-sardāri, a tribute ... 265
 Har, *g.*, 24; Shiv ... 262 n.
 hār, abduction ... 283
 haram, female quarters in camp ... 58
 Harasāla, Kailāsa, mts. ... 155
 Hardwār, scene of a Khôkhar defeat, 6; home of the Bairājī caste ... 270 f., 283 f., 305
 Harichandra's works and the story of Jivaka. 285
 Hari Krishṇa ... 380
 Har Nashak, a priest ... 111
 harpoon-head, Indian ... 54
 Harsha, Harshadeva, a Paramāra k., and Siyaka ... 167 and n., 168
 Hasanpur, tn. and Ahmad Shāh ... 60
 Hassan, son of Bharth ... 2
 Hast, Malik, probably a chief of the Jan-jūas ... 3 and n.
 Hāt, inscription at ... 270
 Hātakesvarakhyāh devo ... 158 n.
 Hātēshwari Durgā, with the eight hands 253; 261
 Hāti, a Gakkhar ... 8 f.
 hatyā, a profane act ... 39
 Hātkoṭī, mt. ... 254, 261
 Hāt-koṭī Ishwari Mātā, goddess ... 253
 havan, 281; havan, a sacrifice ... 298
 Hāzri-da-kotwāl, magistrate ... 350 f.
 heāng-hatu (C. Nicobarese dialect) = nine ... 368
 Helena, mother of Constantine ... 177 f.
 Hema, character in the *Navasahasānkacharita*. 155
 Hemachandra ... 171 n., 172

- Hermon, mt. ... 178
 Hidāyat, 'Alī *Khān* of Shukohābād... 49 and n., 59
 Hidāyat Bakhs, son of Afiz-ud-din ... 64, 68, 70
 Hill, Capt. and R. Bell ... 102 f.
 Hill Tracts, gods of ... 290 ff.
 Hill Tribes of the Pañjāb, see Pañjāb,
 264 ff., 289 ff., 370 ff.
 Himāchala, mts. ... 155
 Himalayas, Hinduism in, q. v. ... 33 ff., 253 ff.
 Hindu, names, and Muhammadan used to-
 gether, 2 n.; scriptures and caste subsec-
 tions among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 264;
 marriages, 278; 290; 297; festivals, 303;
 372; 374.
 Hinduism in the Himalayas, by H. A. Rose,
 continued from Vol. XXXV., p. 252. III.
 — The Twenty-two Tīkās of Jungā,
 Keonthal, near Simla, 33 ff.; Fairs, 37 f.;
 Appendix I. — Dēvi Tārā of Tārāb, 39 ff.;
 II. — The Goddess Ath-bhōjā of Dharech,
 42; IV. — The Legend of Mahāśū De-
 otā ... 253 ff.
 Hindus, resit Mahmud Sultān, 4; and
 totemism, 51 f.; converts to Muhamma-
 danism, 270; 306; 311; 314; 372; 374
 Hindūstān invaded ... 14 f.; 45; 49; 60; 64
 Hindustāni, in the Nicobars ... 319
History of the Rājās of Jammu mentions
 the Khōkhār Tribe ... 4
 Hsien-tsiang and Sākya relics ... 118, 121 f.
 (n) Hoi, a Chin giant ... 209
 Hōli festival ... 302 f., 315, 316 n.
 Hoshiarpur District, in the Pañjāb, and the
 cult of Miān Bibī ... 32
 Houghton's, Mr. B., Essay on the Languages
 of the Southern Chins ... 206 n.
 Household customs among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 280 f.
 Hugli, and Thos. Pratt ... 173 and n., 174
 hullah, a robe ... 63
 human sacrifices among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 298
 Humāyūn, Sikandar Shāh I. ... 5; 9
 Hūnā Rikkī, a Brāhman, destroyed the demon
 Kirmar ... 253 ff., 259, 261
 Hūnas, mentioned in the *Navasāhasānka-
 charita*, 157 n.; and the Huns, 168; and
 Sindhurāja ... 171
 Hunter, Sir W. W., and the writing of Indian
 languages ... 237
 Hussain, son of Bharth ... 2
 Ichhrā, near Lahore, founded by Ichhrā ... 3
 iddat, a period of time ... 278
 Ikhtiyār-ud-Din Altūnia, consort of the Sul-
 tānā Razviyat ... 5
 Ikshvāku, a warrior tribe ... 162
 Ilāchigir, a Sanyāsi mendicant ... 296
 illness, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 310
 'Imād-ul-Mulk, Indian Wazīr and Ahmad
 Shāh Abdālī, q. v. ... 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff.
 images, Maitreya, in W. Tibet ... 85, 88
 'imārī, closed litters ... 58
 Imminābād, tn. ... 80 ff., 111
 Index of Prakrit words in Pischel's *Gram-
 matik der Prakrit Sprachen*, Appendix, pp.
 121—132
 India and the Khōkhars, 4 ff.; and the
 Afghans, 9, 70; and Ahmad Shāh Abdālī,
 10 ff., 43 ff., 55 ff.; Copper Age and
 Prehistoric Bronze Implements of, 53 f.;
 the Paramāras in W. and S., 166 and n.,
 171; and the Nāga kings, 172; the
 Rājputs in Central ... 265 f.
 Indo-Chinese and Nicobarese languages com-
 pared ... 357 ff.
 Indra, g. ... 163 and n., 164, 376 f.
 Indra Boti-rnam-rgyal, prince of Ladākh ... 87
 Indus, riv. ... 5, 266, 279
 infanticide, female, among the Khōkhars, 1;
 among the Todas ... 84
 inheritance, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
 278 ff.
 initiation ceremonies, among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 297
 Inscriptions, at Basgo and Nyemo, W. Tibet,
 85 ff.; at Daru, 89 ff.; at Sheh, 93 f.; and
 the Endere, 95 ff.; on the Piprahwa Vase,
 117 ff.; at Sātāra, 165 n.; at Udayapur,
 167 and n., 169; Chālukya, 170; Nasik
 cave, 172; at Hāt, 270, 272; in Tyāgarāja
 temple, Tiruvārur, 288 n.; copperplate
 of the Chambā State, 348 f.; at Vijaya-
 nagara ... 352
Inshāe 'Abdullah, a Persian work ... 10
Inshāe Mīram, a Persian work ... 10
 Intercourse, among Chuhras, 20; the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes ... 371
 Intermarriage, among the Pañjāb Hill
 Tribes ... 276
 Intizām-ud-Daulah, a noble of Ahmad Shāh's
 court, 45 ff.; *Khān*, *Khānān* ... 70
 Iraj *Khān*, envoy to Ahmad Shāh ... 70
 Irānis, a tribe ... 47
 Ironsmiths, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 274
 Isā Nand, lands of ... 73
 Islām, 5 n.; upheld by Ahmad Shāh ... 51; 63
 Isma'īl *Khān* Balōch, a chief ... 9
 Ismir, for Cashmeer ... 128
 Ispahan, Spahawne, and R. Bell, 103 and n.,
 104 n., 125 and n.; and Stephen Flower,
 127 n.
 Isvara, a Tuluva k. ... 352

- Itāwah, tn. 70
 I'imād-ud-Daulah, Qamar-ud-din Khān ... 66 n.
iwī, Nicobarese spirits 318 and n.

 Jādavas or Yādavas, race 382 f.
 Jāds, tribe 275, 279
jāg, ceremony 34; 36, 39 f.
jāgaran, a whole night's devotion ... 255 and n.
 Jagdī Khāī, place mentioned in a Chuhra
 legend 74
jāgrā, worship 34, 260, 313
 Jahānabād, John a Badd, and R. Bell ... 100
 Jahangīr, k., mentioned in a Chuhra legend,
 74 f., 80
 Jahān Khān, commander under Aḥmad
 Shāh 44 f., 51, 60, 62 f., 70
 Jāt, Hill *pargana* 33
 Jaina religious works in Sanskrit, 285;
purāṇas as a basis of the Tamil Sanskrit
 poems which treat of the life of Jivaka ... 286 f.
 Jains, the Sarāogis 268
 Jakho, hill near Simla, 33; or Jhako... .. 37
 Jāl, son of Sānda 2
 Jāl, tn. on the Biās 6
jalakrīdā, a love play 158
 Jalālābād, near Oudh 67, 70
 Jalāl-ud-Din, Sultān of Ghazni, and the
 Khōkhars 5
 Jalāl-ud-Din Khaggā, ancestor of the
 Khaggās 51
 Jālandhar, tn., attacked by Jasrath the
 Khōkhar 6, 7, 8 and n.
jal parīs, water nymphs 303
 Jamadagni, hermit 162
jāmāh, full skirted coat 18
 Jambudvīpa 86
 Jammū dynasty and the Khōkhars 4
 Jamnah, riv. Jaman 59, 62, 65, 315
 Jāmshīd, k. of Persia 1
janamashatmī 313
 Jangbāz Khān, commander under Aḥmad
 Shāh 14, 50, 56, 60 f., 64 ff.
 Jānhāva, Chināb riv. 7
 Janjūhas, a tribe 9
 Janūba tribe 8
 Jarāsandha, k. of Magadha 378 f., 382 f.
 Jārawa, Andamanese tribe, 217; 219; words,
 239 ff.
 Jār Giārus, Pañjāb Hill Tribe 273
jarī or *masān*, cure used by Hindus 19
 Jār Katāls, Pañjāb Hill Tribe... .. 273
 Jasrath Shaikhā, son of Malik Shaikhā,
 6 and n., 7 and n., 8 and n.
 Jastrī, character in a Chuhra legend... 23 f.,
 138 ff.
 Jāt Fair at Bhalāwag, in Keonṭhal 37 f.
 Jat tribe, 8; and totemism, 52; and Aḥmad
 Shāh 12, 55, 58 ff.; 63; 271; 314; 370 f.
jāthērā, ancestor 34, 36
 Jāthīā Dēvi, in Patiāla 39
 Jātiks, Brāhman sept 36
 Jatriya tribe 8
 Jāt, g. 36
 Jaurā, sub-section of the Mair Sunārs ... 52
 Jawāla Mukhī temple 290; 298
 Jayadeva 153 and n.
 Jayaratha, author of the *Alamkāravimarśinī* 153
 Jayasimha Siddharāja, k. of Gujārāt... .. 172
 Jerusalem, visited by R. Bell 174, 177, 179
 Jesuits in India 100 n., 102 n.
 Jesvant Rāo Puar and the Puars 166 n.
 Jezrael, plain of 178
jhājā or *gādar*, form of marriage 232
 Jhang, in the Pañjāb 3
jhātā, *jhātā*, illegitimate children 279
 Jhaumprā, a Chuhra 26 ff., 71
jhāl, a swamp 53
 Jhilām, riv. 5
jhiwar, *jhar*, the *ahṛā*, q. v. 351
 Jhonjan Deora, in Shāmgin, inscription at ... 270
jhotiār, a messenger 350 f.
jhundā, a faqīr's whip 19
 'a Jigsmed-(etc.)-rnam-rgyal, example of a
 name of the second dynasty of Leh ... 91-
jijmān, a disciple 312
jilwadār, an attendant 15
 Jinasēnāchārya, began the *Mahāpurāṇa*, and
 composed the *Harivamśa-Purāṇa* 287
 jinjeli, gingerly, sesamum or tilseed oil, old
 Anglo-Indian terms 252
jinsālī, store-keeper 351
 Jipūr, family-god of the Rājā of Kotlēr. 34, 36
 Jivaka, the story of, 285; is based on the
 Jaina *purāṇas*, 286; in the *Mahāpurāṇa* ... 287
Jivakachintāmanī, the Tamil, the age of, 285 ff.
Jivamdhara-champū, by Harichandra 285
Jivamdhara-nātaka, by Harichandra 285
jizya, poll-tax 6
jñānarthis, seekers of wisdom 378, 384
 Joars, aborigines of India 269
jōg, spiritual science 296
jōg, combination of stars 312 f.
 Jōgī caste, originally mendicants ... 270 f.,
 275, 279, 283, 290, 310, 370, 373
 John a Badd or Jahānabād 100
 jokes, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes... .. 371
 Jomoi-mgonpa, the Nunnery at Nyemo ... 88
 Jones, Sir W., 44 n.; and the writing of
 Indian languages 237
 Joppa, visited by R. Bell 179
 Jordan, sea of 178
 Joseph, St. 177
jōtishā, astrologer 310

Jūbal, and the Kanaitis	273	Kaluwāhan, Kāhnuwān, <i>q. v.</i>	3
Jubbāl, Hill State	37	Kalyāna, Ohāluka capital	169
Jūd hills	4 ff.	Kāma, the blacksmith	1
Jungā (Keonthāl) near Simla, the twenty-two		Kāmadhenu, cow of plenty	162 n.
Ṭikās of	33 ff.	Kamāl Khān, Gakkhar chief	9
Junkann, custom house	99	kāmdārs, kārdārs, <i>q. v.</i>	350
Junkin, custom	99	kamkhwāb, gold brocade	14
Juwābir Singh, a Jāt, and Ahmad Shāh, 49,		Kamsa, enemy of Kṛishṇa	378
55, 58 f.		Kānā, in the Pañjāb Hills, home of the	
Jūwai, S. Andaman tribe	217, 221	Kanaujis... ..	279
Kābul, feudatory to Persia, 1; and Ahmad		Kanaitis, aborigines of the Pañjāb Hills, 265,	
Shāh	70	268, 271 ff; marriages	275 ff., 308,
Kabūlpur... ..	7 and n.	311 f., 314, 370, 372, 374	
Kachehh, E., subjected to Sindhurāja ...	171	Kanarese, Cannarry	99
Kadu plant	214	Kanāwar, 216; Buddhism in	263
Kadu-water, that in which a corpse is		Kanēts, a tribe	34 ff.
washed	207	Kāngra, near Sri Hargobindpur, founded by	
Kadyāna, ancient Garh Kohrānā, near		Rājā Vir Khān, 3 and n., 7; and the Ath-	
Qandahar	2 n.	bhōjā image, 42; totemism in, 52; home of	
kafan, a shroud	20	the Bōhrās	268
Kafirs of Kafirstan and enumeration ...	360	Kān Kōbjās, Brāhman caste	266, 279
Kāgadiārū, a letter-carrier	351	Kannah, name given to prisoners by the	
Kahal, sept	51	Abdālīs	60
Kahārs, caste of litter-carriers	58	kansharāṭ, a heron (?)	314
kahī or kahil, a weed	51	kānsī, spelter	275
Kahlūr, possibly Gwalior	9 n.	Kanthī and the Kanaitis... ..	273
Kāhnuwān, the ancient Kāluwāhan, right of		kapāl kirya, burial custom	283
the Bias, formerly held by the Khōkhars...	3	Kapila, a Maharshi or ancient sage	159
Kaid Rāj, k. of Mārwar, overran the Pañjāb.	2	kapilā, a kind of cow	304
Kailās, Himalayas, near which is the com-		Kapilavastu and Buddha relics .	118, 121, 124
mon home of the Aryas	264	karālī, batrī, <i>q. v.</i>	302
Kailāsa, Haraśaila mts.	155	Karāṅga and the Kanaitis	273
Kais Abdur-Rashīd, reputed ancestor of the		kārdārs, mēhtās or wazīrs, temple overseers,	
Mandār Afghāns	3	273 f.; or kāmdārs	350 f.
Kaithal, battle-field in the Pañjāb	5	Karēwā, irregular marriages	276 f., 279
kājāwah, panniers	58	Karka III called Kakkala or Amoghavarsha.	169
Kākā, a Chuhra name	19	karma, consequences of previous acts ...	383
Kakkala, Karka III	169	karmas, ceremonies	284
kalah, a hat	18	Karmikamala, an excrementitious product,	376 n.
Kalāhasti, tn.	352	Karōli, hill pargāna	33
Kalak Dās, a Chuhra	28 f., 31, 71	karrah-nāe, trumpets	55
Kālānaur, c.	7	Kārun, tribe, marriage rules	275 f., 279
Kālānj, hill pargāna	33, 40	Karvā Chauth, festival... ..	303
kālāpaka, its meaning	154 and n.	Kāsahrada, tn. in Gujarāt, identified with	
Kalaur, a tīkā of Jungā	34 f.	Kāsindra-Pālaḍī at Ahmedabad ...	170 and n.
Kalāvati, a character in the Navasāhasān-		Kashan, Pannuloe, <i>q. v.</i>	128 n.
kacharita	154, 156	kashidah, drawn-thread work designs ...	14
kalb, heart, centre	58	Kashmir, 7 n., 8; monks from, the probable	
Kali, Age, 164; Yug, 253, 258; goddess, 261, 264,		builders of the Basgo Monastery ...	87 f.;
290, 298, 303 f., 311		98; 254; 257; 259; 348	
Kālīdāsa, poet	149, 151, 153, 287	Kāsindra-Pālaḍī and Kāsahrada, <i>q. v.</i>	170 and n.
Kālīnga	344, 352	kastūrī, mask	110
Kālinjar, near Swābī	8 and n.	Katchal, one of the Nicobars ..	318
Kālowāl, head-quarters of the Rihāns ...	3	Katehr, Rohelah tn.	66
Kālū, in the Himalayas	261	kathā, recitation	302
		Katherine of Braganza... ..	103 and n.
		Kātīs, a tribe, and the Khōkkars	8

- Kaṭrah Maḥaldār Khān, tn. near Bādli ... 70
 Katrah Wazīr Khān, tn. on the Jamnah ... 65
 Kauchananagar (Deccan) and the Kshatriyas ... 267
 'kaung, rice-beer used among the Chins. 206 ff., 212 ff
 Kāverī, riv. ... 352
 Kāverū ... 261 n.
 Kavibāndhava, 'friend of poets,' a title of Vākpati... 150
 Kāwālah, in the Himalayas, temple at ... 36
 Kawālī Deo, a *ṭikā* of Jungā ... 34, 37
 Kayastha, Pañjāb Hill Tribe ... 271, 314, 373
 Kede, N. Andaman Tribe ... 217, 238
kelimṛiga, an antelope ... 155
kenrāta, Car Nicobar, a calendar ... 368 f.
kenrāta-kòh, Nicobarese tally stick ... 366
kenrāta ngṛji, Nicobarese tally by beads ... 367
kenyūṭi, a plant ... 347
 Keonthal, near Simla, the Twenty-two *Tikās* of Jungā in ... 33 ff.
 Keralas of Malabār, and the Muralas, said to have been conquered by Sindhurāja ... 171
 Kerosine oil, modern Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Kēshō, g. ... 24
 Kētu, evil star ... 297
 'Keu, a Chin spirit ... 204
khād, valley ... 303
 Khad Ashūi, in Keonthal, scene of the Siār Fair ... 41 f.
Khafārāh, caphars, copher, a tax ... 179 and n.
 Khaggā, a sept ... 51
 Khajūre Dogre, Brāhman sept ... 52
 Khālāshī, Hill *parganā* ... 33
 Khalatse Bridge inscriptions ... 96; 148
 Khanār, Himalayan State ... 37
 Khanāra tribe ... 275; 279
Khān Jāhān Kokaltāsh, or Mīr Ghulam Rasūl, foster-brother to 'Alamgir ... 68 n.
Khān Khānān, Intiṣm-ud-daulah ... 70
 Kharar and the Muhammadans ... 270
Khargāh, royal quarters in a camp ... 17, 53
 Kharī tribe, possibly the Khattars ... 8
khariṭ crops ... 265, 375
 Kharipur, early home of the Khōkhars ... 8
 Kharōlān, vil. in Siālkot ... 28
 Khāsh, and the Kanaita ... 273, 275 f., 279
 Khatēshwar, a *ṭikā* of Jungā ... 34, 36
 Khatri, tribe of mixed Brāhman and Kshatriya descent ... 265, 271, 275, 373
 Khattā, sub section of the Ghirths ... 52
 Khattars, possibly the Kharī tribe ... 8 n.
 Khawās Khān, 9 and n.; an Afghān poet under Aḥmad Shāh, also called Bezhan ... 63
khel, marriage rule ... 275
 Khēra, sub-section of the Girths ... 52
Khilāt, set of robes ... 44 f.
 Khizr Khān, Timūr's feudatory in Delhi ... 6
 Khmer (Mon) languages, and the Nicobarese. 216; 318; 357
 Khokharain, in the Hoshiārpur District, 1; or Tāhlī ... 3, 4 n.
 Khokharān, vil. in the Pañjāb... 2 n.
 Khōkhars, The, and the Gakkhars in Pañjāb History; by H. A. Rose. I. — History of the Khōkhars — A. — An account of the traditional History of the Khōkhars, by a Khōkhar of Khokharain, in the Hoshiārpur District, Pañjāb, 1 ff.; B — The Khōkhars of the Muhammadan Historians of India, 4 ff.; II. — A History of the Gakkhars ... 8 f.
 Khokrā Kot, mounds in the Pañjāb ... 2 n.
Khudāganj, tn. near Farrukhābād ... 16 n.
 Khud Giri, riv. ... 270
 Khumālī, the Panchāyat ... 273
 Khunlā, sub-section of the Ghirths ... 52
 Khurpā, Ohlīmā sub-section .. 52
 Khushālā *parganā*, in the Himalayas ... 40
 Kiālū, g. ... 261 f.
kimkhāb, silk cloth ... 308
 Kināri Khaṇḍāi, Himalayan vil., 253; Khaṇḍāi. 259
 King-Crow, *ashun*, among the Chins, 204 f., 208, 214
 Kirkuk, Kirkway, visited by R. Bell ... 129
 Kirmar, a demon ... 253 f., 256 ff.
 Kirtakā, a Brāhman woman ... 253
 Kiruṭṭiṇārāja (Kṛishnarāja) probably the Rāshtrakūṭa k. Akālavarsha-Kṛishna II ... 288
kiryā karm, funeral ceremony or shrādh ... 305
 Kishan, g. ... 24
 Kishan, Brāhman sept ... 297
 Kiyālū, g. ... 255 f.
 (n) 'Klo' seung, a burial stick used among the Chins ... 214 f.
 'ko'-Chin tribal distinction ... 206
 Kohan, in the Caucasus, copper arrow-head from ... 55
koḍ i maḍam, gifts ... 283
 Kohāru, sub-section of the Mahājans ... 52
 Kohāt, totemism in ... 52
 Koh Damavind, well of ... 1
 Koh-i-Nandana, tribe conquered by Mandār. 3
 Kohistān-i-Namak, tribe conquered by Mandār ... 3
 Koh Kirānā, ancient Kehrānā... 1 and n., 2 and n.
 Kokalla II., a Chedi k... 169
 Kokār Sankā, a Khōkhar, embraced Islām ... 5 n.
 Kokrā, Bustam Rājā ... 1
 Kol, for Aligarh... 70
 Kol, S. Andaman tribe .. 217
 Kōlis, a tribe, 86; in the Pañjāb Hills, 271, 276, 278 ff., 308 ff., 314, 370 f., 373 ff.
 Kōls, aborigines of India ... 269

- Konḍaviti, captured by Kṛishṇarāja... .. 352
 Koudul, S. Nicobar isl. 318
 Kōḍētrīrāja, captured by Nṛisimha 352
 Kōrā, N. Andaman tribe 217, 238
 Kosalas, in the *Narasāhasānikacharita*. 157 n., 171
kothei?, a messenger 351
 Kothī, hills of 8
kothī, state granary 350 and n., 351
 Kōti, Hill State, feudatory to Keōṇṭhal, 33,
 37, 42
 Kōti, vil. in The Hill States 34 ff.
 Kot Khāi, Hill State, 37; 273; centre of the
 opium trade 274
 Kotlā, in the Himalayas 261
 Kotlēr, in the Hill States 32, 42 f.
 Kourouk, *qāruq*, a prohibition ... 125 and n.
 bKrashis-mgon, k. of Leh 91
 Krishan, Brāhman section 264, 266, 311
 Kṛishna, g., 253, 254 n., 298; and Rukmini, 376 ff.
 Kṛishṇarāja, a Paramāra ... 165, 166 and n., 167
 Kṛishṇarāja, Kīruṭṭṇarāja, g. v. 288
 Kṛishṇarāja, son of Nṛisimha 352
 Kṛitavīrya, father of Arjuna 162
kṛitikaṇṇi, 'a clever poet', title of Padma-
 gupta 151
 Kshatriyas, in the Pañjāb Hills, 246; became
 Brāhman, etc., 265, 267, 271 f., 275; natal
 customs, 281; purification...289; 306; 311;
 314; 370; 372 f.
Kshattrachāḍimāṇi, a work by Vādibhasinba
 deals with the life of Jivaka 285 ff.
 Kṣiemendra, author of the *Auchityālamkāra*,
 149 and n.; 151 f.; mentions Vākpati-
 rāja II... .. 168, 169 and n.
 Kubācha, a Governor of Sind 5
 Kūi, in Rawāingarh, near the Burgā mts.,
 262 and n.
 Kūin, early inhabitants of the Pañjāb ... 265
 Kulachuris and the Hūpas 168
kulaka 154
kullah, mortars 59
Kullah-i-Khūnbārah, one of Aḥmed Shāh's
 cannon 59
 Kullā, Himalayan vil. 34
 Kulōttunga-Chōla I., identified with Anapāya,
 g. v. 288 and n.
 Kūlthi, a *ṭikā* of Jungā... .. 34, 36
 Kum or Kasvin, tn. near Tauris 128 n.
 Kumāranārāyaṇa or Sindhurāja, k. ... 154,
 165, 171
 Kumb-mēlā fair 139 f.
 Kumbharsain and the Kanait 273 f.
 Kumher, fort, attacked by Aḥmad Shāh ... 58
 'Kun, Chin clan ancestry 206 ff., 213
 Kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal, k. 91
 Kundina, tn. in Vidarbha 376, 379
 Kundinanagara, Kṛishṇa's capital 384
 Kung, Congo 101 f.
 Kunit, from which is Kanait 265
Kunghāin pūjā 304
 Kūpila, in the Pañjāb 6
 Kurukshētra, home of the Baurājī caste,
 270 f.; 284
 Kuśa, son of Ramachandra 53
 Kuśa-grass 162
 Kūsheli Deo, a *ṭikā* of Jungā 34, 37
 Kusumāvachūla, a Vindhyan spar 155
 Kutbu'd-din, viceroy of Delhi 266
 Kuthār, in the Himalayas 37
Kuvalaya, meanings of 163 n.
 Kwāra, vil. near Garhwāl 35 f.
 Kwātinyābōi, creek, in the Little Andaman. 246
 Kyālā, g. 262
 'Kyen, a Chin spirit 204
 Labānā or Lobānā sept... .. 51
 Lachehban Rājāon - Ke; or Signs of Royalty
 in Rājās, by H. A. Rose 32
 Lacrampe, Father, and the Nicobarese langu-
 age 317
 Ladahā Khān's tomb, near Kāngrā 4
 Ladākh, *maṇi* walls, 87; and Buddhism, 88;
 and the Baltis, 91; 92; 95; Buddhist stone
 image 97 f.; 148
 Ladākhī inscriptions and the Endere... 93; 95
Ladākhī Chronicles and the Basgo fort ... 85
 Ladākbis 93
 Ladhāriā, sub-section of the Ghirths... .. 52
 Lāhaul and Buddhism 268
 Lahore, 3; ravaged by Muizzu'd-Din, 4; and
 the Khōkhars, 5, 6 and n.; 7 f.; and 'Imād-
 ul-Mulk... .. 48 and n., 70
lai-lō, a Chin teacher 208, 213
 Lakh Dātā, Pañjāb Hill Saint... .. 290
 Lakhnau (Lucknow) 18, 67, 69
Lakkarhār, wood supplier 351
laksha, Sk. 363, 365 and n.
 Lakshman, g. 298
 Lakshmi, goddess 164, 165 and n.; 376, 378
 Lāmas, a tribe 275
 land, among the Chuhās, 21; rights among
 the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 374 f.
 Languages of Savages, a plan for a uniform
 scientific record of, see Savages ... 181 ff.,
 217 ff., 317 ff., 353 ff.
lanṭā, a stack of fuel 41 n.
 Lankā, co. 302.
 Lannoy, Benjamin De, Consul at Aleppo,
 134 and n.
 Lar, in Persia 104 f.
 Lāṭa and Sindhurāja 157 n., 171
 Latrobe's *Letters from the Nicobars* 322
 Laurā, Ohhimbā sub-section 52

Lāwī, vil. in Sirmūr 34	Mahākāla (<i>Mahākālaparrāṇi</i>), feast... .. 156
<i>lawṇ-gā</i> , pig sacrifice among the Chins ... 214	<i>mahākāshapatalika</i> , chief record-keeper ... 349
Lava, son of Ramachandra 53	<i>mahāmātya</i> , chief councillor 349
Lde-dpal-'akhor-btsan, k. of W. Tibet ... 96	Mahānadātā, g. 263
lē, Chin paddy-fields 210	Mahānphā, a <i>tiki</i> of Jungā, 34; cult of ... 36
Legends, Chuhṛa—of Rāmsar 21 f.; of the Marriage of Bālmik's Daughter, 23 ff.; The Creation, 71 f.; Story of Dhagānā, 73 ff.; of Dānā, 80 ff.; 106 ff.; 135 ff.	<i>Mahāparinibbāṇa-Sutta</i> , the and the Piprah- wa Vase 118
Leh, kings of 90 f, 97 f.	<i>Mahāpurāṇa</i> , the, and the story of Jivaka, 235; date of 287
Leiah, in the Pañjāb 52	Mahā Siva, and Mahāsū, <i>q. v.</i> 253 ff.
Lha-chen, dynastic name of the first dynasty of Leh 91	Mahāsū Dēotā, the legend of 253 ff.
Lha-chen=great god 96	<i>Mahāvṛtupatti</i> , a work 118
Lha-chen-jo-dpal, k. of Leh 91	<i>mahāvats</i> 332
Lhachen-kun-dgā-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladākh, inscription of, 89; identification of, 90; date 91	Mahesha, g. 263
Lha-rgyal, k. of Leh 91	Mahēśvara=Siva, g. 381
Lhayi-sras, dynastic name of Tibetan kings . 96	Mahi Kāhāshor=Mahisāsūra, g., 40 and n., or Mahi-Khashwa 41 n.
Lightning, g., Mahādēo, 37; among the Chins, 209	Mahlōn, in the Himalayas 36
Līkaṛ, a Chuhṛa name 19	Mahmūd (Mahāban ?) tn. near the Jumna, and Aḥmad Shāh 61
<i>likhnehārā</i> , a clerk 350 f.	Mahmūd, son of Bharth 2
Lipari, isles 175	Mahmūd Khān, heir-apparent of Aḥmad Khān 65 f.
Lisbon, 102; Lixn, and R. Bell 174	Mahmūd Sultan in the Pañjāb, 2; his sixth invasion of India 4
Lobānā or Labānā, sept 51	Mahmūd Shāh II., and the Khōkhars ... 5
bLo-bzang-thar-nyed, Tibetan copyist ... 93	Mahnā swamp, near Pariār 53
Lōgū, prince of Kōtlēhr, became a <i>dēotā</i> ... 42 f.	Mahrattahs and Aḥmad Shāh Abdālī...12, 13, 15, 18; or Marhaṭṭahs... 48 ff.; 55, 58, 61, 66
Lōhrī khichrī, a kind of food 302	<i>mahṭā</i> , an official 350
Lōnkrā, g. 238	Maindārth, tn. on the Tons, 253; or Maindā- rath 254 ff.; 259
Lotsava Rinchen bZangpo, a monk 148	Mainpurī and Ahmad Shāh 65 f., 70
Lucas, Sir Gervase, Governor of Bombay in 1668 103 n	Maitreya, Bodhisattwa, image in Chambā monastery, Basgo 85; 93 ff.
Lucknow museum contains some harpoon- heads 53	Majhog, abode of the demon Singī 257
Ludhiāna ravaged by Jasrath the Khōkhar, 6 f.	Majorca islands... .. 174
Lumbinī, birthplace of Buddha 118	Makara, crocodiles 158; 165 and n.
lūm, salt 51	Makkerru, sub-section of the Mahājans ... 52
Māchhī, caste 21	Mālafi, a character in the <i>Navasāhasāṅkacha- rita</i> 154, 157
Machhī-khān, rājā of Chiniot 3 and n.	Mālava, and the Paramāras 150
Madapollam, piece goods, old Anglo-Indian term 252	Mālavaminaketana, for Sindhurāja 150
Madhān, Hill State, feudatory to Keōnthal. . 33	Mālavarāja=Sindhurāja 155
Madhurā taken by Nṛsimha 352	Malay language in the Nicobars 319
Madras, Maddera slepotan, visited by R. Bell, 101; 344; the Right-hand Castes of 348 n.	Malaya, mts. 155
Magadhā and Achyuta 352	Malayan aboriginal and Nicobarese langu- ages compared... .. 357 ff.
<i>māghōjī</i> entertainm ent 313	<i>Malfuzat-i-Tīmūrī</i> , the, and the Khōkhars ... 6 n.
<i>maghrīb</i> , evening prayer 65	Malik Allāh-dād, governor of Lahore ... 8
Magic, among the Chuhṛas, 19; the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 309	Malik Hast 8 n, 9 and n.
Magulls mentioned by R. Bell 100	Malik Ikhtiyārū'd-Din, Altunia, <i>q. v.</i> ... 5
<i>Māhabhārata</i> , war, 35; and the Rājpūts. 265, 268	Malik Jasrat, son of Shaikhā 3
Mahādēo for Manūni, g, 35; Lightning, g, 37 ff.	Malik Kad, a noble of Ghaznī... .. 8 n.
Mahādev, g. 258	Malik Kalān, a noble of Ghaznī 8 n.
Mahājans, Kāngṛa sept 52	Malik Khusrau, last of the Ghaznivides ... 4
	Malik Shaikh 3, 6

- Malik Shaikhā, governor of Lahore ... 3, 6 and n.
 Malik Tātār Khān, governor of the Pañjāb ... 5
Malikānā dues 260, 263, 274
 Mālva and the Paramāras ... 166 and n.;
 170 and n.; 171 f.
 Mālwa and the Kshatriyas 267, 270
 Mālyavati, character in the *Navasāhasāṅka-*
charita 154, 156
 Man, Mr. A C, and the Nicobarese languages. 317
 Man, Mr. E H., and the languages of the
 Andamanese and Nicobarese ... 181,
 183, 220, 317, 322, 353 f., 357 f.
 Man, Col H, and the Nicobarese languages. 317
 Mīnasarovara, lake in Tibet 381
 Mānavadurga, taken by Nṛsiṁha 352
maṇḍala or *dēśa*, 348 n.; modern *pargana*,
 350; *maṇḍal* 350 n.
 Maṇḍalapurusha, compiler of the Tamil lexi-
 con 'Sāḷmapinigaṇḍu 288
 Mandār, son of Sāṇḍā 2 f.
 Mandār Afghāns, descendants of Mandār. 3
 Māndhātṛi, k. of the Ikshvāku race 165
 Mandi, Hill State 35
 Mandi Rohr, in Kapūrthala 4
 Mānekir or Malkhed, home of the Rathors... 169
maṅgalas, charms 121
 Mangla Devi, fort in Jammu 8
manhrās, spirits... .. 296
māṇi, a measure... .. 21
maṇi (Toda) buffalo-bells 83
maṇi-walls in Tibet 86 ff.; 92, 97
 Mānik-Thārī, day when the mussels rise to
 the surface of the sea 164 n.
 Mājughosha, Bodhissatva ('a Tam-dby-
 ang) 86; 90
 Mann, Dr. Oskar, on Aḥmad Shāh 10
 Mannū, Mu-in-ūi-Mulk... .. 70
 Manthara=Mandara, Mount 381
 Manu, progenitor of mankind... .. 162
 Manucci 100 n.; 174
 Manūn, in the Hill State 35
 Manūnī, a *ṭikā* of Jungā 34 f.
 Mānyakheta, cap. of the Rāthors of Manekir
 or Malkhed, plundered 169
 Mārān, a nickname of Beorāsāhsā 1
 Marāṭhas 166 n.
 Mardānā, in Siālkoṭ 3
 Marhaṭṭahs, see Mahrattahs, 48 ff.; 55, 58, 61, 66
 Mārī Buchiān, vil. in the Pañjāb 3 n.
mārīs, Pañjābī, forts 3 and n.
 Mārī Tappa, in the Pañjāb 2, 3
 Marriage of Balmik's Daughter, Chuhra
 legend 23 ff.
 Marriage, customs, among the Chins, 212 f.;
 among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 272, 275 ff.;
 of Hindus, 278 f.; of widows, 280; kinds
 of, 282; eight forms of 376 n.
 Marsh, Mr, E. I. Co.'s servant, at Dacca ... 174
 Mārwar, and the Kshatriyas 267; 270
 Mary, the Virgin 177
masdn or *jaṇī*, a cure; also a burning-place,
 or demon, 19; called *chhatā*... .. 52
mashrū, figured cloth 14
 Masulipatam, MasLepotan, visited by R Bell 101
 Masūn, sub-section of the Mair Sunārs ... 52
 Mathurā, sacked under Aḥmad Shāh. 51, 60,
 61 and n.; 62, 64, 70; and Jarāsandha, 382
 Matāna, for Fāgū Hill *parganā* 33
 Mātrīs, water nymphs 304
 Mau, tn. W. of Farrukhābād, 14 and n.; Mau
 Rashidābād 69 and n.
 Maund, a weight, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
 Maurer, and the Nicobarese languages. 317; 321
 Mayayamala, an excrementitious product. 376 n.
 Mayikamala, an excrementitious product 376 n.
 Mayūra, poet 151
mchod-rten, in Tibet 87, 88, 97
 medallions, raised and painted, in the Basgo
 Monastery 87 ff.
 medicines among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 315
Mēghasaṁdēśa, a work by Kālidāsa 287
mēhtās, *wazīrs* or *kārdārs*, temple overseers. 273 f.
 Merchants of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 274
 Merutunga's *Prabandhachintāmaṇi*, 159;
 163 n.; 167 and n.; 168 and n.; 169, 170
 and n.; 171 n.
 Messena, tn., seat of the silk manufacture. 174 ff.
 Metnēchya, Nicobarese standard of reckon-
 ing 365
 Miān Bibi, the Cult of, by H. A. Rose 32
 Miānwālī, totemism in 52
 Midnāpur 'celts'... .. 53
 migrations of the Hill Brāhmins 266; 272
 Mīhrāb, a descendant of Dahāk 1
 Mīhrābād, near Audh 67
 Mīhtar Mūsā, Moses 21 n.
 Mīnās, Mīnās, 5; aborigines of India ... 269
 Minorca isles 174
 Mi-pham mgon, Lama and viceroy of Leh ... 92
 Mirāsī, caste 21
 Mirath, tn., and Aḥmad Shāh 50, 60
 Mīr Ghulām Rasūl, *alias* Mīr Manjble ... 68 f.
 Mīr Jumlah, Sadr-uṣ-ṣudūr, and Aḥmad
 Shāh, 47; and Thos. Pratt 174
 Mīr Manūp or Mu'in-ul-Mulk-(Mannu)-whose
 daughter was betrothed to Aḥmad Shāh ...
 10; 43 and n.; 45 ff.; 70
 Mirowāl, near Siālkoṭ 3
 Mīr Šahib, for Sher Audāz Khān. 12, 14 ff.;
 50 f., 56 f.; 59; 61 ff.; 68 f.
 Mīrzā Bābā, son-in-law to Azīz-ud-dīn. 64, 70
 Mīrzā Tahmāsp, Miskim, a slave 10
 Missionaries, American Baptist, among the
 Chins 206 n.; 211

- Miyan 'Abdullah Šāhib who adopted Sher
 Andāz Khān 12
 Monastery ruins in W. Tibet 85, 87 f.
 Mongebell, Monte Bello or Gibello, Etna,
 175 and n.
 Mongol Monastery in Tibet, 'Sogpoi mGonpa,
 q. v. 87
 Mongols in Tibet 85, 87
 mong 'tēn, Chin, teacher 209
 monkeys, worshipped 304
 Mon-Khmer languages, 180; and the Nico-
 barese 216; 318; 357
 monuments, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes... 272
 Moores, Muhammadans, 104; in Tangier. 174 n.
 Morrisse, Capt. of the *Previdence* 177
 Moses, Mihtar Mūsā, among the Chuhras,
 21 and n.; 107; 137
 Mother 'Li, The Great Parent, worshipped by
 the Chins 204 ff.; 208, 211, 213 f.
movannīs, Kanait leaders, 265; or *thākurs* ... 268
 Mrigaṇḍa, a Muni 159
 Mrigāṅkagupta, father of Padmagupta ... 150
mṛṇālaśāṅkī, a lotus-root 155
 Mubārak Shāh, Sultān 7
 Mughals in the Pañjāb, 7; and Aḥmad Shāh,
 67; 264
 Muhammad, Sultān of Ghor 4, 5 n.
 Muḥammad Ḥasan, probably Ghulām Ḥasan
 or Šamīn 10 f., 64
 Muḥammad Šadiq, Sukhanwar, brother of
 Ghulām Ḥasan 10
 Muhammad Šālih, 'Sher Andāz Khān Bahādur. 11
 Muhammad Shāh III. 5
 Muhammad Shāh, and the Khōkhars ... 8
 Muhammad Tughlaq Shāh, and the Khōkhars. 5
 Muhammadan, and Hindu names used toge-
 ther, 2 n.; Scriptures, among the Pañjāb
 Hill Tribes, 264; migrations, 270; mar-
 riages, 278; puberty customs 281; dead,
 disposal of 283 f.; 290
 Muhammadans, and totemism, 51; Moores,
 104; conquered Mālva and Gujarāt, 171,
 284; dress of, etc. 372, 374
 Muhmād of Ghazni 8
 Mu'in-ul-Mulk, Mannā, 10, whose daughter
 married 'Imād-ul-Mulk 43 and n.; 70
 Muizzn'd-Din, ravaged Lahore 4
mukh dikāī, a marriage custom 276
 Mōl, a Star 306
 Mōlarāja, founder of the Chaulukyās of
 Anahilapattana 151
 Mulbe, in W. Tibet 97
 Mullā Sardār Khān, a chief 66 f.
 Mundā, Hill State 35
 Muñja or Vākpātirāja II. 159;
 165 ff.; 169 f.; 171 and n.; 172
muqaddam or *ugrākā*, a tax gatherer... .. 351
muqaiyash, decorated 56
 Murād IV., recaptured Bagdad from the
 Persians 126 n.
 Muralas, in the *Navasāhasāṅkacarita*. 157 n.; 171
mus'bih, a courtier 39
 Musalman, as k. of Ladākh 92
 Musalmans, the Baltis 91
 Muscatt, visited by R. Bell 101 f.
 Mykenae blades 54
 Myrabolam, Bimlinuts, old Anglo-Indian
 term 252
 Nachchinārkkiniyar, commentator, on the
Jivakachātāmāṇi 289
nād or ox, worshipped 304
 Nādaun, in Koṭlēr 33, 34, 37
 Nadinah, tn. and Aḥmad Shāh 60
 Nādir Shah's invasion of Hindustan, 14; and
 Aḥmad Shāh 63 n.
 Nāga kings in Rājputānā 172
nāgadīraka, snake-youth 157
 Nāga-Kshatriyas 172
 Nāgamāmbā, queen to Nṛisimha 352
 Nāgari writing 149
 Nāgar Mall of Akbarābad, opposed Aḥmad
 Shāh 65
 Nag-bansi or Takshak, the descendants of
 Beorāsāhsā 1
 Nāg Chauth, or Mahāsu, four gods 255
nāg dēvtā, snake god 304
 Nāg Panchamī, festival... .. 302
 Nāgpūr, home of the aborigines 269
 Nāgpur Praśasti, list of Paramāra kings,
 165 and n.; 172
 Nāhān, and the Kshatriyas 267; 270
nahshīrās 304
nāik, Naagg 98
 Nain, near Simla 34
 Najīb Khān, commander under Aḥmad Shāh,
 12, 15 and n.; 16, 44 f.; 51, 60, 62 ff.; 66, 70
nakskatar, evil star 312
namāz-i-maghrib, sunset prayers 59
 Nambi-Andār Nambi arranged the Tamil
 Scriptures 288 n.
 Nānak, Gurū 81; 136; 142
 Nancowry, C. Nicobarese, 317 f.; de Roëps-
 torff's dictionary of 369
 Nanda, traditional half-brother of Buddha. 119 n.
nān-i-tanak, thin bread... .. 17
 Narain, g. 256, 261
 Nārāinī Bālī Shradh, a funeral ceremony ... 284
 Narasa or Nṛisimha 352
 Narasimha or Narsi 167
 Narelah, tn., and Aḥmad Shāh 70

- Narmadâ (Revâ), goddess in the *Navasâhasânkacarita* ... 154 ff.
- narôl pûjâ*, secret ceremony ... 298
- nârû khulâi*, a marriage custom ... 283
- Narsingh, g. ... 298, 300
- Narwarkôt ... 75
- nasagchâs*, armed messengers ... 16 f.; 46 ff.; 50 f.
- Nashudî, on the Pabar riv. ... 258
- Nasik cave inscription ... 172
- Nasket*, a work ... 284
- Nat, a spirit among the Chins... 207 ff.
- Nathû, a Chuhra name ... 19
- Naushera, tn., in Chuhra legend. 79 f., 82 f.; 106, 109
- navagraha homa*, a ceremony connected with the planets ... 379
- Navasâhasânka, Sindhurâja ... 150 and n.; 151 and n.; 153 and n.; 154 ff.; 165, 169 ff.
- Navasâhasânkacarita* of Padmagupta or Parimala, by the late Prof. G. Bühler and Dr. Th. Zachariae. I.—The Manuscript, 149. II.—The Author, his time and work, 150. III.—Quotations from, 151 f. IV.—The *Navasâhasânkacarita*, 153. V.—Analysis of the Poem, 154 ff. VI.—Historical Events from it, 159 ff.; genealogical tree of the Paramara kings of Dhârâ and Ujjain, 165; details concerning them ... 166 ff.
- Nazareth, visited by R. Bell ... 177 and n., 178
- Nâzir* or *Seer*, an official ... 125 and n.
- Néog, in the Himalayas ... 37
- New Year's Day, ceremony at Nyemo, 88; among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 302
- Ngag-dbang-rgya-mthso, a Lama, contemporary of k. Sengge-rnam-rgyal ... 86
- ngapi*, pickled fish ... 210, 215
- mNgâris, ancient name of W. Tibet ... 94
- Niâzis, a tribe ... 9
- Nicobarese languages ... 181 ff.; 217 ff.; 317 ff., 353 ff.
- nidhâna*, a receptacle ... 119
- Nigalûs, Pañjâb Hill sect ... 311
- Niglîva inscription ... 119
- Nikala, near Lahore ... 5
- Nilâb, home of the Gakkhars ... 8
- Ninduna, a *parganâ* ... 9
- Nineveh, or Neneveigh, visited by R. Bell, 129 f.
- Nirandar Chandar, Râjâ of Kângra... 268
- Nirmand copper-plate inscription ... 349 n.
- Nissowânâs, sub-division of the Rihîâns. 3 and n.
- Nor-'adzin, a princess of Ladâkh ... 87
- Nôrâtâs, festivals ... 301
- Nôrâtrî, festival .. 302
- Norham harpoon ... 54
- Notâre, in Garhwal ... 261
- Notes on the Chins of Burma, by the Revd. G. Whitehead.—Religion, 204 f.; Tribal System, 206; Propitiatory Ceremonies, 207; Spirits, 208; Cosmology, Witches, Law, 209; Manner of Life, Tattooing, 210; Burmese Influence, 211; Customs—Marriage, 212 f.; Burial... 214 f.
- Notes on Ancient Administrative Terms and Titles in the Pañjâb, by H. A. Rose. 348 ff.
- Nrisimha, Narasa, son of Îsvara ... 352
- Numeral co-efficients, Nicobarese, 333; numerals ... 361 ff.
- Nunnery ruins at Nyemo ... 88
- Nurâbâd, S. of Agrah, contains the tomb of Gannâ Begam... 44 n.
- Nur-ul-hasan Khân, Sayyid, of Bilgrâm ... 68
- Nusrat, a Khôkhar chief, 3, defeated by Timûr; 6 and n.
- Nya-khri-btsanpo, 'a Lord of the earth' ... 86
- Nyemo, in W. Tibet, inscriptions at ... 85 ff.; 97
- Nyima-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladâkh ... 86, 92
- Nyurla (sNyungla) in W. Tibet, votive tablet at ... 92
- Oaths, among the Chuhras, 19; the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 308
- Ôbamambâ, wife of Nrisimha ... 352
- Occupations, Chuhra, 20; of the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 372 f.
- odhrâ*, high official ... 351
- Oeiros, bay of, probably Bay Wagers. 174 and n.
- ok-mi*, skilled Chin teacher ... 208
- Omens, among the Chuhras, 19; the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 306 f.
- Onge-Jârawa, Outer Andamanese Tribes, 217, 220; languages, 239 ff.; 243 f.; vocabularies ... 246 ff.
- Ootacamund ... 83
- opium, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes. 274, 315
- Oram Zebb, Magull ... 125, 132
- Orang-bukit, wild Malays ... 318
- Orang-utan, wild Malays ... 318
- Ormous, Ormuz ... 102 and n.; 103 and n.
- Ornaments, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 372
- ox or nâd, worshipped ... 304
- Oxinden, Sir George, Oxenall, President of Suratt, 1662-69 ... 101 and n.; 103 n.
- Pabar, riv. ... 262
- Pabâst, g... 255, 259 f.; 261 and n.
- Paço d'Arcos, Passe Darkas, tn. near Lisbon, 174 and n.
- Padmagupta or Parimala, author of the *Navasâhasânkacarita* ... 149 ff.
- Padmasimha, other forms ... 167

- Pahrī*, a record-keeper ... 350 f.
- Pākpattan*, the ancient Ajūdhan ... 5 n.
- pālāl*, Toda, a milkman ... 83
- Palankwe, Andamanese Tribe ... 246
- Palārī, in the Hill States ... 35
- Palestine, the travels of R. Bell and J. Campbell in ... 98 ff.; 125 ff.; 173 ff.
- Pālī, Pañjāb *pargand* ... 69
- Pallava, saint, ancestor of the Plaud sept ... 52
- palsrā*, an official ... 351
- Pālwi, vil. in Sirmur ... 34
- panch gavyā*, mixture used in purification ceremonies ... 289, 297
- panch jōg* ... 313
- panchak shāntī*, propitiatory hymns ... 309
- panchāyat*, council ... 273
- panch ratan*, five gems ... 305
- pandanus*, paste ... 347
- Pāṇḍavas, and the Cult of Kanēṭi ... 35; 253 f.
- Pāṇḍavs ... 21 ff.
- Pāṅṡi wizārat ... 350 f.
- panilā*, feast ... 313
- Pānipat, victory of ... 10
- pānā-watrā*, pimples ... 51
- Pañjāb, home of the Khōkhars and Gakkhars. 1
- Pañjāb and Totemism ... 51 f.
- Pañjāb, Notes on Ancient Administrative Terms and Titles in ... 348 ff.
- Pañjāb Hill Tribes, A report on, from a Native point of view, by Mian Durga Singh.—Tribes, Tribal Designations, 264 f.; History of Migrations—Tables of Hill Sections—Brāhmans, 266; Rājputā, 267; Vaisya, 268; Śūdras, 269; Mendicants, Tribal Head-Quarters, 270; Genealogical Tables, 271; Monuments, Caste Marriages, Totemism, Tribal Names, 272; Public Assemblies, Deities, 273; Trade, Artizans, 274; Marriage Customs, 275 f.; Divorce, Polyandry, Prostitution, 277; Inheritance, 278; Tribal details, 279; Widows, Household customs, 280; Adoption, Puberty, 281; Betrothal, Marriage, 282; Death, 283; Purification, 289; Religion, Gods, 290 ff.; Worship, Ghosts and Spirits, 296; Initiation, Sect, Priests, 297; Places of worship, Sacrifices, 298 f.; Festivals, 300 ff.; Animism, Worship, of Spirits, 303; of Ancestors, 305; of Animals and Trees, Omens, 306 f.; Sumptuary and Naming Customs, 308; Magic, Charms, Possession, Exorcism, Dreams, Spirit propitiation, Evil Eye, 309; Fortune-telling, Illness, 310; Abstention from Foods, Tribal Descent, Customs on Eating, Restrictions as to Women, 311; Pronouncing Names and Words, Courtesy Titles, Agricultural Superstitions, 312; Food and Drink, 313; Dining Customs, 314; Stimulants and Medicines, 315; Social Customs and Intercourse, 370 f., Clothing and Ornaments, Dancing and Singing, Occupations and Professions, 372 f.; Agriculture, Land Rights, etc. ... 374, f.
- Pannuloe, perhaps the modern Kashan. 128 and n.
- Panuān Jāts ... 3
- Parabrahmā, the supreme spirit ... 376 n.
- Parālī, Hill *pargand* ... 33, 37
- Paramāras of Mālava. 150; 157, 159, 161 n., 162 and n., dynastic list, 165; 166 and n., 167 ff.
- Paramāramahībhṛit, a name of Sindhurāja ... 155
- Paramāravamśaketn, a name of Sindhurāja... 150
- Paras Rām, ancestor of the Kshatriya ... 267
- pardā nishīn*, secluded women... 41
- pargandās*, 33 ff.; 274; or *maṇḍala*, 350 and n.; 351 and n.
- Parhālah, in the Pañjāb ... 8 f.
- Pariar, in the Unāo District of Oudh, its prehistoric implements ... 53 f.
- Parikshit, k., successor of Yudhishtira ... 376, 384
- Parimala or Padmagupta, q. v. ... 149 ff.
- pāris*, fairies ... 296, 304
- Pārsvābhyudaya*, a work by Jinasēnāchārya. 287
- Pārsvanātha-Tirthamkara ... 287
- Pārvatī, goddess... 378, 380 f.
- Pasand Khān, Shāh, a commander under Aḥmad Shāh ... 56
- pa-san* 'sayā, Chin teacher or priest ... 207 ff.
- Pashu-pati ... 263
- Passe Darkas, Paço d' Arcos, q. v. ... 174 and n.
- pasture, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 375
- Pātālā, a character in the *Navasahasānkacharita* ... 154 ff.
- Pathāns, a sect ... 264
- Pathrālā, sub-section of the Ghirths... 52
- Patna ... 100 n.
- Paṭnah 'Aẓimābād ... 68 n.
- pattā*, a leaf ... 52
- pattā*, blanket ... 351
- Patwāl, riv. in the Himalayas ... 261
- patwārī*, an official ... 351
- Paulinists, Pollistians, the Jesuits ... 102 and n.
- Paulomī, wife of Kasyapa ... 164
- Paundraka, an enemy of Kṛishṇa ... 379
- Pāvāgaḍh, Pāvakadurga, fort in C. Gujārāt. 166 n.
- pawn-zeng*, Chin burial offering ... 214, 216
- Payar, riv... 270
- Pegu-Tenasserim Coast, tradition of a Nicobarese migration from ... 360
- pehrā*, feast ... 313
- penates*, deceased fore-fathers, worshipped by the Chins ... 204, 206, 208
- Periyapurānam*, Tamil work by Śēkkilār ... 288 and n.

- Persia, S., copper implements, 54; and the travels of R. Bell and J. Campbell ... 98 ff.; 125 ff.; 173 ff.
- Persian characters in Sheh inscription ... 93
- Pesans or Pisans ... 179 and n.
- Peshâwar and Ahmad Shâh ... 70
- Phûgû, in the Himalayas ... 37, 42
- phases of the moon, among the Nicobareses ... 367
- Phe, on the Indus, votive tablet at ... 92
- Phyang, vil. in Tibet ... 88 f.; 92
- Pile Bheddi, Brâhman sept ... 52
- pilgrimage among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 270
- pîpal* tree ... 255, 272, 306, 311
- Piprahwa Vase Inscription ... 117 ff.
- pindli*, an idol ... 43
- pirâhan*, a light wrapper ... 18
- pir ghâzi*, tomb of Ladahâ Khân, in Kângra ... 40
- pîrs*, saints ... 290
- pisacha*, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
- Pischel, Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 119 f.
- pitri paksh*, dark half of lunar month, 289; ancestor's fortnight ... 305
- pitris*, manes ... 379
- Plaisant, Father, and the Nicobarese language ... 317
- Plaud, sub-section of the Mair Sunârs ... 52
- Plaung 'Saw, Chin, rain fairy ... 208
- Pôh Klai, Ceres, among the Chins ... 207
- Pôl 'Klenk, Chin, Lord of the Under World, 206 f.; 215 f.
- Pojarli, near Jungâ ... 34
- Pollstians or Paulinists ... 102 and n.
- polyandry, among the Khôkhars, 1; the Todas, 84; the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 277
- polygyny, among the Todas ... 84
- Poona and the Bôhrâs ... 268; 270
- Port Blair, in the Andamans ... 217, 219, 246
- Portman, Mr. M. V.—*Comparative Grammar of the South Andaman Languages*, 183; 220; 221 and n.; on The Fire Legend, 222; 245 f.; on roots, 232; 236 f.; Onge-Jarawa words, 239 ff.; Vocabulary ... 246 ff.
- Portugalls and Muscatt in 1650 ... 101 and n.; 102 n.; 103 and n.
- Portuguese language in the Nicobars ... 319
- Porvaroi for Paramâras ... 166 n.
- post, poppy-head or capsule ... 20, 105 n.
- potatoe trade among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 274
- Potter's Field, the ... 179 and n.
- Powar for Paramâras ... 166 n.
- Powargada, a fort ... 166 n.
- Prabandhas*, Jaina, on the Chaulakyas and Paramâras ... 170 ff.
- Prâg, Allahabad ... 266
- Prâhlâdana, a Paramâra ... 166
- prajîpatyam*, a form of marriage ... 376 n.
- Prakrit Words occurring in Pischel's "Grammatik der Prakrit Sprachen" Appendix, 121—132
- pralaya*, distinction ... 383
- Pramâra, old form of Paramâras ... 166 n.
- Pratt, Thos. of Dacca ... 173 f.
- pregnancy, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 280
- Prester John, co. visited by R. Bell ... 101, 128, 132
- priests, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 273
- Prithvivallabha, a name of Vâkpatirâja II., 165, 168
- professions, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 373 f.
- prostitution, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes, 277, 373
- psallava*, a leaf ... 52
- Ptolemâcus on the Paramâras ... 166 n., 172 n.
- Puars and Paramâras ... 166 n.
- puberty customs, among the Chins, 210; the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 231
- Pujârî, Himalayan vil. ... 262
- Pulo Milo, Nicobar isl. ... 318
- Pulmâyi, Andhra k., Siri-Pulu. ... 172 and n.
- Punnar, Hill *pargana* ... 33
- Punwar, for Paramâra ... 166 n.
- Purânas ... 264
- pûranmâshî*, full moon ... 43, 301, 313
- Purification, among the Pañjâb Hill Tribes ... 289
- Purohita, priest ... 162 n.; 271, 379
- Purushottama, a title of Vishnu ... 378
- Pûrapurâna*, that portion of the *Mahâ-purâna* composed by Jinasênâchârya ... 287
- pusman sammit karem*, a marriage custom ... 282
- Putupettanâpura (?) pillar of victory at ... 352
- Pwo-Karen alphabet, among the Chins ... 206 n.
- sPyan-ras-yzigs; Avalokitesvara ... 86
- Qâdirganj, in the Etah dist., and Ahmad Shâh ... 15, 70
- Qalandar Khân, envoy to Ahmad Shâh ... 70
- Qamar-ud-dîn Khân, a noble, and Ahmad Shâh 45, 47; or I'timâd-ud-daulah ... 66 n.
- Qandahâr, and the Ghorî tribe 1, 2 and n.; and Ahmad Shâh ... 65, 70
- qarâval*, skirmishers ... 16
- Qasûr, S.-E. of Lâhor ... 17 and n.
- Qizzilbâsh clothes ... 59
- Qubbah-i-shâh*, the Shâh's copula ... 58
- qûr*, an armed retinue ... 58
- qûruq*, Kourouk, a prohibition ... 125 and n.
- quwâchî bâshî*, the ... 56
- Rab-brtan lhartse, Basgo castle ... 86 f.
- rabî* crops ... 265, 375
- Rabstan-lha-rtse, a royal palace in Basgo fort ... 85

- Radie, (? Rai near Teheran), visited by R. Bell ... 128
- Raḍūpāṭi = Raṭṭapāṭi or the Rāshtrakūṭa king Koṭṭiga ... 164
- Raḍūpāṭi, tn. or co., and k. Siyaka ... 168
- Rae Sāl, ruler of the Salt Range ... 4
- Rahīr tribe ... 271
- Rāhū, evil star ... 266, 297
- Rāhus, a tribe ... 275
- Rai Bhīm or Bhalīn, a chief ... 7 and n.
- Rai Ghalib, a chief ... 7
- rainbow, among the Chins ... 209
- Rai Sārang, a Gakkhar ... 9
- Rāitā, a *tika* of Jungā 34, or Rāihā ... 37
- Rājāna, Hill *parganā* ... 33
- Rājā Vir Khān, founder of Kāngra ... 3
- Rājendra-Chōḷadēva, *alias* Kulōttuṅga-Chōḷa I, or Suṃgandavirtta-Chōḷa, names of Anapāya Chōḷa... 288 and n.
- Rājendra-Chōḷa I, or Gangaikonda-Chōḷa. 288 n.
- Rajpur, prehistoric implements from ... 53
- Rājputānā 98; and the Nāgā Kings ... 172; 265
- Rājputā, 41; and totemism ... 52
- Rājputā, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, subdivisions decided by descent, 264; or Chhatris, 265, 271, table of sections of, etc., 267 ff.; marriage rules, 275 ff.; death customs, 288; food, 211; titles, 312; Salutation, 370 f.; occupations ... 372, ff.
- rākṣasa, a form of marriage ... 376 and n., 378
- Rām plundered Ceylon ... 136 f., 142
- Rāma, g. ... 298
- Ram Chandar, ancestor of the Rājputā, conquered Ceylon ... 41 f.; 302
- Ramachandra ... 53
- Rāmadēva, a Paramāra k. ... 166
- Rāmagrāma *stūpa* ... 118
- Ramah, visited by R. Bell ... 179
- Ramāṅgada or Yaśobhaṭa, minister of Sindhurāja... 154 ff., 172
- Rāmāyana ... 265
- Rāmgangā, riv. ... 69
- Rāmgarh-Hill inscriptions ... 118
- Rām Līlā ceremony ... 300
- Rāmpūr, Hill *parganā* ... 33
- Rāmsar, Chuhra legend of ... 21 f.
- randhamī, a cookshop ... 163 n.
- Rangoon ... 106
- Ranjā Bhoj, in Chuhra legend ... 75
- Ranvin Sairi and the Kanaitā... 273
- Rāō Chhabitā of Delhi, ancestor of the Bagga sept ... 51
- rāshis, stars of fate ... 307
- Rasin or Raisin, M., of Lyons, and R. Bell, 128 and n.; 129
- Ratēsh, Hill State, feudatory of Keōnthāl ... 33, 36, 42
- Rāthīs, Rājput section ... 268
- Rāthors of Mānekin or Malkhed ... 169
- Ratnachūḍa, character in the *Navasāhasāṅka-charita* ... 154, 157 ff.
- Ratnavatī, tn. ... 157 ff.
- Ratn Pāl, son of Sanda... 2 and n.
- Rāt (Marāthī) = horse-soldier ... 348 n.
- Rāvati, daughter of Rivata ... 376
- Raverty, Major, on the Khōkhars and Gakkhars ... 1, 6 n., 7 n., 8 n.
- Rāvī, riv. ... 107
- Rawāl Deo, a *tika* of Jungā ... 34, 37
- Rāwan ... 75, 253
- Rāwat (Guzarātī) = horse-soldier ... 348 n.
- Rāwats, a Rājput section ... 268
- Rāwin, Hill *parganā* ... 33
- Ray, Mr. Sidney, on the application of the Theory of Universal Grammar ... 181, 183; 221, 342 n.
- Raziyyat Sultāna assisted by the Khōkhars... 5
- Reggio, Regium, in Italy ... 175
- Rēhrs, a caste ... 370, 373 ff.
- Religion of the Chins, 204; of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 290 ff.; 371; 374
- remarriage, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes, 277; of widows ... 280
- Revā, Narmada or 'Saśāṅkasūti riv., and goddess, in the *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*, 154 ff.
- Rice, modern Anglo-Indian term ... 252
- rice-beer, *kaung* ... 206 ff., 212 ff.
- Ridgeway, Prof., on Persian copper implements ... 54
- Rihān, a Pañjāb sept, probably the Rihāns, 2 and n.
- Rink, Dr., and the Nicobarese languages ... 317
- ritvika ... 376 n.
- Rivata or Raivata, k. of Ānarta ... 376
- rnām-rgyal, dynastic name of the second dynasty of Leh ... 91
- Röepstorff, F. A. de, and the Nicobarese languages ... 317, 321, f., 353, 369
- Rohelah soldiers under Aḥmad Shāh, 15, 60, 66, 67
- Rohtās, fort, founded ... 9
- rolī, saffron ambergris ... 316
- Rosen, Danish Missionary, and the Nicobarese languages ... 317
- rōt, a loaf ... 25, 42
- Rudar, Śiva, 254, or Buddar ... 261 ff.
- Rudrāditya, minister of Vākpātirāja II. 169 f.
- Rukmabāhu=Rukmi ... 377
- Rukmakeśa=Rukmi ... 377
- Rukmanētra=Rukmi ... 377
- Rukmaratha=Rukmi ... 377
- Rukmi, son of Bhishmaka ... 376 f.; 380, 383
- Rukmini Kalyanam, by G. R. Subramiah Pantulu ... 376 ff.

Rummindēt and Buddha relics ... 118 and n.	Salva, k. 376, 379
119, 124	Sāmāna, in the Pañjāb 7
Rūpar, (Arūbar), and the Khôkhars, 6 f.;	Samangs of the Malay Peninsula, congeners
and the Muhammadans 268, 270	of the Andamanese 217; 246
Rūrā, a Chuhra name 19	Samdhan, vil. on the Ganges, near Farrukhā-
	bād 10
Sa'adat Khān, Afrīdī Afghān 12	Samding Monastery on the Yamdok Lake ... 88
*Sachī, wife of Indra 162 and n.	Šamīn, Ghulām Ḥasan, author of the <i>Sharāif-i-usmāni</i> 10 f.
sacrifices, among the Chins, 207; called	Saminatha Aiyar, Pandit, on the <i>Jivakachintā-</i>
Bhundā, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes	<i>maṇi</i> 285
298 f.; 305	Samuthalla near Lahore, scene of a Khôkhār
<i>sadāgatipravṛtta</i> , meanings of ... 163 n.	defeat 5
Sadpor, (Baltistan) inscriptions ... 95 ff.	Sanctuary, in Keonṭhal 41
<i>ṣadr-uṣ-ṣadūr</i> , chief almoner 64	Sāndā, a Kohrānā Rājā founded Sāndar in
Sādū, in Patiāla... .. 39	the Pañjāb 2 and n.
Sa'dullah Khān, a Rohelah Nawab ... 66, ff, 69	Sandal Bār, in the Pañjāb ... 2 and n., 3 n.
and n.	Sāndar, c. in the Pañjāb 2
Sāer, fair at Khaḍ Ashnī in Keonṭhal, 41; or	Sāndī, tn. in Oudh 67
Shērī 302	Sani, evil star 266, 297
Safdar Jang, Nawāb and Aḥmad Shāh. 11,	Sanjaulī, in Keonṭhal 33
14 f., 16 n., 17	Saṅkachūda 157
Sagāī or Sôtā, form of betrothal 282	<i>sankalp</i> , alms 40
Śāhasānka=Sindhurāja 156, 165	Saṅkhapāla, k. of the Nāgas, in the <i>Navasāha-</i>
<i>sahemavetrah</i> , golden staff 159	<i>sānkacharita</i> 154 f., 158 f.
Sāhityadārpaṇa, a work 153	Sankrānt Sāwanī, festival 302
Sahswān, <i>pargandā</i> , in the United Provinces . 69	<i>sansār</i> 378, 384
Šaifipur or Šaifpur, adopted home of Sher	Sanskrit, vehicle of the Jaina religious works,
Andāz Khān 12 and n.	285; poems, and the story of Jivaka ... 286
Šaif-ud-daulah, Nawāb, chief almoner under	Sanyāsī caste, originally mendicants, 270 f., 279
Azīz-ud-dīn 64, 68	283, 290, 370, 373
Sain dynasty, of which are the Keonṭhal	Sāōnī, festival 308
Rājās 42	Saphet, Saffhet, tn., in Palestine, visited by
Šaivas, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,	R. Bell 178
probably the Shukan Brahmins 266	Śārada (Kashmir) characters in inscription 98
n.; 272, 290, 297, 314	Śārada, writing 149
Šaiva Tamil Scriptures, <i>Tirumūṇai</i> ... 288 n.	Śārada, g. 263
Saiyids 77	Sarāe Nabī, near Mathurā 61
Šaka=Musalman 352	Šarang Khān, general under Maḥmūd Shāh
Šaka era, 170; or year, 820=287 A. D. ... 287	II., defeated the Khôkhars 5 f.
Šākī Singh, Rājā, a recollection of Sakyamu-	Sarāogis, section of the Baniās 268; 303
ni, introduced Buddhism into the Pañjāb	Sarasyatī, goddess 150 n., 164
Hills 268	Saraswatī, riv. and the Sārsuts ... 266, 279
Šāktaks, a caste 290, 297, 314	<i>sarbandā</i> , dresses 308
Šākti, goddess 290	Sardār Khān, a Mughal... .. 67
Šaktis, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 272	Sardinia, Sardna, and R. Bell 174
Šākyamuni=Buddha, a recollection of 268 n.	Sarinhe, Brāhmaṇ sept 52
Šākyas, "brethren of Buddha" in the Piprah-	<i>saropā</i> , <i>serpaw</i> , a sash 127; dress of honour. 132
wa Vase inscription... .. 117 ff.	<i>sarshôbbhā</i> , ornaments 308
Šālār Jang, Nawāb, and Aḥmad Shāh 67, 70	Sārsut, or Balrāmī Brāhmans... 266, 273, 279
<i>sale</i> , a measure 207	Sartiras, Rājputs of mixed descent ... 268
Salīm Khān, a chief 8 n.	<i>sartôre</i> , children born of customary marri-
Salīm Shāh, Sultan Islām and the Gakkhars. 9	ages 276, 278
Sallamity, tn. visited by R. Bell 133	Šasānkasūtī, riv. the Narmadā or Revā ... 155
Salnā Patti, vil. in Rāwīgarh 258	Šasikaṇḍa, k. of the Vidyādhars, in the
Salt Range, home of the Gakkhars 1	<i>Navasāhasānkecharita</i> 154, 157 f.
Salutations among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 370	Šasikānta, mt. 157, 159

- Sasiprabhâ, princess of the Nâgas, in the *Navasâhasânâkacarita*, 150, 154; called Âsugâ ... 155; 156 ff.; 172
- Saspola, in Tibet, 85; inscription... 86, 88, 97; 148
- Sâtâra, inscription from, 165 n.; and the Bôhrâs ... 268; 270
- Sâtavâhana or Hâla ... 164 and n.
- Satyaguna* = *sattva-guna*, quality of goodness ... 376 n.
- Satyâ Nârâin, festival ... 303
- sauhrîd*, *sauhrâ*, parents-in-law, etc.... 19 and n.
- Savages, (The Languages of), A Plan For A Uniform Scientific Record of them. Applied to the Languages of the Andamanese and Nicobarese by Sir Richard C. Temple, 181; I.—The Theory of Universal Grammar (a) The Theory, 182 ff.; (b) The Course of Grammatical Development. The Sentence is the Unit of all Speech, 189 f.; (c) Skeleton of the Theory, 191 ff.; (d) A Brief Exposition of The Theory, 195 ff.; Table of Comparative Grammatical Terms, Diagrams, explaining the lines upon which the Theory is worked out, 198 f.; (e) Methods of Analysing the Sentence, 200 ff.; II.—The Theory of Universal Grammar applied to the Andamanese Languages. Prefatory Remarks. I.—General Description, 217 ff.; II.—Grammar, 220 ff.; III.—Etymology, 229 ff.; IV.—Phonology 236 f.; V.—The Northern and Outer Groups, 238 ff.; Appendices—A.—The Fire Legend in the Bojiungji Group, 245; B.—Ônge Vocabularies, 246; Portman's, 247 f.; Bonig's, 249 f.; C.—Andamanese Tribal Names according to the Aka-Bêa Language, 251; III.—The Theory of Universal Grammar applied to the Nicobarese Language. Prefatory Remarks. I.—General Description, 317 ff.; II.—Grammar, 322 ff.; III.—Etymology, 336 ff.; IV.—Phonology, 353; V.—Comparison of Dialects, 354 ff.; VI.—Comparative Philology, 357 ff.; Appendices—A.—Nicobarese Reckoning, 360 ff.; B.—Reckoning of the Days of the Month, 367; Car Nicobar Calendar ... 369
- Sayce, Prof. A. H., on Sumerian religion ... 204
- Sayyid Kings and the Khôkhars ... 8 n.
- Sayyid 'Abd-un-nabî, *faujdar* of Mathurâ ... 61
- Sayyids, Muhammadan section ... 264
- Scanderoon or Alexandretta, the port of Aleppo ... 176 and n., 177
- Seicillia, isl. visited by R. Bell ... 175
- Seinda, Seynda and J. Campbell ... 103 n.
- Scott, Capt. Jonathan, and Indian History... 10 f.; 68 n.
- Sekkîlâr, Chôla minister, author of the Tamil *Periyapurânam* ... 288
- Seljang-probably γSer-leang Monastery in Basgo Fort ... 85
- sép khullî*, Chuhra labourer ... 21
- Senart, M., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 122, 124
- Sengge-rnam-rgyal, k. of Ladâkh, 85; hymn in his honour ... 86 ff.
- Serash, Shirâz tn. ... 105
- Seringapatam, stormed by Îsvara ... 352
- Sêshâdri, tn., Tirupati ... 352
- Shâh 'Abbâs, captured Ormuz in 1662. 103 n.; 126 n.
- Shahâbâ'd-dîn Ghôri conquered Delhi ... 266
- Shahâdat-i-Tarrukhsîyarwa Jâlus-i-Muham-mad Shah*, a work by Mirzâ Muhammad Bakhsh, Ashob ... 10
- Shâhan Shâh, Ahmad Shâh 'Abdâlî ... 11
- Shâhdarrâh, tn. opposite Delhi ... 44
- Shâh Daulâ, shrine in Gujarât... 9 n.
- Shah Doulâh, saint, in Chuhra legend ... 80
- Shâhî, birthplace of Sher Andâz Khân ... 12
- Shâhîs, a caste ... 71 f.; 82
- Shâhjahanâbâd and Ahmad Shâh ... 11, 13 ff.; 43 ff.; 48 ff.; 66 f.; 69
- Shâh Mugîm or Mukîm, in Chuhra legend, 77 and n.
- Shâhpur, in the Pâñjâb... 3
- Shâh Sâfi, grandfather of Shâh Salaimân, 126 n.
- Shâh Salaimân, Shaw Sollyman, 105 or Sulaimân ... 125 and n.; 126 n.; 127 n.
- Shâh Walî Khân, minister of Ahmad Shâh Abdâlî ... 11, 14
- Shaikha, fort in the Pâñjâb ... 3
- Shaikh Bayazid Kalkapûr Sawânî ... 9
- Shaikhs, Muhammadan sect ... 264
- Shamanism, among the Turanian races, 204; the Chins ... 211
- Shambhu, g. ... 262 f.
- shâmîlât*, community ... 374 f.
- Shamsher Bahâdur, a Marhattah and Ahmad Shâh ... 48 and n., 55, 58 f.
- Shanêi and Jân, a *tîkâ* of Jungâ ... 34, 36
- Shanêti, a *tîkâ* of Jungâ ... 34, 36
- shankrânt*... 313
- Sharâb, tn. in the Pâñjâb, founded by Bahrâm of Ghor ... 2
- sharâb*, strong drink ... 20
- Shâthi, in the Himalayas, ... 261
- shâtîrî*, a runner ... 18
- Sharva, g. ... 263
- Shaw Sollyman, for Shâh Salaimân ... 104, 125, 128, 132
- Sheh, in W. Tibet, rock inscriptions at ... 93 ff.
- Sheekh* Allahyâr, the Martyr ... 11

- Shekh Mutaẓā Husain, surnamed Allahyār
Sāni, author of the *Hadīqat-ul-aqālim* ... 10,
68 n.
- Shellac, Garnet, Buttonlac, old Anglo-Indian
terms ... 252
- Shepherd Caste among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
271, 275 f.; 278 f.
- Sher Andāz Khān, Saiyad, called Muham-
mad Sālip and Mīr Shāhib ... 11 f.; 14, 49, 55,
56, 59, 61 f.; 68 f.
- Shēr Chand, Rājā of Kāngrā ... 268
- Shergaḍh, tn. and Aḥmad Shāh ... 60
- Shēri or Sāēr, festival ... 302
- Sher Khān and the Khōkhars ... 5, 8 n.
- Sher Shāh, Sultān and the Gākkhars... 8 n.; 9
- Shibji, g. ... 298
- shikōṭā, payment in grain ... 274 f.
- shikōṭhā, hereditary right ... 375
- Shill, Hill *parganā* ... 33
- Shirāz, Serash, tn. ... 105
- shisham tree ... 77
- Shivāji, g. ... 298
- shivālā temple ... 298
- Shiv Rātri, festival ... 302
- Shiv Shankar, Śivā, g. ... 262
- Shoemakers and Cobblers among the Pañjāb
Hill Tribes ... 271, 274
- Shom Peñ, Nicobarese dialect, 317 ff., 354 ff.;
enumeration, 360 ff.; cocoanut reckoning, 365
- Shorāb, tn. in the Pañjāb, destroyed... 2
- Shorābwāli Pahāri Hill... 2
- shrādh, funeral ceremony, 284, 289; or *kiryā*
karm ... 305
- Shujā-ud-daulah and Aḥmad Shāh ... 11 ff.,
45, 61, 66 ff., 69 f.
- Shukal, a Brāhman sect ... 264, 266, 297 f.
- Shukohābād ... 59
- Shu'labpūri Begam and Aḥmad Shāh ... 48
- Siālkoṭ and the Khokhars ... 3, 4, 7 n.
- Sicily ... 175
- Sickness, among the Chuhṛas, 20 the Chins... 208
- Siemreap, in Siam, has famous monuments... 284
- Sigar, in the Himalayas ... 37
- Sikandar Shāh I., and the Khōkhars... 5, 7
- Sikāndrah, tn. ... 15
- Sikes', Major, copper implements ... 54 f.
- Sikhaṇḍaketu, a character in the *Navasāhasān-*
kacharita ... 157
- Silāhāra princess, wife of Vikramāditya ... 172
- Silavanti, wife of Kalak Das, the Chuhṛa ... 28
- Silena or Silenia in Cyprus ... 176 and n.
- Silla and Charibdis ... 179
- simantamaṇi, head jewel ... 157
- Sindhala or Sindhula for Sindhurāja. 167, 170
- Simhabhaṭa, a Paramāra k. ... 167
- Simhadeva, son of Siyaka ... 165 n.
- Simhala ... 352
- Simla Hill States, religious cults of ... 33 ff.,
253 ff.
- Sindh-Sagar Doāb ... 2
- Sindhula or Sindhala for Sindhurāja ... 170
- Sindhurāja, *alias* Navasāhasānka, k., patron
of Padmagupta; 150 and n., 154, 171; 151
and n., 153 and n., or Kumāranārāyaṇa 154,
171; other names ... 155; 156 and n., 157
and n., 158 f., 164 ff., 169 ff.
- Singing, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 372
- Sipāhdār Khān, Nawāb ... 68
- Sirhind, fort ... 7
- Siri-Pulu or Puḷumāyi ... 172 n.
- Sirmūr ... 270
- Sisophon, in Siam, has famous monuments... 284
- Siśupāla, k. of Chedi ... 376 ff.
- Sitā, and Rāwan among the Chuhṛas... 75;
136; 142
- Sitā, poetess ... 163 and n., 167
- sitachāmaraḍhāraṇe *niyukta*, a fan-bearer ... 155
- sitachchhāda, a swan ... 155
- sītochchhvasitahetu, meanings of ... 163 n.
- Siva, temple of, at Tārab, in Keonṭhal, 40,
158 f., 164 n., 172, 254, 257 n., 262 n.,
290, 300, ff., 304, 311, 381
- Sivaliṅga ... 159
- Siyaka, k., 150 n., 158, 159, 164 and n., 165
and n., 167 and n., 168, 171
- ṭSkal-bzang, queen of Ladākh ... 87
- Skeat and the Nicobarese language ... 322
- Skyid-lde-nyima-mgon, k. of the C. Tibetan
dynasty ... 96
- Sman-bla, vil. in W. Tibet ... 93
- Smith, Mr. R., E. I. Co.'s minister at Surratt 101
- Smyrna, Cashmeer, Ismīr, ... 128 f.
- Snakes worshipped ... 304, 306
- Social customs, etc., among the Chuhṛas, 20;
restrictions, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
311 f.; customs and intercourse ... 370 f.
- Sōdra, Chenāb riv. ... 4
- Sogpoi mGonpa, Mongol Monastery in Basgo. 87
- Sohanpur inscription ... 270
- Sōhgaurā inscription ... 118
- Solar dynasty ... 264, 267
- Somasinha, a Paramāra k. ... 166
- Somāvati Amāvas, festival ... 303
- Someśvara, court poet of Viradhavala ... 172
- Somēśvara Mahādēva, temple at Pariar, con-
tains a collection of metal implements ... 53
- Sōnāri inscription ... 121 n.
- (n) Sōng, a Chin giant ... 209
- Sonpat, tn. ... 70
- Sorcerers, among the Chuhṛas ... 20
- Sōtā or Sagāi, form of betrothal ... 282
- Spahawīe for Ispahan, 103; or Lar, 104, 105,
125, 128, 130 f., 134
- spindī karam, death ceremony ... 284

- spirits, among the Chuhṛas, 20; worshipped by the Chins, 204, 208 f., 214; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 296, 303, 309 f.
- Sriharsha, author of a *Navasāhasāṅkacharita*. 151
- Sri-Harshadeva, i. e., Sīyaka ... 159, 165, 169
- Sri-Hātakeśvara, Śiva temple ... 153
- Śrīpurāṇā*, a work which refers to the life of Jivaka ... 285, 287
- Śrīraṅgam, tn. ... 352
- Siṭvallabha or Vākpatirāja II. ... 165, 163
- Si-Vardhamāna ... 285
- śrōtāāpannas*, candidates for sanctity ... 122
- Steg-thsang-ras-chen, a Lama ... 86
- Stars, lucky and unlucky ... 307
- Stimulants, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 315
- St. Jno. de Acra ... 177 f.
- St. John the Evangelist ... 179
- Stromboli ... 175
- stūpes*, opened by Aśōka, 118; in honour of the Śākya ... 120 ff.
- Sūds of the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 264 f., 269, 272; and polyandry, 277 f., 297; of Madras, 348 n.
- Sūds, section of the Vaiśyas, 265, 268, 271; and marriage ... 275; 277; 279 ff.; 283, 289, 311, 314, 370, 372 f.
- Sugar, old Anglo-Indian term ... 252
- Sugga, Brāhman sept ... 52
- Sūjaka for Sīyaka, Sindhurāja ... 158
- Sūka, a Brāhman ... 376
- Sukēt, in the Hill States ... 35
- sukārti*, word in the Piprahwa Vase inscription, possible meanings, 117 and n., 118, 120 ff.
- sukshma* ... 384
- Sūlāmaninigaṇḍu*, Tamil lexicon, compiled by Maṇḍalapurusha, date of ... 288
- sulka*, superintendent of tolls ... 349 n.
- Sultān Islām or Salīm Shāh Sur ... 9
- Sultān *Khān*, brother of Najib *Khān* ... 65 f.
- Sultān Mahmūd ... 2
- Sultān Muhammad of Ghor ... 4
- Sultān Sārang ... 8 n.
- Sultānpūr in Kūlā, pass into Tibet ... 274
- Sumgandavirtta Chōla or Rājendra Chōlādēva 283
- Sunārs, Mairs Sunārs, a sept ... 51
- sūp*, winnowing sieve ... 20
- Superstitions, among the Chuhṛas, 19; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 306 f., 312
- Sūraj or Solar Rājput dynasty ... 264, 267
- Sūraj Mall, a Jāt, and Ahmad Shāh ... 46, 4, 51, 55, 58
- Surat, Richard Bell at 101 and n., 102 n., 103 and n., 128 and n., and Thos. Pratt ... 173
- Surbulan *Khān*, Governor of Ahmadābād ... 11 n.
- sursat*, fines in kind ... 56, 59
- Survival of Old Anglo-Indian Commercial Terms, by Sir Richard Temple ... 252
- sūtak*, impurity ... 19, 281
- sūtak pītak* ... 275
- Sutlej, riv. ... 270
- svakīya* ... 123
- Svoboda, Dr., and the Nicobarese language ... 317
- swatharma*, mental condition ... 377
- swayamvara*, selection of a husband by a princess ... 376
- Sylvain Lévi, Prof., on the Piprahwa Vase inscription ... 120 ff.
- Symon, the Tanner ... 179
- Tabagāt-i Akbari*, and the Gakkhars ... 5, 8
- Tabagāt-i Nāsiri*, a work which mentions the Khōkars or Khōkhars ... 4
- Taber, mt. ... 177 f.
- Tābō, N. Andamanese tribe ... 217, 238
- Taboo, or ceremonial prohibition, among the Chuhṛas ... 20
- Tabriz, Tauris or Towreys, visited by R. Bell. 123
- Tabu, its effect on the Nicobarese language. 319
- Tāhlī for Khokharain ... 4 n.
- Tailapa, k. of Kalyāna, sent an expedition against Gujarāt ... 151
- Tailapa II., k. of Kalyāna ... 169, 171
- Taimūr Shāh ... 63
- Taiyibeh, Taiba or Tyabe, visited by R. Bell. 133
- Tājū'l-Ma'-āsir, the work which contains the earliest mention of the Kōhars or Khōkhars. 4
- Tak-bansi, the descendants of Beorāsāhsā, 1 and n.
- takhts*, platforms ... 58
- Takshail, Taxiles, founder of Takshala or Taxila ... 2
- Takshak, descendants of Beorāsāhsā ... 1
- Takshala, Taxila, modern Dheri Shāhān ... 2
- talāka i-bāin*, irreversible divorce ... 278
- tālī* tree ... 78 f.
- tallying, Nicobarese system ... 360 ff.
- Tamil works ... 285 f.
- Tāmraparṇī, riv. ... 352
- Tangier, Tangeere ... 174 and n.
- Tanjor, MSS. at ... 149
- tankah*, a small coin ... 60
- tanzō*, pig for sacrifice ... 212
- tapās*, asceticism ... 378
- taqīyah*, a white fillet ... 18
- Tārā, the white ... 87
- Tārāb, in Keōṇthal ... 38 ff.
- Tārā Dēvi, of Tārāb ... 39 f.
- tārāhāra*, a string of pearls ... 155
- Tārā Mātī, goddess ... 39
- Tārā Nath, a *jogi* ... 93 f.

- Tārīkh-i-ʾIḥmad Shāhī*, on the invasion of
 Aḥmad Shāh Abdālī 70
- Tārīkh-i-ʾAlangīr Šāhī* and the invasion of
 Aḥmad Shāh Abdālī 70
- Tārīkh-i-Mubārak-Shāhī*, mentions the Khō-
 khars 5 f.
- Tartars in the Pañjāb 3
- Tātār, a Gakkhar 8 and n.
- Tattooing, among the Chins 210
- taung-yā*, Chin, cultivation 210
- Tauris, Tabriz, Towreys 128
- ṭavī*, an iron dish 19
- Tavernier, traveller ... 100 n., 125 n., 126 n.,
 128 n. 20
- ta'wīz*, a charm 2
- Taxila, Takshala... .. 252
- Tea, old Anglo-Indian term 273
- ték*, a word of summons 273
- Tekhar, Telhar fort in the Pañjāb, also
 Thankar, Talhar, etc. 7 and n.
- Temples, a feature of every Pañjāb village ... 273
- Tenants, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 374
- Teressa, Nicobarese dialect, 217 ff., 354 ff.;
 numerals, 361 f., 364; cocoanut reckoning,
 365 f.
- thabyś* or *Eugenia*, plant 208, 210
- thadairī*, a time 38
- Thagwā, in the Kōti State 33
- thākūr-davānī*, a temple 298, 300, 303
- Thākuriḥ Lachhmī Nārāyan, temple in Keōn-
thal 41
- Thākurs, 266; or *movannās* 268
- thālī*, a platter 19, 41
- Thankar, Talhar, Tekhar Telhar, tn. ... 7 and n.
- Thare dā kotwāl*, magistrate 350
- Thare dā mahtā*, chief financial minister ... 350
- harēth* 350 n., 351 n.
- hārī*, or *chaurī*, tribal head-quarters 270
- Thathērā or Bharērās, a caste 314, 370
- The Age of the Tamil *Jivakachintāmaṇi*, by
 T. S. Kuppaswami Sastri 285 ff.
- The Seasons of Girdhar Sadhu, by the Poet-
 ess Sanvri Sakhi 315 f.
- Theog, Hill State, feudatory to Keōnthal, 33; 296
- Theory of Universal Grammar, published
ante, Vol. XXVIII, 1900, by Sir Richard
 Temple, 181 ff.; applied to the Andamanese
 Languages, 217 ff.; to the Nicobarese
 Language 317 ff.; 353 ff.
- Thinds, a Jāt subsection 52
- thoda*, an arrow 38 n.
- Thomas, Mr., and the Piprahwa Vase inscrip-
 tion 124
- Thonḍ, near Simla 34
- These-dbang-dongrub, Tibetan minister, in-
 scription by him 92 f.
- Thuān, Chhimbā subsection 52
- Thugyi, Chin, head-man 209
- tī*, Toda, a holy dairy 83
- Tiberias, Tyberious 177 f.
- Tibet, W., Archæology in 85 ff., 148
- Tibet, and Buddhism, 268; trades with the
 Pañjāb Hills 274
- Tibetan characters in Sheh inscriptions, 93;
 conquest 98
- Tibetan, Central, dynasty 96
- Tibetans 85
- ṭhā*, heir-apparent to a rājā 33, 34, 39
- tilak* flowers 42
- tilaka*, brow ornament 154 and n.
- Tillab, hill 24
- Timma I., a Tuluva k. 352
- Timma II., a Tuluva k. 352
- Timūr invaded India, 3; and the Khōkhars, 6, 8 n.
- Tincal, old Anglo-Indian term 252
- Tippāmbikā, queen of Nṛsiṃha 352
- Tir Mahāsu, Hill *parganā* 33
- Tirotanamala, an excrementitious product. 376 n.
- Tirā, a *ṭikā* of Jungā 34, 36
- Tirumurai*, Śaiva Tamil Scriptures 288 n.
- Tirupati or Śeṣhādri, tn. 352
- Tirutakkadēvar, author of the *Jivakachintā-*
maṇi 287 f.
- Tiruttonḍarpuraṇavaralaru*, a work by Umā-
patiśivāchārya 288
- Tiruvannāmalai, Arupāchala, tn. 352
- Tiruvārur in Tanjore dist., temple at. 288 n.
- Tiruvīsaippā*, a part of the Śaiva Tamil
 Scriptures 288 n.
- tithī*, date 312
- tithi shrādh*, ceremony 303
- Titles, courtesy, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 312
- Todas, The, by W. H. R. Rivers, book-notice. 83
- Tomaines, *tomān* Persian coin, 104 f.; tomaun,
 128 and n.
- Tōnda, a spirit worshipped in Manān 35
- Tons, riv. 253 f., 263
- Totemism, in the Pañjāb, further traces of,
 by H. A. Rose 51 f.
- Totemism, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 272
- Towreys, Tauris, Tabriz 128
- Trade, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 279
- Travels of Richard Bell and John Campbell
 in the East Indies, Persia, and Palestine
 1654—1670, by Sir Richard Temple, conti-
 nued from Vol. XXXV., p. 210 98 ff.,
 125 ff., 173 ff.
- Tribes of the Pañjāb Hills, see Pañjāb. 264 ff.;
 289 ff., 370 ff.
- Trimārgagā, the Gaṅgā riv. 158
- Trinkut, Nicobarese isl. 318
- Tripoli, Trippiloe 177
- Tripura, cap. of the Haihayas, captured by
 Vākpatirāja II. 169

- Trivandrum, Anantaśayana 352
 Tröch, and the Kanaitis 273
 Tsanpo, k. of Ladākḥ 94, 97
 Tsanpo, dynastic name of the Central Tibe-
 tan dynasty 96
 Tsan-po-Lha chen, line of Central Tibet ... 96 f.
 Tsong-khapa, reformer 90
tulā dān, alms in grain, etc. 297
tulāpuruṣa, ceremony 352
tillāś plant 311
tulsi shrub 306, 316
 Tuluva kings 352
 Tulusas of the W. Coast and 'devil' legends. 33 n.
tuṅgaśi maṇimandiram, a holy place 158
 Tunwars, rulers of Delhi 37
tūrah, a qualified claimant 60
 Turānis, the 47
 Tūris, a tribe, 36; among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes,
 271, 275; countenance prostitution... 277; 279;
 302; 308; 314; 372 ff.
 Turks in Candia 175 n.
Turrah-hāe, tufts on hats 56
 Turvasu, mythical k. 352
Tūṣak-i-Bābarī, and the Gakkhars 8
 Tvashṭri 159
 Tyabe, Taiyibeh, Taiba, tn. 133
 Tyāgarāja temple at Tiruvārūr in Tanjore
 district contains an inscription 288 n.
 Tygrisse, riv., 120; or Tygris 132

 Uch, tn. in the Pañjāb 5
 Udāsi, caste, originally mendicants ... 270 f., 279,
 283, 290, 373
 Udayapur inscription and Vākpatirāja I.,
 167 and n.
ugrākā, tax-collector, also called *durbāl*, *drū-*
biyāl and *muqaddam* 351
 Ujhyānt, in the United Provinces 69
 Ujjain, co., 164 n.; conquered by the Para-
 māras, 165 f.; and the Kshatriyas ... 267; 270
 Ujjayini, tn., mentioned in the *Navasāhasān-*
kacharita 153 f., 156, 159, 165
 Ujjvaladatta, author 152
ulāś, table money? 51
 Umāpatīśivāchārya, a Śaiva teacher 283
 Unchah-ganw, Baran 15
uparika, probably a tax 348 and n.
upāsak, devotees 42
 Upendra, Paramāra k. 163 and n., 165 ff.
 'Uṣmān Khān, a commander 56, 62
 Utpalarāja or Vākpatirāja II 164 and n., 165
 and n., 167 n., 168
 Uttar, son of Brahmā, ancestor of the Chan-
 dar Bansi caste 267
 Uttarā Khaṇḍa 253
Uttarapurāṇa, that part of the *Mahāpurāṇa*
 composed by Guṇabhadraṇātha 287
 Vajājā, wife of Siyaka, the Paramāra k. ... 164
 and n., 168
 Vādibhasimha's works and the story of Jivaka,
 285 ff.
 Vāgaḍ, Chaulukya province 171
 Vāgaḍa 157 n., 171
 Vāghbata, the younger, author of the *Alaṅ-*
karatilaka 154 n.
 Vairisimha, a Parāmara k. 163, 165, 167
 Vairovāl, c. in the Pañjāb 3 f.
 Vaishanavas, in the Pañjāb Hill Tribes ... 272
 Vaishnavas, probably Krishan Brāhmans. 266 n.
 290, 314
 Vaiśyas, 264 f.; table of Hill Sections ... 268;
 289
 Vajrāṅkuśa, k. of the Asuras, in the *Navasā-*
hasānikacharita 154, 156 ff.; 172
 Vajrapāni, Bodhissatva Phyag-rdor ... 86, 89 f.,
 97 f.
 Vajravārāhani, incarnated in the abbesses of
 the Samding Monastery 83
 Vākpatirāja I., Parāmara k. ... 150 n., 163, 165 ff.
 Vākpatirāja II., or Amoghavarsha, or Prith-
 vivallabha, or Śrīvallabha ... 165 and n., 166,
 167 and n., 168 and n., 169, 170 and n.
 Vākpatirājadeva, k. of Mālava ... 150 and n.
 Vallabha, k. 167 n.
 Vallabha, author 168
 Vallabhadeva, author of the *Subhāshitāvali*. 149 n.
 Vāmmārag religion 272
 Vām Mārgis, worship the genital organs ... 296
 Vaṅkshu 172
 Vaṅku, a Muni, in the *Navasāhasānikacharita*,
 154, 157 f., 172
 Varadāmbikā, queen to Achyuta 352
 Varadarāja temple 352
 Varnaśrama *dharma* 384
 Vasishṭha, a Vedic sage 162 n., 166
 Sasubandhu, the three brothers 117 n.
 Vasudeva, father of Kṛishṇa 379
 Vasuki, king of the Nāgas 381
 Vaux, Mr., murdered by the Jārawas,
 February, 1902 219
Vēdas, the guide of the Aryas 264 f.
 Vedic religion among the P. H. Tribes ... 290
 Vēdvās, begging tribe 143
 Venetians and Candia 175 n.
 Venkaṭagiri, c. 352
 Venkaṭarāja or Chinavenkaṭādri, son of
 Achyuta 352
 Venkaṭa-vilāsa maṇḍapa 352
 Vidarbha, co. = Berar 376 f., 379
 Vidh, goddess 74
 Vidyādharas, in the *Navasāhasānikacharita*. 157 f.
 Vidyādhari, Chandaladevi, g. v. 172
 Vidyāpuri, Vijayanagara 352
 Vijayā, daughter of Sitā, the poetess ... 163 n.

Vijayanagara or Vidyapurī 352	Women, restriction as to, among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 311
<i>vikhād śharādh</i> , death ceremony 284	Worship, among the Pañjāb Hills Tribes, forms of, 296; places of, 298; objects of; of spirits, 303 f.; of ancestors, 305; of animals, etc. 306
Vikrama era 164 n., 170 and n.	Writing of the Piprahwa Vase inscription, and that of the Aśōka inscriptions 118
Vikrama Samvat... .. 166	
Vikramāditya, k. 164 and n.	<i>yabāe</i> ? 51
Vikramāditya-Tribhuvanamalla, k. 172	Yādavas or Jādavas, a race 382 f.
<i>Vikramāṅkadēvachanta</i> , a work by Bilhana, 171 and n., 172 and n.	Yahyā <u>Khān</u> , Nawāb, and Aḥmad Shāh 66
Vinayasēnāchārya, an author 287	<i>yai-shēn</i> , a Chin teacher... .. 208 f., 214
Vindhya, mts. 155, 159	<i>yajna</i> , sacrifice 376 n.
Viradhavala of Dholkā 172	<i>yakkah</i> , gentlemen troopers 69
Viranṣimharāya, son of Nṛsimha 352	Yama, g. called Am 84; 303; 349 n.
Virasēnāchārya, an author 289	Yamdok, lake in Tibet 88
Virk, Jat tribe 2 n.	<i>yang-lai</i> or <i>gyinyē</i> bush 204
Virk Khōkhar, defeated Kaid Rāj of Mārwar. 2	Ya'qūb 'Alī <u>Khān</u> , an Afghān 70
Virūḍhaka, massacred the Śākyaas 121	<i>yas</i> , Chin, vegetable patches 207, 210
<i>vishaya</i> , probably subdivision of a <i>dēśa</i> or <i>maṇḍala</i> 348 n.	Yaśobhaṭa, <i>alias</i> Ramāṅgada, minister to Sindhurāja 154 f., 172
Vishnu 169	Yaśodhavala, k. 166
Vishnu, g. 164 n., 263, 376, 378, 383 f.	Yāt tribe 51
Vishṇukāūchi, tn. 352	<i>yatīm</i> , a servant? 18
Viśvāmitra, son of Gādhi 162, 166	Yayāti, progenitor of the Yādavas 165
Viśvānkuśa, a character in the <i>Navasāhasān-kacharita</i> 154, 158	Yēre, N. Andamanese tribe 217, 238
<i>vratas</i> , rites, ceremonies 378	Yērewa, N. Andamanese division, 217; languages and those of the Southern group 238, 244
Vulcano, Vulcanello, islands 175	Yin, a Chin spirit 204
Vyāsa, arranger of the <i>Vedas</i> 159	Yuvārāja of Chedi, and Vākpātirāja II. 169
Wākṇā, Hill <i>pargand</i> 33	Zachariae, Dr., and the <i>Navasāhasān-kacharita</i> , 152 n., 154 n., 159 n., 161 n., 164 n., 167 n.
Wālā Jāh Bahādūr 68	<i>Zafarnāma</i> , work, mentions the Khōkkars, 6 and n.
Walān, in the Simla Hill States 35	Zainu'l-Abidin of Kashmir 7 n., 8 n.
Walī <u>Khān</u> , Shāh 45	Zakariyā <u>Khān</u> , governor of Lahor 66 n.
Wanla, castle in W. Tibet 85	Zāt Fair, at Garēn, Keōṅthal 37 f.
Wano, Pahārī, an image 87	<i>zi</i> , Sumerian, spirit 204
Wasirs of Kohāt and totemism 52	Zinat Maḥal, a chief 49
Water distribution among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 375	Zirah Khān, <i>amir</i> of Sāmāna, and the Khō-khars 6 f.
Wazīr, chief minister 350	(n) <i>zō-yai</i> , Chin ancestry 206
Wazīrs, kārdārs or mēhtās, temple overseers. 273 f.	Zuhāk, for Dahāk 1 n.
White, Mr., and R. Bell 100	<i>Zuhr</i> , afternoon prayer... .. 56, 60
Widows, re-marry among the Pañjāb Hill Tribes 280	Zyon, mt. 179
Wilāyat, tn., and Aḥmad Shāh, 12 f., 49, 65	
Witches, among the Chuhṛas, 20; among the Chins 209	
<i>wizārats</i> , sub-divisions of a district 350	

pasatthāram. AMg. 390.
 pasatthāro. AMg. 390.
 pasamanti. JM. 489.
 pasammai. M. 489.
 pasammanta. M. 489.
 pasaraī. M. AMg. 477.
 pasaradi. S. 477.
 pasasi. A. 594.
 pasaru. Dh. 25.
 pasalu. Dh. 25, 468, 477.
 pasavaī. Pkt. (AMg.) 473, 494.
 pasavo. AMg. 381.
 pasāanti. M. 491.
 pasāamāṇassa. M. 491.
 pasāeum. M. 573.
 pasāesi. M. 491.
 pasādēmbhi. Pkt. 454.
 °pasāhiāi. Pkt. 180.
 pasia. M. 14, 80, 482.
 pasidhila. M. AMg. S. 115, 221.
 pasiṇa. AMg. 133.
 pasiṇāim. AMg. 358.
 pasiṇāim. AMg. 358.
 pasiṇāṇi. AMg. 358.
 pasiddhi. M. 70.
 pasīda. S. 80.
 pasīdadu. S. 469.
 pasīdanti. S. 456.
 pasīdantu. S. 471.
 pasu. AMg. M. 16, 227.
 pasutta. M. S. 70.
 pasuvaiṇo. M. 379.
 pasuhatta. Pkt. 194.
 pasū. AMg. 380.
 pasūamāṇāe. Pkt. 563.
 pasūyāṇi. AMg. 367.
 pasedhi. AMg. 66, 304.
 paskhaladi. Mg. 306.
 paskhalanti. Mg. 306.
 paṣṭa. Mg. 271.
 paṣṭāvia. Mg. 551.
 pastide. Mg. 310.
 passa. S. AMg. 315, 590.
 passurāa. S. 315.
 paha. M. JM. 403.
 pahaṃ. AMg. 403.
 pahaṇe. Pkt. (AMg.) 466, 515.
 Pahatthe. M. 366.
 pahammai. Pkt. 188.
 pahammanta. M. 540.

pahammanti. M. 153.
 pahammi. JM. 403.
 paharai. M. 477.
 pahare. M. 367.
 pahavaī. M. 26, 475.
 pahavissam. S. 521.
 pahave. S. 460, 475.
 pahāmiṇṇanta. M. 543.
 pahāre. AMg. 517.
 pahārem. A. 146.
 pahārēttā. AMg. 517.
 °pahāvaliaruṇa. M. 162.
 pahila. A. 449.
 pahili. A. 449.
 pahīṇa. AMg. 120.
 pahu. M. JM. 379.
 pahuccai. A. 286, 299.
 pahuḍi. Pkt. (AMg. ?) 218.
 pahunṇo. S. M. 379, 380.
 pahuttaṇa. S. 597.
 pahudi. S. Mg. 218.
 pahudia. S. 218.
 pahuppai. M. 286, 300, 536, 557.
 pahuppire. Pkt. 458.
 pahummi. M. 312, 379.
 pahussa. M. 379.
 pahū. M. 71, 380.
 pahūa. M. 476.
 pahūṇam. Mg. 381.
 pahe. AMg. 403.
 pahējja. AMg. 252, 466.
 pahaṇa. M. JM. 403.
 pahaṇam. AMg. 403.
 paho. Pkt. 403.
 paholi. M. 161.
 pahka. Mg. 324.
 pahkam. Mg. 324.
 pāa. M. 186.
 pāai. Pkt. 487.
 pāaḍa. M. Mg. 70.
 pāaḍia. M. 70.
 pāaḍoru. M. 159.
 pāavaḍaṇa. M. 165.
 pāavapphala. M. 196.
 pāaviḍha. Pkt. 165.
 pāa. S. 376.
 pāara. Pkt. 167.
 pāi. Pkt. 487.
 pāia. M. 53, 82.
 pāikka. M. JM. S. A. 82, 165, 194.

pāṇaṃ. AMg. 215, note 1.
 pāma. AMg. 602.
 pāiṃ. JM. 53, 82.
 pāi. AMg. 87, 292.
 pāinaṃ. AMg. 215, note 1.
 pāu. AMg. (text) 341.
 pāua. M. 53, 82, 219.
 pāue. Pkt. 45, note 3.
 pāum. AMg. JM. 181, 341, 465, 573.
 pāukarissāmi. AMg. 341.
 pāukāma. AMg. 577.
 pāukujjā. AMg. 341, 464.
 pāuḍa. AMg. 219.
 pāuṇai. AMg. 18, 504, 531.
 pāuṇanti. AMg. 504.
 pāuṇantittā. Pkt. 582, note 2.
 pāuṇittae. AMg. 504.
 pāuṇittā. AMg. 532.
 pāuṇissāmi. AMg. 531.
 pāuṇihii. AMg. 531.
 pāuṇējjā. AMg. 504.
 pāuḍa. S. 53, 82.
 pāudamagge. Pkt. 30.
 pāubbhavittae. AMg. 578.
 pāubbhavittāṇaṃ. AMg. 475, 583.
 pāubbhavittā. AMg. 341, 517.
 pāubbhūya. AMg. 341.
 pāubbhūyā. Pkt. 68.
 pāuṃṣim. AMg. 358.
 pāuraṇa. AMg. 104.
 pāuraṇi. AMg. 104.
 pāullāim. AMg. 595.
 pāusa. M. AMg. JM. S. 358.
 pāuso. Pkt. 413.
 pāuṇa. M. JM. 586.
 pāe. A. M. 366a, 367a.
 pāējāha. JM. 463.
 pāēttā. JM. 582.
 pāeṣu. Mg. 371.
 pāeṣa. AMg. 360.
 pāehi. AMg. 350.
 pāo. AMg. 342.
 pāosināṇa. AMg. 133, 343.
 pāmgharūṇ. Marathi, 213.
 pāmgharṇem. Marathi, 213.
 pāmghurṇem. Marathi, 213.
 pākida. Mg. 53, 82.
 pākhaṇḍa. AMg. 265.
 pāgaḍa. AMg. 70.
 pāgaḍiṃ. AMg. 70.

pāgabbhi. AMg. 296.
 pāgabbhiya. AMg. 296.
 pāgaṃ. AMg. 53, 82.
 Pāgasāsana. M. 202.
 Pāṭaliputta. P. 190.
 pāṭihāriya. Pali, 176.
 pāṭhe. Dh. 25.
 pāḍai. S. 553.
 Pāḍaliutta. M. Mg. 292.
 Pāḍaliputta. JM. 292.
 Pāḍaliputtaa. S. 292.
 Pāḍaliputtammi. JM. 313, 366a.
 Pāḍaliputte. JM. 366a.
 pāḍave. Pkt. 45, note 3.
 pāḍia. Pkt. 589.
 pāḍiḍka. M. AMg. 77, 163.
 pāḍikka. Pkt. 163.
 pāḍipphaddhi. M. (?) AMg. (?) 77.
 pāḍiyakka. AMg. 163.
 pāḍivaā. M. 77.
 pāḍisāra. Pkt. 77.
 pāḍisiddhi. M. (?) AMg. (?) S. 77.
 pāḍihara. AMg. JM. 176.
 pāḍiherattaṇa. JM. 176, 597.
 pāḍucciya. AMg. 163.
 pāḍe. Dh. 25.
 pāḍei. M. 553.
 pādemi. Mg. 553.
 pādhe. Dh. 25.
 pādhei. Pkt. 551.
 pāṇa. S. 132.
 pāṇaitta. Pkt. 600.
 pāṇaūḍia. M. 385.
 pāṇagāim. AMg. 438.
 pāṇajai. AMg. 364, 382.
 pāṇajāio. AMg. 364.
 pāṇahāo. AMg. (text) 141.
 pāṇā. AMg. 141, 367, 465.
 pāṇāim. AMg. 358, 367.
 pāṇāni. AMg. 358, 367.
 pāṇia. M. S. Mg. A. 82, 91.
 pāṇiem. A. 128.
 pāṇiēṇa. A. 128.
 pāṇimsi. AMg. 74, 312, 379.
 pāṇinaṃ. AMg. 99, 460.
 pāṇiṇo. AMg. 405.
 pāṇipējja. AMg. 376.
 pāṇiṃ. AMg. JM. 91.
 pāṇi. AMg. 380.
 pāṇia. S. 91.

pāṇīya. AMg. 91.
 pāṇṇ. AMg. 105 and note 1, 372.
 pāṇūṇi. AMg. 381.
 pāṇe. AMg. 358, 460.
 pāṇehi. AMg. 350.
 pātave. Ved. 578.
 pātukkhepena. CP. 225.
 pātukkheva. CP. 158.
 pātukkhevena. CP. 191, note 1.
 pādavandanam. S. 519.
 pādāhinto. S. (false) 365.
 pādīnam. AMg. (false) 215, note 1.
 pādu. Dh. 25, 346.
 pādum. AMg. M. S. 573.
 pādurakāsi. AMg. 341.
 pāduresae. AMg. 341.
 pādesum. Mg. 371.
 pādehim. Mg. Dh. 368.
 pāpa. P. 190.
 pāpuraṇa. AMg. 104.
 pāmaddā. AMg. 291.
 pāmarādo. S. 22.
 pāmarāhinto. S. (false) 22, 365.
 pāmōkhhkam. Pkt. 193.
 pāmōkhhkhaṇam. Pkt. 193.
 pāmōkhhkhehim. Pkt. 193.
 pāya. AMg. 87.
 pāyae. AMg. 578.
 pāyam. AMg. 342, 465.
 pāyacchitta. AMg. 165, 301.
 pāyatta. AMg. 90.
 pāyattāṇīya. AMg. 80.
 pāyam. AMg. 141.
 pāyāya. AMg. JM. 53, 82.
 pāyave. AMg. 578.
 pāyā. AMg. JM. 360, 498.
 pāyāim. AMg. 438.
 pāyāhina. AMg. 65, 323.
 pāra. Pkt. 167.
 pāraa. M. 167.
 pārakera. Pkt. 78.
 pārakka. Pkt. 279, 598.
 pāragāmiṇo. AMg. 405.
 pāradhha. Pkt. 249.
 pāradhhi. S. 249.
 pāradhiraṇṇa. Pkt. (false) 142.
 pāraviū. AMg. 411.
 pārāa. Pkt. 167.
 pārāpata. Pāli, 112.
 pārāvaa. M. 112, 167.

pārāvada. S. 112.
 pārīdosia. S. 203.
 pārē. Pkt. 112.
 pārēgaṅgam. Pkt. 112.
 pārētarāṅgiṇi. Pkt. 112.
 pārēpata. Pāli, 112.
 pārēmha. Pkt. 455.
 pārēva. AMg. (text) 112.
 pārēvai. AMg. 112.
 pārēvaṇya. AMg. 112.
 pārēvaṇyaga. AMg. 112.
 pārōha. M. 70.
 pālaka. CP. 191, 260.
 pālambam. S. Pkt. M. 5.
 pālambu. S. A. 5.
 pālidosia. Mg. 203.
 pālevi. A. 588.
 pāva. M. 504.
 pāvai. M. JM. JS. AMg. (verse) S. A. 102, 504.
 pāvaiṣam. S. 504.
 pāvai. M. 504.
 pāvai. A. 454.
 pāvao. AMg. 364.
 pāvā. AMg. 350.
 pāvam. AMg. 516.
 pāvamse. AMg. (text) 409.
 pāvaceṇyā. AMg. 409.
 pāvadaṇa. Pkt. 165.
 pāvadi. JS. 21, 504.
 pāvanti. M. JM. S. 504.
 pāvami. A. 454, 504.
 pāvaya. AMg. 364.
 pāvayaṇa. AMg. 70.
 pāvayaṇāo. JM. 465.
 pāvavihi. JM. 379.
 pāvasi. Pkt. (M.) 427, 504.
 pāvau. AMg. 365.
 pāvāo. AMg. 365.
 pāvādūyasajaim. AMg. 265, 447.
 pāvāraa. M. 167.
 pāvāliā. M. 167.
 pāvāsu. Pkt. (AMg.?) 105, 118.
 pāvāsua. Pkt. 118.
 pāvīa. A. 565.
 pāvīai. A. 545.
 pāvium. M. 576.
 pāvīuṇa. P. 586.
 pāvijjā. AMg. 504.
 pāvītṭha. JM. 414.

pāviya. JS. 504, 591.
 pāvira. Pkt. 351.
 pāvissasi. S. 531.
 pāvihū. M. 531.
 pāvihisi. Mg. 531.
 pāvihise. M. 531.
 pāviadi. S. 545.
 pāvīdha. Pkt. 165.
 pāvīyaṃse. AMg. JM. 409, 414.
 pāvīsu. A. 63, 351, 531.
 pāvuda. Dh. S. 219.
 pāvuraṇa. Pāli, 104.
 pāvusa. Pāli, 358.
 pāvei. JM. 504.
 pāveum. AMg. JM. 465, 574.
 pāvedi. JS. S. 504.
 pāvēnti. M. JM. 504.
 pāvemi. Mg. 504.
 pāsastide. Mg. 310.
 pāsa. M. AMg. JM. S. 63, 87, 315.
 pāsai. AMg. JM. 9, 63, 169, 488, 525, 561.
 pāsaittā. Pkt. 582, note 2.
 pāsai. AMg. 469.
 pāsaṃ. Pkt. 9.
 pāsaṇḍa. Mg. AMg. 265.
 pāsaṇḍiṇa. JM. 265.
 pāsamāṇe. AMg. 561.
 pāsammī. AMg. 366*.
 pāsaiyā. AMg. 396.
 pāsalla. M. 595.
 pāsallia. M. 595.
 pāsavaṇa. AMg. 70.
 pāsavaṇei. AMg. 559.
 pāsahā. AMg. 71.
 pāsāe. JM. 366*.
 pāsāṇa. JM. S. 263.
 pāsium. AMg. 465.
 pāsiukāma. AMg. 577.
 pāsiukāme. AMg. 63.
 pāsijjā. M. 70.
 pāsijjā. AMg. 460.
 pāsittae. AMg. 578.
 pāsittā. AMg. 63, 582.
 pāsittāṇaṃ. AMg. 583.
 pāsiddhi. M. 70.
 pāsīya. AMg. 134, 590.
 pāsīyavva. AMg. 570.
 pāsīyavvaṃ. AMg. 63.
 pāsīyā. AMg. JM. 73, 590.

pāsīhī. AMg. 525.
 pāsu. Pkt. 89.
 pāsutta. M. 70.
 pāso. Pkt. 6, 9.
 pāhaṃ. AMg. 315, 524.
 pāhaṇāo. AMg. 141, 354, 360, 413.
 pāhaṇḍa. Mg. 265.
 pāhasi. A. 359, 491.
 pāhāṇa. M. AMg. JM. 263.
 pāhāṇaga. JM. 263.
 pāhāmi. JM. 315, 524.
 pāhāmo. AMg. 315, 524.
 pāhiṃ. AMg. 524.
 pāhinti. M. 524.
 pāhisi. AMg. 524.
 pāhuḍa. AMg. JM. 218.
 pāhuḍiṇa. AMg. JM. 218.
 pi. M. AMg. A. JM. S. 34, 143, 171, 174, 180, 185, 187, 336 and note 7, 341, 417, 427, 438, 441, 448, 462, 487 note 3, 498.
 pia. M. S. 96, 164, 186, 287, 391, 414.
 piama. M. A. 164, 414.
 piāriṇaṃ. S. 405.
 piā. M. A. 483.
 piā. M. 483.
 piā. A. 350.
 piāsā. M. 164.
 Piamvadā anusūāo. S. 156.
 piāniveṇaṇaittā. S. 600.
 piattana. M. 597.
 piattanaṇāvi. M. 143.
 piadamsaṇo. S. 414.
 piadama. S. 414.
 piadara. S. 96.
 piadarētti. S. (false) 96.
 pianti. S. Mg. A. M. 456, 483.
 piantu. M. 483.
 piantena. M. 397.
 pianto. M. 397.
 piapabbhaṭṭha. A. 92.
 piabhattālaṃ. Mg. 256.
 piara. Pkt. (A.) 389, 391.
 piaraṃ. Pkt. 391.
 piaraha. A. 391.
 piare. Pkt. 391.
 piareṇa. Pkt. 391.
 piarehiṃ. AMg. 391.
 piaro. Pkt. 391.
 piavi. A. 184, 588.
 piasaḥi. M. S. 387, 515.

piassu. A. 106.
 piahu. A. 106, 471, 483.
 piā. Mg. M. 367, 381.
 piāhara. M. 156.
 piāim. M. 367.
 piāmahuppatti. M. 160.
 piāmo. M. 483.
 piārī. A. 167.
 piāvañ. A. 454.
 piimāimosana. A. 55.
 piī. AMg. 391.
 piīṇaṃ. AMg. 391.
 piīhim. AMg. 391.
 piu. A. 106. Pkt. 389, 391.
 piucchā. M. S. AMg. 148, 211, 315, 375.
 piuṇā. M. AMg. 391.
 piuṇo. M. AMg. JM. 391.
 piullaa. Pkt. 595.
 piuvaha. M. 55.
 piusiṣā. AMg. 148, 315.
 piusukha. AMg. 55.
 piussa. AMg. 391.
 piussia. M. 148, 315.
 piussiṣā. AMg. 148, 315.
 piūṇaṃ. AMg. 391.
 piūsum. Pkt. 391.
 piūhim. AMg. 391.
 piē. A. 85, 366^a.
 pie. AMg. 483.
 piei. JM. 483.
 piējja. AMg. 483.
 piētti. M. (false) 96.
 piō. M. 85, 175.
 piṃcha. M. 74, 283, 301.
 pikka. M. AMg. S. 101, 297.
 pikkhiṣā. JM. 590.
 piccā. AMg. 587.
 piccha. M. AMg. S. 74.
 picchāi. AMg. JM. 84.
 picchaṇḍijja. AMg. 84.
 picchāe. AMg. 361.
 picchiṇo. AMg. 405.
 picchī. AMg. 299, 405.
 pijja. AMg. 414.
 pijjāi. M. 483, 539, 550.
 pijjae. M. Mg. (false) 539.
 pijjanta. M. 539.
 pijjantaṃ. M. 397.
 pijjanti. M. S. (false) 539.
 piṭṭadu. Mg. 271.

piṭṭha. AMg. JM. S. D. 53, 119, 358.
 piṭṭhao. AMg. JM. 69, 345.
 piṭṭhadu. Mg. 271, note 1.
 piṭṭhado. Mg. S. D. 69, 303, 345.
 iṭṭhāo. AMg. 69, 345, 365.
 piṭṭhāhi. AMg. 69, 365.
 piṭṭhi. A. Mg. 53, 303.
 piṭṭhimsi. AMg. 386.
 piṭṭhī. AMg. JM. 53, 358, 386.
 piḍḍai. AMg. 279, 543.
 piḍhara. Pkt. 239.
 piḍharaga. AMg. 239.
 piṇaddha. M. AMg. 142.
 piṇaddhāi. AMg. 559.
 piṇaddhāvida. S. 559.
 piṇaddhei. AMg. 559.
 Piṇāiṇo. M. 405.
 piḍidhattae. AMg. 142, 578.
 piṇḍa. S. Mg. 119.
 piṇḍavāia. Pkt. 84.
 piṇḍiṣā. JM. 367.
 piṇḍe. AMg. 366^a.
 pitāhim. AMg. (false) 391.
 pittāe. AMg. 361.
 pittijja. AMg. 286.
 pittei. AMg. 559.
 pidaraṃ. S. Ā. Dh. 25, 391.
 pidare. S. 391.
 pidaro. S. 391.
 pidalaṃ. Mg. 391.
 pidā. S. Ā. Mg. 185, 391.
 piduṇā. S. Mg. 391.
 piduṇo. S. Mg. 185, 391.
 pidhaṃ. Pkt. 78, 203.
 pindhaṇa. A. 100.
 pinnāga. AMg. 282.
 piḍāmo. M. 483.
 piḍba. Pkt. 572.
 pimma. AMg. JM. 90.
 piṣāi. Pkt. 187.
 piṣamāṇe. AMg. 483.
 piṣaṣama. JM. 414.
 piṣaraṃ. AMg. JM. 203 note 4, 391.
 piṣarassa. JM. 391.
 piṣaro. AMg. JM. 391.
 piṣaha. JM. 483.
 piṣā. AMg. JM. 93, 391.
 piṣavāi. A. 454.
 piṣavae. AMg. 552.
 piṣahim. AMg. (false) 391.

- pilamkhu. AMg. 74, 105, 132, 372.
 pilakkhu. AMg. 74, 105, 132.
 pilā. PG. 226.
 piḷāga. AMg. 70, 238.
 pilumka. AMg. 74.
 pilukkha. AMg. 74.
 piluṭṭha. M. 138.
 pilosa. M. 138.
 piva. M. AMg. JM. P. Mg. 143, 191, 336,
 and note 6, 468, 483.
 pivai. M. JM. AMg. 465, 483.
 pivadi. S. 483.
 pivadu. S. 483.
 pivamha. Mg. 360, 470, 483.
 pivasma. Mg. 470, note 4.
 pivāmi. Mg. 483.
 pivāśiāsi. Mg. 550, 555.
 pivāsa. M. 305.
 pivāhi. Mg. 468, 483.
 pivum. JM. 573.
 pivittae. AMg. 578.
 pivittā. AMg. 582.
 pivindhējja. AMg. 489.
 pivīadi. S. Mg. 539.
 pivīadu. S. 539.
 pivīanti. S. 539.
 piśila. Mg. 233.
 piṣṭadu. Mg. 271.
 piṣṭi. Mg. 303.
 pisa. CP. 191.
 pisalla. AMg. 150, 232, 595.
 pisāa. M. S. 232.
 piśāinda. AMg. 160.
 piśāji. Pkt. 202.
 piśāya. AMg. JM. 232.
 piśāyainda. AMg. 160.
 piṣṭa. Mg. 53.
 piṣṭado. Mg. 69, 95, 303.
 piṣṭi. Mg. 53.
 pihaṃ. Pkt. 78, 203.
 pihajjaṇa. AMg. 78.
 pihada. AMg. JM. 239, 258.
 pihadaḡa. AMg. 239.
 pihadaḡa. AMg. 239.
 pihappihaṃ. JM. 78.
 pihāissam. S. 530.
 pihissāmi. AMg. 530.
 pihe. AMg. 500.
 piheūṇa. JM. 586.
 piadi. S. 539.
 piānti. S. 539.
 piānte. S. 539.
 piīmaṇā. AMg. 409.
 °ṇe. AMg. 409.
 piīadi. S. 539.
 piūsa. S. 121.
 piḍai. AMg. 240.
 piḍaṇa. M. 240.
 piḍantu. A. 100, 471.
 piḍā. M. JM. S. 240.
 piḍāpaḡati (Leṇa dialect), 7.
 piḍia. M. 240.
 piḍijjanta. M. 240.
 piḍida. S. 240.
 piḍiḡa. AMg. JM. 240.
 piḍiadi. S. 240.
 piḍedi. S. 240.
 piḍha. M. 122, 198.
 piḍhamadda. AMg. 291.
 piḍhamaddiā. S. 291.
 piḍhāṇiḡa. AMg. 80.
 piṇatta. Pkt. 298, 597.
 piṇattana. M. 298, 597.
 piṇatthanaūtthambhiṇṇaṇa. M. 160.
 piṇoru. M. 159.
 pitvī. Ved. 588.
 pitvinam. Pkt. 583, note 1.
 pidi. S. 72.
 piḷaṇa. AMg. 240.
 piḷā. AMg. 226, 240.
 piḷia. Pkt. 240.
 piḷiḡa. AMg. 240.
 piḷiḡaga. AMg. 240.
 piluṭṭha. Pkt. 138.
 piḷei. AMg. 240.
 piḷvānam. Pkt. 583, note 1.
 piḷaroru. AMg. S. 159.
 piṣai. Pkt. 76, 506.
 piṣaṇa. AMg. 76.
 piṣedi. S. 76, 506.
 piḥējja. AMg. 311.
 puṃgava. M. AMg. JM. 412.
 puṃcha. M. 74, 233, 301.
 puṃcham. AMg. 143.
 puṃvaū. AMg. 409, 412.
 puṃveḡa. AMg. 412.
 puṃsa. Pkt. 486, note 3.
 puṃsai. Pkt. 486 and note 3.
 puṃsakoiḷaga. AMg. 412.

pukkara. AMg. 125, 302.
 Pukkharakkha. S. 125.
 pukkharipi. AMg. JM. 125, 302.
 pukkhalipi. Mg. 302.
 puggala. JS. Mg. 125.
 puggalamaiya. JS. 70.
 puccha. AMg. 74, 301.
 Pucchai. M. AMg. JM. 51, 233, 526.
 pucchapi. S. 571.
 °pucchapiu. AMg. (text) 182.
 pucchadi. S. 51.
 pucchaha. A. 456.
 pucchahu. A. 51, 106, 456.
 pucchae. AMg. 361.
 pucchavedi. S. 552.
 puchia. M. 565.
 puchiāi. M. 85, 375.
 puchium. M. 573.
 puchimsu. AMg. 516.
 puchijjai. M. JM. AMg. 542.
 puchijjanti. AMg. 542.
 puchijjanti. M. 542.
 puchijjami. JM. 542.
 pucchittae. AMg. 578.
 puchida. S. 565.
 puchidavva. S. 570.
 puchidā. S. 145.
 puchidum. S. 573.
 puchimi. A. 51, 454.
 puchimo. M. 108, 455.
 puchiya. JM. 565.
 puchiyaavva. AMg. 570.
 puchiyaani. JM. 357.
 puchissam. AMg. S. 173, 516, 526.
 puchissāmo. AMg. 526.
 puchiadi. S. 542.
 puchiasi. S. 542.
 pucche. Pkt. (AMg.) 466, 515.
 puchējāmo. JM. 463.
 pucheyavva. AMg. 570.
 puchahi. JM. 468.
 puchchidum. Pkt. 193.
 puñchai. M. 233.
 puñchaio. AMg. 182.
 puñjikadaajjauṭṭakitti°. S. 156.
 puñña. Mg. P. 232.
 puṭa. Pkt. 233, note 2.
 puṭabhedana. Pāli, 233.
 puṭṭha. M. AMg. S. D. 53, 311, 358, 565.
 puṭṭhado. S. 69.

puṭṭhapuvvā. AMg. 516.
 puṭṭhavam. AMg. 396, 569.
 puṭṭhā. AMg. 593.
 puṭṭhi. A. Mg. 53, 303.
 puṭṭhi. M. AMg. JM. S. D. 53, 358.
 puṭṭho. AMg. 17, 516.
 puṭa. S. 292.
 puṭama. Pkt. 104.
 puṭhama. Pkt. 104 note 2, 221, 449.
 puṭhavi. Pkt. 94.
 puṭhaviā°. AMg. 162.
 puṭhavikamma. AMg. 97.
 puṭhavikāiehimto. AMg. 369.
 puṭhavijīva. AMg. 97.
 puṭhavisattha. AMg. 97.
 puṭhavisilāpaṭṭaya. AMg. 97.
 puṭhavi. AMg. JS. JM. S. Mg. A. 51, 115,
 139, 140, 221, 355.
 puṭhaviṇḍhaloṇa. AMg. 162.
 puṭhaviṇḍha. S. 97.
 puṭhavitoyāṇā. JS. 97.
 puṭhaviḍagaagani°. AMg. 156.
 puṭhuma. Pkt. 104, 221, 449.
 puṭho. AMg. 78, 221.
 puṭhochanda. AMg. 78.
 puṭhojaga. AMg. 78.
 puṭhojana. AMg. 78.
 puṭhojiya. AMg. 78.
 puṭhosatta. AMg. 78.
 puṭhosiya. AMg. 78.
 puṇa. AMg. JM. JS. M. 342, 367, 367a.
 Puṇai. Pkt. 511.
 puṇaṇṇava. JM. S. 343.
 puṇapāsanaṇṇae. AMg. 343, 364.
 puṇapūṇakkarāṇa. Pkt. 329, 343.
 puṇamanta. A. (metric) 601.
 puṇar. AMg. JM. 143, 342, 343.
 puṇarutta. M. S. 337, 343.
 puṇā. Pkt. 343.
 puṇāi. AMg. 342.
 puṇāim. °AMg. 342.
 puṇijjai. AMg. S. 511, 536, 548.
 puṇijje. A. 536, 548.
 puṇu. A. 342.
 puṇo. M. AMg. JM. JS. S. Mg. Dh. A. D.
 342, 519.
 puṇḍaria. S. 125.
 puṇḍariya. JM. 125.
 puṇḍariyaddaha. AMg. 354.
 puṇḍe. AMg. 461.

puṇṇa. M. AMg. JM. S. 58, 282.
 puṇṇamanta. A. 601.
 puṇṇā. S. 231.
 puṇṇāga. Pkt. (?) 231.
 puṇṇāma. M. 231.
 putta. M. AMg. Mg. A. 292, 363.
 puttaṃ. Pkt. (JM.) 143, 363.
 puttaṃpi. AMg. 363.
 puttaṃsi. AMg. 363.
 puttaka. Mg. 292.
 puttakā. Mg. 71.
 puttake. Mg. 85, 366^b.
 puttatto. Pkt. (M.) 363, 365.
 puttānattupariyāra. AMg. 55.
 puttammi. M. JM. JS. 363.
 puttaśsa. Mg. 363.
 puttasaḥassāṇaṃ. JM. 448.
 puttasu. A. 363.
 puttassa. Pkt. 363.
 puttassu. A. 363.
 puttaha. Pkt. (A.) 206, 363.
 puttahaa. Pkt. 206.
 puttahā. A. 363.
 puttahī. A. 363.
 puttahiṃ. A. 363.
 puttahu. A. 363.
 puttahū. A. 363.
 puttahē. A. 363.
 puttahō. A. 363.
 puttā. AMg. M. Mg. JM. JS. 71, 93, 360, 363, 375.
 puttāa. M. Mg. (verse) 363.
 puttāu. M. AMg. JM. 363.
 puttāe. AMg. JM. 363.
 puttāo. AMg. JM. M. 363.
 puttāna. }
 ^{nam.} } M. AMg. JM. JS. 350, 363.
 ^{na.} }
 puttānaṃ. S. Mg. M. JM. A. 83, 363, 448.
 puttātu. P. CP. 363.
 puttāto. P. CP. 363.
 puttādu. JS. 363.
 puttādo. JS. S. Mg. 363.
 puttāya. AMg. (verse) 363.
 puttāsūṃto. Pkt. 363.
 puttāha. Mg. 264, 363.
 puttāhā. Mg. A. 363.
 puttāhi. Pkt. (M.) 363.
 puttāhiṃ. Mg. 363.
 puttāhiṃto. Pkt. (M.) 363.

puttāho. Mg. 363.
 putti. A. JM. S. 363, 386.
 puttiṇa. A. 363.
 puttihi. A. 363.
 puttu. A. 363.
 puttē. A. 363.
 putte. AMg. A. S. P. CP. M. JM. JS. Mg. 363.
 puttē. A. 363.
 putteṃ. A. 363, 364, 576.
 puttēṇa. A. 364.
 putteṇa. M. AMg. JM. JS. S. Mg. P. CP. A. 363.
 putteṇaṃ. M. AMg. JM. 363, 364.
 puttesu. M. AMg. JM. JS. S. Mg. 363.
 puttesuṃ. S. Mg. 363.
 puttesuṃto. Pkt. 363.
 puttehi. M. AMg. JM. JS. 363.
 puttehi. A. 363.
 puttehiṃ. S. Mg. AMg. JM. 363.
 puttehiṃto. AMg. 363.
 putto. JM. AMg. 345, 363.
 putthake. Mg. 292.
 putra. A. 268.
 puthu. Pāli, 78.
 puthujja. Pāli, 78.
 puthujjana. Pāli, 78.
 puthuvī. P. 190.
 pudhaṃ. Pkt. 78, 203.
 pudhuma. P. 104, 190, 221.
 punnāge. AMg. 231.
 puppha. M. AMg. JM. S. 305.
 pupphaka. S. 305.
 Pupphakaranda. S. Ā. 305.
 Pupphakalaṇḍa. Mg. 305.
 Pupphakalaṇḍa. Mg. 305.
 Pupphakalaṇḍaka. Mg. 305.
 pupphatta. Pkt. (AMg.) 597.
 pupphattāe. AMg. 361.
 pupphamanta. AMg. 601.
 pupphavaī. A. 305.
 pupphavaīhi. A. 387.
 pupphā. AMg. M. 148, 315, 350, 367.
 pupphāi. AMg. 367.
 pupphāni. AMg. 367.
 pupphīā. Pkt. (M.) 148, 315.
 pupha. PG. 193, 305.
 pumaṇṇamaṇi. AMg. 412.
 pumaṇ. AMg. 412.

- pumatta. AMg. 597.
 pumattam. AMg. 412.
 pumattāe. AMg. 412.
 pumapannavaṇi. AMg. 412.
 pumavaū. AMg. 409, 412.
 pumavaṇa. AMg. 412.
 pumitthiveya. AMg. 412.
 pume. AMg. 412.
 pummavaṇa. AMg. (text) 412.
 puraokaṭṭu. AMg. 577.
 puraokāum. AMg. 576.
 purao-m-agga. AMg. 353.
 puram. AMg. 345.
 puracchima. Pkt. 595, note 3.
 puracchimilla. Pkt. 595, note 3.
 purakkaḍa. AMg. 306, 345.
 puratthima. Pkt. (AMg. JM.) 595 note 3, 602.
 puratthimāo. AMg. 375.
 puratthimilla. AMg. 595, 602.
 puratthime. JM. 366^a.
 purabheyaṇi. AMg. 238.
 purava. P. 132.
 puravare. JM. 366^a.
 purā. Pkt. (AMg. S.) 38, 367^a, 413, 516.
 purākida. S. 49.
 purāsī. AMg. 172.
 purilla. AMg. JM. 595.
 purilladeva. AMg. JM. 595.
 purillapahāṇā. AMg. JM. 595.
 purisa. (All dialects) 124.
 purisakkāra. AMg. 196.
 purisakkāraparakkame. AMg. 93.
 purisajāe. AMg. 436, 438.
 purisajāyā. AMg. 439.
 purisattāe. AMg. 364.
 purisasaehī. Pkt. 180.
 purisā. AMg. S. 367^a, 417, 438, 463.
 °purisāṇa. JM. 350.
 purisāṇi. AMg. 358.
 purisittī. JS. 160.
 purisuttama. AMg. 159.
 purise. AMg. 126, 345, 463.
 puriso. JM. AMg. 85, 366^b, 432.
 Purisōttama. S. 124, 159.
 puruvva. S. 125.
 Purusōttama. S. 124.
 Purūravasam. S. 408.
 Purūravasi. S. 408.
 Purūravassa. S. 409.
 Purūravā. S. 408.
 Purūraveṇa. S. 409.
 pure. AMg. Pāli, 107 and note 11, 345, 347.
 purekaḍa. AMg. 49, 219, 306, 345.
 purekamma. AMg. 112, 345.
 purēkkhaḍa. Pkt. (AMg.) 107, 219, 306, 345.
 purēkkhāra. Pāli, 107 and note 11.
 pulaaī. M. 104, 130.
 pulaia. Pkt. (M.) 104, 130.
 pulaei. Pkt. (M.) 104, 130.
 pulakāmatu. Pkt. 203 and note 4.
 pulava. Mg. 132.
 puliśa. Mg. 124, 184, 229.
 puliśā. Mg. 367.
 puliśe. Mg. 345.
 puliśeśu. Mg. 371.
 Puliśēttama. Mg. 124, 159.
 pulisa. Dh. 256.
 puliso. Dh. 25, 228, 345.
 puloaiṣṣadi. S. 528.
 puloanta. S. 104.
 puloanto. S. 397.
 puloia. M. 104, 130.
 puloida. S. 104.
 puloissam. M. 528.
 puloei. M. 104, 130.
 puloedi. S. 104.
 Pulomī. Pkt. 84.
 pulovedi. S. 104.
 puvanti. AMg. 473.
 puvva. PG. M. 83, 287.
 puvvai. AMg. S. 511, 536, 543.
 puvvam. AMg. 174, 516.
 puvvadattam. PG. 287, 363.
 puvvadisādo. S. 413.
 puvvanha. AMg. JS. 330.
 puvvarattāvarattakālasamaṇamsi. AMg. 366^a.
 Puvvavideha. AMg. 156.
 puvvāṇupuvvim. AMg. 103.
 puvvādiso. M. 413.
 puvvām. AMg. 68.
 puvvāvaraṇha. AMg. 330.
 puvvim. AMg. JM. 103.
 puvvilla. AMg. JM. 595.
 puśca. Mg. 74.
 puścamde. Mg. 233, 275, 397.
 puścadi. Mg. 51, 233.
 puścāmi. Mg. 51.
 puścidum. Mg. 573.
 puściśsam. Mg. 526.
 puśīti. Mg. 303.

- puṣṭaka. Mg. 292.
 puṣṭake. Mg. 292.
 puṣṭhaka. Mg. 292.
 Puṣpa. Mg. 305.
 Puṣpha. Mg. 305.
 puṣai. Pkt. 311, 486.
 pusasu. Pkt. 486, note 2.
 pusia. M. 101.
 puskaliṇī. Mg. 125.
 pustaka. Mg. 292.
 pustake. Mg. 292.
 Puṣpa°. Mg. 305.
 pussa. Pkt. 84.
 puḥai. M. JM. S. M. A. 51, 139, 140, 221.
 puḥaiṣai. M. 97.
 puḥam. Pkt. 78, 203.
 puḥatta. AMg. 78, 177, 221.
 puḥavi. A. 386.
 puḥavī. A. 350.
 puḥavimaṇḍala. JM. 97.
 puḥavivikkhāya. JM. 97.
 puḥavī. M, JM. S. Mg. A. 51, 115, 139, 140, 221, 386.
 puḥaviṣa. M. 156.
 puhutta. AMg. 78 and note 2, 177, 221.
 puhuvī. Pkt. 115, 139, 140.
 pūaṇṭa. S. D. 571.
 pūāariha. S. 156.
 pūijjantā. S. 376, 397.
 pūipiunnāgaṃ. AMg. 350.
 pūima. AMg. 602.
 pūyaṇṭa. AMg. 361.
 pūyaṇṭijja. AMg. 571.
 pūyaphala. AMg. 148.
 pūra. AMg. 166.
 pūrai. M. 58, 537.
 -pūraittaa. S. 600.
 pūraittae. AMg. 578.
 pūrae. S. 462.
 pūrayantā. AMg. 397.
 pūrijjanta. M. 537.
 pūrima. AMg. 602.
 pūremo. JM. 470.
 pūlida. Mg. 256.
 pūṣai. M. 488.
 pūsamāṇaga. AMg. 231, note 4.
 Pūṣā. Pkt. 402.
 Pūṣāṇo. Pkt. 402.
 pūha. AMg. 142, 286.
 peiṣa. M. S. 121.
 pēkkha. S. P. 468.
 pēkkhai. Pkt. 554.
 pēkkhampti. S. 560.
 pēkkhadi. S. 84, 143, 159, 321, 554.
 pēkkhadha. S. 456.
 pēkkhantāṇaṃ. S. 397.
 pēkkhantu. S. 471.
 pēkkhamha. S. 470.
 pēkkhassa. S. 467.
 pēkkhabi. A. 468.
 pēkkhāmo. Pkt. 470.
 pēkkhia. S. 134, 589, 590.
 pēkkhiṇa. S. 584, 589.
 pēkkhiṇjantī. S. 275; °nti. 11.
 pēkkhidavanto. S. 569.
 pēkkhiduṃ. Mg. 324.
 pēkkhivi. A. 184, 588.
 pēkkhiśāṃ. Mg. 525.
 pēkkhiśādi. Mg. 525.
 pēkkhiṣṣaṃ. Dh. S. 525.
 pēkkhiṣṣadi. S. 525.
 pēkkhiādi. Mg. 324.
 pēkkhiānti. S. 11.
 pēkkhiṇimi. A. 63, 315, 520, 525.
 pēkkhu. A. 468.
 pēkkhuṇa. Pāli, 89.
 pēkkhevi. A. 184, 588.
 pēkkheviṇa. A. 184, 588.
 pēkhūṇa. Pāli, 89.
 pēccabhave. AMg. 361.
 pēccā. AMg. 587.
 pēccha. M. JM. 468.
 pēcchai. M. AMg. JM. 84, 159, 283, 321.
 pēcchae. M. 457.
 pēcchaga. AMg. 84.
 pēcchaṇṭijja. AMg. 84.
 pēcchadi. Ā. JS. 26, 84, 159, 203.
 pēcchantā. AMg. 397.
 pēcchantāṇa. A. 397.
 pēcchavi. 588.
 pēcchāgā. AMg. 463.
 pēcchāmu. Pkt. 467.
 pēcchāmo. JM. 455.
 pēcchiṇa. JM. 585.
 pēcchiṣa. JM. 134, 590.
 pēcchira. M. 596.
 pēcchirī. M. 596.
 pēcchissam. M. 525.
 pēcchissāmo. JM. 345, 525.

pēchihisi. 525.
 pēchējjāsi. JM. 460.
 pēchāmi. Mg. 324.
 pējja. AMg. 91, 414, 572.
 pējjam. AMg. 91.
 pējjāo. AMg. 409.
 pējje. AMg. 356.
 peṭṭha. Pkt. 119.
 peḍha. Pkt. 122.
 peḍhāla. M. 122.
 pēṇḍa. Pkt. 119.
 peṭṭha. Mg. 324.
 *pena. CP. 191, note 1.
 pema-. AMg. S. 90, 404.
 pemma. M. AMg. JM. S. A. 90, 404.
 pēmmam. M. S. 358, 404.
 pēmmammi. M. 404.
 pēmmāim. M. 404.
 pemmāṇam. M. 370, 402, 404.
 pēmmē. M. S. 404.
 pēmmēṇa. Pkt. 404.
 pēmmessa. M. S. 404.
 peramtesu. S. 275.
 peranta. M. AMg. S. 176.
 pelava. M. 96.
 pēlavētti. M. (false) 96.
 pēllia. M. 159.
 pēskidum. Mg. 324.
 pēskiyyamdi. Mg. 11, 252, 275, 324.
 pēskiyyasi. Mg. 11, 252, 324.
 pēskīanti. Mg. 11.
 pēskīasi. Mg. 11.
 pēścāmi. Mg. 324.
 pēśchā. Mg. 324.
 peṣa. Mg. 324.
 pesaanteṇa. S. 490.
 pesaṇa. PG. 227.
 pesaṇappayutte. PG. 287.
 pesiaccha. M. 102.
 pesidavanto. S. 569.
 pēska. Mg. 468.
 pēskadi. Mg. 84, 159, 233, 324.
 pēskadha. Mg. 456.
 pēskāmo. Mg. 470.
 pēskia. Mg. 134, 590.
 pēskidum. Mg. 324.
 pēskīadi. Mg. 324.
 pessidavanto. S. (text) 569.
 peha. AMg. 323.
 pehai. AMg. JM. 87, 561.

pehamāṇa. AMg. 323.
 pehamāṇe. AMg. 561.
 pehamāṇio. JM. 323, 563.
 pehā. AMg. 323.
 pehāe. AMg. 323, 593 and note 1.
 pehi. AMg. 323.
 pehiṇī. AMg. 323.
 pehiṇya. AMg. 323.
 pehiṇam. AMg. 323.
 pehiṇya. AMg. 323, 590.
 pehissāmi. AMg. 530.
 pehuṇa. M. AMg. 89.
 pehuṇaūkkhevaga. AMg. 160.
 pehe. AMg. 323.
 poalo. Pkt. 36.
 pōkkhara. S. 125, 302.
 pōkkhariṇī. AMg. S. 125, 302.
 pōkkhariṇio. AMg. 386.
 pōkkhaliṇie. Mg. 302.
 pōggala. AMg. JS. 125, 270.
 pōggaladavvamaṇya. JS. 70.
 poḍo. Pkt. 207, note 1.
 pōṇdariṇya. AMg. 125.
 pōṭṭaim. JM. 367.
 pōṭṭhaa. S. 125.
 pōṭṭhaṇya. AMg. 125.
 pōpphala. M. 148.
 pōpphali. M. S. 148.
 pophali. S. (text) 148.
 pomaṇ. AMg. (text) 166.
 pōmma. M. AMg. 166, 195, 177.
 pōmmarāa. M. S. 166, 195.
 pōmmā. M. AMg. 166, 195.
 pōmmāsana. M. 166.
 pōra. S. AMg. 61^a, 166, 176.
 porāṇa. M. AMg. 61^a.
 porāṇam. AMg. 16.
 porāṇaṇya. JM. 61^a.
 porisa. JM. 61^a, 124.
 porisi. AMg. 61^a, 124.
 porisiṇam. AMg. 439.
 porisiṇya. AMg. 61^a, 124.
 porusa. AMg. JM. 124.
 porekacca. AMg. 345.
 porevacca. AMg. 345.
 pola. Mg. 61^a.
 polā. Mg. 61^a.
 posaṇaṇya. AMg. 364.
 posaha. AMg. JM. S. 141.
 posahiṇya. AMg. 141.

pōskaliṇī. Mg. 125, 302.
 pōṣṭāveduṃ. Mg. 573.
 pohatta. AMg. 78.
 pohattiya. AMg. 78.
 °ppaḍavadi. Mg. 219.
 °ppaṇaisu. M. 99.
 °ppatabadi. Pkt. 219.
 °ppadāyino. PG. 224, 253, 406.
 °ppabhiya. AMg. 380.
 °ppamāṇāhim. Mg. 366a.
 °ppamusida. S. 210.
 °ppayutte. PG. 253.
 °ppalavadi. Mg. 219.
 °ppaviṣṭam. Mg. 303.
 °ppahare. M. 367a.
 °ppahudihim. Mg. 381.
 °ppāvudo. Dh. 25.
 °ppemā. Ś. 404.
 °ppemmā. S. 402.
 °pphala. Pkt. 200.
 Praāvadi. A. 268.
 praāvadi. A. 192.
 praṅgaṇa. A. 268.
 prajūhitayvaṃ. (Girnār) 7.
 pramāṇa. A. 268.
 prassadi. A. 28, 268.
 prāiṇa. A. 268.
 prāiva. A. 268.
 prāu. A. 268.
 uria. A. 268.
 prēkhūṇa. Pkt. 89.
 proṇch. Pkt. 486, note 1.

ph

phamsa. M. S. Mg. 74, 311.
 phamsai. Pkt. 74, 486 and note 2.
 phakavati. CP. 191.
 phaggu. M. 62, 296.
 phagguṇa. AMg. S. 62, 296.
 Phagguṇī. AMg. (S. as in Uttarpagguṇi) 62.
 Phagguṇitta. AMg. 62.
 phaḍala. Pkt. 595.
 phaḍia. S. 206, 238.
 phaḍilla. Pkt. 595.
 phaḍiḥa. M. 238.
 phaṇaga. AMg. 206.
 phaṇasa. AMg. S. 208.
 phaṇino. M. 405.
 phaṇindaha. A. 366.
 phaṇiḥa. AMg. 206.

phaṇihārā. A. 364.
 phandaṇa. Pkt. 311.
 pharaa. S. 259.
 pharasu. AMg. 208.
 pharisa. M. AMg. 135, 311.
 pharisai. Pkt. 135, 486.
 pharisaga. AMg. 135, 311.
 pharihā. AMg. 208.
 pharusa. M. AMg. JM. 156, 208.
 pharusattaṇa. M. 208.
 pharusiya. AMg. 208.
 phala. A. 100.
 phalaī. A. 363.
 phalam. Pkt. 363.
 phalaga. AMg. 202, 206.
 phalati. P. CP. 243.
 phalatta. AMg. 597.
 phalattāe. AMg. 361.
 phalama. Pkt. 208.
 phalaṇa. AMg. 206.
 phalasa. Mg. 311.
 phalaha. AMg. P. CP. 206, 214, 243.
 phalahaga. AMg. 206 and note 6.
 phalā. AMg. JM. 363, 367.
 phalāim. M. AMg. JM. A. S. Mg. 363.
 phalāṇi. JS. AMg. 363, 367.
 phalāmo. P. CP. 243.
 phalitam. P. CP. 243.
 phaliṣa. M. 311.
 phaliḥa. M. AMg. JM. 208, 257.
 phalihattambha. S. 214.
 phaḷiḥa. M. AMg. JM. S. 206, 238, 311.
 phaḷihāgiri. Pkt. 206.
 phaḷihamaya. JM. 206.
 phaḷiharaṇāmayā. AMg. 70.
 phalihā. M. AMg. 208, 257.
 phalihi. Pkt. 208.
 phalu. A. 351, 363.
 phale. M. 366a.
 phasaī. Pkt. 486.
 phāguṇa. AMg. 62.
 phāḍei. Pkt. 208.
 phāḷiga. Pkt. 226.
 phāḷijantammi. M. 603.
 phāḷiya. AMg. 206, 238.
 phāḷiyāmayā. AMg. 70, 206.
 phāḷihadda. Pkt. 208, 257.
 phālei. Pkt. 238.
 phāsa. AMg. JM. JS. S. 62, 311,
 phāsaī. Pkt. 486.

**PRESIDENT'S
SECRETARIAT
LIBRARY**